

PRISON ESCAPES 4



Jail Break

On an overcast September night in 1970, Timothy Leary escaped from the California Men's Colony West Facility just outside San Luis Obispo. Over the years, Tim gave more than a dozen versions of how he did it. When all was said and done, the version that stuck is this: He painted his sneakers black and quietly made his way to an unlocked door that led to the prison yard. Once outside, he climbed a tree, maneuvered himself on top of a roof, then took hold of a 40-foot-long telephone cable, and, hand over hand, moved himself to the other side of the prison fence, where he shimmed down a utility pole to freedom. He walked about a mile to Highway 1, where a car was waiting courtesy of the Weather Underground. And from there he wound up in Algeria, a guest of Eldridge Cleaver and the Black Panthers.

"The time I really got to know Tim was in Algeria (1970) when he was the guest of Eldridge Cleaver, and he and the Panthers met us -- a delegation of Yippies, Students for a Democratic Society (SDS), and other leftists -- at the airport. We got lost in the Casaba. Somebody was following us and it was scary, because it was dark, at night. We were in a strange city and I don't think Tim really knew the geography. We had gone to celebrate Tim's 50th birthday. Abbie (Hoffman) and Jerry (Rubin) weren't there because their travel was restricted as a result of the Chicago 7 trial.

"The next morning, after we arrived, it was sunny. He and Rosemary were staying at a small apartment in this seaside village outside of the city. A charming little village. So the next morning all of us had lunch together at a little restaurant on the water. That was when I first got to see who this person was. He was this charming Irishman. He was utterly charming, and told us funny stories. It was one of the rare few completely relaxed occasions, despite the stress of the situation. There he was in Algeria on the run, but we were toasting with wine and I saw then what an ebullient, charming man he was. And at that time, he seemed so -- so very Irish."

-- Anita Hofmann

Christopher Daniel Gay, also nicknamed **Little Houdini**,^[1] is a 35-year-old fugitive of Coffee County, Tennessee.^[2]

Gay escaped police custody the afternoon of March 3, 2009 while being transported from [Orlando, Florida](#) to [Coffee County, Tennessee](#).^[1] He had been arrested and held for [larceny](#) of a

[Wal-Mart](#) truck.^[3] When the officers stopped for food at a [Waffle House](#) in [Kennesaw, Georgia](#), Gay was able to free himself of his restraints and fled from the car. Gay ran onto the campus of [Kennesaw State University](#), where school officials and campus police locked down the university for approximately two hours.

Gay had previously escaped police custody in South Carolina while being transported to Alabama on charges of stealing an RV.^{[1][2]}

2007 escape

In 2007, he escaped to visit his dying mother in Tennessee and while on the run from police he managed steal the tour bus of country music singer, [Crystal Gayle](#) (who Gay's mother happened to be a fan of) and traveled to [Daytona International Speedway](#) (where he tried to pass himself off as a member of [Tony Stewart](#)'s race team). He was apprehended by police after asking for directions from a prostitute who turned out to be part of a police sting (the bus was returned to Crystal Gayle undamaged). Twelve days following Gay's capture, Gay's mother died on Feb. 7, 2007 of cancer. Gay was not allowed to attend her funeral.^[1]

This escape inspired [country music singer-songwriter Tim O'Brien](#) to write a song about his escape called "The Ballad of Christopher Daniel Gay."^[4] It also inspired indie hip-hop artist [Sage Francis](#) to write the song called "Little Houdini" on his 2010 album *Li(f)e*.

. In popular culture

- Gay's story is the subject of the song "Little Houdini" by rapper Sage Francis. The song includes details of his multiple escapes but tries to humanize his motives. It also mentions how, after visiting his dying father, he turned himself back in.
- The story of his 2007 escape to visit his dying mother and his theft of Crystal Gayle's tour bus was featured on *World's Dumbest Criminals*. Gay's theft of the tour bus and his trip to a Daytona Beach speedway (where he attempted to pass himself off as Tony Stewart's bus driver) were mocked by the shows celebrity commentators.
- The case of Gay's 2007 escape was featured on Investigation Discovery's *I (Almost) Got Away With It*, in an episode titled "Got a Country Legend's Tour Bus." It featured interviews and commentary from those involved with the case, the police, prison officials, Gay's sister, Gay himself, and [Crystal Gayle](#).
- The radio program [Radiolab](#) produced a 2012 episode describing Gay's family history.^[5]
- Tampa Bay Times published a featured article about Gay.^[6]

. References

1. ^ [a b c d](#) Cook, Rhonda; MARCUS K. GARNER (03-04-2009). "['Little Houdini' still on the loose after Kennesaw escape](#)". The Atlanta Journal-Constitution. Retrieved 2009-03-06.
2. ^ [a b](#) Davis, Mark; Rhonda Cook (03-05-2009). The Atlanta Journal-Constitution <http://www.ajc.com/services/content/printedition/2009/03/05/fugitive0305b.html>. Retrieved 2009-03-06.Missing or empty |title= (help)
3. ^ "[Prisoner Known as 'Little Houdini' Escapes From Police](#)". Associated Press. 2009-03-04. Retrieved 2009-03-06.
4. ^ Roswen, Kevin (03-04-2009). "['Little Houdini' Magically Disappears](#)". 11alive. Retrieved 2009-03-06.
5. ^ <http://www.radiolab.org/2012/feb/20/>

6. <http://www.tampabay.com/features/humaninterest/chris-gay-once-stole-a-tour-bus-now-wants-to-stop-running/1192012>
7. A 34-year-old prisoner whose escape led to a two-hour lockdown at Kennesaw State University, Tuesday, remains on the loose, but classes have resumed at the university.
8. Police say Chris Gay, who was wanted in Coffee County, Tenn. on charges that he stole a Wal-Mart truck, escaped on Tuesday when the deputy transporting him there from Orlando, Fla., stopped at a Waffle House.
9. Gay, listed as 5-foot-5 and weighing 140 pounds, is wanted in Tennessee on charges of stealing a Wal-Mart truck. He has a history as an escape artist and is nicknamed "Little Houdini."
10. Cobb County police spokesman Sgt. Dana Pierce said Gay apparently broke out of his restraints when the truck pulled over.
11. Gay also is suspected of stealing the tour bus of country music star Crystal Gayle.
12. The university cancelled its evening classes, Tuesday, issuing a lockdown that lasted from 3:45 p.m. to 5:45 p.m. when the campus reopened.
- 13.

Read more: <http://www.foxnews.com/story/2009/03/04/prisoner-known-as-little-houdini-escapes-from-police/#ixzz2SDGq2rrA>

Crimes and imprisonment

He was first arrested in [Bogotá](#) on May 24, 1958 for [petty theft](#).^[2]

Camargo had a [de facto union](#) with a woman named Alcira and had two children with her. He fell in love with another woman, Esperanza (age 28), whom he planned to marry, but then found out that she was not a [virgin](#). This became the root of Camargo's fixations. He and Esperanza formed an agreement that he would stay with her if she aided him in finding other virgin girls to have sex with. This began a period of their partnership in crime. Esperanza was Camargo's accomplice, luring young girls to an apartment under false pretenses and then drugging them with [sodium seconal sleeping pills](#) so that Camargo could [rape](#) them. Camargo committed five rapes in this way, but did not kill any of the girls. The fifth child that they abused in this way reported the crime, and both Camargo and Esperanza were arrested and taken to separate prisons.^[1] Camargo was convicted of sexual assault in Colombia on April 10, 1964.^[3]

A judge sentenced Camargo to three years in prison, and Camargo was initially grateful for the perceived leniency of the judge, swearing to repent and mend his ways. However, a new judge was given precedence over the case and Camargo was sentenced to eight years in prison. This provoked Camargo to rebellious anger. He served his full sentence, and was released.^[1]

In 1973 he was arrested in [Brazil](#) for being [undocumented](#). Due to a delay in sending Camargo's criminals records from Colombia, he was [deported](#) and released with his false identity.^[2] When he returned to Colombia, he took up a job as a street vendor in [Barranquilla](#) selling [television monitors](#). One day when passing by a school he kidnapped a nine-year-old girl, raping her and murdering her so that she could not inform the police like his previous victim had. This was his first assault involving murder.^{[1][3]}

Camargo was arrested on May 3, 1974 in Barranquilla, Colombia when he returned to the scene of the crime to recover the television screens that he had forgotten beside the victim. Even though it is believed that he raped and killed more than 80 girls in Colombia, Camargo was imprisoned in Colombia after being convicted of raping and killing a nine-year-old girl. He was

initially sentenced to 30 years in prison, but this sentence was reduced to 25 years, and he was interned in the prison on the island of [Gorgona, Colombia](#)^[1] on December 24, 1977.^[3]

. Escape from Colombia to Ecuador

In November 1984 Camargo escaped from Gorgona's prison (known as the Colombian [Alcatraz](#)) in a primitive boat after having carefully studied the [ocean currents](#). The authorities assumed that he died at sea and the press reported that he had been eaten by [sharks](#).^[3] He eventually arrived in [Quito](#), Ecuador. He then traveled by bus to [Guayaquil](#) on the 5th or 6th December 1984.^[4] On December 18th he abducted a nine-year-old girl from the city of [Quevedo](#), in the province of [Los Ríos](#), Ecuador. The next day a 10-year-old girl also disappeared.

Edward J. "Eddie" Adams was born in 1887 on a farm in [Hutchinson, Kansas](#) as William Joseph Wallace. His father died when he was young and his mother remarried, setting the stage for a lifetime of psychological problems. Eddie had a strong disdain for his stepfather, as well as for physical labor. He learned the [barber](#) trade and moved to [Wichita, Kansas](#) in the early 20th century. There he met [John Callahan](#) and quickly became involved in [bootlegging](#), [petty robberies](#), and [car theft](#).

Adams was a charismatic fellow who attracted a long line of criminal hangers-on and loose ladies. His wife left him after growing weary of his illegal activities and infidelities.

He soon formed his own gang and began committing bank and train robberies throughout [Kansas](#), [Missouri](#), and [Iowa](#), eventually earning the reputation as the premier bandit in the Midwest by the early days of [Prohibition](#).

Murder & Kansas City

In 1920, through Callahan, Adams formed a partnership with outlaw brothers [Ray](#) and [Walter Majors](#) and, on September 5, attempted a daylight robbery against a notorious [Kansas City](#) gambling den on Grand Avenue owned by [Harry Trusdell](#). However, a shootout between the bandits and tough employees of the illegal casino would result in the death of gambler and gunman [Frank Gardner](#) and the eventual capture of the gang by police.

Adams was sentenced to life imprisonment in February 1921. His partners, the Major Brothers, received lesser sentences by agreeing to plead guilty to [robbery](#), and were both sentenced to only five years imprisonment. Both brothers would eventually die behind bars. A third brother involved in the botched robbery attempt, Dudley, would escape from the scene only to be later arrested and serve time in the Delaware penitentiary.

Midwest crime spree

While being transported to the [Missouri State Prison](#) in [Jefferson City, Missouri](#), Adams escaped custody after jumping off the train and within several days joined [Julius Finney](#) in the robbery of a bank and general store in Cullison, Kansas on February 11, 1921. He was captured near [Garden Plain](#) by a [posse](#) six days later after wrecking a stolen car under a bridge. Convicted of bank robbery, Adams was sentenced to serve 10 to 30 years at the [Kansas State Prison](#) in [Lansing](#), in addition to his life sentence in Missouri for murder.

On August 13, Adams once again successfully escaped imprisonment after sabotaging the prison power plant and scaling the Lansing prison walls during the night along with inmates [Frank Foster](#), [George Weisberger](#) and [D.C. Brown](#). The driver of the getaway car was [Billy Fintelman](#), a World War I veteran gone bad. With the exception of Brown (who was recaptured days later) the fugitives would elude capture from state authorities and eventually formed what would become the newest incarnation of the Adams Gang.

By September of that year, joined by Fintelman, the gang robbed around \$10,000 from banks in [Rose Hill](#) and [Haysville, Kansas](#). During the Haysville robbery, Adams pistol-whipped 82-year-old James Krievell for no apparent reason, who later died of a fractured skull.

On October 8, police attempted to trap the gang near Anoly, Kansas, however the gang managed to escape after a gunfight which left Deputy Benjamin Fisher wounded. The gang was spotted eleven days later after stealing \$500 in silver from a bank near [Osceola, Iowa](#). This was followed by another attempt by a posse to apprehend the gang just south of [Murray, IA](#). The gang rested for several hours along a gravel road just a few miles from town. Upon suspicion of the vehicle, farmer C.J. Jones contacted sheriff Ed West of Murray and a group was formed to investigate and intervene. Upon approaching the vehicle, Sheriff West was met at point blank range with a revolver to his face that failed to fire. He was able to take cover and a shootout followed in which several members of the posse were seriously injured. Jones, having heard the gun battle from his farm up the road, grabbed his shotgun and ran to aid the posse. The gang, who had by now fled from the original site, drove up the road and exchanged fire with Jones which left him mortally wounded.

Heading for Wichita, the gang's crime spree continued robbing 11 stores in [Muscotah, Kansas](#) and abducting and later robbing two motorcycle officers outside Wichita, where their motorcycles were set on fire.

Back in Wichita, on November 5, 1921, Adams shot and killed Patrolman [A.L. Young](#) in cold blood while Young was on duty. The motive behind the killing was said to be a mutual love interest who had chosen the company of the officer over the outlaw.

The gang then committed their most successful robbery with the theft of \$35,000 after robbing a Santa Fe express train near [Ottawa, Kansas](#).

Downfall



This is a re-enactment of Adam's fatal shootout with the police, as published in the *Wichita Eagle*, November 23, 1921.

On the evening of November 20, Adams, along with Foster, [Nellie Miles](#) (a local madam and long-time friend of Adams'), [George J. McFarland](#) (a local thug and bootlegger) and two alleged prostitutes, were joyriding around Wichita. Another car carrying Fintelman, his wife, Weisberger, [P.D. Orcutt](#), and two unnamed ladies, followed at high speeds. Two motorcycle policemen pulled over the vehicle carrying Adams and a gunshot came from the vehicle - it is unknown whether the shot was fired by Adams or Foster - killing patrolman Robert Fitzpatrick. The outlaws sped away, released the women, and fled south into Cowley County.

Later that night the trio ran out of gas and stopped at a farm, where Adams attempted to steal a vehicle from farmer George Oldham. When Oldham resisted, Adams shot and killed him. Adams and Foster took the car, while McFarland ran away alone into the night. The duo returned to Wichita in the stolen car. The next day, Adams and Billy Fintelman went to McFarland's house to look for him, only to find two officers waiting. Adams shot officer [Ray Casner](#) non-fatally while the other policeman hid under a bed. Adams once again escaped.

Adams hid out until the funeral of fallen officer Fitzpatrick on November 22, at which he assumed the bulk of the police force would be present. He had planned to rent a car to leave town for good, but the proprietor of the garage recognized him and contacted police. Three officers arrived on the scene. Adams shot at them, fatally wounding detective Charles Hoffman who pulled the gunman to the ground. Officer Charles Bowman was also hit by gunfire. [D.C. Stuckey](#), hiding behind a pillar, shot Adams three times and killed him.

Eddie Adams' body was publicly displayed in the City Undertaking Parlor in a grisly celebration of the end of a reign of terror. More than 9,000 people viewed the slain outlaw.

In the end, 18 people were arrested as accomplices and hangers-on of Adams. Four were sent to the Kansas Penitentiary, Frank Foster for life.

Adams, dead at age 34, was attributed with seven murders, including three Wichita policemen, in just a little over 14 month's time. He wounded at least a dozen others.

Gaskins committed his first murder while serving this first prison sentence in 1953 when he slashed the throat of a fellow inmate named Hazel Brazell.^[3] Gaskins claimed he committed this murder to earn himself a fearsome reputation amongst his fellow inmates. He was judged to have acted in self-defense and was sentenced to a further three years' imprisonment. Gaskins escaped from prison in 1955 by hiding in the back of a garbage truck and fled to [Florida](#), where he took employment with a traveling carnival.^[4] He was re-arrested, remanded to custody, and paroled in August 1961.

Second arrest and subsequent murders

Following his release from prison, Gaskins remarried but soon reverted to committing burglaries and [fencing](#) stolen property. Two years after his parole, Gaskins was arrested for the rape of a twelve-year-old girl; he absconded whilst awaiting sentence,^[5] but was rearrested in [Georgia](#), and sentenced to eight years' imprisonment. Gaskins was paroled in November 1968.^[6] Upon his release, Gaskins moved to the town of Sumter and began work with Fort Roofing company. In September 1969, Gaskins began killing a series of hitchhikers he picked up while driving around the coastal highways of the [American South](#). He classified these victims as *Coastal Kills*: people, both male and female, whom he killed purely for pleasure, on average approximately once every six weeks, when he went hunting to quell his feelings of "bothersomeness". He tortured and mutilated his victims, while attempting to keep them alive for as long as possible. He confessed to killing these victims using a variety of methods including stabbing, suffocation, mutilation, and even claimed to have cannibalized some of them.^[4] He later confessed to killing "eighty to ninety" such victims,^[7] although this figure has never been corroborated.

In November 1970, Gaskins committed the first of his so-called *Serious Murders*: people whom he knew and killed for personal reasons. Gaskins' first *Serious Murder* victims was his own niece, Janice Kirby, aged 15, and her friend Patricia Ann Alsbrook, aged 17, both of whom he beat to death after attempting to sexually assault them in [Sumter, South Carolina](#).^[4] Other *Serious Murder* victims were killed for a variety of reasons: because they had mocked Gaskins, attempted to blackmail him, owed him money, because they had stolen from him, or because Gaskins had been paid to kill his victim.^[8] Unlike his *Coastal Kills*, Gaskins simply executed these victims, usually by shooting them, before burying them around the coastal areas of [South Carolina](#).

Final arrest

Gaskins was arrested on November 14, 1975, when a criminal associate, named Walter Neeley, confessed to police that he had witnessed Gaskins having killed two young men named Dennis Bellamy, aged 28, and Johnny Knight, aged 15.^[9] Neeley confessed to police that Gaskins had confided in him to having killed several people who had been listed as missing persons over the previous five years, and had indicated to him where they were buried. On December 4, 1975, Gaskins led police to land he owned in Prospect, where police discovered the bodies of eight of his victims.^[10]

. Imprisonment

Gaskins was tried on eight charges of murder on May 24, 1976,^[8] found guilty on May 28 and sentenced to death, which was later [commuted](#) to [life in prison](#), when the South Carolina General Assembly's 1974 death sentence ruling was changed to conform to the [United States Supreme Court](#) guidelines for the [death penalty](#) in other states.^[11]

On September 2, 1982, Gaskins committed another murder, for which he earned the title of the "Meanest Man in America". While incarcerated in the high security block at the South Carolina Correctional Institution, Gaskins killed a [death row](#) inmate named Rudolph Tyner, who earned his sentence for killing an elderly couple named Bill and Myrtle Moon during a bungled armed robbery on the store they owned in the Burgess community.

Gaskins was hired to commit this murder by Tony Cimo, son of Myrtle Moon. Gaskins initially made several unsuccessful attempts to kill Tyner by lacing his food and drink with poison before he opted to use explosives to kill him. To accomplish this, Gaskins rigged a device similar to a portable radio in Tyner's death row cell and told Tyner this would allow them to "communicate between cells".^[12] When Tyner followed Gaskins' instructions to hold a speaker (laden with [C-4 plastic explosive](#), unbeknownst to him) to his ear at an agreed time, Gaskins detonated the explosives in his cell and killed him.^[11] Gaskins later said, "The last thing he [Tyner] heard was me laughing."

Gaskins was tried for the murder of Rudolph Tyner and sentenced to death.

In 1991, Evans was arrested in [Louisiana](#) for the kidnapping of a 10-year-old girl. He confessed to the killing and led the authorities to the girl's body. He also confessed to killing more than 70 other people in over 20 different states. Most of the murders and [rapes](#) took place at rest stops and public parks. The authorities were originally skeptical of Evans' claims, but two of his descriptions were perfect matches to unsolved cases across [Florida](#). He successfully escaped the Harrison County Jail, but was recaptured a short time later. In 1993 he was tried and convicted for the kidnapping, rape, strangulation, and murder of 10-year-old Beatrice Routh, and [sentenced to death](#). In 1995, Florida authorities tried and convicted Evans for the strangulation death of Ira Jean Smith.

Evans was stabbed to death in 1999 by a fellow [death row](#) inmate at the Mississippi State Penitentiary.

Dursun Karataş (March 25, 1952,¹ [Elazığ](#)—August 11, 2008, [Netherlands](#)^[1]) was the founding leader of the [Revolutionary People's Liberation Party-Front](#) (DHKP-C) in [Turkey](#).

Karataş founded Dev-Sol (Revolutionary Left, precursor of DHKP-C) in 1978,^[2] as an offshoot of the [Turkish People's Liberation Party/Front](#).^[3] The group was based in [Istanbul](#).^[4]

Karataş was jailed after the [1980 military coup](#). In prison a political reorganisation was undertaken. The Dev-Sol inmates at [Bayrampaşa](#) prison refused to follow orders and boycotted court invitations. In prison Karataş wrote "*Haklıyız Kazanacağız*" ("We Are Right, We Shall Prevail"); a work which included an analysis of the movement's mistakes, and a list of the organization's enemies. It was published in two volumes in 1989, spanning more than 1000 pages.^{[4][5]}

He escaped from prison in 1989. After escaping from jail, he went into exile in Europe.^[3] In 1989-1990 Dev-Sol carried out a series of attacks. However, on July 12, 1991, Turkish police was able to dismantle several cells of the organization. Karataş fled to Europe. In April 1992 his wife Sahabat was killed by the Turkish police.^[4]

Following the police crackdown on Dev-Sol, Karataş was kidnapped and detained by the second-in-command of the movement, Bedri Yağan, on September 13, 1993. Karataş did however escape

from captivity, and Dev-Sol was divided. Karataş and his followers reorganized their movement as DHKP-C.^{[3][4]}

On September 9, 1994 he was arrested at the Franco-Italian border, and sentenced to four years in prison.^[6] In 2006 a [Belgian](#) court sentenced him [in absentia](#).^[7]

The [Ankara](#) 9th administrative court ruled in February 2007 that Turkey should pay an [YTL](#) 1,000 compensation to Karataş, who was tried in absentia for 27 years, for membership in an outlawed organization and the unauthorized possession of guns and fake documents. The judges' decision stated that: "The Karataş trial process started at the Ordu Martial Law Court in 1981 and has not been concluded since then. We have decided that Turkey should pay compensation to Karataş for such a [lengthy trial process](#)." ^[8]

Karataş died on August 11, 2008 at the Rijnstate hospital in [Arnhem](#), [Netherlands](#).^[9] (Some sources initially reported him as having died in [Belgium](#),^[10] however the spokesperson of the organization in [Brussels](#), Bahar Kimyongür, said that Karataş' friends gathered to pay their respects in the Netherlands.^[11]) He lies in the [Gazi Cemevi](#) of Istanbul.^[12] According to columnist Ekrem Dumanli, the leader of the prominently [Alevi](#) DHKP-C organization revealed itself to be a [Sunni Muslim](#): Karataş was buried in the Gazi district of Istanbul after a ceremony at a local cemevi (an Alevi house of worship) and a funeral prayer at a local mosque.^{[13][14]} Twenty thousand people attended his funeral procession.^[15]

References

- ^{1.} [^] ["DHKP-C lideri Dursun Karataş öldü"](#). *Radikal* (in Turkish). 2008-08-13. Retrieved 2008-08-14.
- ^{2.} [^] Chasdi, Richard J. *Tapestry of terror : a portrait of Middle East terrorism, 1994-1999*. [Lanham](#): Lexington Books, 2002. p. 230-231
- ^{3.} [^] ^a ^b ^c Kushner, Harvey W. *Encyclopedia of Terrorism*. [Thousand Oaks](#): Sage Publications, 2003. p. 315
- ^{4.} [^] ^a ^b ^c ^d Teymur, Samih <The [template *PDFlink*](#) is being [considered for possible deletion](#).> [An Analysis of Terrorist Recruitment by Observing the DHKP/C Terrorist Organization in Istanbul](#) PDF [University of North Texas](#) (Criminal Justice) August 2004^[verification needed]
- ^{5.} [^] Alexander, Yonah/Pluchinsky Alexander, Dennis A. *Europe's red terrorists: Fighting communist organizations*. [London](#): Cass, 1992. p. 39-40
- ^{6.} [^] ["France: Turkish movement leader sentenced to four-year imprisonment in Paris"](#). *Agence France-Presse*. BBC News. 1997-02-06.
- ^{7.} [^] ["Belgium sentences members of Turkish terror group to prison"](#). *NTV-MSNBC*. 2008-08-14. Retrieved 2008-08-14.
- ^{8.} [^] Gökçer Tahincioğlu, [Extreme left group leader to receive compensation for lengthy trial](#), *Today's Zaman*, 21 February 2008 (**English**)
- ^{9.} [^] ["DHKP-C leader dies in Netherlands"](#), *Hurriyet* (12 August 2008). Retrieved on 2008-08-12.
- ^{10.} [^] ["Dursun Karataş passes away"](#), *Sabah* (12 August 2008). Retrieved on 2008-08-12.
- ^{11.} [^] Sertac Aktan (Arnhem); Ramazan Cin (Istanbul) (2008-08-12). ["DHKP-C'nin lideri Dursun Karataş öldü"](#). *Ihlas News Agency* (in Turkish). Retrieved 2008-08-14.
- ^{12.} [^] ["Karataş'ın cenazesi ailesine verilmedi"](#). *Anadolu Ajansı* (in Turkish) ([Hürriyet](#)). 2008-08-14. Retrieved 2008-08-14.
- ^{13.} [^] [DHKP/C leader buried, another lead figure caught in Greek Cyprus](#), *Today's Zaman*, 16 August 2008

14. ^ Ekrem Dumanli, [Stopping Alevi-Sunni tension](#), *Today's Zaman*, 19 August 2008
15. ^ "[Dursun Karataş'ın yüzünü açtılar](#)". *Radikal* (in Turkish). 2008-08-15. Retrieved 2008-08-15.
16. ^ "[We have lost our Commander, our Leader, our Uncle](#)". DHKP-C. 2008-08-11. Retrieved 2008-08-14.(tr: [Komutanımız Önderimiz Dayımızı Yitirdik](#))

Lieutenant Elias Henry Jones (1883 - 22 December 1942) was a [Welsh](#) officer in the [Indian Army](#) who, together with [Australian C. W. Hill](#), escaped from the Yozgad [prisoner of war camp](#) in [Turkey](#) during [World War I](#). Their epic story was told in the book *The Road to En-dor*.

Between February 1917 and October 1918, Jones and Hill convinced their Turkish captors that they were [mediums](#) adept at the [Ouija](#) board. Eventually they secured their repatriation to Britain by faking insanity. Ironically, they arrived home only a few months before their brother officers were released from Yozgad.

A film adaptation of *The Road to En-dor* is in development, written by [Neil Gaiman](#) and [Penn Jillette](#), and produced by E. H. Jones's granddaughter [Hilary Bevan Jones](#).^[1]

References

- *The Road to En-dor*, E. H. Jones, 1919
1. ^ [firstshowing.net: Neil Gaiman and Penn Jillette Adapting The Road to Endor](#)
 2. Ed Davis was born in [Waurika, Oklahoma](#) on July 30, 1900. He enlisted in the [U.S. Army](#) at the age of 17 but was prematurely discharged for undisclosed reasons on January 2, 1918. He spent the next year drifting then returned to his hometown where he started committing minor robberies with Oscar Steelman and Earl Berry. He was eventually arrested for one of these robberies and sentenced to two years in the [Oklahoma State Reformatory](#). Released in the summer of 1920, he took a [freight train](#) heading east and continued [riding the rails](#) until his arrest in [Hutchinson, Kansas](#) for train riding and carrying a concealed weapon. The charges were dropped on the condition that Davis leave town which he did after purchasing a train ticket on a [box car](#).^[1]
 3. His next brush with the law occurred on January 23, 1923, when he and Bill Sheppard burglarized the home of oil tycoon Joe McDonald stealing \$50 in cash and \$2,425 in jewelry. Davis and Sheppard then hiked five miles north to their [Agawam](#) hideout however police were easily able to follow their tracks through the fresh snow and arrested them hours later. Both men pled guilty to robbery charges and sentenced to 10 years each at the [McAlester state prison](#). By the time of his parole in 1928, Davis had become more violent and would frequently resist police for the rest of his criminal career. He had also developed an [ear infection](#) which left him in almost persistent pain.^[1]
 4. **[] Murder of J.R. Hill**
 5. One of his early confrontations with the police occurred in [Marlow, Oklahoma](#) on April 20, 1931. He was sitting in a car with two other men, Jack Alfred and John Schrimsher, when night police chief Ike Veach and officer J.R. Hill saw them on a routine patrol and decided to approach the car. All three men were heavily armed and one of them fired a shotgun which shattered the windshield and killed Hill instantly. Sheriff Veach was also badly wounded from buckshot but returned fire managing to disable their car and wounding Alfred before they escaped. All three men were caught after a brief manhunt. Alfred was the first to be arrested and was sent to a hospital in [Duncan, Oklahoma](#) where he awaited trial. Schrimsher surrendered to authorities near [Henderson, Texas](#) on

October 24 while Davis was found in an [East Texas oil field](#) the next day and taken into custody.^[2] At the time of his capture, he was renting a house with his wife under the name Paul Martin in [Joinerville](#). Davis and his accomplices were tried and convicted of murder and sentenced to life imprisonment on August 3, 1931.^[1]

6. [\[\] Escape from McAlester](#)

7. After nine months in prison, Davis escaped the McAlester state penitentiary with Robert Smith and Edmond Hardin on May 26, 1932. Hardin was quickly recaptured while still on foot but Davis and Smith were able to escape by stealing a car. Davis then attempted to try his hand at bank robbery and joined veteran outlaws [Jim Clark](#) and [Frank Sawyer](#). The gang's time was short-lived however. On June 17, the three were arrested by police near [Black Rock, Arkansas](#). In addition to driving a stolen car, they were also charged with a bank robbery carried out hours before in [Fort Scott, Kansas](#). The robbery was actually committed by the [Barker Gang](#), however Davis and his partners were wrongly convicted on the robbery and given long jail terms.^[1]

8. [\[\] Time with the Bailey-Underhill Gang](#)

9. Davis escaped from prison once again, this time taking part in a mass escape from the [Kansas state prison](#) in [Lansing](#) on May 30, 1933. He was one of twelve convicts including [Harvey Bailey](#),^[2] [Robert "Big Bob" Brady](#), [Wilbur Underhill](#), Jim Clark and seven others. He briefly joined Bailey-Underhill gang in two major robberies, first as the [getaway driver](#) in Black Rock on June 16^[3] and in [Kingfisher, Oklahoma](#) on August 9, Davis later being identified with Clark and Bailey from prison mugshots. Bailey was arrested at a ranch by federal agents two days later, the [FBI](#) then looking for [George "Machine Gun" Kelly](#), and was wrongly charged as an accessory to the Charles Urchel kidnapping case.^[1]
10. With Bailey in jail, the Bailey-Underhill gang broke up and Davis decided to strike out alone. He began a one man crime spree raiding countless banks in [central Texas](#) with such success that police began referring to him as "The Fox". By late-September 1933, Davis decided he had gained enough money to retire and moved with his wife to California. He was also considering surgical removal of various [prison tattoos](#).^[1]

11. [\[\] Capture, imprisonment and death](#)

12. However, Governor [Alf Landon](#) had ordered the [Kansas state police](#) to "spare no effort" in hunting down the escapees from Lansing prison. Within two months, only Davis and Wilbur Underhill remained at large. Underhill was gunned down by Oklahoma police on December 30, 1933, while Davis was captured months later. Running out of money while living in [Los Angeles](#), he robbed a store and then kidnapped its owner J.J. Ball. He was quickly arrested and tried on a series of charges including three counts of first-degree burglary, six counts of robbery and two counts of kidnapping.^[1] A second version claims he was captured by police in an apartment-house raid in March 1934.^[4] Davis was convicted and sentenced to life imprisonment in [Folsom State Prison](#) on June 22, 1934.^[5] Kansas authorities declared they would prosecute Davis to finish his prison sentence in Lansing if he ever received parole.^[1]
13. While serving his time in Folsom, he became well-known among the inmates as "Old Deafy". Davis eventually tried to escape after three years inside when, on September 19, 1937, he and six other convicts took the warden and two guards hostage. They held them at knifepoint and attempted to use them to leave the prison but guards opened fire instead. One guard and two prisoners were killed before Davis and the surviving convicts surrendered. All five inmates were convicted of murder, including Davis, and sentenced to death.^[1]

14. Davis was sent to [San Quentin](#) where he remained on [death row](#) for a week before his execution in the [gas chamber](#) on December 16, 1937. A note was found in his cell following his execution which read "*No regrets for Old Ed. All considered, my conscience is now resting easy*".^[1]

[Air Marshal Eduardo Gomes](#) (20 September 1896 – 13 June 1981) was a Brazilian politician and military figure. He was born in [Petrópolis](#), [Rio de Janeiro State](#), [Brazil](#).

Gomes joined the army when he started his course at the [Realengo](#) Military School. He finished this course in 1918 and, in December of the same year, he was transferred to [Curitiba](#). In 1921 he started his course at the Military Aviation School in [Rio de Janeiro](#). In the same year, the presidential campaign divided the [oligarchies](#). Some military officers planned a coup to stop the candidate of the party in power, [Artur da Silva Bernardes](#), if he was elected. However, the imprisonment of ex-president [Hermes Rodrigues da Fonseca](#) and the closing of the Military Club precipitated the start a rebellion on July 5, 1922. The rebels gave up quickly and only 28 resisted inside the [Fort Copacabana](#). Gomes proposed that the rebels leave the fortress and face the government troops. They left, armed, and the diehard rebel group is still known as the *18 of the Copacabana Fortress*.

Gomes was arrested but in 1923 he left prison. At the end of 1924, Gomes tried to join another rebellion in the south of Brazil led by [Luís Carlos Prestes](#). He was arrested in [Santa Catarina](#) and transferred to [Rio de Janeiro](#). He was transferred from one prison to another, until he was sent to [Trindade Island](#).

When [Washington Luís](#) became [President of Brazil](#) in 1926, all the prisoners from Trindade Island were released. The next June, Gomes was nearly arrested again, but he escaped to [Campos](#), in [Rio de Janeiro](#). Two years later, he handed himself in to the authorities and was imprisoned for two years.

In 1930, Gomes was freed, and once again was involved in revolutionary activities—this time with the intent of preventing president-elect [Júlio Prestes](#) from taking office. With the victory of the rebels, the ouster of president [Washington Luís](#), and his replacement by [Getúlio Vargas](#), he remained in high military command and notably led the 1st Aviation Division against a communist uprising in 1937. However, he resigned his military command following the establishment of the [Estado Novo](#) and became an opponent of Vargas.

Gomes was in the group that created the Military Air Post (*Correio Aéreo Militar, CAM*) in 1931. In December 1945 Gomes was the candidate of the anti-Vargas conservative [UDN](#) for [President of Brazil](#), but he lost the election to [Eurico Gaspar Dutra](#). In October 1950 he ran again and lost to [Getúlio Vargas](#).

In 1954 he was the Minister of Aeronautics in the brief administration of [João Café Filho](#) that followed the suicide of President Vargas. He was in favor of the military takeover in 1964 that overthrew [João Goulart](#), a vice-president who had taken office in 1961 upon the resignation of [Jânio Quadros](#). In February 1965, still as Minister of Aeronautics, Gomes signed a controversial decree that shut down [Panair do Brasil](#), the country's flag carrier airline. He remained as Minister of Aeronautics until the end of the government of [Humberto de Alencar Castello Branco](#), when he left public life (1967). Eduardo Gomes died on June 13, 1981.

The **Clovis, New Mexico jail break** refers to an August 24, 2008 [jail escape](#) from the Curry County Adult Detention Center.

Eight inmates, all charged with violent crimes, broke out of the [Clovis, New Mexico](#) jail by climbing up plumbing pipes in a narrow space inside a wall and using handmade instruments to cut a hole in the roof near a skylight. The process took about seven hours, and the escape was the culmination of several days of planning. The inmates gained access to the pipes by stealing a key left in a door lock while jail guards were making plumbing repairs. Three inmates were recaptured within one day after the escape, and a fourth was caught on August 28. Larry McClendon, Jr., who was charged with shooting a store clerk to death and was considered one of the most dangerous escapees, was captured in Texas on October 4; his childhood friend, Michael England, was captured nine days later. One inmate, Edward Salas, was captured in October 2012. He was convicted of murdering a 10-year-old boy.

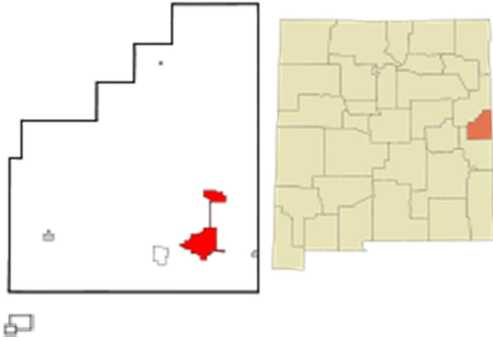
At least four inmates who did not escape were charged with assisting in the jailbreak by attempting to block the escaping inmates from surveillance cameras; authorities said additional inmates may also be charged. Since the prisoners had access to cell doors that were supposed to be locked, investigators are looking into whether the inmates had any assistance from jail staff. Several family members were charged with failing to cooperate with the investigation. Security measures have been revised as a result of the jailbreak and an independent investigation at the facility was conducted. Authorities have cited a long-standing disregard for proper policies and procedures in contributing to the escape, but they do not believe any jail staff deliberately assisted in the escape. The jail break was featured on a September 6 episode of [America's Most Wanted](#).

Jail break

Escape

Eight inmates escaped from the Curry County Adult Detention Center in Clovis on August 24, 2008 by cutting a hole in the roof and leaping off the building. The inmates were:

- **Victor Apodaca**, 39, who pleaded guilty to kidnapping, aggravated battery and drug trafficking.^[1]
- **Louis Chavez**, 18, who had been charged with aggravated burglary, tampering with evidence and extreme cruelty to animals.^[2]
- **Michael England**, 29, who was awaiting a trial on tampering with evidence and felony firearm possession,^[2] in connection with McClendon's alleged murder.^[3]
- **Raynaldo Jeremy Enriquez**, 19, who was indicted for burglary and assault charges.^[4]
- **Larry McClendon, Jr.**, 19, who was charged with shooting a store clerk to death.^[4]
- **Edward Salas**, 21, who was serving a life sentence in prison for the murder of a 10-year-old boy.^{[4][5]}
- **Victor Sotelo**, 26, who was awaited trial on aggravated assault charges for an alleged stabbing.^{[2][6]}
- **Javier Zapata**, 19, was charged with aggravated assault and child abuse for allegedly shooting at his wife while her five children were nearby.^{[2][7]}



The location of [Clovis, New Mexico](#).

The escape was believed to be the culmination of several days of planning.^[8] About one week before the escape, one or more of the inmates stole a [cellular phone](#) that a nurse left on a computer table in the [infirmary](#). Although she canceled the service immediately upon discovering it was missing, the inmates made several calls before it was disconnected, most of which between 2 p.m. and 3 p.m. on August 18. Lolo Salas, father of inmate Edward Salas, was among those called by the inmates. The phone was used by multiple inmates, including some who did not escape. Authorities would later say they believed the calls were used to coordinate parts of the escape.^[9]

According to a later investigation, the inmates likely stole a key that was left hanging in the door lock of a plumbing chase while guards were making plumbing repairs, including fixing a clogged toilet.^[10] Inmates Salas, Enriquez and Chavez shared a pod on a second floor balcony, while the other five men occupied a pod on the ground floor underneath them.^[11] The inmates used the stolen key to unlock a rarely-used door between the two pods, and slipped the key under the door of a neighboring pod. Those inmates unlocked their own pod door and the small door of a plumbing chute, a narrow space behind a common wall of the pods that contained plumbing pipes which led to the roof. The key was then returned to the original lock without the knowledge of the guards. Over the course of the 48 hours leading up to the escape, the inmates regularly traveled back and forth between the two pods to socialize and receive tattoos.^[10]

On August 24, the eight men slipped one at a time into a small door that led to the plumbing chute with the intention of climbing the pipes to the roof area.^[11] At least four inmates who did not escape the jail assisted the eight men in their plan, including Lawrence Kolek, 26; Manuel Lopez, 32; Kevyn Crane, 26; Donald Jones, 27, police allege.^[12] Surveillance camera footage revealed the four men allegedly taking turns attempting to block Salas, Enriquez and Chavez from the view of the cameras as they entered the chute. At one point, two of them stood next to each other in an attempt to conceal the escaping inmates, with one stretching his arms out in a feigned yawn; in another instance, a man held a large blanket behind his shoulders like a cape. No surveillance cameras monitored the lower pod or the roof.^[13] The surveillance footage of the upper pod spanned from 5 p.m. to 9:45 p.m. One of the three men was also observed carrying a white bag into the chute.^[14] At least two inmates not involved in the escape said they heard banging noises, but dismissed it because they believed it was construction work being done elsewhere in the building.^[10]

Once the escaping inmates climbed to the top of the pipe, they used handmade instruments to cut a hole near a skylight. It took about seven hours to cut through the jail's roof.^[8] Investigators believe the tools were fashioned from scraps of metal they found in the plumbing chase that was left behind from previous repair work.^[10] Enriquez later told police he was the one who literally

cut the hole.^[11] Once they were through, some of the inmates used an [evergreen](#) near the building to break their falls as they leapt to street level. Authorities believe most of the men split up early and went different ways because discarded [jail jumpsuits](#) were found at various locations throughout Clovis.^[2] Police, however, speculated that McClendon and England stayed together due to their prior childhood associations.^[4]

Four inmates arrested

The jailbreak was first discovered by Stephen Borders, a patrol officer with the [Clovis Police Department](#), who spotted two [Hispanic](#) males walking casually on 12th Street, two blocks from the jail, wearing orange pants and white tank top T-shirts. Borders recognized the clothing are normal jail garments and turned a spotlight on the men, who reacted with surprise. As Borders turned to drive in their direction, they disappeared into an alley. Borders called to find out if any inmates were missing, then pursued two inmates. Three minutes later, another officer subdued one of them. Dispatch had not yet responded to Borders' inquiry about missing inmates, so he arrested the suspect, later identified as Victor Apodaca, for failing to identify himself when asked for a name. The other inmate escaped.^[15]

Two more inmates were captured on Monday, August 25 as the result of tips from the public. Enriquez was found and arrested without incident in [Lubbock](#), a Texas city about 100 miles from Clovis.^[13] Javier Zapata was captured by [federal marshals](#) late around 11:30 p.m. in [Cactus, Texas](#), about 165 miles from Clovis.^[16] The five inmates remaining at large were considered very dangerous because all had been charged with violent crimes, but authorities did not know whether they had any weapons. Charges related to the escape were also filed against all eight inmates. Police said they were following several tips and leads, and motorists were stopped and questioned at roadblocks on the outskirts of Clovis.^[2]

Federal agencies, including the [United States Marshals Service](#), joined the investigation along with state police and the [sheriff's department](#).^[2] Officials believed some of the at-large escapees could have been in West Texas and the Lubbock area, and began to focus their searches in and around Clovis, Albuquerque and [Amarillo, Texas](#).^[11] Federal marshals started conducting sweeps of areas the escapees were known to frequent, and began looking into families and friends of the inmates.^[5] Melody Carter, McClendon's mother, said marshals searched her house and told her they did not know the escapees' state of mind, so might have to use deadly force when they find them. She told reporters, "They did inform me to be ready just in case they might have to bring him in in a [body bag](#)."^[17] Carter said she was surprised her son would flee from jail because she thought his innocence could be proved at trial, and made a public plea to the press: "I love you and I couldn't stand to lose you. Please turn yourself in."^[4]

Information gathered in [Curry County](#) led Albuquerque police to find the location of a fourth inmate, Victor Sotelo. Sotelo was arrested without incident August 28 at about 11:45 p.m. in an Ortiz Drive duplex.^[5] Investigators traveled to Albuquerque the next day to interview him, then returned him to the Curry County Adult Detention Center along with the three other captured inmates. All four men were placed in 24-hour isolation. Authorities did not disclose whether Sotelo provided any information of value to the investigation.^[14] Investigators said they were expanding the scope of their previous searches, and were optimistic of the direction of the search; Curry County Undersheriff Wesley Waller said, "We're four down, four to go. ... The investigation is going well."^[5]

Additional arrests

Authorities determined the escape plan was too elaborate for the inmates to have carried it out by themselves and felt it would require help from both inside and outside the jail. Investigators began looking into both the inmates and whether any jail staff had a hand in the escapes;^[17] in particular, investigations focused on how the inmates gained access to the locked pod doors.^[11] Based on surveillance footage of the second floor pod, police charged Kolek, Lopez, Crane and Jones with three counts each of assisting escape and three counts each of harboring or aiding a felon for their alleged assistance in the escape. Police said they expected additional arrests as the investigation continues.^[12]

[District Attorney Matthew Chandler](#) stressed anyone assisting the fugitives would face criminal charges: "They're receiving some type of assistance. We want to make it loud and clear today that anyone that assists these fugitives will be held accountable."^[17] Isodoro "Lolo" Salas, father of fugitive Edward Salas, was arrested after authorities said he refused to cooperate with investigators;^[12] Isodoro, an Albuquerque resident, was charged with obstruction of justice,^[17] a probation violation and resisting or obstruction of an officer. Asha Currey, of Clovis, the mother of escapee Michael England's child, was also arrested.^[8]

Sometime after the jailbreak, England's eight-year-old son told his [elementary school guidance counselor](#) he had seen his father at his grandmother's house.^[citation needed] The boy was interviewed by child forensic specialists, and told them he saw both England and McClendon speak to his grandmother, Hester England, and that England asked him to hand over a [Wal-Mart](#) bag so he could pack some clothes. During an initial August 25 interview with Hester England, the Clovis resident denied knowing anything about the escape or the whereabouts of any escapees. She was interviewed again on August 27 and repeated the claims, and even said she would go to the news to ask her son to contact her.^[18] She did so, telling the media, "This is involving our whole family. Please turn yourself in. I'll be there for you no matter what. Call me night and day, I'm there for you."^[12]

After her media statement, Hester England was interviewed again and told of her grandson's confession. She then confessed that she previously lied to officers and had in fact seen the two men. Hester claimed she heard Asha Currey talking with two men outside Hester's home, and said she came outside to find England and McClendon. Hester said she knew they escaped from jail because "it was obvious."^[19] She claimed she told them to turn themselves in, but England said he was not going back to jail. He gathered clothes from the house and left. Hester said she did not tell police because she loved her son, but admitted she should have told them about McClendon, who she knew was charged with murder.^[19]

On August 28, England was arrested on charges of harboring or aiding a felon and obstructing an officer, and was released on a \$6,000 bond.^[18] Hester England and Asha Currey both face up to 12 years in prison.^[20] Tiffany Wallace, McClendon's 18-year-old girlfriend, said she had a dresser drawer full of McClendon's clothing in her bedroom, but that it was gone now. She expects McClendon took them, but she denied having seen him. Wallace was not charged with any crimes.^[19]

America's Most Wanted

Producers of the hit [Fox](#) show [America's Most Wanted](#) contacted Curry County authorities with plans to feature the eight inmates in an August 20 program. Undersheriff Waller said he

expected the show to be "a tremendous help (because) it always generates new tips and new information."^[21] District Attorney Chandler, however, added, "Our goal is to have the show cancelled because we've caught them."^[22] The show was later rescheduled to early September because the producers decided to make it a bigger production than initially planned.^[22]

An in-depth segment aired September 6 focusing on the escape and the four inmates at large, particularly focusing on Salas and his role in the 2005 shooting death of 10-year-old Carlos Perez. Show producer Jenna Naranjo said, "He's been convicted, he's a killer, he's the most dangerous and he has nothing to lose."^[23] Noe Torres, a fugitive also charged with the Perez shooting, was also featured briefly in the segment. A Clovis police detective was flown to the [East Coast](#) studio so he could be on-hand to take any tips or calls resulting from the broadcast.^[23] Undersheriff Waller said several promising leads generated from the show, but declined to discuss them publicly.^[24]

On September 5, Curry County officials increased the reward information leading to the arrests of Salas and McClendon to \$5,000, up from the original \$3,000 and \$2,500, respectively. Reward amounts of \$1,500 for England and \$1,000 for Chavez were kept in place.^[25] A Major Crimes Unit of local police, state police and federal marshals continued running a 24-hour command center into September responding to dozens of tips and calls, many of which they admitted were not fruitful. Patrols were also increased in the Curry County area, state police provided reinforcements from [Quay](#) and [De Baca](#) counties, and [border patrol](#) at the [Mexico–United States border](#) was on "high alert" for the fugitives.^[26]

Three more captures

Larry McClendon Jr. was arrested October 4 near a West 5th Street apartment complex in Amarillo, Texas. McClendon attempted to flee on foot when he first saw the [Amarillo Police Department SWAT officers](#), but was caught after a brief pursuit that ended in the parking lot of an [Ashley Furniture](#) store.^[27] Nobody was injured in the chase. Authorities credited a tip received through *America's Most Wanted*, but McClendon's mother, Melody Carter, said she had also called U.S. marshals and told them he was in the Amarillo area. Carter spoke to her son via phone October 3, when he called her to ask for medication he needed and told her he would come to pick it up on Monday. Carter, who said she cooperated with authorities so that her son would not be injured during his capture, told the press, "He was on the verge of turning himself in. ... He was exhausted and he was tired and he didn't want to go through this no more."^[28] McClendon waived his extradition on October 7 and was to be transferred back to Clovis to face charges.^[29]

Authorities learned McClendon and Michael England had been travelling together and wearing women's attire as a disguise. Shortly after McClendon's capture, England contacted Clovis investigators through an attorney and attempted to negotiate a conditional surrender. He asked police to drop charges against his mother, Hester England, who was arrested after she lied to police about having seen her son after the escape; England also demanded two drug trafficking charges against his brother be dropped and that police return \$3,000 seized by police during his brother's arrest, which England planned to use for legal fees. District Attorney Chandler said authorities believed England was in Clovis or the surrounding area and would continue searching for him, but they were not interested in making such a deal with him.^[30]

England was captured without incident on October 3 around 11:30 a.m. after a tip led Clovis police to an apartment complex in the 500 block of Pile Street. Three additional people were

arrested at the apartment for helping to hide England: Asha Curry, 27; Robin Kirven, 37 and Samantha Wallace, 19. All three were charged with harboring and aiding a fugitive and were held on \$5,000 bonds.^[31]

On December 8, a customer at the Lowe's grocery store in Clovis spotted who they believed to be Louis Chavez in the store and notified police. As police officers pulled into the store's parking lot, they saw Chavez and another male enter a vehicle. They approached the vehicle and found Chavez trying to hide on the floorboard. Although he gave officers a false name, they quickly identified Chavez based on his tattoos and other physical characteristics and arrested him.^[32]

During questioning, Chavez told police he had been hiding in Texas for some time and had returned to Clovis only a few hours before his capture, although police believe he had returned to the city about a week prior. Chavez claimed he and the other escapees went their separate ways after the escape and that he did not know the location of Edward Salas, the remaining escapee. But investigators said they had information that contradicted those statements, including evidence that Chavez and Sala were together for at least some time after the escape. Police charged Anthony Lanaro, 24, the male driver of the vehicle with aiding and abetting a felon, but the driver claimed he did not personally know Chavez and was only giving him a ride after having picked him up recently in Clovis.^[33]

Final capture

One inmate, Edward Salas, remained at large long after the jail break. In 2011, he was placed on the [U.S. Marshals Service 15 Most Wanted List](#). He was captured in [Mexico](#) in October 2012, and is awaiting extradition to New Mexico.

Security responses and prosecutions

The Curry County Adult Detention Center contained 188 inmates at the time of the jailbreak, including 141 males and 47 females.^[34] [County Manager](#) Lance Pyle said he had known since early 2008 that video surveillance at the jail was in need of repairs and revamping. At the time of the jailbreak there were 24 cameras at the facility, three of which outside. Pyle said footage was only stored for a few days, visibility was poor, blind spots exist and additional cameras were needed. On August 27, Curry County [commissioners](#) approved a bid for a \$166,000 system that would increase the number of cameras to 76, with 13 more outside.^[35] A jail management board was implemented to oversee the facility and sheriff department officials were temporarily reassigned to assist jail administrators with facility management. Visiting privileges for all inmates were suspended after the escape, but were reinstated in early September.^[41] [Educational programs](#), along with religious and library services, were suspended in light of the escape because officials said prisoners could smuggle contraband and manipulate teachers. The programs were already under review prior to the escape, but jail officials said they would still eventually be reinstated because they were believed to curb [recidivism](#).^[35]

County commissioners began seeking an architect to review other changes at the jail after the escape. Officials said there was a need for additional security doors and were several issues with the existing doors, intercom systems and the control board that operates doors. Officials said inmates regularly found creative ways to keep their cell doors from being closed, including using [dominoes](#) and wet [toilet paper](#). Doors that had been removed from the women's annex cells in

2007 were reinstalled in September, and additional security and officials were installed to watch the female inmates. Officials also installed iron bars and a locked door as a boundary between detention officers and inmates, in place of what used to be a simple line on the floor.^[36] Eight new officers were hired by October and officials said the training process for new guards was improved. Officer stations were designed to allow 360 degree visibility of the pods and windows were covered with one-way tint so the prisoners could not see outside. Routine searches by [drug-sniffing dogs](#) were also implemented at the jail.^[37]

[] Independent investigation of the jail

As of mid-September, police, jail and county officials had failed to address why detention officers were not aware of the escape even though it took about seven hours to complete. No detention center employees have been disciplined, fired, placed on leave or resigned.^[14] An independent assessment of the detention center by the [New Mexico Association of Counties](#) was ordered in response to the escape, and District Attorney Chandler said one of the driving factors would be whether any jail employees were criminally liable. Chandler assured the public any uncovered criminal activity would result in charges: "I am pretty bothered by the fact that these guys we caught the first time are out, that our victims can't sleep comfortably and that the community (has had to be on alert)."^[38]

A preliminary assessment was provided to the county commissioners at their September 3 meeting, but although they spent more than two-and-a-half hours discussing them in a closed executive session with consultants, they declined to discuss them with the public or the press. County Manager Lance Pyle said he would not discuss any preliminary findings, but would make public any policies or procedures that are changed or items that require monetary commitment.^[34] The Clovis News Journal submitted a formal public information request for the assessment, but county officials denied in on September 9, claiming the assessment was provided to the county attorney, and that [attorney-client privilege](#) exempted it from the [Public Records Act](#). Leonard DeLayo, executive director of the [New Mexico Foundation for Open Government](#), "said the county was "off base"^[39] and the refusal to hand over the document "is a serious violation of the spirit and intent of open government."^[39]

Pyle said detention experts and state police were assessing the jail and an action plan would be put into place after the assessment was completed.^[14] Although Chandler declined to identify specifics of the preliminary assessment, he said it provided some new insights, including how the inmates were able to move freely between two pods for up to 48 hours before the escape. However, he also said it left other questions unanswered, including how the inmates obtained the instruments to cut the hole in the roof. Members of the region's Major Crimes Unit were asked to reinterview inmates and detention officers in response to those unanswered questions.^[38] As of October, county officials continued to decline publicly commenting on the assessment, citing personnel issues.^[10]

Dan Aguilar, a special agent with Chandler's office compiled an investigative report in late September which indicated the inmates stole a key that guards left hanging in a door lock while making plumbing repairs. The detention officers interviewed did not know if the key was left in the door, but at least one said it was possible. Chandler blamed the escape on "complacency" and "a failure to pay attention to detail."^[10] The report found pod checks scheduled every hour were not completed during the weekend leading up to the escape due to staffing shortages. It also found guards rarely entered the pods where prisoners were housed, and cell doors within the pods designed to be locked down at night did not work for several months, allowing inmates free run of the pods. Chandler said he hopes to see the jail's issues corrected, and said

procedures and policies that should have been followed "have been thrown to the wind for quite some time."^[10]

Chandler said the report did not find that the inmates received intentional help from jail staff,^[10] but an inmate told New Mexico State Police in a separate investigative report that at least one guard had assisted in the escape. Chandler, however, maintained all other interviews and evidence indicated the contrary, and said the inmate who made the accusation had a "history of conflict"^[9] with the guard. issued a separate investigative report in early October which revealed the inmates stole a cellular phone from a nurse in the jail's infirmary and used it to place several calls in the week before the escape. Unlike phone calls made from then jail's land lines, the cellular phone conversations were not recorded. Therefore, although authorities said they strongly believe some of the calls involved planning the escape, they were unable to determine the exact nature of the calls. The phone was later found in the possession of an inmate who did not escape.^[9]

[] Criminal charges

On September 25, 2008, Javier Zapata and Enriquez were each charged with escape from jail, conspiracy to escape from jail and criminal damage to property over \$1,000. Enriquez was committed to prison in lieu of \$125,000 cash-only bail due to his history of violent crimes, and faces more than four additional years in prison for his role in the escape.^[40] Zapata pleaded guilty and was sentenced to 18 additional months in prison on March 3, 2009,^[41] but the sentence was suspended on March 22.^[42]

Lawrence Kolek, Manuel Lopez and Kevyn Crane were also arraigned on September 25 for their alleged roles in helping the inmates escape. The three men face a possible nine years in prison; authorities said the penalty is steep because one of the escapees, Salas, was a convicted murderer. Bonds for Lopez and Kolek were set at \$25,000 cash-only, and \$15,000 cash-only for Crane.^[40]

On January 14, 2009, Victor Apodaca pleaded guilty to one count of escape from custody. He was sentenced to two-and-a-half more years in prison, which will commence following the completion of his existing 15-year sentence on unrelated charges. Apodaca was sentenced as a habitual offender.^[43]

In January 2009, District Attorney Matt Chandler also charged Velma Valdez, 44, and Abundio Valdez, 34, with two counts each of harboring a felon. Chandler said upon arresting Luiz Chavez, authorities learned Chavez and Edward Salas and Luis Chavez were transported to [Friona](#) in West Texas in the trunk of Abundio Valdez, who along with Velma gave them supplies shortly after their escape.^[44] Velma Valdez was related to Salas by marriage.^[44] The car took back roads during the escape to avoid roadblocks set by police. Abundio pleaded guilty and was sentenced to 15 years in prison on May 7, 2009.^[45]

[] External links

- [Clovis News Journal's jailbreak section](#)

[] Notes and references

1. ^ [Johnson, Sharna](#) (August 27, 2008). "[Jail escape sentenced to 15 years](#)". *Clovis News Journal*. Retrieved November 9, 2009.
2. ^ [a b c d e f g](#) Blaney, Betsy. "[8 inmates escape from NM jail, including murdered](#)." *Associated Press*, August 25, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.^{[[dead link](#)]}
3. ^ [Johnson, Sharna](#) (March 11, 2008). "[Police believe shooting death drug-related](#)". *Clovis News Journal*. Retrieved November 9, 2009.
4. ^ [a b c d e](#) McCormick, Annie. "[Charges filed in escape](#)." *KRQE*, August 27, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
5. ^ [a b c d](#) Johnson, Sharna. "[Fourth escapee captured late Thursday](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, August 29, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
6. ^ "[Stabbing suspect sought](#)". *Clovis News Journal*. June 13, 2008. Retrieved November 9, 2009.
7. ^ "[Arrest warrant issued for Texico man](#)". *Clovis News Journal*. June 9, 2008. Retrieved November 9, 2009.
8. ^ [a b c](#) Blaney, Betsy. "[Arrests made in Curry County escape](#)." *Associated Press*, August 27, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
9. ^ [a b c](#) Johnson, Sharna. "[State police report: Escapees had access to cell phone](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, October 9, 2008. Retrieved on October 10, 2008.
10. ^ [a b c d e f g h](#) Johnson, Sharna. "[Report: Escaped inmates had key](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, September 23, 2008. Retrieved on September 23, 2008.
11. ^ [a b c d e](#) Blaney, Betsy. "[AP: Four inmates charged with aiding escape](#)." *Associated Press*, August 27, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
12. ^ [a b c d](#) Johnson, Sharna. "[Police arrest family, friends of escapees](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, August 27, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
13. ^ [a b c](#) Johnson, Sharna. "[Officials: Escape collaborative effort](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, August 27, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
14. ^ [a b c d e](#) Johnson, Sharna. "[County manager: Jail changes in works](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, August 30, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
15. ^ "[Incident report on arrest of Victor Apodaca](#)." "[Police report on escape discovery](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, August 27, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
16. ^ Blaney, Betsy. "[Search on for 5 inmates who escaped from NM jail](#)." *Associated Press*, August 26, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.^{[[dead link](#)]}
17. ^ [a b c d](#) Garate, Jessica. "[Inmates, relatives charged in jailbreak](#)." *KRQE*, August 27, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
18. ^ [a b](#) Johnson, Sharna. "[Mother of escaped inmate arrested](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, August 28, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
19. ^ [a b c](#) "[Arrest affidavit for Hester England](#)." "[Arrest affidavit for escapee's mother, Hester England](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, August 28, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
20. ^ "[Police arrest fugitive's mother](#)." *KOB-TV*, August 28, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
21. ^ "[Curry County deputies keep up search for 5 inmates](#)." *Associated Press*, August 28, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
22. ^ [a b](#) Johnson, Sharna. "[America's Most Wanted air date changed](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, August 29, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
23. ^ [a b](#) Johnson, Sharna. "['America's Most Wanted' to air inmate escape Saturday](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, September 3, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
24. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[District attorney reviewing state police escape report](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, September 11, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
25. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Reward leading to fugitives' capture increased](#)." *Clovis News Journal*, September 5, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.

26. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Search for escapees ongoing.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, September 1, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
27. ^ "[Escaped inmate caught!](#)" *KFDA-TV*, October 4, 2008. Retrieved on October 8, 2008.
28. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Jail escapee caught in Amarillo.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, October 4, 2008. Retrieved on October 8, 2008.
29. ^ Carter, Patti. "[Inmate goes back to Clovis.](#)" *KFDA-TV*, October 7, 2008. Retrieved on October 8, 2008.
30. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Escapee attempting to negotiate surrender.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, October 10, 2008. Retrieved on October 11, 2008.
31. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Escapee Michael England captured in Clovis.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, October 13, 2008. Retrieved on October 14, 2008.
32. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Police capture escapee Louis Chavez.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, December 8, 2008. Retrieved on December 9, 2008.
33. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Search for final escapee continues.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, December 9, 2008. Retrieved on December 9, 2008.
34. ^ ^a ^b Johnson, Sharna. "[County officials decline comment on jail assessment.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, September 3, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
35. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Inmate educational programs temporarily halted.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, September 8, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
36. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Jail to get security boost.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, September 16, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
37. ^ Johnson, Sharna. "[Sheriff's office deploys newest drug dog.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, October 21, 2008. Retrieved on October 25, 2008.
38. ^ ^a ^b Johnson, Sharna. "[DA: Escape investigation 'progressing.'](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, September 17, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
39. ^ ^a ^b Johnson, Sharna. "[County declines to release jail assessment.](#)" *Clovis News Journal*, September 10, 2008. Retrieved on September 21, 2008.
40. ^ ^a ^b Johnson, Sharna (September 25, 2008). "[Two of four jail escapees arraigned](#)". *Clovis News Journal*. Retrieved October 27, 2008.
41. ^ This information can be found by searching case number D-905-CR-200800597 on [the official New Mexico Courts case lookup site](#). This link and case number were listed in a [Clovis News Journal story](#), which is also used as a reference in this article. Accessed May 14, 2009. [Archived](#) June 1, 2009.
42. ^ "[March 22, 2009 Dispositions](#)". *Clovis News Journal*. March 21, 2009. [Archived](#) from the original on June 1, 2009. Retrieved May 13, 2009.
43. ^ "[Jail escapee sentenced](#)". *Clovis News Journal*. January 15, 2009. Retrieved May 13, 2009.
44. ^ ^a ^b "[Clovis couple charged with aiding escapees](#)". *MSNBC*. January 19, 2009. Retrieved January 28, 2009.
45. ^ "[Clovis man sentenced 15 years for aiding escapees](#)". *Clovis News Journal*. May 7, 2009. Retrieved May 13, 2009.
2. In prison, Bembenek was hardly a model inmate, constantly bragging about how she was a celebrity inmate that deserved special treatment, while thinking about escape. She earned a bachelor's degree from the [University of Wisconsin–Parkside](#) and helped found a prisoners' newspaper.^[13] She also met and became engaged to Dominic Gugliatto, who had been visiting another inmate. On July 15, 1990, she escaped from prison with Gugliatto's help.^[14] Her escape reignited publicity surrounding her case, and she became something of a folk hero. A song was written about her, and T-shirts were sold with the slogan "Run, Bambi, Run".^[15]
3. She fled with Gugliatto to [Thunder Bay, Ontario, Canada](#), while sensational stories about their relationship swirled through American [tabloids](#).^[16] The couple spent three months

as fugitives before being apprehended. Gugliatto was sentenced to one year in prison for his role in the escape.^[16] Bembenek, however, sought refugee status in Canada, claiming that she was being persecuted by a conspiracy between the police department and the judicial system in Wisconsin. The Canadian government showed some sympathy for her case, and before returning her to Wisconsin, obtained a commitment that Milwaukee officials would conduct a judicial review of her case. The review did not find evidence of crimes by police or prosecutors, but detailed seven major police blunders which had occurred during the Christine Schultz murder investigation, and she won the right to a new trial. Rather than risk a second conviction, however, Bembenek pleaded [no contest](#) to second-degree murder and received a reduced sentence which was commuted to time served. She was released from prison in November 1992, having served a little over ten years.^[17]

4. [] Life after prison

5. Bembenek wrote a book about her experience, titled *Woman on Trial*.^[18] After her release, she had various legal and personal problems. She was arrested again on marijuana possession charges and filed for bankruptcy, as well as developing [hepatitis C](#) and other health problems. She also admitted to being an [alcoholic](#). She legally changed her name to **Laurie Bembenek** in 1994.
6. In the early morning hours of Sunday, February 25, 1990, he was one of the perpetrators of an infamous act of violence in Belgrade's [Mažestik Hotel](#). Along with his best friend at the time Dragan "Gagi" Nikolić, heavily armed Kristijan burst into the hotel's disco bar looking for a rival gangster. Since they didn't find him, 24-year-old Gagi and 20-year-old Kristijan shot up and ransacked the place, pretty much destroying it in the process before fleeing the scene.^[7] Since the hotel's disco bar was a favourite mobster hangout, the incident gained them quite a bit of notoriety in the underworld considering that many prominent and powerful mob figures were there at the time of the shooting.^{[2][8]}
7. To escape prosecution in Serbia, Kristijan went back to Germany, but soon found himself serving a three-year sentence in [Düsseldorf](#). In 1993, German authorities extradited him back to Serbia where he was wanted for a variety of criminal acts from the 1988–1990 period.^[5]
8. He was friends with [Milorad Ulemek](#) Aka Legija and has said that though he maintained relations with Arkan through Legija, he was not "one of Arkan's". When he escaped from the Belgrade court, Legija sent him to [Erduť](#) to the headquarters of the [Serbian Volunteer Guard](#) (*Arkanovi Tigrovi*), there he was asked to fight for Arkan, but Kristijan has said that he declined. Arkan asked Kristijan to assassinate Serbian politician Seselj, but he refused.^[3] Kristijan had the biggest golden necklace in Belgrade at 790 grams, Arkan then minted a necklace of 1 kilo and Kristijan ended up having a 2,860 grams of necklace with the inscription of "KRISTIĀAN" with an Orthodox cross of 1200 grams. He has said that the two were rivals.^[4]
9. He married and had a son while in Belgrade. He left Serbia for [Greece](#) to avoid prison. There he became the leader of a Yugoslav group that worked in Athens; Safet Buljuku and [Milorad Hauk](#) were two of his companions.^[6]
10. Kristijan Golubović was featured in a 1996 documentary about Serbia's underworld called [Vidimo se u ćitulji](#) that was filmed 1994–1996. He is one of only a few individuals, out of dozens featured in the film, still alive today.

11. [] 2000s

12. In 2002 he escaped from Malandrino, a [Greek](#) prison where he was sentenced to 14 and a half years for stealing two [Mercedes-Benz](#) cars, and an armed robbery.^[2] During his time in prison, he maintained a relationship with [Źeljko RaŹnatović](#)'s daughter Anđela

- Ražnatović, he said he wanted to marry her but the relation was short.^[9] He was flown with Jat airlines to Serbia in April 2003 because of charges from 1993.^[10]
13. He was arrested in [Operation Sablja](#), the crackdown on organized crime in Serbia following the [Prime Minister Zoran Đinđić](#)'s assassination by his friend Legija. He was arrested for being the leader of a criminal group that extorted 14,000 € from a businessman from [Sremska Mitrovica](#); the sentence was initially 6 years, but the case ended with 1 and a half year.^[2]
 14. On the night of March 17, 2004, Kristijan and famous Serbian [turbo-folk](#) singer [Ceca Ražnatović](#) (widow of murdered [Željko Ražnatović Arkan](#)) gathered protesters in front of the government building in Belgrade to rally against the [situation in Kosovo](#) where more than 36 [Serbian Orthodox churches](#) had been burned the same day in an outbreak of organized ethnic [Albanian](#) violence against the [Serb](#) civilians in the province.
 15. He was sentenced on December 12, 2005 in the Special court of Belgrade on illegal arms and racketeering charges. He had from April to June 2005 tried to extort 15,000 € from an ex-police from Sremska Mitrovica and the extortion of 3,000 € and stealing of gold jewelry from married couple and jewellers from [Lazarevac](#). He was first sentenced to 6 years but the court settled at 4.5 years in [Požarevac](#).^{[11][12]} He started dating Suzana Milojković in the same month, whom he married on September 29, 2006 in prison. His wife came in Lincoln limousines followed by several [Jeeps](#) when she visited.^[11] In January 2008, while still being imprisoned, his wife launched his own website, [www.kristijangolubovic.net](#), which includes his biography, photos, and even videos from the prison, taken by [camera phone](#).
 16. On January 9, 2009, he was released from the [Požarevac](#) prison where he had spent 4.5 years.^[11] He made a rap song together with [Elitni odredi](#) called "Jack i Chivas" ([Jack Daniels](#) and [Chivas Regal](#)). He was denied entry to [Croatia](#) in 2009 when he was going to fight in the "Millenium Fighting Challenge" MMA event held in [Split](#), the controversial mayor [Zeljko Kerum](#) denied his entrance and police were ready to stop Kristijan if he would enter Croatia. Kerum said "He has a history of Crime and suspicious relations with the criminal world is not welcomed to Split or Croatia, nor be a Sport example".^{[13][14]}
 17. On January 16, 2010, Kristijan, his mother and five other members of his criminal group were arrested in Belgrade on charges of narcotics trade in Novi Pazar and Belgrade starting in August 2009. He and his two companions were intercepted at a drug exchange of 25 grams of heroin when they exited [Saint Mark's Church](#).^{[11][15]} He had the previous week been stopped by police who found 10 grams of heroin in his [Toyota Land Cruiser](#). His friend in the car claimed the heroin was his and Kristijan was in arrest for 4 hours before being set free, his friend is awaiting trial. The police then searched his home in [Višnjica](#) and found a gun and ammunition without serials, in his mother house a Beretta was found.^[11] He is to be sentenced for narcotics trade, illegal arms and explosive possession. They are all currently (April) in the central prison of Belgrade. He tried [suicide by hanging](#) in his cell the days following the arrest, the motive of the [suicide attempt](#) was that he felt devastated that he had caused the arrest of his mother who had nothing to do with this. She is quoted as having said "I should have aborted you". He shares cells with "Elez gang"-leader Darko Elez and [Zemun clan](#) hitman Nikola Bajić. His wife was briefly held in March for the find of a land mine in her car.^{[2][16][17][18]} In December 2010 he was sentenced to seven years.
 18. **Hans Gruyters** (1925?–1980) was a [Dutch](#) criminal. In the 1950s, he was a [car salesman](#) in [Noord-Brabant](#), Netherlands. His nickname was the *Black Rider*, because he once appeared completely dressed in black at a party.

19. On 15 November 1954, he shot J. van Dieten, a [post office](#) employee in [Ravenstein](#). He was 29 at the time, and had already been [convicted](#) six times for smaller offences. On 16 November, he robbed a [bank](#) and on December 31 he broke into the [vicar's](#) house in [Volkel](#), after which he ran over a man on a [bike](#) and killed him in the process. By then, the police were on his trail, but this did not prevent him from trying to rob the bank in [Oss](#) some days later. He was eventually arrested on January 5, 1955, and sentenced to fifteen years in prison in 1956. He escaped in 1957 but was soon found and returned to his cell. He was released in 1966. Gruyters died in 1980 after a fall from his horse.
20. **Herbertus Bikker** (born 15 July 1915 in [Wijngaarden](#), [South Holland](#) – died 1 November 2008 in [Haspe](#), Germany), also known as *De Beul van Ommen* ("The Butcher of Ommen"), was a [Dutch war criminal](#). He was born in the region of [Alblasserwaard](#).
21. Bikker was a member of the [Waffen-SS](#). In this function he served as a guard at the prison and work camp [Erika](#) near [Ommen](#). He received his nickname due to his brutal behaviour at the prison camp.
22. Bikker is the alleged murderer of [Dutch resistance](#) fighter [Jan Houtman](#) who was killed, twenty-seven years old, on 17 November 1944.
23. Following the end of [World War II](#), he was sentenced to death by a Dutch court. Together with [Klaas Carel Faber](#), [Sander Borgers](#) and four other convicted war criminals, he managed to escape from prison in [Breda](#) on 26 December 1952 and fled to [Germany](#), crossing the border at [Ubbergen](#) near [Cleves](#). Settling in the city of [Hagen](#), he lived in Germany undetected until 1995. Following a decree from 1943, foreign members of the Waffen-SS automatically received German nationality. Germany does not extradite its own nationals.
24. Finally, being one of the few surviving war criminals, he was taken to court after all in Germany. Bikker's only chance to evade prosecution and trial was to claim [diminished responsibility](#) due to illness. When a doctor attested Bikker's limited responsibility, his case came to court. However, following a breakdown and fainting in court, [neurologists](#) advised against Bikker standing trial due illness. Court was adjourned on 2 February 2004.
25. Bikker lived in Hagen as a pensioner until his death, which was not made public until April 2009.

Ilpo Tapio Larha (19 July 1968 in [Helsinki](#), [Finland](#) – 17 March 1994 in [Lahti](#), [Finland](#)) was a [Finnish criminal](#).

Larha became famous when he committed the [contract murder](#) of 77-year-old crippled businessman Wilhelm Högsten in [Jollas](#), a suburb of [Helsinki](#), on 24 April 1992. Larha was hired by Högsten's 47-year-old son Fred. Larha, Högsten and 31-year-old businessman Hannu Ratia, who drove Larha to the site of the murder, were sentenced to [life in prison](#).

On 25 February 1994 Larha escaped from a Helsinki state prison with 37-year-old Kullervo Haikas, alias Pertti Ruokolainen, who had been serving a 13-year sentence for [drug crimes](#).

On 1 March, Larha robbed a [bank](#) in [Pitäjänmäki](#), nearly killing a [cashier](#).

After this, Larha and Haikas barricaded themselves with two hostages in an [apartment](#) in [Lahti](#). Police discovered them on 15 March. This started a [siege](#) that lasted for 55 hours. While Haikas and the hostages were rescued, Larha committed suicide on 17 March 1994, shooting himself simultaneously with two handguns.

Finland's president [Tarja Halonen pardoned](#) Hannu Ratia in the end of 2005 and Fred Högsten in May 2006.

[] External links

- [Punainen Lanka \(Red Yarn\) 27 November 2001: Police psychologist Lasse Nurmi speaks about Ilpo Larha \(Finnish\)](#)
- James Earl Ray came from a poor family in [Alton, Illinois](#), and left school at age 15. He joined the [US Army](#) at the close of [World War II](#) and served in [Germany](#).
- **Initial convictions and first escape from prison**
- He was convicted of his first crime, a [burglary](#) in [California](#), in 1949. In 1952 he served two years for [armed robbery](#) of a taxi driver in [Illinois](#). In 1955, he was convicted of [mail fraud](#) after stealing [money orders](#) in [Hannibal, Missouri](#), and then forging them to take a trip to Florida. He served three years at [Leavenworth Federal Penitentiary](#). In 1959 he was caught stealing \$120 in an armed robbery of a St. Louis [Kroger](#) store.^[2] Ray was sentenced to twenty years in prison for repeated offenses. He escaped from the [Missouri State Penitentiary](#) in 1967 by hiding in a truck transporting bread from the prison bakery.^[3]
- **Activity in 1967**
- Following his escape, Ray stayed on the move, going first to [St. Louis](#) and then on to [Chicago](#), [Toronto](#), [Montreal](#), and [Birmingham](#). When he got to [Alabama](#), Ray stayed long enough to buy a 1966 [Ford Mustang](#) and get an Alabama driver's license. He then drove to [Mexico](#), stopping in [Acapulco](#) before settling down in [Puerto Vallarta](#) on October 19, 1967.^[4] While in Mexico, Ray, using the alias Eric Starvo Galt, attempted to establish himself as a porn director. Using mail-ordered equipment, he filmed and photographed local prostitutes. Frustrated with his results and jilted by the prostitute he had formed a relationship with, Ray left Mexico around November 16, 1967.^[5]
- Ray arrived in [Los Angeles](#) on November 19. While in L.A., Ray attended a local bartending school and took dance lessons.^[6] His chief interest, however, was the [George Wallace presidential campaign](#). Ray harbored a strong prejudice against African Americans and was quickly drawn to Wallace's [segregationist](#) platform. He spent much of his time in Los Angeles volunteering at the Wallace campaign headquarters in North Hollywood.^[7] He also developed an interest in [Rhodesia](#), where [Ian Smith's white minority](#) regime was in power. He wrote to the American-Southern Africa Council on December 28, 1967, stating, "My reason for writing is that I am considering immigrating to Rhodesia."^[8] The idea of living in Rhodesia stayed with Ray, and it would be his intended destination when he went on the run after [Martin Luther King Jr.'s assassination](#).
- **Activity in early 1968**
- On March 5, 1968, Ray underwent a [rhinoplasty](#), performed by Dr. Russell Hadley.^[9] On March 18, 1968, Ray left Los Angeles and began a cross-country drive to [Atlanta, Georgia](#).^[10]
- Arriving in Atlanta on March 24, Ray checked into a rooming house.^[11] He eventually bought a map of the city. [FBI](#) agents would later find this map when they searched the room in which he was staying in Atlanta. On the map, the locations of the church and residence of Martin Luther King Jr. were allegedly circled.^[12] However, according to [Dr. William Pepper](#), "The Atlanta map is nowhere related to Dr. King's residence. It is three oblong circles that covered general areas."^[13]
- Ray was soon on the road again, and drove his Mustang to [Birmingham, Alabama](#). There, on March 30, 1968, he bought a [Remington](#) Gamemaster 760 .30-06-caliber rifle and a box of 20 cartridges from the Aeromarine Supply Company. He also bought a Redfield

2x7 [scope](#), which he had mounted to the rifle. He told the store clerks that he was going on a hunting trip with his brother. Ray had continued using the Galt [alias](#) after his stint in Mexico, but when he made this purchase, he gave his name as Harvey Lowmeyer.^[14]

- After buying the rifle and accessories, Ray drove back to Atlanta. An avid newspaper reader, Ray passed his time reading the [Atlanta Constitution](#). The paper reported King's planned return trip to [Memphis, Tennessee](#), which was scheduled for April 1, 1968. On April 2, 1968, Ray packed a bag and drove to Memphis.^[15]
- **Assassination of Martin Luther King, Jr.**
- *Main article:* [Assassination of Martin Luther King, Jr.](#)



- 
- F.B.I. most wanted fugitive poster of James Earl Ray



- The [Lorraine Motel](#), now known as the [National Civil Rights Museum](#), where King was assassinated
- [Martin Luther King](#) was shot and killed by a sniper on April 4, 1968, while standing on the second-floor balcony of the [Lorraine Motel](#) in [Memphis, Tennessee](#).

- **Capture and trial**

- Ray fled north to Toronto, Ontario, where he hid out for a month and acquired a Canadian passport under the false name of Ramon George Sneyd.^[16] On June 8, 1968, a little more than two months after King's death, Ray was captured at [London's Heathrow Airport](#) while trying to leave the [United Kingdom](#) on the false [Canadian passport](#). At check-in the ticket agent noticed the name on his passport -- Sneyd -- was on a Royal Canadian Mounted Police watchlist.^[17] At the airport, officials noticed that Ray carried another passport under a second name. The UK quickly [extradited](#) Ray to [Tennessee](#), where he was charged with King's [murder](#). He confessed to the crime on March 10, 1969, and after pleading guilty was sentenced to 99 years in prison.^[18]

- **Denial of confession**

- Three days later, he recanted his confession. Ray had entered a [guilty plea](#) on the advice of his attorney, [Percy Foreman](#), in order to avoid a potential trial conviction, which could have led to a [sentence of death](#). The method of execution in Tennessee at the time would have been [electrocution](#).
- Ray fired Foreman as his attorney and derisively called him "Percy Fourflusher," thereafter. Ray began claiming that a man he had met in [Montreal](#), who used the alias "Raul", had been deeply involved. Instead he asserted that he did not "personally shoot Dr. King," but may have been, "partially responsible without knowing it," hinting at a [conspiracy](#). Ray sold this version of King's assassination and his own flight to [William Bradford Huie](#). Huie investigated this story and discovered Ray sometimes lied. Ray told Huie he purposefully left the rifle with his fingerprints on it in plain sight because he wanted to become a famous criminal. Ray was convinced he was so smart that he would not be caught.^[1] He believed Governor of Alabama [George Wallace](#) would soon be elected President, and Ray would only be confined for a short time.^[1] He spent the remainder of his life unsuccessfully attempting to withdraw his guilty plea and secure a trial.
- **Second escape from prison**
- On June 11, 1977, Ray made his second appearance on the [FBI Most Wanted Fugitives list](#), this time as the 351st entry. He and six other convicts had escaped from [Brushy Mountain State Penitentiary](#) in [Petros, Tennessee](#), on June 10, 1977. They were recaptured on June 13, three days later, and returned to prison.^[19] A year was added to Ray's previous sentence, to total 100 years.

James Neil Tucker (January 12, 1957 – May 28, 2004) was a convicted [murderer](#) executed by the [U.S. state](#) of [South Carolina](#) by means of the [electric chair](#). The electric chair would not be used again in the United States until July 20, 2006, in the state of Virginia. He had been convicted of the murders of Rosa Lee Dolly Oakley and Shannon Lynn Mellon.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Childhood and life before murders](#)
- [2 The murders](#)
- [3 Trial and appeals](#)
- [4 Execution](#)
- [5 See also](#)
- [6 References](#)

[] Childhood and life before murders

Tucker was born in [Utah](#), the older of two children. After his mother [divorced](#), she remarried to a man with three children of his own. A sixth child came from this marriage. Tucker claimed during his trial and appeals that his stepfather had punished him severely, and as a youth, Tucker had committed petty crimes in an attempt to be taken out of the home by the authorities.

In 1974, Tucker was convicted of [raping](#) an eight-year-old girl and an 83-year-old woman. He received a [sentence](#) of one to 15 years from the Salt Lake County District Court. Four years later he was again before the courts, this time for escape and [theft](#), receiving another one to 15 years sentence. He would spend most of his adult life in jail, escaping a total of three times. His longest time as a [fugitive](#) was five years in the 1980s.

While in prison, he became friends with a fellow inmate from South Carolina. The two went to [Calhoun County, South Carolina](#), where in 1984 they worked at the Webb Carroll's Training Center, a horse farm east of [St. Matthews](#). He went back into prison in [Spartanburg County](#) after being arrested for [housebreaking](#) and [larceny](#). He was sentenced to a 10-year sentence. After being released in 1988, he was sent back to Utah where he received another one to 15 year sentence for escaping prison. On being released in March 1992, Tucker returned to South Carolina. He married his [pregnant](#) girlfriend, Marcia, in [Sumter](#). After he was sentenced to death, she divorced him.

Escape

Parsons escaped from the [Ross County](#) jail on Saturday, July 29, 2006. He asked his mother for help in escaping, but she was arrested before plans could be made. Parsons made a rope from bedsheets, newspaper and toilet paper, which he hid behind a brick in the wall of his cell. He used toothpaste and green and blue Jolly Ranchers to match the paint on the wall to disguise the broken mortar around the loose brick, which Parsons had carved out with a piece of metal from an air vent in his jail cell.

As a fugitive, he was twice featured on the [Fox](#) television show [America's Most Wanted](#). He appeared for a third time on that program on September 30, 2006, when he became the 484th fugitive listed on the [FBI Ten Most Wanted Fugitives list](#).^[2] After his escape there were numerous reported sightings of Parsons in heavily wooded areas near Chillicothe.

[National Geographic Channel](#) transmitted the history of the escapes, in the [documentary](#) of show [Breakout](#),^[3] [Ohio's Most Wanted](#).^[4]

[] Capture

Parsons was captured in eastern Chillicothe on October 19, 2006. He was arrested without incident by members of the Ross County Tactical Assault Team at approximately 12:20 pm at a small shack near the Chillicothe city limits. A number of law enforcement tactical units converged on the location and planned the arrest to avoid injury to any law enforcement personnel or to Parsons.^[5] After being booked into the Ross County jail, Parsons was transferred to the [Pickaway Correctional Institution](#) in [Orient](#), southwest of [Columbus, Ohio](#).^[6]

Parsons, who led local, state and national law enforcement on a three-month chase after his escape, stood before Judge Jhan Corzine in Ross County Common Pleas Court shortly after 3 pm

and pleaded guilty to four counts of aggravated [murder](#) and other charges. He was sentenced to life in prison without parole.^[z] Parsons is currently incarcerated at [Ohio State Penitentiary](#).

[] References

1. [^] ["AMW Capture data file for John Warren Parsons"](#).
2. [^] ["John W. Parsons placed on the ten most wanted fugitives list"](#). *Press Release, Cincinnati Division*. FBI. September 30, 2006.
3. [^] [Breakout - Ohio's most wanted](#)
4. [^] [Breakout \(TV series 2010\) Ohio's Most Wanted \(#1.3\)](#)
5. [^] ["FBI ten most wanted fugitive John W. Parsons apprehended at \[\[Chillicothe, Ohio\]\]"](#). *National Press Release*. FBI. October 19, 2006. Wikilink embedded in URL title ([help](#))
6. [^] ["John Parsons Captured in Ross County"](#). *WBNS-TV*. October 19, 2006.
7. [^] ["John Parsons Pleaded Guilty to Murder"](#). Ohio News Now.

Kapllan Murat (born [Italy](#), May 25, 1962) is a [Belgian criminal](#) of [Albanian](#) descent. He is nicknamed "Getaway King" (*le roi de l'évasion* or *ontsnappingskoning*), for his multiple successful prison escapes. He was a driver for the notorious [Haemers gang](#), who kidnapped former [Belgian Prime Minister Paul Vanden Boeynants](#) in 1989.

[] Personal life

Together with his parents, who were [UN](#) refugees from Albania, Murat came to Belgium. He was already a [delinquent](#) in his youth. In 1980, he was imprisoned for a fight, whereby one person was killed, and multiple others were wounded.

Murat has graduated as a cook following a prison course in 2007.

[] Criminal career

On May 5, 1993, Murat escaped from the [Saint-Gilles](#) prison, with two Haemers gang members, [Philippe Lacroix](#) and [Basri Bajrami](#). After a riot had erupted in the prison, they managed to hold four prison guards hostage using [handguns](#) and [hand grenades](#). They demanded that a stolen [BMW](#) be driven inside the prison-gates, which then would be used as an escape vehicle. They tied one prison guard to the roof of the car, Harry Van Oers, the prison director, and two more prison guards were put in the car as well. The [Belgian Gendarmerie](#) could do nothing but watch the convicted men flee the scene in the BMW. More than 200 police officers were used to quell the [prison riot](#) afterwards. The hostages were all released that same night. Three days later, Murat was caught by a routine traffic control.

In 2003, Murat was released on parole, after having spent 15 years of his 19 years sentence, even though the justice minister of that time, [Marc Verwilghen](#), had provided a negative advice for this. In 2004, he was jailed again for stealing [CDs](#), but he was released the next day, under dismay by justice minister Verwilghen.

Murat was caught red-handed in 2005, when burgling a store in [Londerzeel](#). He was shot down by a police officer, after Murat pulled a loaded weapon. He is not yet sentenced for this crime.

On July 16, 2006, Murat did not return from a weekend parole. The next day, the police found him hiding in a [do-it-yourself](#) store. The police surrounded the store, but Murat was nowhere to

be found. The justice minister, [Laurette Onkelinx](#), from the [Parti Socialiste](#), was under heavy criticism from the political opposition parties, because she had signed Kapllan's leave.

Kapllan Murat was arrested on July 28, 2006, in the Belgian city of [Dilbeek](#), accompanied by his girlfriend.

On July 2, 2008, Murat left the prison of Nivelles, after being granted a conditional early release. He said he was "turning a page" and "would not return to criminality". For the next seven and a half years, he is to remain at the disposal of the authorities.

[] References

- "Blushes at Belgian jailbreak". [Financial Times](#). 1993-05-04.
- "Escaped Inmates Release Last Hostage in Belgium". [The Associated Press](#). 1993-05-04.
- **(Dutch)** "Topgangster Murat Kaplan komt vrij". [De Standaard](#). 2003-04-03.
- **(Dutch)** "Politie Schiet Gangster Murat Kaplan Neer in Londerzeel". [De Tijd](#). 2005-04-20.
- **(Dutch)** "Minister onder vuur na toekenning verlov aan Murat Kaplan". [Het Nieuwsblad](#). 2006-07-18.
- "[Accountability?](#)". [Expatica](#). 2006-07-18.
- **(Dutch)** "[Gangster Kaplan Murat is opgepakt](#)". [VRT Nieuws](#). 2006-07-28.
- **(Dutch)** "Kapllan Murat op vrije voeten". [De Standaard](#). 2008-07-02.

Klaas Carel Faber (20 January 1922 – 24 May 2012) was a convicted [Dutch-German war criminal](#). He was the son of Pieter and Carolina Josephine Henriëtte (née Bakker) Faber, and the brother of Pieter Johan Faber, who was executed for war crimes in 1948. Faber was on the [Simon Wiesenthal Center's list of most wanted Nazi war criminals](#). Faber died in Germany in May 2012, having never been extradited.^[1]

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Second World War](#)
- [2 Post-war](#)
- [3 Extradition requests](#)
- [4 Death](#)
- [5 See also](#)
- [6 Notes](#)

[] Second World War

Faber was born in [Haarlem](#), the Netherlands, to a family with a strong National-Socialist background.^[2] Like his father and his brother, Faber was a member of the [National Socialist Movement](#), or NSB, before the war,^[3] and joined the [Waffen SS](#) a month after the [German occupation of the Netherlands](#) in 1940. After five months, he abandoned military training for less demanding police jobs in [Rotterdam](#) and [The Hague](#).^[4]

In May 1943, he became a German citizen with the passing of the *Erlaß über den Erwerb der deutschen Staatsangehörigkeit durch Einstellung in die deutsche Wehrmacht, die Waffen-SS, die deutsche Polizei oder die Organisation Todt vom 11. Mai 1943* (RGBl. I. S. 315), which automatically awards citizenship to all foreign members of the Waffen-SS and other organizations. From 1943 to 1944 he was part of a [firing squad](#) at the [Westerbork concentration camp](#), the camp [Anne Frank](#) passed through on her way to her death at [Belsen](#).^{[2][5]} His zeal increased after his father, Pieter Faber, a [baker](#) at [Heemstede](#), was killed by [Hannie Schaft](#) of the Dutch resistance on June 8, 1944.^{[2][4]} He participated in the SS's *Silbertanne* ("Silver Fir") death squad which targeted members of the Dutch resistance, and those who hid Jews and opposed Nazism.^[6] He was also a member of *Sonderkommando* [Feldmeijer](#), which carried out arbitrary assassinations (more than 50; his brother and [Heinrich Boere](#) were members of the same squad^[7]) of prominent Dutch citizens in reprisal for Resistance activities,^[8] and served as a bodyguard to Dutch Nazi leader [Anton Mussert](#).^{[2][8]}

[] Post-war

After the war, Faber was tried by a Dutch court and sentenced to death by [firing squad](#) on 9 June 1947, for the murder of 11 persons in Westerbork and 11 others.^{[3][9]} The Dutch court stated that the Faber brothers were "two of the worst criminals of the SS".^[10] Pieter Faber was executed in 1948.^[10] On 14 January 1948, Faber's sentence was commuted to [life imprisonment](#). However, on 26 December 1952, he escaped from prison in [Breda](#), with [Herbertus Bikker](#), [Sander Borgers](#) ([nl](#)) and four other former members of the Dutch SS, and that same evening crossed the border into Germany.^[11] The escape may have been masterminded by the [Stichting Oud Politieke Delinquenten](#), an organisation of former Dutch fascists and collaborators.^[11] As a former member of the SS, Faber had obtained [German citizenship](#).^[12] Following his escape Faber went on to live in the [Bavarian](#) city of [Ingolstadt](#) and until retirement worked for the car manufacturer [Audi](#) as an office clerk.^{[10][3]}

Yılmaz Güney was born in 1937 in the [Yenice](#) county of [Adana](#). His father was a [Zaza-Kurd](#) from [Siverek](#), and his mother was a [Kurmanci-Kurd](#) from [Varto](#), Turkey. His parents migrated to Adana to work as cotton field laborers. As a result of his family background young Yılmaz grew among the working class poor, which formed a strong background for his future works which generally focused on a realistic portrayal of down and out people in Turkey. Güney studied law and economics at the universities in [Ankara](#) and [Istanbul](#), but by the age of 21 he found himself actively involved in film-making. As [Yeşilçam](#), the Turkish studio system, grew in strength, a handful of directors, including [Atif Yılmaz](#), began to use the cinema as a means of addressing the problems of the people. Mostly, state-sanctioned melodramas, war films and play adaptations had previously played in Turkish theaters, but these new filmmakers began to fill the screens with more artistic, personal and relevant pictures of Turkish/Kurdish life. Yılmaz Güney was one of the most popular names to emerge from the Young Turkish Cinema, a gruff-looking young actor who earned the moniker "Çirkin Kral," ("the Ugly King") or (pasha nashrin) in [Kurdish](#). After working as an apprentice screenwriter for and assistant to Atif Yılmaz, Güney soon began appearing in as many as 20 films a year and became Turkey's one of the most popular actors.

Although the early 1960s brought problems for freedom to Turkey, Güney was imprisoned in 1961 for 18 months for publishing a "[communist](#)" novel. The country's political situation and Güney's relationship with the authorities only became more tense in the ensuing years. Not content with his star status atop the Turkey's film industry, Güney began directing his own pictures in 1965. By 1968 he had formed his own production company, Güney Filmcilik. Over

the next few years, the titles of his films mirrored the feelings of the people of Turkey: [Umut](#) (*Hope*, 1970); [Ağıt](#) (*Elegy*, 1972); [Acı](#) (*Pain*, 1971); [The Hopeless](#) (1971).

After 1972, however, Güney would spend most of his life in prison. Arrested for harboring anarchist students, Güney was jailed during preproduction of [Zavalhlar](#) (*The Miserable*, 1975), and before completing [Endişe](#) (*Worry*, 1974), which was finished in 1974 by Güney's assistant, [Şerif Gören](#). This was a cherished role that Gören would repeat over the next dozen years, directing several scripts that Güney wrote laboriously while behind bars.

Released from prison in 1974 as part of a general amnesty, Güney was re-arrested that same year for shooting a judge Sefa Mutlu, the [public prosecutor](#) of [Yumurtalık](#) district in [Adana Province](#), to death in a night club as a result of a drunken row^[4] and given a prison sentence of 19 years. During this stretch of incarceration, his most successful screenplays were [Sürü](#) (*The Herd*, 1978) and [Düşman](#) (*The Enemy*, 1979), both directed by [Zeki Ökten](#). *Düşman* won an Honourable Mention at the [30th Berlin International Film Festival](#) in 1980.^[5]

After escaping from prison in 1981 and fleeing to [France](#), Güney won the [Palme d'Or](#) at the [1982 Cannes Film Festival](#) for his film [Yol](#), whose director in the field was once again Şerif Gören. It was not until 1983 that Güney resumed directing, telling a brutal tale of imprisoned children in his final film, [Duvar](#) (*The Wall*, 1983), made in France with the cooperation of the French government. Meanwhile, Turkey's government revoked his citizenship and sentenced him to twenty-two extra years in jail.^[6]

Escapes and parole

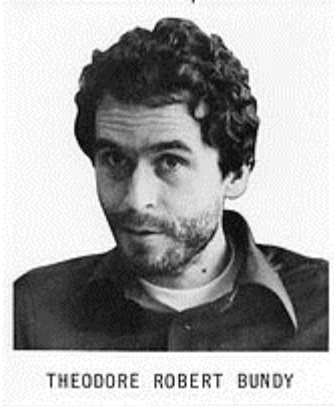
After her death sentence was repealed, Judd was committed to the state's only mental institution, Arizona State Hospital in Phoenix. From 1933 to 1963, Judd escaped from the institution six times, in one instance walking all the way to Yuma, Arizona, along the old [Southern Pacific](#) railroad tracks.

She escaped for the final time on October 8, 1963, using a key to the front door of the hospital a friend had given her.^[6] Judd ended up in the San Francisco Bay Area where she became a live-in maid for a wealthy family living in a mansion overlooking the bay, using the name Marian Lane. Her freedom lasted six and a half years. Her identity in California was eventually discovered and she was taken back to Arizona on August 18, 1969.

Judd hired famed San Francisco defense attorney [Melvin Belli](#). Belli needed an Arizona-licensed attorney to help him", so he hired then "unknown Phoenix attorney" Larry Debus.^[13] Gov. Jack Williams was going to sign for Judd's release as long as the meeting was kept "hush, hush". In the following days, Belli called a press conference calling for the immediate release of Judd, therefore Debus had to fire Belli from getting in the way of Judd's release. Judd was paroled and released on December 22, 1971 after two years of legal wrangling.

Judd moved to [Stockton, California](#). In 1983, the state of Arizona issued her an "absolute discharge," meaning she was no longer a parolee. She died 23 October 1998 at the age of ninety-three, 67 years to the day from her surrender to Los Angeles police in 1931.

Escapes



1977 photograph—taken shortly after first escape and recapture^[159]—from Bundy's FBI Ten Most Wanted Fugitives poster

On June 7, 1977 Bundy was transported 40 miles (64 km) from the Garfield County jail in [Glenwood Springs](#) to [Pitkin County Courthouse](#) in Aspen for a preliminary hearing. He had elected to [serve as his own attorney](#) and as such was excused by the judge from wearing handcuffs or leg shackles.^[160] During a recess he asked to visit the courthouse's law library to research his case. Concealed behind a bookcase, he opened a window and jumped from the second story, spraining his right ankle as he landed. After shedding an outer layer of clothing he walked through Aspen as roadblocks were being set up on its outskirts, then hiked southward onto [Aspen Mountain](#). Near its summit he broke into a hunting cabin and stole food, clothing, and a rifle.^[161] The following day he left the cabin and continued south toward the town of [Crested Butte](#), but became lost in the forest. For two days he wandered aimlessly on the mountain, missing two trails that led downward to his intended destination. On June 10 Bundy broke into a camping trailer on Maroon Lake, 10 miles (16 km) south of Aspen, taking food and a ski parka; but instead of continuing southward he walked back north toward Aspen, eluding roadblocks and search parties.^[162] Three days later he stole a car at the edge of Aspen Golf Course. Cold, sleep-deprived, and in constant pain from his sprained ankle, he drove back into Aspen, where two police officers noticed his car weaving in and out of its lane and pulled him over. He had been a fugitive for six days.^[163] In the car were maps of the mountain area around Aspen that prosecutors were using to demonstrate the location of Caryn Campbell's body (as his own attorney, Bundy had rights of [discovery](#)), indicating that his escape had been planned.^[164]



Pitkin County Courthouse. Bundy jumped from the second window from the left, second story.^[165]

Back in jail in Glenwood Springs, Bundy ignored the advice of friends and legal advisors to stay put. The case against him, already weak at best, was deteriorating steadily as pretrial motions consistently resolved in his favor and significant bits of evidence were ruled inadmissible.^[166] "A more rational defendant might have realized that he stood a good chance of acquittal, and that beating the murder charge in Colorado would probably have dissuaded other prosecutors ... with as little as a year and a half to serve on the DaRonch conviction, had Ted persevered, he could have been a free man."^[167] Instead, Bundy devised a new escape plan. He acquired a hacksaw blade from another inmate and accumulated \$500 in cash, smuggled in over a six-month period, he later said, by visitors—Carole Ann Boone in particular.^[168] During the evenings, while other prisoners were showering, he sawed a hole about one foot (0.30 m) square in the corner of his cell's ceiling and, after losing 35 pounds (16 kg), was able to wriggle through it into the crawl space above.^[169] In the weeks that followed he made multiple practice runs, exploring the perimeters of the space. An informant repeatedly told officers that he heard movement within the ceiling during the night, but the reports were not investigated.^[170] At a courtroom appearance on December 23, 1977, the Aspen trial judge approved a [change of venue](#) to Colorado Springs.^[171] On December 30, with most of the jail staff on Christmas break and the short-term prisoners released to spend the holidays with their families,^[172] Bundy piled books and files in his bunk bed under a blanket to simulate his sleeping body and slipped into the crawlspace. He broke through the ceiling into the apartment of the chief jailer—who was out for the evening with his wife^[173]—changed into street clothes from the jailer's closet, and walked out the front door to freedom.^[174]

After stealing a car, Bundy drove eastward out of Glenwood Springs, but the car soon broke down in the mountains on [Interstate 70](#). A passing motorist gave him a ride into Vail, 60 miles (97 km) to the east. From there he caught a bus to [Denver](#), where he boarded a flight to [Chicago](#). In Glenwood Springs, the jail's skeleton crew did not discover the escape until noon on December 31, more than 17 hours later. By then Bundy was already in Chicago.^[175]

[] Florida





At press conference in Tallahassee announcing his triple murder indictment, July 1978 (State Archives of Florida)

From Chicago Bundy traveled by train to [Ann Arbor, Michigan](#). There, on January 2 in a local tavern, he watched his alma mater UW defeat [Michigan](#) in the [Rose Bowl](#).^[176] Five days later he stole a car and drove to [Atlanta](#), where he boarded a bus and arrived in [Tallahassee, Florida](#) on January 8. He rented a room under the alias Chris Hagen at a boarding house near the [Florida State University](#) (FSU) campus. Bundy later said that he initially resolved to find legitimate employment and refrain from further criminal activity, knowing he could probably remain free and undetected in Florida indefinitely as long as he did not attract the attention of police;^[177] but his lone job application, at a construction site, had to be abandoned when he was asked to produce identification.^[178] He reverted to his old habits of shoplifting and stealing credit cards from women's wallets left in shopping carts.^[179]

Sometime during the evening of January 14 or the early hours of January 15, 1978—one week after his arrival in Tallahassee—Bundy entered FSU's [Chi Omega](#) sorority house through a rear door with a faulty lock.^[180] Beginning at about 2:45am he bludgeoned Margaret Bowman, 21, with a piece of oak firewood as she slept, then garroted her with a nylon stocking.^[181] He then entered the bedroom of 20-year-old Lisa Levy and beat her unconscious, strangled her, tore one of her nipples, bit deeply into her left buttock, and sexually assaulted her with a hair mist bottle.^[182] In an adjoining bedroom he attacked Kathy Kleiner, breaking her jaw and deeply lacerating her shoulder; and Karen Chandler, who suffered a concussion, broken jaw, loss of teeth, and a crushed finger.^[183] Tallahassee detectives later determined that the four attacks took place in a total of less than 15 minutes, within earshot of more than 30 witnesses who heard nothing.^[180] After leaving the sorority house Bundy broke into a basement apartment eight blocks away and attacked FSU student Cheryl Thomas, dislocating her shoulder and fracturing her jaw and skull in five places. She was left with permanent deafness, and equilibrium damage that ended her dance career.^[184] On Thomas's bed police found a semen stain and a pantyhose "mask" containing two hairs "similar to Bundy's in class and characteristic".^{[185][186]}



Lisa Levy and Margaret Bowman (State Archives of Florida)

On February 8 Bundy drove 150 miles (240 km) east to [Jacksonville](#) in a stolen FSU van. In a parking lot he approached 14-year-old Leslie Parmenter, the daughter of Jacksonville Police Department's Chief of Detectives, identifying himself as "Richard Burton, Fire Department", but retreated when Parmenter's older brother arrived.^[187] That afternoon he backtracked 60 miles (97 km) westward to [Lake City](#). At Lake City Junior High School the following morning, 12-year-old Kimberly Diane Leach was summoned to her [homerom](#) by a teacher to retrieve a forgotten

purse; she never returned to class. Seven weeks later, after an intensive search, her partially mummified remains were found in a pig farrowing shed near [Suwannee River State Park](#), 35 miles (56 km) northwest of Lake City.^{[188][189]}

On February 12, with insufficient cash to pay his overdue rent and a growing suspicion that police were closing in on him,^[190] Bundy stole a car and fled Tallahassee, driving westward across the [Florida Panhandle](#). Three days later at around 1:00 a.m., he was stopped by [Pensacola](#) police officer David Lee near the [Alabama](#) state line after a "wants and warrants" check showed his Volkswagen Beetle as stolen.^[191] When told he was under arrest, Bundy kicked Lee's legs out from under him and took off running. Lee fired a warning shot and then a second round, gave chase, and tackled him. The two struggled over Lee's gun before the officer finally subdued and arrested Bundy.^[192] In the stolen vehicle were three sets of FSU coeds' IDs, 21 stolen credit cards, and a stolen television set.^[193] Also found were a pair of dark-rimmed non-prescription glasses and a pair of plaid slacks, later identified as the disguise worn in Jacksonville.^[194] As Lee transported his suspect to jail, unaware that he had just arrested one of the [FBI Ten Most Wanted Fugitives](#), he heard Bundy say, "I wish you had killed me."^[195]

Steen Viktor Christensen (born 1964) is a [Danish](#) criminal, who was sentenced in Denmark in 1992 to twelve years in prison for numerous [bank robberies](#), [hostage taking](#), and [rape](#).^[1] In autumn 1997 Christensen was allowed to go on an unguarded holiday, during which he escaped to [Finland](#).

On 22 October 1997 Christensen robbed the Hotel Palace in [Helsinki](#), and during his escape from the hotel, he shot two [police](#) officers, Eero Holsti and Antero Palo, on Tehtaankatu. The incident caused a spectacular chase in Finland. Christensen was caught in [Hämeenlinna](#), when he was leaving the Hotel Vaakuna. He had been living in the hotel under the name Kim Anderssen.

On trial at the Helsinki district court, Christensen was assisted by the lawyer Aarno Arvela. Christensen immediately pleaded guilty for two murders and announced that he did not want to complain about his sentence.^[2]

Despite his protests, Christensen was sent to [mental health](#) examination in the [Niuvanniemi](#) mental hospital. He spent 21 days in the hospital, after which the examination was cancelled. The reason for this was Christensen's refusal to undergo any kind of psychological tests or examinations.^[3] Despite the cancellation of the examination, the Finnish judicial centre of health care (TEO) made a statement about Christensen's mental health. According to the statement, Christensen acted out of full reason and was a dangerous repeat offender.

Christensen was sentenced to [life imprisonment](#), and is serving it at the [Herstedvester](#) prison in Denmark. He was also sentenced to pay the families of the police officers he killed, the state treasury, and the watchman at the Hotel Palace a total of almost 275 000 [Finnish mark](#) (about 46 300 [euro](#)) and to pay a life support of 3873 Finnish mark (about 651.40 euro) per month to one underaged child. The sum consists mainly of family pensions and compensation for mental suffering. As well as the costs for the biggest criminal chase ever in Finland, the state had to pay the trial costs of over 62 500 Finnish mark (about 10 500 euro). The reporter [Matts Dumell](#) interviewed Christensen in the [Hämeenlinna](#) prison four days before he was transferred to Denmark. The interview was shown in the [Rikosraportti](#) program on [Nelonen](#).

The incident led to a great deal of discussion in Denmark about what kind of prisoners, and under what conditions, should be allowed to go on vacation from prison

Mario Ochoa is an [Argentine](#) serial [rapist](#). On July 20, 2007 Ochoa was sentenced to a 16-year prison term for 16 counts of [sexual abuse](#) against [disabled](#) girls. After the sentencing, Ochoa escaped and was a fugitive until August 15, 2007 when he went to the police office and was arrested.^{[1][2][3]}

Haapoja started his criminal career as a brawler, graduating quickly to stealing horses. His first known murder happened on December 6, 1867, when he stabbed his drinking partner Heikki Impponen in a drunken brawl. He was sentenced to serve 12 years in prison at [Turku](#) for his murder. During the next 10 years he escaped from prison four times, spending months at large on each occasion. Around this time he gained great notoriety as a jailbreaker and a thief. His fame as a robber started to grow after the newspapers reported that he had robbed and shot at Esa Nyrhinen on August 12, 1876. Later it was found that Nyrhinen had been hiding Haapoja at his home and the men had had an argument.

As a result of his escapes and continued thievery, Haapoja was sentenced to life in prison in 1874. After his last escape, he petitioned for his sentence to be changed to an exile to [Siberia](#). This was accepted and he was sent to [Omsk oblast](#) in 1880. During his stay there, he is reputed to have killed a man in 1886, after which he was exiled to East Siberia. Folk stories claim that during this time Haapoja killed two other famous Finnish criminals, [Anssin Jukka](#) and [Kaappo Sutki](#), but these tales are likely false as they offer no conclusive proof.

Around 1889 Haapoja decided to escape Siberia and return to Finland. He later claimed that he intended to emigrate to [America](#). He raised money for this escape by committing a series of robberies and murders. He probably killed at least three men and participated in the murder of a fourth. He also obtained a [passport](#) that belonged to a Russian man whose fate remains unclear.

Haapoja returned to Finland in September 1890. A month later he murdered and robbed a [prostitute](#), Jemina Salo. He was captured at [Porvoo](#) a couple of days later and recognized. At his trial Haapoja behaved arrogantly, confessing to this murder as well as to one of the murders he had committed in Siberia. He hoped that he would be sent back to Siberia but instead the court gave him a second life term in prison.

On October 10, 1894, Haapoja tried to escape from prison yet again. During this attempt he killed a guard and wounded two others. When he realized that he couldn't get out, he attempted to commit suicide by stabbing himself, but the wound was not fatal. However, as soon as he had recovered from the self-inflicted stabbing wound, he [hanged](#) himself in his cell on January 8, 1895. His skeleton was kept in the Museum of Crime in [Vantaa](#) for a long time, until he was finally buried in [Ylistaro](#) in 1995.

Writer [Kaijus Ervasti](#) wrote a book about Matti Haapoja called *Murhamiehen muotokuva - Matti Haapoja 1845-1895* ("Portrait of a murderer - Matti Haapoja 1845-1895").

Mukerjee, party name **Yebaw Phyu Win** ([Burmese](#): မုကေရီယောဝ်ဖျူဝိန်), was a [Bengal](#)-born [Burmese](#) communist leader. Ahead of the [Second World War](#), he took employment in the Defence Department. In 1939 he joined the [Burmese Communist Party](#). In 1946, he was included in the leadership of the [All Burma Trade Union Congress](#).^[1]

In 1948 he was imprisoned along with [Bo Yan Aung](#). However, he managed to escape from jail. In 1949 he went underground. In 1955 he was included in the [Central Committee](#) of the Burmese Communist Party and put in-charge of the North-Western Military Zone.^[1]

On May 7, 1961 he was killed in a police raid.^[1]

. References

1. ^ [a b c](#) Fleischmann, Klaus. *Die Kommunistische Partei Birmas - Von den Anfängen bis zur Gegenwart*. [Hamburg](#): Institut für Asienkunde, 1989. p. 414.

Imprisonment and escape attempts

Valjakkala was given a [life sentence](#) on three counts of murder, while Routalammi received two years for complicity in assault and battery. Routalammi was released after serving half of her time, and Valjakkala was transferred to Finland to serve out the rest of his sentence.

Valjakkala tried to escape from prison in 1991.

In April 1994 Valjakkala fled the [Riihimäki](#) prison in Finland where he was being held. He took a teacher as a hostage, but he was apprehended nearby and the hostage escaped the situation unscathed.

In 2002 he escaped from Pyhäselkä prison and traveled to Sweden with his wife, and was captured after a large police operation in [Långträsk](#). Upon returning to prison after the 2002 escape he tried to commit suicide by hanging himself in his cell.

His next escape in 2004 from Sukeva prison lasted only 19 minutes and reached less than 1 km from the prison walls.

Just after midnight on November 28, 2006, Valjakkala escaped for the fourth time, this time from the labor prison in [Hamina](#). He was captured on the evening of November 30, 2006, by police Readiness Unit [Karhuryhmä](#) in [Maunula](#), [Helsinki](#). Police assaulted the apartment which was suspected to be Valjakkala's hideout. Valjakkala was captured without resistance. After the incident Valjakkala went back to closed prison.

Valjakkala changed his name to Nikita Joakim Fouganthine.^[3]

[] Parole

Having served 19 years in prison, Fouganthine was due to be released on [parole](#) on July 1, 2008.^[4]

Fouganthine was released on February 25, 2008. He was arrested again on April 12, 2008, for breaking his release terms. He is likely to face charges for, among other things, endangering the traffic, stealing a vehicle and driving a vehicle without a licence and driving an unlicensed taxi. Valjakkala has admitted to the above.^[5]

Fouganthine and his wife Alexandra married in May 2008.^[2]

In December 2008 the [Supreme Court of Finland](#) decided that he would be released with a suspended sentence on February 2009.^[6] Fouganthine was paroled again on February 2.^[2] In a recent interview he revealed that he is currently writing an [autobiography](#).^[2]

On November 23rd 2011, he escaped from Kerava's parole prison. The Finnish police says that he might be somewhere else than Finland. On December 1st, Nikita Fouganthine was found in [Vallila](#), Helsinki. It is not believed that Fouganthine committed any crimes during his escape.^[7]

Nikos Ploumpidis (also **Ploumbidis**) ([Greek](#): Νίκος Πλουμπίδης) (31 December 1902–14 August 1954) was a leading cadre of the [Greek Communist Party](#) and a famous member of the wartime anti-Nazi resistance.

The son of a poor farming family, he was born in [Arcadian Langadia](#). As a young man he involved himself in politics and in 1926, as a teacher in the village of [Milea](#), near [Elassona](#), he joined the [Communist Party of Greece](#) (KKE). At the time he was a teacher and in 1930 became a member of the Executive Committee of the Central Union of Civil Servants. However, in 1931 he had to leave the position after he was sacked from his teaching position on account of his political activism. He began to work full-time for the KKE. In 1937 he was responsible for the party in the [Thessaly](#) region, and in 1938, he was elected to the Politburo of the KKE.

In 1939 he was arrested by the secret police of the regime of General [Ioannis Metaxas](#), and was imprisoned in Sotiria hospital until his escape in 1942. He then involved himself in the newly formed [National Liberation Front](#) (EAM) and in the [communist youth organisation](#) (OKNE).

After the return of [Nikos Zachariadis](#), the pre-war general secretary of the KKE, from his incarceration in [Dachau Concentration Camp](#), tensions developed between him and Ploumpidis.

On account of his poor health (he suffered from [tuberculosis](#)), in 1945 Ploumpidis resigned from the Politburo and took over the administration of the party's finances. Unlike many other KKE leaders, Ploumpidis remained in Greece after the [Greek Civil War](#) (1946–1949). He was instrumental in establishing the [United Democratic Left](#) (EDA) party, essentially a proxy party of the now illegal KKE.

In 1952 he was arrested by the secret police. After a three-week trial, he was found guilty on 3 August 1953 and sentenced to death. At the same time, the exiled KKE Central Committee under Zachariadis decided to expel Ploumpidis from the party on the grounds that he was a secret police spy and British agent. These allegations were repeatedly broadcast on the party's Moscow-based radio station, Free Greece.

On 14 August 1954 Ploumpidis was executed by firing squad in Agia Marina, near [Dafni](#). The Greek government released a photo of his execution in the Greek press. [Rizospastis](#) and [I Avgi](#), the two left newspapers, didn't publish the photos following KKE's allegations that the execution was fake and Ploumpidis is spending the money he took for his treason.

In 1958, after the [de-Stalinisation](#) of the KKE, the party acknowledged the expulsion of Ploumpidis as a grave mistake and rehabilitated him with the following declaration:

"Resolved that the General Meeting of the Central Committee restores the memory of comrades [Giorgos Siantos](#), Nikos Ploumbidis (Barbas) und Kostas Gyftodimos (Karajorgis). There exists

no documents to support the claim that the accused were provocateurs or spies, as the former leadership under N. Zachariadis claimed in relation to the above-mentioned comrades."

Nordine Ben Allal (born 1978 or 1979) is a [Belgian criminal](#) of [Moroccan](#) origin who was condemned for a 27-year [prison](#) sentence in June 2004. In October 2007 he made headlines when he used a [helicopter to escape from prison](#).

Escape attempts

Allal has escaped four times, in October 2000, in December 2000, in August 2004 and in October 2007.

Third attempt 2004

His third escape from prison took place from August 8 to August 13, 2004. During his escape, he was spotted by two police officers from the Police Zone Midi (which covers [Anderlecht](#), [Saint-Gilles](#) and [Vorst](#)). The policemen followed him into the neighbouring municipality of [Sint-Jans-Molenbeek](#), where Ben Allal opened fire on them, injuring the two officers. He was the most wanted [fugitive](#) in Belgium during that week and was finally captured by special police teams while hiding in the trunk of a car. Ben Allal is considered to be one of the most dangerous criminals in Belgium. In November 2005 he was sentenced to an extra 12 years in prison for the shooting.

Fourth attempt 2007

Latest escape occurred on October 28, 2007 when he escaped again from the high security prison in [Ittre](#), Belgium. A hijacked helicopter landed during the evening walk and several prisoners ran towards it to get a ride out of prison. The helicopter took off but crashed, and one prisoner was injured. During the distraction, Ben Allal and an accomplice were able to get away in guard uniforms and joined their awaiting helpers which had a car waiting for them, which was found abandoned a few hours later.

On October 30, 2007, Ben Allal attempted to commit an armed robbery with an accomplice in [The Hague, Netherlands](#), but was arrested by the [Dutch Police](#) when trying to escape on a motorcycle.^[1]

References

1. [^] ["Escape artist nabbed after spectacular prison break". *The Sydney Morning Herald*. October 31, 2007. Retrieved 2008-05-06. "A notorious criminal, who escaped from a Belgian prison after a hijacked helicopter crash-landed inside the prison grounds, has been recaptured in The Hague after a hold-up."](#)

Escape artist nabbed after spectacular prison break



Nordine Ben Allal in a file photo.

Photo: **AFP**

A notorious criminal, who escaped from a Belgian prison after a hijacked helicopter crash-landed inside the prison grounds, has been recaptured in The Hague after a hold-up.

Serial escapee Nordine Ben Allal fled in a car on Sunday after the helicopter crash caused confusion and threw up billows of smoke in the grounds of the Ittre prison, 40 kilometres south of the Belgian capital .

Dutch police spokesman Wim Hoonhout said in the Hague last night that two men had been pursued by police after a hold-up in a motorcycle showroom and had been arrested after officers fired warning shots.

"It was only in the police station that Ben Allal was identified," he added. The identity of his accomplice was not known.

"Contacts will be made tomorrow with Belgium on turning him over to the authorities," Hoonhout said.

According to initial police inquiries, the daring prison raid began on Sunday afternoon when four armed and hooded men burst into the premises of a nearby enterprise where a prototype helicopter was being worked on.

The assailants seized the mechanics, allowing them to leave after hijacking the aircraft and forcing the pilot to fly it into the prison grounds.

The helicopter crash-landed, injuring one inmate, who might have been attempting to board.

Ben Allal's accomplice aboard threw the convict a firearm and the pair escaped, briefly taking two prison guards hostage as they fled, while other prison warders were attending the injured man.

They escaped in a waiting car which was later found abandoned nearby.

Ben Allal, who has a string of convictions for violent crime, has gained a reputation for escaping prisons, including in 2004 when two police officers were injured during an escape.

Phanor Arizabaleta-Arzayus is [Colombian](#) drugtrafficker former member of the [Cali Cartel](#) fifth most important in the chain of command.

Information

Arizabaleta was in charge of kidnappings and extortions for the Cali Cartel and surrendered to Colombian authorities on July 8, 1995. He was sentenced by the Colombian government to 28 years in prison and to pay US\$100,000 dollars in penalties. Arizabaleta also faced illegal drug trafficking charges, an addition of 60 years in prison.^[1]

Arizabaleta attempted an escape with the help of one of the guardians, but the [Colombian National Police](#) recaptured Arizabaleta on April 15, 1997 in the town of Villagorgona, [Valle del Cauca Department](#) a town in the municipality of [Candelaria](#) at a road checkpoint along with his aiding security guard.^[2]

[] References

1. [^] [\(Spanish\) El Universal; Record Sentence for Cali Cartel Boss](#)
2. [^] [\(Spanish\) Attorney General's office - Press bulletin 163: Phanor Arizabaleta charged with prison outbreak](#)

□

Phillips has an expansive history in the [New York](#) State correctional system prior to his April, 2006 escape from the [Erie County Correctional Facility](#) in [Alden, New York](#). He had previously been convicted on three counts of burglary in the third degree, two counts of grand larceny in the fourth degree, and other various crimes.

During a transfer out of [Chautauqua County Jail](#), he left a note threatening "to splatter pig meat all over [Chautauqua County](#)", with the term "pig" being derogatory slang for a police officer.^[5]

At the time of his escape, he was serving a 90-day sentence for violating the terms of his parole. He had been released in November 2005 after a burglary conviction, but failed to report to his [parole officer](#), so he was again arrested on January 6.^[6]

There is some controversy about the events leading to the revocation of his parole. Family members claim that the ex-husband of Phillips' ex-girlfriend Kasey Crowe intentionally misinformed Phillips' parole officer in a ploy to return him to jail. It's believed that the ex-

husband fabricated a story about being threatened by Phillips. People close to Phillips say that he was not a violent person and he was looking forward to rebuilding a relationship with his daughter and grandchildren.^[7] UPDATE: During the later months of the year 2011, Phillips attempted another escape from incarceration according to an article in Amsterdam New Yorks newspaper "The Recorder". This was a failed attempt by Phillips and remains behind bars

[] Fugitive events

Phillips was being held in [Erie County](#) jail for a parole violation, but escaped on April 2, 2006 and was on the run until September 8, 2006. He escaped by cutting through the corrugated metal roof of the facility's kitchen using a can opener. He is believed to have stolen numerous vehicles and broken into several cabins across Western New York and [McKean, Pennsylvania](#). Police believe that at some point, he walked on Oliver Road looking for people to pick him up. He also used a stolen vehicle to travel as far away as east Tennessee.^[citation needed]

During the earlier phases of the hunt, Phillips acquired somewhat of a [folk hero](#) status, with local businesses selling t-shirts saying "Where's Bucky?", "Run, Bucky, Run!", "Don't Shoot, Not Bucky", or "Got Bucky?" (a parody of [Got Milk?](#)), a local restaurant selling a "Bucky Burger" (because it was served in a 'to-go' box for those on the run), and a local folk musician, Noah Gokey, releasing a single entitled "Run Bucky Run!". With Phillips' local roots, it was suspected that numerous friends and relatives might have been giving him shelter.^[8]

[] First shooting

On June 10, 2006, around 1 a.m., State Trooper Sean Brown was shot in [Veteran, New York](#) (approximately 70 miles southwest of [Syracuse](#)). Brown had seen a Ford Mustang which had been reported stolen, and as he approached the vehicle the driver, who was later identified as Phillips, shot at him and sped off. The officer was seriously injured with gunshot wounds to the abdomen. On June 27, after reports of stolen vehicles and break-ins, police in [Chautauqua County, New York](#) found an abandoned backpack which contained items tied to Phillips, as well as the .38 caliber handgun he had allegedly used in the June 10 incident.

On August 8, police were minutes behind Phillips after he was reported on the [Tuscarora Indian Reservation](#) in [Niagara County, New York](#); however, he disappeared into the woods. On August 19, a policeman checking out a motorcycle with invalid tags chased Phillips into an apartment complex, and then discovered a group of people believed to have been hiding him for several days, who were arrested. Phillips, however, escaped once more.

[] Second shooting

When Phillips learned that the police would be detaining members of his family for questioning, he reportedly threatened them, warning them to stay away from his friends and family. During a stakeout of a related member's house on August 31 in [the town of Pomfret](#) in Chautauqua County, a second shooting took place. Police believe Phillips pointed a high-powered rifle and shot two New York State Troopers: Donald Baker Jr., 38, and Joseph Longobardo, 32. Eleven shots were fired in total. Trooper Baker was struck in the back and flown to Hamot Shock Trauma Center in [Erie, Pennsylvania](#) and Trooper Longobardo was struck in the leg, severing an artery and was flown to Erie County Medical Center in [Buffalo](#). On Sunday, September 3, 2006, Trooper Longobardo died following a prior unsuccessful attempt to save his life by amputating his leg. On November 9, 2006, Baker was released from Hamot and transferred by NYSP

helicopter to Albany Medical Center to continue his recovery. It was shortly after the second shooting that the reward for information leading to the arrest of Phillips topped \$450,000.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

Kasey Crowe, Phillips' ex-girlfriend and mother of his daughter, was immediately sent back to jail due to her bail being revoked. She was later released when the witness did not show up at her hearing.^{[[o](#)]}

[] Captured

Phillips was captured by [Pennsylvania State Police](#) at around 8:00 pm (EDT) on Friday, September 8, 2006, in [Warren County, Pennsylvania](#). Phillips was captured, according to the AP, without gunfire. Phillips, who was hiding in a lightly wooded area at the time of his capture, was spotted by a Pennsylvania police officer from a distance, who relayed the message to the troopers in the immediate area. As the police officers methodically surrounded him, Phillips surrendered, with his hands raised. He was reported having a "defeated look", by New York State Police Superintendent Wayne Bennett.^{[[o](#)]}

Phillips was originally charged by the [United States Marshals Service](#) with "interstate flight to avoid prosecution." Federal authorities then waived their charges so New York State could proceed with attempted murder charges against Phillips as a result of the shooting of Trooper Sean Brown. Numerous other state and federal charges are pending. Murder and a second attempted murder charges could be filed if evidence can tie Phillips with the shootings of Troopers Baker and Longobardo.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

It was announced on September 13 that New York State Police found a .308 rifle on September 10 in the woods where Phillips was believed to have spent time before his capture on September 8. Forensic tests are currently being conducted on the weapon.^{[[u](#)]}

On November 29, 2006, Phillips pleaded guilty (or, in his own words, "guilty as hell") to charges of aggravated murder (for the shooting of Joseph Longobardo) and attempted aggravated murder (for the shooting of Donald Baker Jr. and Sean Brown). On December 19 he was sentenced in Chautauqua County Court to life without parole for shooting and killing Trooper Longobardo and 40 years to life for shooting and wounding Trooper Baker. On December 20 he was sentenced in Chemung County Court to 40 years to life for shooting and wounding Trooper Brown. He is serving his sentence at [Upstate Correctional Facility](#) in Malone, New York (Franklin County).

[] Timeline

April 2: Ralph "Bucky" Phillips, who has spent 20 of the past 23 years in state prison, escapes from the Alden Correctional Facility in [Erie County](#) near [Buffalo](#), cutting through the kitchen ceiling with a can opener.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

April - June: During this time, police suspect Phillips is related to several break-ins at hunting cabins in Erie, [Allegany](#) and [Cattaraugus](#) counties. A pickup truck stolen in Allegany County ends up in [Ohio](#) where another vehicle is stolen, and authorities suspect Phillips is involved. Phillips is allegedly spotted by residents in the areas around [Sinclairville](#), [Stockton](#), [Randolph](#), and [Great Valley, New York](#), as well as [Bradford, Pennsylvania](#). Police speculate that Phillips' relatives are staging crimes to distract them and throw them off his trail.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

June 10: State Trooper Sean Brown is shot in the abdomen during a traffic stop near [Elmira](#) in southern New York. State police say they're looking for Phillips as a "person of interest".^{[[citation needed](#)]}

June 15: Police continue scouring the Elmira-[Binghamton](#) area, but set up checkpoints in [Pomfret, New York](#) as Phillips has significant ties to the area.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

June 20: Phillips is believed to have stolen a [Dodge Caravan](#) in the town of [Hancock](#), east of Binghamton.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

June 24: The Dodge Caravan stolen in Hancock is found in the town of [Sheridan](#), and police believe Phillips is on the loose in northern Chautauqua County. A red ATV was stolen in the same area which was the same make and model Brad Horton was riding on early on the 25th when he was stopped.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

June 25: Brad Horton dies after being shot five times in the back by New York State trooper Sean Pierce, when he attempts to flee a roadblock on an ATV. The trooper was allegedly being dragged by the ATV and fired the shots because he believed his life was endangered. The Trooper did not receive any serious injuries and was able to return to duty the same night. An investigation cleared Pierce of criminal liability.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

June 29: Police drop a dragnet around [Cassadaga, New York](#).

July: "Bucky Burgers" and T-shirts saying "Where's Bucky?" or "Got Bucky?" are offered for sale in Phillips' native Chautauqua County in western New York as manhunt focuses there.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

July 8: A firearm found in the town of [Charlotte, New York](#) is linked to the June 10 shooting of Brown.

July 13: State Police double the reward for helping catch Phillips to \$50,000. Wounded trooper Sean Brown visits Chautauqua County to "boost morale". DA Foley says the Horton case is still under investigation, but will likely go to a grand jury.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

July 16: A burglary near [Randolph, New York](#) is linked to Phillips. The manhunt is shifted to Cattaraugus County and a command post is established at Randolph Central School. State Police maintain their [Fredonia](#) command post.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

Late July: Police close their Randolph command post and largely abandon their Cattaraugus County operations.

August 8: A car stolen in [Olean](#) is recovered in [Niagara County](#) and linked to Phillips. Police abandon Chautauqua County.

August 9: State Police report two confirmed sightings of Phillips and release a fresh photo of him looking into the camera from under a camouflage baseball hat. Police do not say how they obtained the photo. The photo is taken in Niagara County near the [Tuscarora Indian Reservation](#). On this same day police pull over a vehicle believed to be carrying Phillips down Interstate 90 west bound toward the Pennsylvania border. It turned out to be a case of mistaken

identity as the occupant was later identified as one Nate Shaw, an employee of the Department of Energy at West Valley.

August 19: Phillips is spotted in Cassadaga. Police arrest three Cassadaga residents for helping him, Natasha Berg, Timothy Seekings, and Alice Kelley. Police again begin concentrating on Chautauqua County. A trooper follows a motorcycle with no inspection sticker to the apartment, and the rider is later identified as Phillips. He escaped out a rear window of the building. [\[citation needed\]](#)

August 24: Three more people, including former girlfriend Kasey Crowe and daughter Patrina Wright, are accused of harboring Phillips. Wright is charged with child endangerment. Her three children, including an infant, are removed from her custody. [\[citation needed\]](#)

August 28: State Police call Phillips a suspect in the theft of several weapons, including high-powered rifles, from a Chautauqua County gun shop over the weekend and the theft of car a few miles away. [\[citation needed\]](#)

August 30: Pennsylvania State Police find 35 of 41 stolen guns at a residence in [Ludlow, Pennsylvania](#), some 20 miles south of the New York border.

August 31: Two state troopers are shot sniper-style and critically wounded outside Crowe's home in the rural town of Pomfret in Chautauqua County. They are helicoptered out by state police aviation. Todd Nelson of Ludlow is accused of harboring Phillips for 11 days. Wright's children are returned to her custody. [\[citation needed\]](#)

September 1: State Police say Phillips is the prime suspect in the shootings. State Police Superintendent Wayne Bennett orders another 75 troopers to help with the manhunt. The reward for his arrest jumps to \$225,000. [\[citation needed\]](#)

September 3: Trooper Joseph Longobardo dies at Erie County Medical Center, a day after one of his legs was amputated. [\[citation needed\]](#)

September 4: Police from around western New York join troopers in the manhunt. Hunters are told to stay out of the woods.

September 5: Children returning to school in the search area hold recess and sports practice indoors while troopers continue checking cars at roadblocks.

September 6: U.S. marshals name Phillips to their "15 Most Wanted" list.

September 7: Phillips is added to the FBI's 10 Most Wanted Fugitives list. Nearly 400 troopers, joined by federal and local police, search for Phillips. Announced rewards for helping catch Phillips top \$400,000. [\[citation needed\]](#)

September 8: After a stolen car is pulled over early in the morning near the Pennsylvania-New York line, near the town of Carroll, a man believed to be Phillips runs into the woods. This is televised on the national news. As many as three cars are stolen as the chase leads into Pennsylvania. Authorities evacuate a golf course near the state line in [Russell, Pennsylvania](#), where shots are fired. Local, county, state and federal officers, some with dogs, search for

Phillips. Phillips surrenders to [Pennsylvania State Police](#) about 8 p.m., walking out of a field with his hands up.^[*citation needed*]

September 9: Phillips is charged with eight counts, including attempted aggravated murder, first-degree attempted murder and second-degree attempted murder, in [Chemung County, New York](#) in connection with the shooting of a state trooper on June 10 that intensified a five-month manhunt. There is not enough evidence to charge him with the August 31 shootings. The unlawful flight to avoid prosecution charge was waived at the request of U.S. Attorney Terrance Flynn. This clears the way for the more serious state charges.^[*citation needed*]

September 10: State troopers recover a .308 rifle in the woods near the field where Phillips was captured.

September 19: Daniel De Federicis, president of the Police Benevolent Association of the New York State Troopers, releases a letter claiming that the manhunt was "poorly planned, poorly organized, poorly led and poorly executed", and demands an independent investigation of the search.^[*citation needed*]

November 18: Phillips claims that guards at the Chemung County Jail are mistreating him due to his notoriety. In a six page letter to *The Buffalo News*, he claims he is being provoked with obscenities, that the TV is left on all night so he can't sleep, he is being watched shower, and denied routine privileges. Chemung County Sheriff Christopher Moss denies the claims. Moss adds that Phillips is a model prisoner, but is under surveillance at all times because he is considered an escape risk.^[*citation needed*]

November 29: Phillips pleads guilty in Chemung County Court to attempted murder regarding the June shooting of Trooper Brown.^[12] He then pleaded guilty in Chautauqua County Court to the murder and attempted murder of Troopers Longobardo and Baker, respectively.^[*citation needed*]

November 30: Phillips pleads not guilty in Erie County court to claims he broke out of the Erie County Correctional Facility in [Alden, New York](#).^[13]

December 19: Phillips is sentenced to life imprisonment in Chautauqua County Court for the murder and attempted murder of Troopers Longobardo and Baker, respectively. He is then sentenced to 25 years to life in Erie County Court on the escape charges.^[14]

April 29, 2008: Phillips formally files his appeal.^[15]

[**Manhunt controversy**]



This article's **tone** or **style** may not reflect the encyclopedic tone used on **Wikipedia**. See Wikipedia's [guide to writing better articles](#) for suggestions. (*February 2012*)

During the Bucky Phillips manhunt there is an alleged pattern of police misbehavior during the massive law enforcement 2006 manhunt for escaped prisoner [Ralph Bucky Phillips](#), who eventually pled guilty to the murder of a police officer during his flight.

[\[\] Residents' dissatisfaction](#)

Some residents of western New York were initially annoyed and angered at the search for Phillips in April 2006 by [Erie County](#) Sheriff's office. There were reports that helicopters were searching wooded areas and with the Sheriff's office informing residents what they were investigating. Calls to the sheriff were met with responses that included "we can't disclose that information." From the start of the search people who lived in Chautauqua County had their lives disrupted. Helicopters would fly low over households at 2 and 3 a.m., spook livestock and wake residents. Small children were afraid to go outside, fearing the noise of the helicopters.^[16]

Police competency was questionable to local residents.^[17] There would be a sighting, and then Phillips would get away. This pattern was repeated for weeks and then months. Locals referred to cops as "keystones" and seemed to favor the idea of Phillip's being on the loose, due to his ability to escape capture, despite being seen in the area, and the hundreds of troopers brought into [Chautauqua County](#).^[18] No figures have been officially released, but some reports state that [New York State](#) spent \$8 million on the manhunt from April until August 2006. Many locals resented the police presence.^[19] New York State Police were also criticized for not involving local law enforcement agencies in the search.^[20]

On June 15, 2006, the story of Ralph "Bucky" Phillips broke nationally. The [New York Times](#) covered the manhunt and the situation for the local residents, with an attempt at telling both sides of the story.^[21] After the shootings of August 31, some national news media expressed disbelief that residents weren't pleased with the search for the fugitive. News organizations tried to explain why Phillips repeatedly avoided capture.^[22] No news organization has explained how someone who has been incarcerated for the past 20 out of 23 years could have such excellent survival skills, though Phillips could have learned these skills in his youth.

Police were said to have conducted illegal searches of the homes of Phillips' family members. They were searching property of residents unrelated to Phillips without warrants or informing owners. Residents reported their wire horse fencing had been cut by police on ATV's, endangering their animals. Police agencies did not include local police or [Chautauqua County](#) sheriff officers in the hunt. Residents were both inconvenienced, were angry at the heavily police presence due to the proximity of an escaped convict, and some were even fearful of the police due to the shooting of Brad Horton.^[23]

Several family members—Patrina Wright, 23, Phillip's daughter, Kasey Crowe, 42, Wright's mother, and Norma Gloss, 65, Crowe's mother—were watched, followed and allegedly harassed by police. Tracie Gloss, daughter-in-law to Norma Gloss, was arrested for allegedly helping Phillips, though the charges were later dropped. Family members started carrying video cameras so they could document the police harassment they claimed they were experiencing. Several family members pressed charges against the police, including Gloss, for a shoulder injury that resulted from being slammed against a wall by police and Wright, for being kicked in the stomach while she was eight months pregnant.^[24]

The alleged harassment of family members went on during the course of the search. New York State Troopers supposedly interrogated Wright's five year-old son at Wheelock Primary School without Wright's knowledge or permission. Using this testimony and the testimony of an unidentified 10 year-old boy, troopers arrested Wright, Crowe and Richard Catanese, Wright's boyfriend, on charges of endangering the welfare of a child. Wright's three children, including a three week-old nursing infant were put into protective custody and Wright was not allowed to

see them for four days. Her children were returned a week later. It is believed that the shooting of troopers Baker and Longobardo were the result of Phillip's anger about his grandchildren being taken away from his daughter.^[25]

After Phillips was captured community leaders and citizens expressed their gratitude for the persistent efforts of the New York State Troopers in tracking down the fugitive.^[26] From conflicting reports on the mindset of different segments of the western New York community it is apparent that some citizens felt threatened by the large police presence in the rural part of the state while others were worried about their safety in the proximity of an escaped convict.

Following the investigation to the hunt for Phillips, New York State Troopers PBA President Daniel De Federicis released a letter to Governor [George Pataki](#) and other state officials detailing problems during the search. The thrust of the letter is that state troopers were given inadequate equipment and weapons for the search, State Police commanders engaged in turf battles over personnel from various parts of the state, and asserts the FBI pulled out of the search allegedly after State Police commanders made it known other agencies were not welcome in the search.^[27]

[] Shooting of Brad Horton

On June 26, 2006, police were looking for Phillips in the town of [Sheridan](#) in Chautauqua County, due to vehicles believed to be stolen by Phillips showing up there. Trooper Sean Pierce stopped Bradley Horton, 25, on his ATV. From this point on in the story, the police and the local resident's stories differ.^[28]

The police claim that Horton sped away, dragging the officer. Friends of Horton claim that no one was dragged. The New York State Trooper shot Brad Horton. Friends of Horton claim they were kept from the area and were not allowed to find him to get medical assistance to him. Horton called his wife and 911 as he lay dying in the field. His family was also unable to search for him. Eventually, Chautauqua County Sheriff officers were let onto the scene and located Horton. He was flown by helicopter to [Hamot Medical Center](#) in [Erie, Pennsylvania](#). Horton died that evening.

The medical examiner's report showed five gunshot wounds to the back, with no upward angle present in the entry wounds. This evidence contradicts the trooper's account of shooting Horton while being dragged by the ATV. How the trooper was allegedly dragged has not ever been explained.

Initially, the media reported this shooting as a separate incident, unrelated to the search for Phillips. However, many residents reported hearing the trooper on their police scanners say "I got him. I shot Bucky. Or I at least shot the guy who was with him." Others reported hearing troopers say that "they had 'the suspect,' and someone should notify [Erie County](#)."^[29]

Horton's family and local residents can't explain how someone who was being dragged and lay injured a mile down the road could simultaneously send a message on his radio. Police recordings of that evening's communication have disappeared. The trooper was allowed to return to work that evening since his injuries weren't serious. The trooper's name is Sean Pierce.^[30]

Angered residents pressured the [Chautauqua County](#) District Attorney to investigate the incident and seek justice for the family of Brad Horton. The shooting was investigated by the

[New York State Police](#) bureau of criminal investigation and the [Chautauqua County](#) District Attorney's office.^[31] Following the investigation, on September 29, 2006 a grand jury in Chautauqua County decided not to indict Trooper Pierce in the shooting.^[32]

[] References

1. [^] [The Associated Press. \(2006\) "Phillips Case: Ex-fugitive "Bucky" Phillips pleads guilty to shooting troopers". *Niagara Gazette*. Retrieved December 4, 2006.](#)
2. [^] [RALPH B. PHILLIPS ADDED TO FBI TOP TEN LIST](#), FBI National Press Office, September 7, 2006
3. [^] [Top 15 Most Wanted Fugitives](#)
4. [^] [Bennett J. Loudon \(September 10, 2006\). "Past getaways fueled Phillips' escape". *Democrat and Chronicle*.](#)
5. [^] ["Wounded N.Y. state trooper dies". *The Associated Press*. September 3, 2006. Retrieved 2006-09-08.](#)
6. [^] ["Fugitive suspected in N.Y. ambush"](#)
7. [^] [Wilson, Michael \(September 8, 2006\). "After Years Behind Bars, Now a Life on the Run". *The New York Times*. Retrieved May 22, 2010.](#)
8. [^] [Ben Dobbin and Carolyn Thompson \(September 2, 2006\). "Trooper shootings take luster off 'Bucky' legend". *The Associated Press*. Retrieved 2006-09-04.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
9. [^] ["Phillips' former girlfriend out of jail; case postponed". *Star-Gazette*. September 7, 2006. Retrieved 2006-09-08.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
10. [^] ["Caught: Suspect Ralph Phillips is in Custody". *WGRZ*. September 8, 2006. Retrieved 2006-10-16.](#)
11. [^] ["Rifle may be one used on troopers". *Times Union*. September 13, 2006. Retrieved 2006-09-13.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
12. [^] [Kate Perry and Dennis Yusko \(November 29, 2006\). "Ralph 'Bucky' Phillips admits shooting trooper". *Times Union*. Retrieved 2006-11-29.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
13. [^] [Carolyn Thompson \(November 30, 2006\). "Ex-fugitive pleads guilty to jail escape". *Associated Press*. Retrieved 2006-11-30.](#)
14. [^] ["Phillips sentenced to life in prison". *Times Union*. December 19, 2006. Retrieved 2006-12-19.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
15. [^] [Millard, Tim \(April 29, 2008\). "Phillips sentenced to life in prison". *WETM-TV*. Retrieved 2008-05-02.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
16. [^] [Dorothy Howard \(2006-06-01\). "The People's Column". *Evening Observer*.](#)
17. [^] ["Search Review is Needed". *Evening Observer*. 2006-09-10. Retrieved 2006-09-08.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
18. [^] [Carolyn Thompson \(2006-09-06\). "Lives on hold as search for 'Bucky' Phillips intensifies". *The Evening Tribune*. Retrieved 2006-09-08.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
19. [^] ["County is caught in the middle — of chase and prosperity". *Evening Observer*. 2006-08-27. Retrieved 2006-09-08.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
20. [^] [Dan Herbeck and Gene Warner \(2006-09-09\). "State Police went it alone". *The Buffalo News*. Retrieved 2006-09-08.^{\[dead link\]}](#)
21. [^] [Wilson, Michael \(2006-06-15\). "Where's Bucky? Dragnet Yields Whimsy and Dread Upstate". *New York Times*. Retrieved 2006-09-08.](#)
22. [^] [Wilson, Michael \(2006-09-03\). "On Back Roads and in Deep Woods, Fugitive Has Edge Over Pursuers". *New York Times*. Retrieved 2006-09-08.](#)
23. [^] [Gene Warner \(2006-08-27\). "Fathoming the Fugitive". *The Buffalo News*.](#)
24. [^] ["Wright Shares Story". *WIVB*. 2006-08-29.](#)
25. [^] ["Ralph Bucky Phillips Investigation: Grandchildren Are Returned To Their Parents". *WGRZ*. 2006-08-29. Retrieved 2006-09-08.^{\[dead link\]}](#)

26. [^ "Cassadaga Community Turns Out To Thank N.Y. State Troopers". Jamestown Post-Journal](#). 2006-09-12. Retrieved 2006-09-12.^{[[dead link](#)]}
 27. [^ "Did brass botch the search?". Times Union](#). 2006-09-20. Retrieved 2006-09-20.^{[[dead link](#)]}
 28. [^ Julie Spears \(2006-09-03\). "Two months later, Hortons still seek answers". Evening Observer](#).
 29. [^ "Questions Continue From Fatal ATV Shooting". WGRZ](#). 2006-06-26. Retrieved 2006-09-08.
 30. [^ Joan Josephson \(2006-08-31\). "Horton Case Goes To Grand Jury". The Post-Journal](#).
 31. [^ "Fatal Shooting May Be Linked To Phillips Manhunt". WBEN \(AM\)](#). 2006-06-26. Retrieved 2006-09-08.^{[[dead link](#)]}
 32. [^ "Trooper cleared in fatal shooting". Times Union](#). 2006-10-02. Retrieved 2006-10-02.^{[[dead link](#)]}
2. While Gardner intermittently continued to go to the industrial school,^{[[s1](#)]} he met Debra Bischoff at a Salt Lake City apartment complex where his mother lived. Bischoff described him as: "Very caring. He never put me in the rough situations he was in throughout his life. He sheltered me from that stuff." Gardner had a daughter in May 1977 and a son in February 1980 with Bischoff, but was convicted of robbery and sent to [Utah State Prison](#) in the same month his son was born.^{[[l1](#)][[6](#)]} Gardner successfully escaped the prison's [maximum security](#) unit on April 19, 1981, and was shot in the neck while attempting to kill a man who he believed had raped Bischoff.^{[[s1](#)]} In February 1983, he was identified as a ringleader in a disturbance in which inmates barricaded a cell block and started fires.^{[[3](#)]}
 3. On August 6, 1984, Gardner escaped from custody at the [University of Utah Hospital](#) after faking an illness by vomiting. He attacked transportation officer Don Leavitt and forced him to unlock his shackles by telling him: "I guess you know if that doctor comes back, I'll have to kill you both."^{[[3](#)][[s1](#)]} In the course of the escape, Gardner struck Leavitt so hard that he needed wires to reconstruct his face.^{[[1](#)]} Gardner forced a medical student named Mike Lynch to take him from the premises on a motorcycle while pointing a gun into his back.^{[[s1](#)]} On August 11, a letter carrier found Leavitt's firearm in a mailbox with a note from Gardner that said, "Here's the gun and wallet taken from the guard at the hospital. I don't want to hurt no one else. I just want to be free."^{[[1](#)]}
4. The steel doors slammed shut behind the scrawny 11-year-old as he made his way to the dormitory in the Utah State Hospital that would be his home for nearly a year and a half.
 5. Ronnie Lee Gardner was lonely, afraid and unsure why he was once again being locked up. But he wasn't going to let anyone know.
 6. He'd been locked up before. He knew how these things worked.
 7. "I've been locked up basically since I was 2 years old," he said Thursday while asking the Utah Board of Pardons and Parole to spare his life. "When I came to prison in 1980, it was like home almost for me. Everybody I knew — my family, my friends from my neighborhood — was there. ... It was very, very comfortable to me."
 8. Despite his familiarity with institutions, Gardner has had what one psychologist called "a preoccupation with escape."
 9. The 49-year-old father and grandfather is likely to be executed by firing squad just after midnight Thursday for the murder of attorney Michael Burdell during an escape attempt in 1985. He admits he's run from every place where anyone has tried to "control" him. That includes the homes of his parents when he was a small child.
 10. "I just didn't like to be confined," he said. "I would stay out for two or three days at a time, maybe weeks at a time. Because I never felt that I fit in. So it was easy for me to go live on the streets."

11. On the streets he used drugs and committed crimes, including burglary, robbery, assault and prostitution.
12. "Me and my sister Bonnie would run away, and I would go live at the hobo camp," he said in a 1999 deposition. "My sister didn't really like it. She would always go home because she was kind of afraid of that type of people."
13. Government officials first became aware of Gardner when he was found wandering the streets in a diaper. It was 1963, and the now notorious criminal was just a toddler.
14. "He came to the attention of authorities as a 2-year-old," said Dr. Craig Haney, a psychology professor who testified at Gardner's commutation hearing before the Utah Board of Pardons and Parole Thursday.
15. When neighbors found the undernourished toddler wandering alone, they called police.
16. Child welfare workers found his home life to be so distressing, they filed a "failure to care" petition against his mother. It was a move that was extremely rare at that time.
17. "This was the dark ages of child welfare," Haney said. "I can't tell you how unusual this was."
18. For some reason, Gardner was left in the care of his mother, who had taken to wearing his step-father's belt around her neck as a visual warning to her children. Even though he was frequently punished with physical violence, Gardner said he refused to cry or conform.
19. Stubborn and willful, he grew up without structure or discipline and only went as far as fourth grade in school. He was sexually abused for the first time at age 5 by an older sister and her teenage friend. He was introduced to sniffing glue and huffing gas at age 6. He was addicted to drugs by the time he was 10 and was permitted by his parents not only to sniff glue but to drink alcohol as well.
20. "I never had no positive role models in my life," he said. "Not one."
21. By his own accounts, he was unruly, impulsive and defiant as a child.
22. "I was a nasty little bugger," he said Thursday.
23. The youngest of Ruth Gardner Lucas' seven children, Gardner was born Jan. 16, 1961. His mother asked hospital workers if they could sterilize her because "she couldn't handle any more children," Haney said, pointing out she understood the desperation of her situation. "She recognized it, but she was unable to overcome it."
24. On Aug. 6, 1984, he escaped from University Hospital by assaulting a transportation officer and taking his gun. As the dazed officer tried to oblige the frantic prisoner's demands to unlock the shackles, Gardner leaned down and made sure he worked as fast as possible to free him.
25. Gardner said, "I guess you know if that doctor comes back, I'll have to kill you both," officer Don Leavitt testified later.
26. In the parking lot, he ran into Mike Lynch, a medical student. Gardner pointed the gun at his back and ordered him to give him a ride.
27. "I don't want to kill you, but I have nothing to lose," Lynch quoted Gardner as saying. He took Lynch's clothes and motorcycle and was on the run for nearly three months.
28. While awaiting trial, he was sent back to the Utah State Prison. It was there, in his maximum-security cell, that he hatched a plan to escape from the courthouse.
29. On April 2, 1985, he was walking into the old 3rd District Court in Salt Lake City about 8:45 a.m. when a woman either pressed a gun into his hands or he retrieved a gun that she had taped to a drinking fountain. Those details vary, depending on whom you ask. Immediately, an officer yelled, "Run! He's got a gun!"
30. While one officer ran out of the building, another opened fire on Gardner, hitting him in the shoulder. He ducked into a records room, where he reportedly said, "They hit me! They got me! I've been hit bad!"

31. Gardner pointed the gun at attorney Bob Macri, who stood next to his friend and colleague Michael Burdell. Macri testified that he thought it was an April Fools' joke as Gardner first pointed the gun at him and then moved it to Burdell.
32. As Macri ducked and ran out, Gardner shot Burdell in the eye, killing him.
33. "As I went out the door, the gun went off," Macri testified in 1985. "I left screaming, 'Police! Help! Murder!' I lost control at that point, I think."
34. While Gardner continued to insist that some details of that day were hazy, he did have to pull back the hammer on the revolver to shoot Burdell. He fired twice at the lawyer, who was in the basement doing pro-bono work for his church.
35. Gardner ran out of that room and into Salt Lake County sheriff's bailiff Nick Kirk. Kirk had heard about the shooting and ran down five flights of stairs to "protect his judge" — James Sawaya. When Gardner saw him, he shot him in the stomach, sending Kirk to the floor. He walked past him and into the stairwell Kirk had just exited. He then ascended to the second floor of the courthouse. He aimed the gun at a man filling a candy machine and asked for a ride. As the two navigated the hallway leading to the doors, the man jumped out an open window, leaving Gardner bloodied and alone with one bullet remaining in his gun.
36. Gardner surrendered to police on the lawn of the courthouse after dropping the gun and yelling that he was unarmed.
37. When questioned by board of pardons member Don Blanchard about whether he felt threatened, Gardner admitted none of his victims posed a real threat to his safety.
38. "I didn't have to kill anybody," he said. "No one done anything to deserve what happened."
39. The jury deliberated for less than three hours to find Gardner guilty after a three-week trial. It took the same jury 5 1/2 hours to decide that he should die for killing Burdell and wounding Kirk. Gardner chose the firing squad as the method of execution.
40. With his death sentence hanging over him, Gardner's violence continued in prison. While out of his cell with other inmates in 1994, he stabbed Richard "Fats" Thomas.
41. "He made a threat to me," Gardner said. "I did something he thought was disrespectful."
42. A letter carrier opens a mailbox. Inside, he finds a pair of socks, which he unfolds to reveal a .38-caliber pistol and a wallet.
43. "Sorry," reads a note pinned to the socks. "Here's the gun and wallet taken from the guard at the hospital. I don't want to hurt no one else. I just want to be free."
44. Ronnie Lee Gardner wrote that note, discovered on Aug. 11, 1984.
45. Days earlier, the athletic redhead, who would become one of Utah's most notorious criminals, had stolen both items while escaping from a prison guard at Salt Lake City's University Hospital.
46. Sorry or not, Gardner would go on to murder twice.
47. Thursday, he will plead with the Utah Board of Pardons and Parole to spare his life, just eight days before he's set to become the first American in 14 years to die by firing squad.
48. If the execution proceeds, it will end a life of crime that began with petty theft as a child, escalated to prostitution, robbery and assault, and culminated in the 1985 courthouse escape attempt that put a fatal bullet in attorney Michael Burdell's skull and critically wounded bailiff Nick Kirk.
49. As his scrawled note — and other acts — plainly stated, Gardner meant to be free. But what if someone got hurt? Gardner never considered that.
50. As one Utah Department of Corrections investigator put it in 1984: "He always does these horrendous things and then several days later wonders why everyone is so mad at him."
51. —

52. Painful upbringing • When Gardner testifies Thursday, he'll speak of helping children avoid turning out like him, sharing a plan to start a Box Elder County farm where troubled youths can learn organic gardening.
53. "He thinks good, clean living chemical free, that's what kids need," said Tyler Ayres, an attorney helping Gardner and his family finance the farm.
54. The plan may come off as a ploy to help Gardner avoid the death chamber, but few dispute Gardner knows something about troubled children.
55. Born on Jan. 16, 1961, in Salt Lake City, he was one of nine children born to Ruth Lucas, a petite woman who drank while pregnant and lived to go out dancing when she wasn't.
56. Ruth and husband Dan Gardner, a heavy drinker who had trouble keeping a job, split when Ronnie was a toddler, leaving the boy to be mostly reared by a sister eight years older who took over for days at a time while their mother went out partying.
57. When Dan Gardner was around, he'd tell Ronnie he wasn't his son.
58. "He hit you. He was just awful," a half sibling once testified.
59. The family moved around Salt Lake City but always seemed to live in squalor. At age 4, Gardner contracted meningitis. Lawyers and medical experts over the years have argued whether that illness damaged Gardner's brain.
60. His siblings were a problem, too. Gardner has said an older brother molested him. By the time he was 6, the boy's siblings had taught him to huff gas and glue. At age 10, police investigated a report Gardner had traded a BB gun for marijuana.
61. Teachers judged Gardner to be hyperactive and said he needed special classes.
62. "He couldn't learn or he felt like he couldn't learn or he wasn't as smart as the other kids," a brother once testified. "He would get made fun of because he was in remedial classes and he got in a lot of fights over that."
63. Gardner shoplifted. He prowled for cars to burglarize.
64. As he got older, his drug use escalated to include methamphetamine, cocaine and heroin. Gardner once told a psychiatrist he would get into a cold tub before injecting meth to mitigate his reaction to the drugs so he could take more.
65. "I probably injected heroin 200 times," Gardner said, "maybe more."
66. Already familiar with life in state custody as young as age 9, by his early teens, Gardner had spent time at the Utah State Hospital in Provo and the State Industrial School in Ogden, then Utah's primary juvenile corrections facility.
67. And, of course, he tried to escape.
68. He jumped over fences and swam canals to flee the school, hiding with friends or family before police apprehended him and sent him back.
69. "I wouldn't stay anywhere — anywhere where I had to be told what to do," Gardner has said. "If somebody let me stay at their place and didn't really boss me around and stuff, we got along fine, but as soon as the rules started coming â I would run away."
70. Industrial school staffers nonetheless found Gardner to be charming and bright. Worker Stephen DeVries once testified he wanted to open a fruit stand in Jackson, Wyo., and asked Gardner to manage it.
71. "I had enough trust and faith in him," DeVries said.
72. But the plan fell through.
73. —
74. Father issues • The few men a young Gardner viewed as role models only encouraged his criminal tendencies.
75. Siblings said he idolized his mother's subsequent husband Bill Lucas, serving as a lookout while the man burglarized homes from Parleys Canyon to Wyoming.
76. Lucas stole mercury from gas meters to sell and brought it home in Mason jars. Gardner and his siblings played with the toxic gray balls, rolling them along the dirty floor.
77. Lucas spent 1968 in the Wyoming State Penitentiary for grand larceny.

78. Later, when Gardner was a young teen, a brother met Jack Statt at a bus stop and agreed to perform oral sex for \$25. The brother, and eventually Gardner, ended up living with Statt, who even became Gardner's official foster parent for a few months in 1975.
79. Statt performed sex acts on the boys. Gardner also later admitted to psychologists that he worked as a prostitute while living with the man. Those psychologists called Statt a pedophile, but Gardner has said his time with Statt was the most stable of his life and one of the few times somebody seemed to care about him.
80. "Jack was a good man, and he tried to help us out," Gardner said.
81. —
82. New family • Gardner met another who seemed to care for him when he was 15 and briefly out of state custody.
83. A teenage Debra Bischoff lived in the same Salt Lake City complex as Gardner's mother and found herself drawn to his athletic build, red hair and wide grin.
84. "He was very nice," Bischoff said in a telephone interview. "Very caring. He never put me in the rough situations he was in throughout his life. He sheltered me from that stuff."
85. Bischoff got pregnant, and in May 1977 gave birth to Gardner's first child, a daughter.
86. By then Gardner was back in custody, but Bischoff remained committed to him for seven years. They lived together when Gardner was not in the industrial school or in jail.
87. Finally freed from custody in 1979, Gardner planned a second child with Bischoff. He was there for the February 1980 birth of their son.
88. The same month the boy was born, Gardner, then 19, entered the Utah State Prison for the first time, convicted of robbery.
89. "It broke my heart," Bischoff said. "At that point, I really loved Ronnie."
90. —
91. Shot in the neck • As a prisoner, Gardner's criminal reputation flourished.
92. Just months after his incarceration in a minimum security unit, he obtained some amphetamine tablets, got high, and with another inmate, climbed over the Draper prison's fence to escape.
93. Bischoff had slept with another man while Gardner was in prison and feared Gardner would come looking for her.
94. He did.
95. "We had a talk about a few things," Bischoff said, "and it was an emotional time for us because I told him how I felt when he went to prison. It was the first time I'd ever seen Ronnie cry."
96. The next few days would be the last time he would spend with Bischoff and their children outside prison.
97. Gardner took a gun and went to South Salt Lake to confront the man with whom Bischoff had slept. The man fired a .22-caliber bullet into Gardner's neck.
98. Police captured Gardner as he tried to hitch a ride away from the scene. He earned more time in prison for the escape and other crimes he'd committed while on the loose.
99. He tried escaping twice more, getting caught the first time between two security fences, but succeeding on Aug. 6, 1984, after faking an illness and attacking the guard at University Hospital. Gardner punched Don Leavitt hard enough to shatter an eye socket and break his nose in 16 places. Doctors had to wire Leavitt's entire face.
100. Outside the hospital, Gardner jabbed Leavitt's pistol into medical student Michael Lynch's forehead and ordered Lynch to take him on his Yamaha to an apartment complex, where he stole the student's clothes and tied him up with his own shoelaces.
101. On the run, Gardner turned to his family for help. His only full-blooded brother put the gun, wallet and note in the mailbox for police to find, not wanting them to think Gardner still had the gun.
102. —

103. First killing • Murder remained about the only crime for which Gardner had not been convicted, but not for long.
104. High on cocaine on the night of Oct. 9, 1984, he went to Salt Lake City's Cheers Tavern with Darcy McCoy, the sister of a cousin's wife, intent on robbing the place, according to McCoy.
105. Melvyn Otterstrom, a 37-year-old comptroller tending bar to earn extra money, was on his back behind the bar when Gardner pressed the muzzle against one of his nostrils and fired, killing him.
106. Gardner has complained Otterstrom fought back when robbed, but investigators found nothing to suggest the larger and special forces-trained Otterstrom put up a fight, said John Johnson, the Salt Lake City police detective who investigated the murder.
107. "My opinion is, it was an execution," Johnson said.
108. Three weeks later, police acting on a tip arrested Gardner at a cousin's home.
109. Gardner was charged with first-degree murder and other escape-related felonies. Gardner knew he would never be released from prison. He considered his options.
110. "One was escape," Gardner testified later. "The other was possible suicide if I had to spend the rest of my life in prison."
111. He chose escape.
112. —
113. Infamy arrives • Gardner has never divulged his accomplices, but on April 2, 1985, two prison guards escorted Gardner to a hearing at Salt Lake City's Metropolitan Hall of Justice. A woman thrust a gun at him and Gardner turned, pointing the weapon at the guards.
114. One guard, Luther Hensley, said it appeared Gardner was trying to shoot him but couldn't get the gun to fire. Hensley drew his .38-caliber pistol and fired one bullet into Gardner's upper right chest.
115. Gardner took cover behind a Coke machine, then retreated a few feet away to the courthouse's archives room. After exiting the room and trying to board an elevator, he fired at Michael Burdell. The bullet pierced the attorney's right eye.
116. Burdell said, "Oh, my God," and collapsed. He died at Holy Cross Hospital about 45 minutes later.
117. Nick Kirk, an unarmed bailiff, ran toward the room worried about the safety of the judge for whom Kirk worked.
118. Gardner fired another shot, striking Kirk in the lower abdomen. By then, dozens of police officers had converged on the courthouse as Gardner attempted a frenzied escape.
119. He had made his way to the sidewalk between the street and the complex when they drew their guns and moved toward him.
120. But Gardner surrendered before they reached him. He threw the revolver away, dropped to his knees and fell face first into the grass.
121. "Don't shoot," Gardner yelled. "I don't have a gun."
122. —
123. 'The crazy bad guy' • Just 24 years old, Gardner's convictions seemed a forgone conclusion. In June 1985, he pleaded guilty to Otterstrom's murder and received life without parole.
124. On Oct. 22 of that year, a seven-woman, five-man jury deliberated just three hours before convicting him of capital murder in Burdell's death.
125. Gardner had been smiling and cheerful throughout the trial but grew serious after the verdicts were read.
126. "He wasn't surprised," defense attorney Andrew Valdez told reporters that day.

127. The jury sentenced Gardner to death three days later. His cousin's wife spent eight years in prison as his accomplice in the courthouse escape.
128. In the 25 years since, Gardner has been a consistent problem for guards.
129. On Oct. 28, 1987, Gardner broke a glass partition between inmates and visitors and he and other inmates barricaded the doors. Gardner and his female visitor had sex while other inmates in the room watched and cheered.
130. On Sept. 25, 1994, Gardner got drunk on alcohol he fermented in his sink. He took a shank made from a pair of metal sunglasses and stabbed a black inmate in the neck, chest, back and arms.
131. The stabbing occurred two months after a white supremacist stabbed a black inmate to death at the Gunnison prison. Kevin Nitzel, who investigated Gardner's stabbing for the Utah Department of Corrections, thinks Gardner wanted to steal the spotlight.
132. "Ronnie Lee likes to play up his image of being the crazy bad guy," he said.
133. For the stabbing, prosecutors charged Gardner with another capital crime under a little-used Utah law reserved for attacks in prison. But three years after the stabbing, the Utah Supreme Court determined Gardner could not be charged with a capital offense for an attack in which no one died.
134. —
135. 'I am burnt out' • Gardner's behavior has earned him harsher treatment than most of Utah's 10 death-row inmates.
136. Eight are allowed out of their cells to recreate for up to three hours a day. Gardner and Troy Kell, who was convicted of the fatal stabbing at the Gunnison prison, are allowed out of their cells for one hour every day and live in a different section of the Draper prison.
137. At least three times, Gardner has said he wants to stop appealing his sentence. He's tired of his near-solitary confinement and the pain from ailments his attorneys have said include rheumatoid arthritis, hepatitis C and leukemia.
138. "I am burnt out. I can't deal with it anymore," Gardner said at a hearing on Sept. 17, 1999. "Eventually what is going to happen is the prison is putting me in predicaments where I am going to end up killing somebody else."
139. But every time, his lawyers have persuaded him to continue appealing. In this week's hearing, Gardner will ask the board to lessen his sentence to life without parole. If the board refuses, it will take a surprise order from a court to stop the June 18 execution.
140. Bischoff and their children have maintained contact with Gardner over the years. Gardner has three grandchildren, she said.
141. He's made other friends over the years, too.
142. Robert Macri, an attorney who was with Burdell in the courthouse archives room and testified against Gardner in 1985, began visiting Gardner in prison. Macri in 1999 said he taught Gardner grammar, yoga and about King Arthur and chivalry.
143. A book Gardner read about organic gardening sparked his idea for the farm, which Ayres said would accept children with legal or substance abuse problems.
144. Gardner's brother acquired the 160-acre lot in north of the Great Salt Lake. It is vacant and undeveloped.
145. Ayres said Gardner has written to Oprah Winfrey and others asking for donations to start the farm. He doesn't know how Gardner's execution would affect fundraising.
146. Ayres, who also helped Gardner write his will, said the man is sincere in his wish to help children.
147. Although it's unlikely since Gardner is in maximum security, Ayres said Gardner would try to escape again if he had the chance. "He knows how to look for those opportunities."

148. In addition to interviews, sources for this story included transcripts of Ronnie Lee Gardner's 1985 trial, court opinions, appeal proceedings and a deposition Gardner gave in 1999.
149. **Shahram Jazayeri** ([Persian](#): عرب یری جزا شهرام) is an [Iranian entrepreneur](#) and [businessman](#) involved in a high-profile corruption case with several officials of the Islamic republic. He was also involved in fabrication of official documents. He had close ties with several high-ranking [reformist](#)^[1] clerics.^{[2][3]}
150. Jazayeri was taken into custody in 2001, at the age of 24, for a long-list of criminal activities involving bribery, illegal exports, forgery and massive embezzlement of state money and assets.^[4] At this time, as a student in Theran, his personal wealth was near \$989,000,000. The cases of Jazayeri raised questions about the Iranian government's commitment to deal seriously with corruption. Jazayeri was convicted in 2002 in a major corruption case involving 50 defendants, many of them sons of prominent clerics. In September 2004, his 27-year prison sentence was partially overturned, and he was occasionally released from prison on leave.^[5]
151. Jazayeri paid huge amounts of money to the Iranian members of parliament. He confessed to paying about \$15,600,000 to [Hadi Khamenei](#), the Iran [Supreme leader's](#) [reformist](#) brother, and about \$5,800,000 to [Mehdi Karroubi](#), former [Majlis](#) speaker without requesting anything in return.^[1] He was reportedly arrested after he sent a check worth \$35,000,000 to the office of [Supreme Leader of Iran](#).
152. In 21 February 2007, Iran's Special Judicial Complex for economic affairs declared that Shahram Jazayeri has escaped, while being transferred to a court-assigned financial expert committee. There was suspicion of governmental involvement in his scape as it was assumed unlikely to scape from such prisons without assistance.^[6] [Hossein Shariatmadari](#) of [Kayhan](#) newspaper wrote an article supporting the theory that those clerics were trying to cover-up the case.^[1] Following the escape controversy, the head of [Judiciary](#), [Mahmoud Hashemi Shahroudi](#), fired a number of those responsible in the case, including the head of [Evin prison](#) and a few judges, and ordered an opening of a case in the military court for the judges.^[7] On March 19, 2007 Iran's head of intelligence agency confirmed that Jazayeri was arrested in an unnamed location in the [Arabian Peninsula](#). His hiding location is said to be a remote village in [Oman](#) and handed over to Iranian authorities.^[8]
153. In 2007, an Iranian newspaper reported that, unlike ordinary prisoners in Iran, Jazayeri had access to a [laptop](#) and two [mobile phones](#) and is living in luxury in prison and continued his business works overseas.^[9]
154. In February 2007, Jazayeri was sentenced to 61,861,200 US dollars and 14 years of prison. In year 2008 he was seen several times in Dubai. ^[10]

As a result of the campaign, Solly was transferred to medium-security [Leesburg State Prison](#) in 1974. There, he befriended a prison [psychologist](#), who convinced officials to allow Solly to visit his mother. During the third visit, in June 1974, Solly was accompanied only by the psychologist. Solly asked to be allowed to visit his girlfriend, and he used the opportunity to escape.^{[1][4]} His escape was not reported to police for six hours, giving Solly sufficient time to disappear.^[5]

As a fugitive

Immediately after his escape, Solly began using a series of assumed identities to evade capture. In 1975, he was arrested in [Philadelphia](#) for receiving stolen goods, but because he used a fake name, police did not realize who he was. Similarly, he provided a fake name when he was stopped for a traffic violation in 1979 and avoided detainment.^[2] Detectives had few leads in the case, and received no cooperation from Solly's family, particularly his mother, Edna Bolt, who consistently denied knowing her son's whereabouts. Eventually, Solly's escape was considered a [cold case](#).^[3]

Solly eventually made his way to Florida, where he assumed the identity of Vinnie Taylor (aka Chris Donald), former lead guitarist of the [doo-wop](#) revival group [Sha Na Na](#). The real Taylor died of a heroin overdose in 1974, but using forged documents, including a [Social Security card](#), a [birth certificate](#), and a [baptism](#) certificate, Solly successfully passed himself off as Taylor.^{[2][4]} Solly, posing as Taylor, claimed that Taylor's death had been staged and so he took on the new [stage name](#) of Daniel "Danny C" Catalano, and began performing and recording under that name.^[1] Sha Na Na discovered the fraud and demanded that Solly cease performing as Danny C. When Solly refused, the group considered filing a lawsuit, but decided not to do so in order to deny Solly the free publicity the case would generate.^[1]

. Investigation and capture

In 1999, [New Jersey State Police](#), Louis Kinkle, and [Cumberland County](#) Sheriff's Office investigators reopened the Solly case. They enlisted the aid of [forensic artist Frank Bender](#), who used 25-year-old photographs of Solly to create an image of what he would look like currently. In March 2000, Edna Bolt died, after which other members of Solly's family began cooperating with investigators. Bolt's husband Harry told police that Solly was living in Florida as a singer using the name Danny C. A web search revealed a website for Danny C, billing himself as the "Bad Boy" of Sha Na Na. The site featured a picture of Danny C that closely resembled the image produced by Bender.^{[4][5]}

Based on this information, authorities traveled first to [Orlando](#) and then to [St. Pete Beach](#).^[1] They discovered Solly fishing on a pier near his apartment complex. [U.S. Marshals](#) arrested Solly on May 10, 2001, and he was returned to New Jersey on May 18. He was convicted on October 5 for his 1974 escape and was incarcerated at Riverfront State Prison in [Camden](#) to serve that sentence and the remainder of his manslaughter sentence. Solly was granted [parole](#) in August 2003 for good behavior and time served, and was to be on parole until June 2011. He was last reported to be living in a [welfare](#) motel in New Jersey before his death.^[4]

George Edward Wright (born March 29, 1943)^[1] is a Portuguese citizen of American origin^[2] who, in 1961, graduated from [Mary Bethune](#) High School in [Halifax, Virginia](#).^[3] Originally arrested and convicted for murder in 1962 and sentenced to up to 30 years in prison, George Wright escaped from prison in 1970 and hijacked a [Delta Air Lines](#) flight in 1972 with a number of accomplices. On September 26, 2011, he was arrested in Portugal.^[4] The [FBI](#) requested Wright's [extradition](#) from Portugal to the United States, but was denied on the grounds that Wright is a Portuguese citizen.^[5]

[] New Jersey offenses

[] Murder conviction

On November 23, 1962, Friday night, the day after Thanksgiving, George Wright, then 19 and from [East Orange, New Jersey](#), and three accomplices: Walter McGhee of Sylvan Avenue in [Asbury Park](#), Elizabeth Roswell (McGhee's live-in girlfriend), and Julio DeLeon of Munroe Avenue in Asbury Park; were involved in the commission of multiple armed robberies.

The four suspects first robbed the Sands Motel in [Englishtown](#) of \$200. They then made their way to the Collingswood Esso gasoline station on eastbound [Route 33](#) in [Wall](#). At around 9:25 PM, during the second robbery, McGhee fatally wounded Walter Patterson, a 42-year-old [World War II veteran](#) and [Bronze Star](#) recipient who lived in [Howell](#). Patterson was a father of two teenage daughters. Patterson, who earlier that evening had relieved his brother Harry C. Patterson Jr. and sent him home to have dinner with his family, was taken to [Fitkin Memorial Hospital](#) in [Neptune](#), where he died from the gunshot wound two days later.

Wright, armed with a sawed-off [.22](#)-caliber rifle, and McGhee, armed with a [.32](#)-caliber pistol, were both wearing women's pantyhose over their faces when they assaulted Patterson. McGhee fired two shots during the robbery.^[6] Patterson was shot once in the abdomen before the four got away with \$70 in cash. Police later determined it was a shot from McGhee's pistol that led to Patterson's death.^[7] However, the [New York Times](#) says that George Wright murdered Patterson.^[8]

The four were all arrested two days later.^[9] On December 13, 1962, Wright was indicted on state charges along with his associates. McGhee, as the triggerman, was charged with Patterson's murder and sentenced to a life prison term in February 1963, but was [paroled](#) in August 1977. Wright, as one of the holdup men, was also charged with murder.

On February 15, 1963, Wright reportedly changed his [plea](#) from [Innocent](#) to [No Defense](#) to the charge of murder,^[10] in order to evade a jury trial that could have resulted in the death penalty. Wright was subsequently sentenced to 15 to 30 years' [incarceration](#).^[11]

[] Escape from prison

On August 19, 1970, between 10 p.m. and 11 p.m., after serving over 7 years and 6 months of his sentence, Wright joined three inmates and "just walked out" between bed checks^[12] from a state prison farm at Leesburg State Prison, now known as the [Bayside State Prison](#) in [Leesburg, New Jersey](#).^[13] Wright escaped with his future hijacking accomplice, George Brown, who was serving a three to five-year sentence for a 1968 armed robbery conviction. Allegedly they stole the prison warden's car to get away. They made their way to [Detroit](#), then a hotbed of radicalism, where they became affiliated with the [Black Liberation Army](#).

On August 26, 1970, federal complaints were issued in [Atlantic City](#), charging Brown and Wright with unlawful flight to avoid confinement.^[14]

Federal offenses

Hijacking and extortion

On Monday [July 31, 1972](#), Wright, then 29, together with:^{[15][16]}

- George Brown, then 28, of [Elizabeth, NJ](#), (alias Harry Singleton) with whom Wright escaped from prison
- Joyce Brown (aka Tillerson), then 31, of [Spartanburg, SC](#), accompanied by her 2-year-old daughter
- Melvin McNair, then 23, born in [Greensboro, NC](#)
- Jean Carol Allen McNair, then 25, from [Winston-Salem, NC](#), accompanied by her 1-year-old daughter and 2-year-old son^[17]

boarded [Delta Air Lines Flight 841](#) in [Detroit](#). The [DC-8](#) flight was bound for [Miami](#).

Wright was dressed allegedly as a priest and, using the alias the Rev. Larry Darnell Burgess, he smuggled a handgun aboard the flight in a hollowed-out Bible.^[18] One passenger described the apparent ringleader as a black male, about 30, wearing a black mohair suit which others described as a clerical outfit.^[19] The pilot of the [hijacked](#) Detroit-Miami flight, Captain William Harold May, then 41 and a 20-year Delta employee, said Wright was the group's leader.

The [hijackers](#), allegedly members of the [Black Liberation Army](#), seized the plane as it approached Miami, where they demanded that FBI agents (dressed only in bathing suits) deliver \$1 million ransom to the plane; the FBI complied. The hijackers allowed the 86 hostage passengers to leave the plane in Miami, but kept the flight crew. They then ordered the plane to fly to [Boston](#), where they refueled and took on an international navigator. They then directed the plane to [Algiers](#), the capital of [Algeria](#), where they sought [political asylum](#) since that government had shown compassion towards those struggling for liberation.

May told reporters that two of the hijackers smoked marijuana continuously during the flight, and commented, "They said they were revolutionaries, that America is a decadent society and they didn't want to live here anymore." Upon arrival in Algeria, Melvin McNair had parting words for his pilot: "We're famous," he said, "Send us a copy of your paper."

On Wednesday August 2, 1972, federal complaints of air piracy charges were filed in Miami, naming the five accomplices as defendants.^{[20][21]}

Asylum in Algeria

Wright and his associates were briefly taken into custody but were eventually released after a few days. Reportedly, Wright and his group were taken in by the American writer and prominent Black Panther [Eldridge Cleaver](#), whom Algeria's sympathetic Socialist government allowed to open an office. Cleaver wrote an open letter to the then Algerian President, [Houari Boumediene](#), in part:^[22]

In humbleness and all sincerity, I think it would be consistent with the Algerian tradition of struggle and revolution to continue welcoming American revolutionaries ... whether they come to your shores or your airfields, penniless or with millions of dollars. ...

To carry out our struggle for the liberation of our people, we must have money. Without the money to finance and organize the struggle, there will be no freedom.

This hijacking represented the final test of the Third World nation's commitment to supporting some contingents of the African American freedom movement.^[23] At the request of the U.S. government, the Algerian government confiscated and returned^[24] the \$1 million in ransom money to the U.S. After the hijackers' calls to have the ransom money restored to them were ignored by the Algerian government, Wright and his associates disappeared. Allegedly in early 1973, the group traveled by ship to France and lived and worked there with new identities.^[25]

Apprehension and refused extradition of accomplices

On May 26, 1976, Wright's four associates were located in [Paris](#) and arrested by the French National Police for carrying false U.S. passports. Facing extradition to the United States, the four issued an appeal to the French people on October 11, 1976, claiming that while they were "ready to face the consequences of our act," they could not expect a fair trial in America and "would be condemned to spend the rest of our days in infernal prisons." French authorities declined the American extradition request in November 1976, holding the four defendants in the [Fleury-Mérogis prison](#), awaiting trial on hijacking charges. On November 24, 1978, the *Fleury 4* were convicted by a French court for the hijacking. All received five-year sentences, but two years were suspended from the women's terms. In the United States, they would have faced a minimum of 20 years.^{[26][27]} George Brown and Melvin McNair were released in 1981.

In 2012, a documentary titled *Melvin & Jean: An American Story*^[28] was made by director Maia Wechsler.^[29] Melvin McNair and his wife, Jean, work at an orphanage in the French town of [Caen](#), where reportedly they have turned their lives around completely.^[30] McNair is known for coaching American baseball, teaching youth the art and strategy of the sport.

In 2010, a documentary titled *Nobody Knows My Name*^[31] was made about the hijacking. According to Mikhael Ganouna, producer of the film, Wright's hijacking accomplice, George Brown, lives in Paris but isn't worried about being extradited because he has already served his sentence.^[32]

Extradition in a similar prelude hijacking

The [Flight 841](#) hijacking was a [copycat](#) of a similar incident two months earlier, involving the hijacking of [Western Airlines](#) Flight 701 from [Los Angeles](#) to [Seattle](#) on June 3, 1972 by [Black Panthers](#) Willie Roger Holder, a black Vietnam veteran, and Catherine Marie Kerkow. The hijackers claimed they had a bomb in an attache case and demanded \$500,000. After allowing all 97 passengers to get off in San Francisco, they flew to Algeria where they were granted political asylum. The Algerian government confiscated and returned \$488,000 of the ransom money to US officials. On January 25, 1975, the two hijackers, carrying passports under the names Leavy Forte and Janice Ann Forte, were arrested on illegal entry charges by French police. On April 15, 1975, a French court refused a US extradition request for the pair on grounds the hijacking was a political act. In July 1986, French authorities moved to deport Holder to the US after he completed his sentence for 1984 assault charges. Kerkow was never extradited.^{[33][34][35][36]}

[] International fugitive captured

After the [apprehension](#) of his four accomplices, Wright remained the lone hijacker at large. The elusive [fugitive](#) is known to have made his way to France, [Guinea-Bissau](#) (a former Portuguese colony) and finally to Portugal. While living in Guinea-Bissau in the 1980s, Wright allegedly

used his real name and worked as logistics manager of the Belgium-based nonprofit [Iles de Paix](#).^{[37][38]}

[] Apprehension

On September 26, 2011, Wright was arrested in [Mem Martins](#), Portugal^[39] after 41 years on the run, as the result of a combined task force that introduced cold-case evidence from [New Jersey](#). The task force matched Wright's fingerprints from the New Jersey prison with the fingerprints on the [ID card](#) issued by the Portuguese government. The United States sought his extradition, with the possibility that he will finish the remaining 22 years of his sentence.^{[40][41]} However, the request was denied on the grounds that Wright is a Portuguese citizen.^[42]

[] Life in Portugal

Wright, who lived under the name of José Luís Jorge dos Santos,^[43] had no known occupation, but allegedly at one point owned a [BBQ chicken restaurant](#), sold items at a stall along a popular tourist beach, worked as a [bouncer](#) at a local bar and, similar to Melvin McNair, coached youth in American basketball. He married a Portuguese-English [translator](#) who was 13 years younger and, together, the couple had two children. His neighbors knew his first name was George, but did not know his history, assuming he was African, not American.^[44]

[] References

1. [^ "INTERPOL Red Notice Listings From the United States"](#). Retrieved April 6, 2011.
2. [^ "Foragido George Wright apanhado em Portugal através de chamada telefónica convicted kidnapper and murderer"](#). SIC Noticias. September 26, 2011.
3. [^ "Awaiting Extradition U.S. Fugitive Is Far From His Hometown In Halifax"](#). News & Record. October 3, 2011.
4. [^ "U.S. Officials Reportedly Knew Fugitive Was in Africa"](#). *Fox News*. Associated Press. September 29, 2011.
5. [^ "George Wright 'wins extradition case in Portugal'"](#). BBC.co.uk. November 17, 2011. Retrieved November 17, 2011.
6. [^ Grant, Jason. "Ambassador had no idea 41-year fugitive was escaped convict during encounters in Guinea-Bissau"](#). The Star-Ledger. Retrieved September 29, 2011.
7. [^ Webster, Charles. "Fugitive's arrest brings relief to N.J. family 49 years after killing"](#). MyCentralJersey.com. Retrieved Oct. 1, 2011.
8. [^ http://www.nytimes.com/2011/09/28/nyregion/george-wright-hijacking-and-murder-fugitive-arrested-in-portugal.html](#)
9. [^ Webster, Charles. "Wall gas station attendant killer captured in Portugal after 41-year manhunt"](#). Asbury Park Press. Retrieved September 28, 2011.
10. [^ In a process similar to what is called *Alford plea*.](#)
11. [^ "International Fugitive Captured After More Than 40 Years"](#). FBI Newark. Retrieved September 27, 2011.
12. [^ Fournier, Holly. "Capture pulls Detroit hijacker from shadows"](#). The Detroit News. Retrieved October 5, 2011.
13. [^ "US fugitive wants to serve time in Portugal"](#). Associated Press. Retrieved Sept. 30, 2011.
14. [^ "Escaped Murder Convict Among Skyjackers Of Jet"](#). The Morning Record. Aug 3, 1972.

15. [^ Newton, Michael \(2002\). "The Encyclopedia of Kidnappings \(Facts on File Crime Library\)". Facts On File, Inc.](#)
16. [^ "FBI Charges 5 - Escaped Convicts in Hijacking Plot". The Spokesman-Review. Aug 3, 1972.](#)
17. [^ "FBI Lists One Of Hijackers Fugitive Convicted Slayer". Daytona Beach Morning Journal. Aug 3, 1972.](#)
18. [^ Portugal nabs N.J. killer/hijacker on the run since 1970](#), Michael Winter, *USA Today*, September 27, 2011
19. [^ "Hijackers Order Jet to Algeria". The Palm Beach Post. Aug 1, 1972.](#)
20. [^ "Hijackers Fled "Decadent America"". Indiana Evening Gazette. Aug 3, 1972.](#)
21. [^ "Clever Urges Algeria To Allow Ransom Be Kept". Daily Messenger. Aug 3, 1972.](#)
22. [^ "Clever Calls on Algerian President To Keep Black Skyjackers' \\$1 Million". Aug. 7, 1972.](#)
23. [^ Meghelli, Samir \(2010\). "From the Algiers Motel to Algiers, Algeria: Black Power in Transnational Perspective, 1962–78". Columbia University.](#)
24. [^ "Algeria: Panthers on Ice". Time Magazine. September 4, 1972.](#)
25. [^ Heiser, Jürgen \(October 6, 2011\). "Nach 41 Jahren in Portugal verhaftet: Der frühere Black-Panther-Aktivist George Wright kämpft gegen seine Auslieferung in die USA". AG Friedensforschung.](#)
26. [^ "Persecution or Prosecution?". David Icke's Official Forums.](#)
27. [^ "Black Militants Get Prison Terms In Hijacking Case". Spartanburg Herald-Journal. November 25, 1978.](#)
28. [^ http://melvinandjean.com](#)
29. [^ http://www.imdb.com/name/nm1372421/ IMDB bio](#)
30. [^ "Retired Triad pilot recalls 1972 hijacking of airliner". Associated Press. September 29, 2011.](#)
31. [^ http://www.imdb.com/title/tt1693798/ IMDB page](#)
32. [^ "US officials knew fugitive in Africa". Associated Press. October 1, 2011.](#)
33. [^ "Hijack suspects seized in Paris". The Miami News. Jan 27, 1975.](#)
34. [^ "Hijack Suspects Arrested". Ocala Star-Banner. Jan 26, 1975.](#)
35. [^ "Skyjacker Wants To Return Home". Merced Sun-Star. May 7, 1977.](#)
36. [^ "France hands over suspect in 1972 hijacking". The Deseret News. Jul 27, 1986.](#)
37. [^ "Fugitive hijacker George Wright 'socialised with US envoy in Africa". Guardian. September 30, 2011.](#)
38. [^ "US fugitive lived openly in Africa". Associated Press. October 2, 2011.](#)
39. [^ Location of Wright's final capture in Portugal](#)
40. [^ Associated Press. "George Wright, fugitive US hijacker, caught in Portugal after 40 years | World news | guardian.co.uk". Guardian. Retrieved September 28, 2011.](#)
41. [^ "US killer George Wright held in Portugal after 40 years". BBC News. September 27, 2011.](#)
42. [^ "Deadline Past, Portugal Says It Won't Send Killer to U.S.". *New York Times*.](#)
43. [^ "Longtime fugitive U.S. hijacker caught in Portugal". Usatoday.com. August 19, 1970. Retrieved September 28, 2011.](#)
44. [^ "AP Exclusive: US fugitive hid in Portugal hamlet - Yahoo! News". News.yahoo.com. Retrieved September 28, 2011.](#)

Imprisonment and escape

Pintarić served his sentence in [Stara Gradiška prison](#). Due to his good behavior, he was assigned duties which were not accessible to other prisoners, such as preparing coffee and growing flowers. Still, after eight years in prison some problems emerged, as Pintarić was issuing threats

to his former neighbors. At the same time, he was petitioning for a leave. The authorities were aware of his threats and denied all his petitions, assessing that he might commit more crimes upon release.^[5]

On 21 February 1982 Pintarić managed to escape from the prison by simply adding his name to a list of prisoners to be released on a leave. Five days later, he wrote a letter to his attorney, saying that he escaped because writing petitions made no sense any more. He announced that he was going to kill "a lot of people", and that what he had done was just the beginning.^[5]

Pintarić got involved with Barbara Šipek, a woman from the village of Andraševac, near [Donja Stubica](#). They lived together in her house, and even went stealing together. She knew about his identity, as did the villagers. When she was apprehended by the police in April 1983, Pintarić barged into a nearby Kucelj family house armed with a shotgun, and threatened to kill "thirty people" unless she was released. However, Milan and Matija Kucelj managed to surprise Pintarić and overpower him, hacking him with a [cleaver](#) in the process. They left him for dead and promptly alarmed the [Oroslavje](#) police. Pintarić was severely injured, but he survived. As a result of his injuries, he lost full use of his right arm.^{[1][2][5]}

[] Imprisonment in Lepoglava and final escape

Pintarić was charged with threats, attempted murder, and 30 counts of [burglary](#). He was again sentenced to 20 years and sent to [Lepoglava prison](#). Life behind bars bored him, so he decided to escape again. On 3 September 1989 he was given a day's leave from which he did not return.^[2]

Pintarić went back to his outlaw lifestyle. He kept breaking into [cottages](#) across [Hrvatsko Zagorje](#), carefully picking those which had a clear view towards the road and were close to a forest, making the escape easier.^[2]

In June 1990 the police received a tip about Pintarić having been seen in Prosenik Začretski, near Zabok. They talked to Rudolf Belina, owner of a nearby cottage. A couple of days later, he was visited and shot dead by Pintarić, who thought Belina had betrayed him to the authorities. Shortly after that, Pintarić murdered Barbara Šipek's neighbor for having killed one of her chickens. His fifth and final victim was Božo Habek, shot dead on 2 August 1990 simply for asking the already paranoid Pintarić if he was looking for somebody.^{[2][6]}

The police was closing in on Pintarić, and twice came very near to apprehending him. However, on both of these occasions Pintarić opened fire, wounded a policeman, and managed to escape.^{[6][7]}

Arrest and escape



Jaber A. Elbaneh c. 2000



Jaber A. Elbaneh in 1996

Elbaneh worked as a [cabbie](#) in [San'a](#) for months, before turning himself in to Yemeni authorities. He was sent to a maximum-security prison run by the [Political Security Office](#), while authorities argued with the United States over the substantial \$5 million reward, and who should receive it.^[3] Some suggested that if they refused to turn Elbaneh over immediately, the United States might increase the reward.^[3]

Elbaneh was named as one of 23 people who escaped from a Yemeni jail on February 3, 2006.^[9] Prisoners had banned guards from entering the prison basement, as they dug a 143' tunnel using a broomstick and a sharpened spoon, which exited in the women's washroom of a nearby mosque. They had masked the sounds of their escape by playing [soccer](#) to distract guards.^[3]

The [FBI](#) confirmed the escape was genuine on February 23, as they issued a national press release naming Elbaneh as one of the first new additions, since inception in 2001, to the FBI Most Wanted Terrorists list.^{[10][11]} They also stated that they believed the escaped prisoners, which included [Jamal al-Badawi](#) who had a previous successful escape from custody, had likely received help from female sympathisers attending the mosque, who may have helped digging the tunnel from their end.^[3]

Ulaş Bardakçı was born in 1947 in [Hacıbektas](#), Turkey. He attended [METU](#) in where he was introduced to communist ideas. He followed a [Marxist-Leninist](#) path. He was active in the formation of the revolutionary youth organization [Dev-Genç](#). In late 1970 he actively participated in the foundation of [THKP-C](#) along with [Mahir Çayan](#) and he participated in the initial armed actions of THKP-C

. Capture

In May 1971 Ulaş Bardakçı, along with [Mahir Çayan](#) kidnapped the [Israeli](#) ambassador to [Turkey](#), [Ephraim Elrom](#). They demanded their comrades who were imprisoned following the military coup to be freed. Their demands were not met and Ephraim Elrom was killed by Bardakçı and his comrades. Following the 'Operation Hammer', intended to rescue Elrom, Bardakçı was captured and imprisoned.

. Escape

Ulaş Bardakçı, along with 5 other revolutionaries imprisoned with him, escaped from military prison in November 1971. Following his escape, he preceded to ensure that THKP-C kept its visionary views in [Istanbul](#).

. Death

Ulaş Bardakçı's hideout was surrounded by police forces in 19 February 1972. He did not surrender, and he was killed by the police before dawn.

A flashback to 27 years ago, great Kurdish director died in Paris

10.9.2011

By Nucan Cudi, ANF

[More Sharing ServicesShare](#)
| [Share on facebookShare](#)
[on myspaceShare](#)
[on googleShare](#)
[on twitter](#)

**September 10,
2011**

Yilmaz Güney's grave in Père Lachaise has a different quality from other memorials. The marker is not made of marble, the warm stone, but rather a cold steel frame. Paradoxically, despite its' material qualities the grave transmits warmth. Or perhaps this is just the impression one has standing in front of that grave, witnessing a scene in which the passionate, warm, controversial life of Yilmaz Güney unfolds. He would be 73 years old if a stomach cancer (not cured in prison) had not consumed him. Güney died in Paris on September 9th, 1984.

As an exile, he arrived in the French capital in a daring way. Indeed his entire life was adventurous. He managed to fool the military, which had just taken power again (on September 12th, 1980 with the third military coup in thirty years).

He managed to break out from the maximum (high) security prison on Imrali island (where Abdullah Öcalan, president of the Pkk, Kurdistan



Yilmaz Güney won the Palm d'Or in Cannes in 1982 with his film "YOL"

Workers' Party, has been held since 1999). Güney too was a Kurd. Indeed as he used to say:

«I am an assimilated Kurd. My mother was Kurd, my father Kurd Zaza. I spoke Kurdish until I was 15 years old, at which point I parted from my family. At that time it was said that Kurds did not exist, that the Kurdish language did not exist. But I could hear people speaking and singing in Kurdish. I saw Kurds living in extreme poverty and under repression. My father was from Siverek: I had visited Siverek when I was 16. It was then that I understood who I really was. And when I was 34, I finally visited my mother's village, Muş. My film *Sürü* tells the story of what happened to my mother's tribe/clan ».

Güney was born on the first of April 1937 in a village near Adana, Yenice. Before arriving in Paris, in the autumn of 1981, Güney stopped at the French-Swiss border to finish the post-production of his film *Yol* (The Road). A film which would be awarded the Golden Palm in Cannes the following year, giving Güney fame that up to that point he had enjoyed only at home, where he was both loved and hated. Loved by the Turkish and Kurdish left, Güney was a communist, an internationalist. He would never hold back when it was important to take a stance. For this honesty Güney paid a very high price. He spent many years in prison. The last time he was arrested was in 1974, only a few months after his release from prison, thanks to general amnesty. In what became known as the 'Yumurtalik incident', Güney shot a judge in a bar. The judge insulted Güney's wife saying: "if he is a communist his wife is certainly a whore". Perhaps the shot was fired accidentally. Legends about the episode still flourish. Whatever the true dynamic of the events were, Güney ended up in prison once again. He was sentenced to 9 years in prison which soon became 100 years, because while in prison every article he wrote for the magazine "Güney", which he created, cost him additional years of prison. Facing the perspective of remaining behind bars for his whole life, he decided to escape.

"I escaped from prison – he would say in an interview he made shortly before his death – not from Turkey". Words that sum up Güney's incredible homesick for his country. For which he does not see any solution but devrim, the revolution. Güney nourished a passion for cinema from an early age. By coincidence, when he was 15 during a summer holiday (in winter he used to work in the cotton fields) he met the father of Melike Demirağ (who will become one of his main actresses) who owned a cinema distribution company. He decided not to go back to his village, but to remain in Adana to experience the 'city life'. He began to write short stories and poems. He worked as a film distributor traveling all around Kurdistan, studying during the day and working nights. With a group of young friends he edited *Doruk*, an art magazine. «I read – he writes – I always read a lot. I was 18 but I knew English, French and the new American literature. The good amount of the money I was earning, I spent on books. When I was 18, I had some four hundred books. But I missed something ».

That something was to define an awareness, a consciousness growing in

him. A consciousness coming from his life, from being in touch with the poorest, neglected, oppressed section of the population. In his reading he would soon become acquainted with Nazim Hikmet, the great Turkish communist poet. A new world opened before his eyes. «I managed to get my hands on 'Mavi Gözlü Dev' (The Blue Eyes Giant) and from that moment – he writes – I began to read Nazim Hikmet to my friends». Hikmet's poems were forbidden. The communist youngsters would meet clandestinely, in hidden places. For Güney they represented an incredible attraction. At the age of 18 (1955), he wrote a short story which was confiscated by the police and he got arrested. "Communist propaganda", was the charge. In the young Güney, who still was Yılmaz Pütün (his real name), the growth as an artist, intellectual, writer and as a left wing man, intolerant of the abuses and repression especially suffered by the Kurds, coincide. At this stage his identity consciousness arousal, so to speak, is in the formative stages.

After secondary school, Güney continued to work but he was already nourishing the idea of becoming a writer. «But to write novels, you cannot stay in Adana. You have to go to Istanbul. Indeed not so much to write novels, but to acquire the knowledge that will make you succeed». In Istanbul Güney studied, worked and tried to meet writers who could help him in his career. Here again and in a deeper manner, he got in touch with communism. And with Atif Yılmaz, of whom he will become script assistant. Yılmaz was shooting a film from a short story by the Kurdish writer Yaşar Kemal. As there was not enough money for production, Kemal himself would pay part. It is at this point that Yılmaz Pütün decides to abandon his surname. From now on he will be known as Yılmaz Güney. A clear statement: Güney means South, a clear stance.

From 1961 to 1963 is in prison. He did not get depressed there but instead gave himself a program to follow: writing the novel he had wanted to write, studying communism - considering that he was defining himself a socialist- and finally thinking about his life after prison. This course of study helped to prepare him to enter fully in the world of cinema, of arts. He wrote that novel he was dreaming of in prison: *Boynu Bükük Öldüler* (They died with their heads bowed). «I worked for sixteen months – he writes – day and night, in the political prisoner's wing of Nevşehir jail. I used to dream about the people I was writing about. It was like living with them. Once out of prison I tried to publish the novel, but in vain». In 1963 he started to act in films and to become recognized. These films were not necessarily political, as he underlines himself, however they shared the theme of sufferance of the people. In 1966 a friend tried to publish his novel but still it was not the right time. As an actor, Yılmaz Güney became recognized as 'Çirkin Kral' (the Ugly King). In 1971, his novel was finally published and a year later it was awarded the prestigious Orhan Kemal award. The book tells about the life in Çukurova, in the '50s. Apart from the poetry of the narrative, it stands out because of Güney's ability to describe the characters of the book with realism, adhering to the reality in which they live. There is a sensitivity, tenderness and particular poetry in the novel which makes the book one of the most admired of its' time.

On March 12th, 1971 there is a new military coup, a so-called 'soft' golpe, though thousands of intellectuals and artists end up in prison. At this point, the fame of Yılmaz Güney as an actor is at its highest. The 'Ugly King' begins to play with the idea of writing a film he would shoot himself. These are the years of the most political involvement for Güney. Winds of the struggle for human rights, of student's marches in European and USA campuses are blowing in Turkey as well. Istanbul and Ankara universities above all are stirring. Among the student's leaders is Deniz Gezmiş. On the left the workers movement becomes stronger and stronger. In 1970 unionized workers are 30% of the workforce and the peasants movement is very active. The Turkish workers party, founded after the 1960 coup, is made up of young people in their twenties.

On March 4th, 1970 Deniz Gezmiş and his comrades kidnapped 4 American soldiers in Balgat (Ankara). After releasing the hostages, Deniz and two comrades were arrested. The trial began on July 16th, 1971. Deniz Gezmiş was sentenced to death for 'attempting to subvert the constitutional order'. After the approval of the sentence by the parliament, on May 4th, the president of the Republic Cevdet Sunay refused the grace after consultation with the Prime Minister Nihat Erim. Deniz Gezmiş, Hüseyin Inan and Yusuf Aslan were hung on May 6th 1972 in Ankara prison. Before the sentence was carried out Thkp-C (Turkish Halk Kurulusu Parti-Cepe, Turkish People Liberation Army) organized different actions. Two months after the 1971 golpe, they kidnapped the Israeli consul in Istanbul, Ephraim Elrom. The kidnapers asked for the release of all the revolutionary prisoners. The Turkish government refused to give in to the demands and these hostages were killed. Among the organizers of the kidnapping were Mahir Çayan e Ulaş Bardakçı. Yılmaz Güney hid in their house. The police followed 'Çirkin Kral', who was under control because he was a communist. It is on this occasion, as Ertuğrul Kürkçü recalls, that Güney plays his best role. Çayan e Bardakçı escaped capture. But they would die a little later, on March 30th, 1972 in Kizildere, where three English army officers were kept as hostages. The army would surround the house in the Black Sea killing 10 of the men in the commando. The hostages also would die. Only Kürkçü would survive the massacre.

In prison Güney does not become dishearted. Indeed as a man and artist convinced of his ideas, he continued writing and working. «Social changes – he wrote – educates people and makes their class conscience grow. I was far from the struggle. I did not take part in the working class or peasants struggle. I was far from the reality of life. I had nearly lost myself in the dirt of the bourgeois world. But then the March 12th golpe arrived [1971. NdA]. This helped my consciousness. I knew where I stood - with the working class and with my people. I believe in scientific socialism. I am an artist, an apprentice of socialism. I cannot say that I am a good socialist because I am learning and still have to improve. I will support the struggle with every means available. I am ready to face the difficulties in front of me». He certainly did. Out of prison, thanks to a general amnesty in 1974, he returned within few months. This time charged with murder, in what became known as Yumurtalık incident: Güney shot a judge who insulted his wife.

As previously mentioned it could be said that Güney's political and artistic growth coincide. In 1970 his film *Umut* (Hope) was released. It is an innovative film for Turkey because for the first time the huge economic and social gap between internal migrants from the countryside and urban citizens of Turkey is addressed. Influenced by realism and neo-realism (use of non professional actors, for example) the film is an allegory from its first scene. In the first lights of the morning, the streets of a deserted city are washed by a municipal vehicle, to symbolize the 'under class' (to which the main character of the film, Cabbar, interpreted by Güney himself, belong) brushed away from society. Cabbar is a good worker but is considered ignorant and illiterate, with no place in a modern city. His only 'hope' is the lottery. *Umut* is not openly a film concerning the Kurdish question, but clearly both Cabbar and his friends are Kurds. Cabbar's search for survival ends in failure. This is depicted with camera's perspective which captures his isolation from a distance as he goes round and round the hole he has dug.

Umut represents a turning point for the actor Güney: not the hero who can right the wrong alone, but rather the lonely man who cannot manage anything alone. Addressing the question of unbalance between state and people, the director seems to indicate (suggest) that the only possibility of social change lies with collective action.

What in *Umut* is loosely sketched, becomes explicit in *Sürü* (1978) where the conditions and deep social and political divisions within the rural and Kurdish communities in the city. The script of *Sürü* was written in prison. The direction is finally given to Zeki Ökten. The film is complex and examines the disintegration of the traditional way of nomadic and rural life in Turkey, as a consequence of the land reforms of the '50s and the '60s. But the film is above all a powerful story of the process of historical change among the Kurdish peasants who had always been associated in the mind of many Turks with ignorance, violence, superstition, and backwardness. In this film there is also the direct dealing with the contradiction that Kurds could indeed become modern only by renouncing to their Kurdishness, and becoming assimilated Turks. Indirectly Güney also asks if it is possible to imagine the existence of the modern Kurd, in other words if there is room in Turkey for the existence of a Kurdish identity. These questions will accompany the director throughout his intense artistic activity and short life. In *Sürü* emerges the impossibility of characters to produce transformations in a reality full of restrictions imposed on them. This idea of Turkey as a prison is a theme that will recur in a deeper way in *Yol* (The Road) and in the last of Güney's films, *Duvar* (The Wall).

If in *Umut* there is the issue of necessary collective action to produce a change, in *Sürü* the position occupied by the Kurds in modern Turkey is addressed with four main characters of the film who transform as a result of their journey to Kurdistan. In *Sürü* the condition of women, oppressed and victim of the feudal organization of the clan is also addressed. Like *Umut*, *Sürü* too would be banned by the state, which clearly cannot accept such a harsh criticism and denouncement of the alienated part of its'

population.

In prison once again, Güney writes the script of Yol, which will give him the Palm d'Or in Cannes in 1982. Güney explains in interviews about the film «the jail is the most appropriate subject to describe present Turkey », to describe Turkey after the military coup of September 12th, 1980. Yol is a place of constriction and surveillance where there seems to be no place for any form of political expression. It is a place of heavy military presence, house raids, roadblocks, curfew and extrajudicial executions. But Güney does not stop at the denouncement of post-golpe repressive military regime. The critic also addresses the social condition of the country's rural areas, still dominated by patriarchal structure. Parallels between state persecution and 'local' forms of oppression are plentiful. A country struggling towards modernity in a society still tied to traditions and prejudices, where the control and repression of the state are echoed by the patriarchal control and a system built on honor which guarantees everyone's behavior is constantly under control by the state - in 'macro', by relatives, neighbors and even by strangers in the 'micro'. It is a prison on two levels which incarcerates both men and women, although in different ways and with different answers. On one hand, the men end up as powerless, unable to rebel against repression. On the other women, who do rebel by breaking rules, pay a huge price.

Duvar is a very hard film, once again about prison-Turkey. The victims of abuse this time are children. In many ways Duvar can be compared to Salò o le 120 giornate di Sodoma, by Pier Paolo Pasolini (released in 1975, some 9 years before Duvar). Apparently without hope, the film tells the story of a prison revolt led by kids. It is telling that the working title of the film was 'Break the windows so birds could fly free', indicating that in reality hope is to be found also in the exposure of a brutal regime (in this case the military junta post 1980 golpe) and acting together to rebel.

Yilmaz Güney died in exile in Paris in 1984. He left over a hundred incredibly relevant films.

1000 operations against the people in Turkey

english at ozgurlluk.xs4all.nl [english at ozgurlluk.xs4all.nl](http://english.ozgurlluk.xs4all.nl)

Tue Dec 9 12:59:48 GMT 1997

- Previous message: [Turkey: Mainstream update on the Manisa-trial](#)
- Next message: [Israel, Turkey discuss weapons plants](#)
- **Messages sorted by:** [\[date \]](#) [\[thread \]](#) [\[subject \]](#) [\[author \]](#)

1000 OPERATIONS AND GANGS

1000 OPERATIONS WERE CARRIED OUT AGAINST THE PEOPLE

"1000 secret operations", these three words testified by Mehmet Agar,

define the character of the "Susurluk" state. "1000 secret operations" means disappearances while in custody, murders by unknown perpetrators and provocations. Among them the massacres of March 16, July 12, and the executions on April 16-17 in Bahçelievler, a neighbourhood of Istanbul. It means blood bath in Sivas, Gazi, Ümraniye, Diyarbakir. When the "Susurluk Affair" came on the agenda, all forces of the oligarchy denied the fact that these gangs had been used against the people and that thousands of operations had been carried out. Those who said "these gangs have to be dissolved", later didn't ask and discuss no more why and against whom these gangs had been founded. All these events were initiated, decided and carried out by the contra-guerrilla. "The state in Susurluk" is organised against the people. The state which has to be held accountable, which has to be interrogated, is this state. The history of this state shows many massacres and crimes against the people.

THE FIRST CONTRA-ACTION OF THE REPUBLIC

With approval of Ankara, the founder of the TKP - Communist Party of Turkey - returned from the Soviet Union to Anatolia, together with fourteen of his comrades. From that moment he was confronted with numerous plots. The people were incited against Mustafa Suphi and his comrades. They reacted with returning to the Soviet Union, but - ordered by Ankara - they were drowned in the Black Sea by Yahya Kemal and his men on January 29, 1921. It was Ankara's goal to weaken the effect of the Soviet Revolution. Therefore M. Kemal had a communist party founded, controlled by the state. There was no contra-guerrilla at that time, but the methods which were used had the same character. These methods are not alien to the ruling class. To liquidate the opposition, seen as the enemy, by means of conspiracies is a tradition which stems from the Ottoman Empire. It's this tradition which allowed a new Sultan to destroy his brother because of the rivalry for power. This tradition, inherited from the Ottoman Empire, was continued in the time of the republic.

KURDISH UPRISINGS AND MASSACRES

All the uprisings, from the Koçgiri Uprising in 1921 to the Dersim Uprising in 1937, were oppressed by massacres by the state. A savage policy of genocide was applied. Hundreds of thousands of Kurds were slaughtered. From the beginning of the 90's, the Kurdish people witnessed the burning down of villages, deportation and massacres, initiated by the contra-guerrilla. The opponents of the system and the leaders of the uprising were put before the "Court of the future", similar to the present DGM - State Security Court -, and sentenced to years of imprisonment, exile and death. The "Court of the future" was in session between December 10, 1923 - February 5, 1924 and April 14, 1925 - March 7, 1927. The court was abolished in 1949. At that time, the "Takrir-i Sükun" law about "securing the public order", a state of emergency law like the present one, was enacted. All the power in the state of emergency areas was handed over to the army commanders and

the governor. With the Settlement Law of July 14, 1927, the country was turned into a prison. Who was to be resettled in what area was decided by the state.

THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA IS "OFFICIALLY " FOUNDED

The NATO was founded against the growing influence of socialism and against the liberation struggles of the people against imperialism. The contra-guerrilla is a covert organisation of NATO. After Turkey joined NATO, a first contra-guerrilla centre was established in Ankara in September 1952, called the "Institute for War Research". This name, thought of by the CIA, was changed in 1965 to "Özel Harp Dairesi", Special War Department, and once again in 1990 to "Özel Kuvvetler Komutanlığı", Special Forces Command. Until the 70's, nobody but government circles knew about this. The goal of this organisation, which existed under different names in several countries, was - especially in the neo-colonial countries - not limited to "combat the external communist threat". When the profits of imperialism and its collaborators are concerned, it's of no importance whether this threat comes from the outside or the inside. Therefore the contra-guerrilla in the neo-colonial countries was aimed primarily against the growing internal threat of an expanding liberation struggle, stopping the revolutionaries, and not as much against an external threat. The contra-guerrilla was organised against the people, against the liberation struggle of the people. Elementary forces in this war, a threat to the profits of imperialism, capable of seizing and maintaining power, are the armed forces of the people, the guerrilla fighters. The contra-guerrilla is defined by its policy, its strategy, tactics and the level of organisation, parallel to the liberation war. The contra-guerrilla carries out its attacks, its oppression and terror, against the people. The revolutionaries, democrats and progressive people, neither participating in the armed struggle, nor at the side of the state, but advocating the struggle for liberation and democracy, are targeted by the state. The names "Özel Harp", Special War, and "Özel Kuvvetler", Special Forces" in the military literature mean organising against the civil war and the guerrilla struggle. The contra-guerrilla, established in the neo-colonial countries, was used to reorganise the army according to the needs of the civil war.

THE FIRST PROVOCATIVE ACTS OF THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA AND THE SEPTEMBER 6-7 EVENTS

The first and most threatening action, carried out by the contra-guerrilla after its foundation, was the bombing in 1955 in Saloniki, Greece, of the museum where Atatürk was born. Claiming the house was bombed by Greek, the Turkish media and the contra-guerrilla tried to incite the Turkish public in a chauvinistic manner against the Cypriot, Armenian and Jewish minorities. Between 6 and 7 September, hundreds of houses, shops, schools and churches, mostly belonging to Greek Cypriots, were burned and looted. This, albeit in a

lesser magnitude, also happened in Izmir.

THE JUNTA OF MAY 27, 1960 AND THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA

Because there was no serious revolutionary organising and struggle against the government prior to the junta of May 27, the contra-guerrilla didn't carry out any serious or striking activities. The only force which could be labelled as left, and especially aiming at intellectual and bureaucratic circles, was - prior to the junta of 1960, the TKP. The moral superiority, caused by the revolutionary Soviet resistance in the 2nd. imperialist war of partition, and later by the establishment of socialism in many countries, had its effect in Turkey as well. At that time, the organisation of the TKP expanded. Although the revisionist TKP was not an organisation which seriously threatened the power of the ruling class, its expansion was prevented. With the operation "Arrest of the Communist 1951", the majority of the leadership in the country was caught: 167 functionaries were arrested. Until the 60's, it was tried to silence many democrats and progressive intellectuals in the dungeons, accusing them of "membership of a communist organisation" or "distributing communist propaganda". At the end of the 50's, there wasn't a Kurdish organisation yet which had to be taken seriously. In 1950, discussions were held between intellectuals and students, coming together to publish a magazine. In December 1959, 50 students and employees were arrested in Istanbul and Ankara. State president Celal Bayar and prime-minister Adnan Menderes advocated the hanging of the arrested. But this was opposed by the minister of Foreign Affairs, Rüstü Zorlu, reasoning the image of Turkey in Europe would be damaged and pressure would follow. The wave of arrests continued after the military coup of May 27. 485 Kurds, among them large landowners, Sheikhs and tribal leaders, were arrested and put in a concentration camp in Sivas. 55 of those were, based on a law of October 19, 1960, were banned to several cities and forcibly evacuated. The campaign "Fellow countrymen, speak Turkish" was aimed at, besides the Kurds, the Armenians, Greek and Jews in Istanbul and the Aegean region. Law no. 1587 was enacted to replace Kurdish and Armenian names by Turkish ones. It's not certain how great the influence was of the contra-guerrilla on the junta of May 27. The US knew a coup was at hand, but they didn't want to prevent it. Because the government, led by Menderes, was in disunion and worn out, they approved of the coup. Because the contra-guerrilla, backed by the CIA, was unable to fully control this coup, there were some officers - known as being left - in the lower echelons of the junta because of a lack in ideological unity and the existence of different groups among the putschists in rivalry for power, later leading to the removal of Alparslan Türkeş and his friends.

1960: THE ORGANISING OF THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA EXPANDS

The MGK, National Security Council, still regarded as the highest central organ, was legalised by the constitution of 1961. The article 141-142 of the fascist Italian penal code about "communist propaganda

and the founding of a party, based on a class" was kept in the new constitution. The contra-guerrilla continued to organise during the junta and later. Demirel, denying the existence of the contra-guerrilla for decades, and now hiding the mask of a democrat and saying "the Susurluk Affair has to be investigated and resolved", after 1965 participating in the reorganisation of the contra-guerrilla and the covering up of their crimes, is the main responsible culprit. This was the case from 1965 to 1971 and during the periods of the National Front governments. The book of the CIA-agent David Galula, "Theory and Practice of Oppressing the Resistance", was printed in 1985 by the publishing house of the general staff and distributed among all military organs. In this book, it is explained how to act against revolutionaries and leftist movements, what methods have to be applied in conspiracies and executions, and how elections should be organised after the opposition has been removed. These methods have been applied by the contra-guerrilla ever since. When the contra-guerrilla had civic fascists trained in a camp in 1968, Demirel was prime-minister. The contra-guerrilla was organised under his protection. During this phase, Demirel had all cadres of the state, especially the police, trained in the fascist ideology. The number of policemen increased, and at the same time the oppression apparatus was equipped and strengthened with high-pressure water canons, electrical sticks and helicopters. Demirel, not satisfied with this, tried to push through a new law, robbing the democratic rights, under the name "Protection of the Constitutional Order", to prevent the people's opposition, protests and demonstrations. But he wasn't successful. The intelligence service MAH played a major role in the arrests and interrogations. Primarily, secret organisations are set up to watch and control the activities of other countries, but the MAH - and its successor, the MIT (National Intelligence Service) - prosecute their own people. It would be more appropriate to see the MAH as a subsidiary of the CIA, instead of the secret organisation of Turkey. Its members are trained by the CIA and their salaries were paid by them for many years. In 1965 its name was changed into MIT. The MIT is one of the state organisations where the contra-guerrilla was able to organise right from the start. It is always a high-ranking officer who is appointed as head of the MIT. Most members are stemming from the army. Although the MIT officially is subordinated to the prime-minister, the initiative is in the hands of the army and the "Special War Department".

BLOODY SUNDAY: THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA USES RELIGIOUS REACTIONISM

1968 was a year of a quick growth of youth movements and anti-imperialist mass protests. Opposition in society was not limited to the youth. The DISK - Confederation of Revolutionary Trade Unions -, formed in 1967 as an alternative to the state unions, became - despite its revisionist line - a thriving force behind the struggle on the workers' front. The dynamics and actions of the youth also influenced other segments of the population, and the opposition in society expanded, mass protests increased. During this period, the

expanding mass protests, the progressive-revolutionary opposition, the workers' and peasants' actions, and the students' actions were at first attacked by the organised "Fighting Associations against Communism", later by using religious reactionism. After the 6th. Fleet of the US arrived in Turkey, the anti-imperialist protests increased. On February 16, 1969, the largest anti-imperialist mass protest was held with 30.000 people marching towards Taxim. The demonstration was split up by the police. Several thousands were able to continue towards Taxim, the others were driven away in another direction. Incited and directed by the contra-guerrilla, civic fascist attacked several thousands of demonstrators with knives and sticks. During this confrontation, two revolutionary workers, Ali Turgut and Duran Erdogan, were murdered. This first intended and largest attack of the contra-guerrilla against a mass action entered history as "Bloody Sunday".

THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA ORGANISES THE CIVIC FASCIST MOVEMENT AND STARTS ITS MASSACRES

The fascists, organised under Alparslan Türkeş in the CKMP, later MHP (Nationalist Movement Party), were trained in contra-guerrilla camps since the summer of 1969. The number of training camp rose to 45 in that year. That way the contra-guerrilla succeeded in creating a basis and the cadres of fascism which could be used against the people and the revolutionaries. The civic fascists carried out their first attack on December 31, 1968, against a students' home in Ankara. But the students answered with a counter-attack and forced them back. The attacks of the fascists, organised by the contra-guerrilla and supported by the police, were at first carried out with sticks, chains and bricks, but soon they started to use fire-arms. In September 1969, a leader of the ODTÜ students, Taylan Özgür, was shot on the street by plainclothes policemen. Soon after, civic fascists shot Mehmet Cantekin in the Engineering Faculty in Istanbul. The Justice Party, which was in power, immediately started proceeding to close association which were led by revolutionaries. The attack of the fascists were at one side aimed at intimidating the students, on the other they wanted to keep them unorganised by closing the democratic institutions. To act against the increasing fascist attacks, the sympathisers of DEV-GENÇ (Revolutionary Youth) formed armed groups which guarded student homes and schools. They began to attack the source of the attacks, the fascists' centres. After the 70's, systematic torture with electro-shocks was re-introduced after a long period. The arrested were first welcomed with a beating. Later, systematic torture was expanded, based on the reason of arrest. From the beginning of the 70's, the policy of oppression and terror against the Kurdish people was continued with the "Commando Movement". The reasons for the repression of the oligarchy against the Kurds were the East meetings in 1967 and 1969, the growing national consciousness and the founding of the DDKO. The terror, carried out with the commando unit, was directly aimed against the Kurdish villages. The protests, starting in Sivas, Kozluk and Batman, began to spread in the beginning

of 1971 to Hakkari, Siirt, Mardin and Diyarbakir. At the same time, several villages were attacked; the people were gathered in the fields and tortured, without making a difference between men, women and children. The peasants were summoned to hand over their weapons; when they couldn't, they were hit on the soles of their feet with truncheons, they had to crawl on the floor and undress, women were sexually harassed, et cetera. In January 1971, a Kurdish peasant, Abdullah Acar, was murdered in Nusaybin. This repressive policy of the oligarchy was continued till the military coup of March 12.

THE THKP-C - THE PEOPLE'S LIBERATION PARTY-FRONT OF TURKEY - AND THE PROVOCATION ACTS OF THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA

The congress of DEV-GENÇ on October 18, 1970, was a message of joy, constituting a mile-stone for the Turkish revolutionary movement and clearing the way for revolution in Turkey. Afterwards the ideological discussion within the left deepened and became more clearly, splits and unifications occurred, and the armed forces of the revolution emerged: THKP-C, THKO and - later - the TKP-ML. In the beginning of 1971, the Justice Party attacked the revolutionaries by means of the police, the military and the civic fascists. But this pressure was not sufficient to stop the revolutionary struggle and the continuing people's opposition with its strikes, resistance and boycotts. The crisis of the oligarchy increased. The armed actions of the THKP-C and THKO started in January, 1971. These initial actions were in fact acts of expropriation in banks. After the beginning of the armed actions, the government ordered the police and army forces against the universities and houses. Thousands of students were arrested and tortured. People were detained. During an armed confrontation after the attack of the police and the gendarmes against the ODTÜ students' home, the pupil Sener Erdal and the worker Aziz Yalta were murdered, one soldier died.

THE JUNTA OF MARCH 12, 1971

With the beginning of the armed actions, the revolution took a new course. After it was determined that these developments could not be stopped by repression and terror, they gave in with the "March 12 coup". The government, led by the Justice Party, was removed. Parliament and the political parties were not closed down, but the junta became the governing power. The leader of the coup was the chief of the contra-guerrilla, chief of staff Memduh Tagmaç. After the memoranda had been destroyed, high-ranking officers and generals were removed who had risen hope among left circles, who had been moderate or who had been considered to be sympathetic to the left. In doing so, the contra-guerrilla increased its strength and its control over the army even more. In March 1971, Deniz Gezmiş, Yusuf Aslan and Hüseyin İnan were arrested and detained. In April, the Central Committee of the THKP-C decided in a meeting to announce the armed struggle with a military action. The general committee of the party was formed anew. But after the declaration of the state of emergence on April 26, the

armed actions were temporarily postponed. This phase was becoming a direct hunt of the contra-guerrilla against the revolutionary movement. The members of the MIT, among them also Hiram Abam who's name would become quite prominent in the years to come, directed all their intelligence activities against the revolutionary movement and they personally contributed in carrying out executionary operations, for instance against one of the leaders of the THKP-C, Ulas Bardakçi.

THE ABDUCTION OF EFRAIM ELROM AND THE PROCLAMATION OF THE ARMED WAR

On May 17, 1971, a group of THKP-C sympathisers, led by Mahir Çayan, abducted the Israeli consul Efraim Elrom. In a first statement of the THKP-C, the beginning of the armed struggle against imperialism and the oligarchy was announced as well as the demands for the release of the consul. In case these demands wouldn't be met, the consul was to be punished. As this was the case, Efraim Elrom was punished by death. The abduction of Elrom was the official beginning of the armed propaganda of the THKP-C, based on the PASS - "Politicised Military War Strategy" -, by means of the urban guerrilla. The punishing of Elrom shook the oligarchy considerably. The junta-government of Nihat Erim intensified its attacks against the circles of revolutionaries and progressives. The fascist face of the Erim-government, becoming visible now, showed that all the expectations of some circles for reforms had been in vain. But shortly after the action, a large part of the leading cadres of the THKP-C was arrested. Then Mahir Çayan and Hüseyin Cevahir were surrounded in a house in Maltepe. A girl inside the house, Sibel Erkan, was taken hostage, and the men refused to surrender. The army surrounded the house with an armoured brigade. The event, which the oligarchy wanted to use as propaganda against the revolutionaries, became propaganda for the revolutionaries. When the house was raided on April 1, Hüseyin Cevahir fell, and Mahir Çayan was seriously wounded and arrested.

THE TORTURE CENTRES OF THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA

For the first time, the revolutionary-progressive democrats learned of the existence of the contra-guerrilla in the secret torture centres, built during the junta of Tasmaç. Besides know official buildings like police stations and MIT-houses, the contra-guerrilla constructed secret torture centres where countless revolutionaries and intellectuals were interrogated under torture. The most infamous among them were the Ziverbey Castle in Istanbul, the Marmara Castle in Ankara, the Gönen College in Bahçelievler and the rooms below the transmission station of the Mamak Military School.

CONSPIRACIES AND PROVOCATIONS

The contra-guerrilla, unable to stop the struggle by means of oppression and terror, began to develop new methods from the beginning of the 70's. Already before the junta, numerous acts of sabotage and bomb attacks were carried out, blaming them on the revolutionaries.

Some of these acts: - hanging red flags from the Galata Tower in Istanbul - the burning down of the Atatürk Cultural Museum in Taksim - the sinking of a car ferry in Eminönü - sabotaging the Bosphorus bridge - bombing the Sirkeci Station - bombing the Yesilköy Airport in Istanbul - burning the Marmara ferry. By blaming these acts, committed by themselves, on the revolutionaries, the contra-guerrilla succeeded in inciting the people against the revolutionaries. Using this pretext, thousands of revolutionary-progressive democrats were tortured and detained. However, the people behind these acts were never found. These methods, practised by the contra-guerrilla, were new to Turkey but they had been applied in other countries before and there were numerous examples given in the contra-guerrilla books of the CIA and their training courses.

THE OPERATIONS OF THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA AND THE MASSACRE OF MARCH 30, 1972, IN KIZILDERE

After Mahir Çayan escaped from the Maltepe prison on November 29, 1971, together with Ulas Bardakçi, Ziya Yılmaz and THKO-members Cihan Alptekin and Ömer Ayna, he first started to deal with the liquidators inside the party. With excluding the right deviation, the Central Committee was reformed and the decision was reached that the guerrilla struggle had to be waged in the cities and in the country-side simultaneously and that there had to be an action to prevent the execution of Deniz Gezmis and his comrades. The Black Sea region was selected to start the guerrilla struggle. After Mahir Çayan, Cihan Alptekin and Ömer Ayna went to Ankara to organise an action to prevent the execution of Deniz and his friends, a large operation was carried out against the THKP-C in Istanbul in January, 1972. This time the operation was carried out by the contra-guerrilla, subordinated to the "Special Warfare Department". The interrogation and torture of the arrested was done by the contra-guerrilla. After the wave of arrests in Istanbul, the murder of Ulas Bardakçi in Armavutköy and the arrest of the wounded Ziya Yılmaz, the operations were extended to Ankara. The murder of Ulas Bardakçj was the "work" of the contra-guerrilla. Contra-guerrilla chief Hiram Abas took part in the massacre himself. After their capacity to move had been restricted, the THKP-C leadership decided to send a group to the Black Sea region. Mahir Çayan, rejecting an offer to go abroad, went into this region as well after a while. On March 27, 1972, fighters of the THKP-C and the THKO abducted three English engineers, working at the radar base in Ünye. During the night they went to the village of Kizildere, near Niksar. After they were betrayed by the village chief, the gendarmes surrounded their house and the entire village in the morning of March 30. Surrounded by thousands of soldiers and policemen, the THKP-C and THKO sympathisers were summoned to surrender, but they refused and announced that the hostages would be killed in case fire would be opened against the house. In the afternoon, after Mahir Çayan, Cihan Alptekin and Saffed Alp had gone on the roof of the house to negotiate, they were suddenly fired upon. Mahir Çayan, hid by a bullet in the head, fell. The remaining fighters continued the armed

confrontation and the technicians were punished. At the end of the confrontation, Sinan Kazim Özüdogru, Hüdai Arkan, Ertan Saruhan, Saffet Alp, Sabahattin Kurt, Nihat Yilmaz and Ahmet Atasoy from the THKP-C, and the fighters of the THKO, Cihan Alptekin and Ömer Ayna, hit by heavy weapons and grenades, had fallen.

THE DEATH SQUADS OF THE CONTRA-GUERRILLA

The massacre in Kizildere brought a truth into light, albeit years later. The formation of death squads of the contra-guerrilla within the army was started in the 70's, and maybe even earlier. While Kenan Evren denied the existence of the contra-guerrilla in an interview after the Susurluk Affair, he himself said that a "Special Warfare Department" had been formed, especially for intervention during the hijacking of aeroplanes, the kidnapping of people, against the terrorists and that this department had been used in the massacre of Mahir Çayan and his comrades, as well as during the hijacking of a plane in Diyarbakir. These death squads of the contra-guerrilla were also used in the occupation of Cyprus in 1974. This also shows that the contra-guerrilla started to reorganise the army, keeping the guerrilla and civil war in their minds. From the 70's, the contra-guerrilla started to execute revolutionaries. In many cases where people were surrounded, they preferred to murder the revolutionaries in stead of taking them alive. That is the way the massacres against Hüseyin Cevahir, Ulas Bardakçi, Sinan Cemgil and Mahir Çayan and his comrades were carried out.

Maru Sira

D.J. Siripala (died March 5, 1975), better known as **Maru Sira**, was a [Sri Lankan](#) criminal who was executed amongst much controversy. Maru Sira achieved fame through several daring escapes.

Life and career

[[] Death

After escaping for a third time, Maru Sira was sentenced to death *in absentia* for the killing of a man in March 1974. He was subsequently captured and sent to Bogambara Prison to await his execution on August 5, 1975.^[1]

On the night before the execution prison guards gave Maru Sira a high dose of [Largactil](#) to prevent an escape attempt. The overdose caused Maru Sira to collapse into a state of

unconsciousness from which he never recovered. He was carried to the scaffold on a stretcher and laid across the trapdoor. The noose was then placed around his neck and the trapdoor was opened. Due to the short fall (2 feet 2 inches) caused by his slumped position Maru Sira died from slow [strangulation](#). If he had been standing he would have died instantly from the breaking of his neck.^[1]

[] Aftermath

News of Maru Sira's slow death led to public outrage. A presidential commission was appointed to look into the controversial execution. Two popular films *Siripala and Ranmenika* and *Maruwa Samaga Wase* were made based on Maru Sira's story.^[2] Baila singer [Anton Jones](#) wrote and sang a song detailing his exploits.

[] References

1. ^ [a b](#) "[A case against the noose](#)". Daily Mirror. 2003. Archived from [the original](#) on

The story of "Maru Sira", the Sinhala word we use for something exciting..

Posted [srilankagroups](#) Fri Jun 17, 2005
By: [srilankagroups](#) [Send Email](#) 4:22 am |

[View](#)
[Source](#)
[Use Fixed](#)
[Width](#)
[Font](#)
[Unwrap](#)
[Lines](#)

< Prev
Next >

Reply

The story of "Maru Sira", the Sinhala word we use for something exciting...

In Sri Lanka - then Ceylon - it was perhaps the Maru Sira execution which highlighted the full horror of the death penalty. Maru Sira - his actual name was D.J. Siripala - took to crime and was imprisoned for various offences.

He became a folk hero by the daring and skill of his escapes. While he was in hiding after his third escape from jail he was sentenced to death in absentia for the murder of a man in March 1974. Elaborate security measures were taken to ensure that he would be hanged on August 5, 1975.

The prison wardens were aware of Maru Sira's history of escaping, and frightened by his threats of vengeance. So in order to forestall any untoward incident they gave him a sedative the night before the execution.

The Public Trustee later said that, having been given an excessive dose of Largactil, he collapsed into unconsciousness from which he never recovered. At the time of execution he was carried on a stretcher and laid across the trapdoor of the scaffold.

The noose was placed around his neck, and upon the trapdoor being opened, his body dropped 2 feet 2 inches. His death was caused by strangulation, by asphyxia caused by strangulation, and so there was no judicial hanging. Had Siripala stood erect he would have stood 9 inches above the noose, then would have fallen 7 feet 11 inches. There were other pathetic factors which added to the public horror. His father had tried to see him before the execution; but had been refused. His wife Ran Menika had visited him every month in prison, but was so poor that she had to sell her sugar ration in order to find money for the bus fare.

She had not been informed of the date of execution as she and Siripala had not gone through the legal process of marriage.

Juan Alberto March Ordinas (4 October 1880 – 10 March 1962) was a [Spanish](#) financier, banker and businessman closely associated with the [Nationalist side](#) in the [Spanish Civil War](#), and with the regime of [Francisco Franco](#) after the war. Juan March was at one point the sixth richest man in the world and the wealthiest in Spain. The family is still nowadays one of the richest in the world.

He was born in [Santa Margalida](#) on the island of [Majorca](#). As a young man, he [smuggled tobacco](#) from [North Africa](#) into Spain. During [World War I](#), he supplied goods to both sides, evading the [Allied](#) blockade of the [Central Powers](#), and the [German U-boats](#).

His power and influence increased under different Spanish governments during the reign of [King Alfonso XIII](#). In 1926 he created the March Bank.

When the monarchy was replaced by the [Second Spanish Republic](#) in 1930, March lost his influence, and was convicted and imprisoned for his illegal dealings. He escaped from prison, and fled to [Gibraltar](#) where his influence with the [British](#) government protected him against [extradition](#).

March was an important backer of the 1936 military rebellion against the Republic. He arranged Franco's flight from the [Canary Islands](#) to [Spanish Morocco](#), to bring the colonial troops there into the coup, and personally financed the [Italian](#) airlift of those troops to Southern Spain.

With the Nationalist victory in 1939, March regained all his former influence and more, and was greatly favored by the [Franco regime](#). During [World War II](#), the [Allies](#) employed him to keep Spain from joining the [Axis](#). According to recently declassified documents, in 1941, the British government gave him [US\\$10,000,000](#) with which to influence the top Spanish generals.

In 1944, March became a supporter of the claim of [Don Juan de Borbón](#), who had turned pro-Allied, to the Spanish throne. He also owned newspapers and funded political parties.

After [World War II](#), he was the seventh richest man in the world. In 1955, he established the Juan March Foundation to support the arts and music.

He was married with Leonor Servera (1857-1957), they had two children [Juan March Servera](#) (Palma de Mallorca 1906-Madrid 1973) and [Bartolome March](#) (Palma de Mallorca 1917- Paris 1998)

[] Barcelona Traction

March was widely known for involvement in lucrative illegal activities, for bribery and political influence, and for bending the law whenever he saw a benefit. This was exemplified in his 1948 takeover of the [Barcelona Traction, Light, and Power Company](#) (BTLP) for a small fraction of its real worth.

BTLP was a utility company which provided power and streetcar services in [Barcelona](#); originally incorporated in [Canada](#), it was mostly owned by [Belgian](#) investors. BTLP had come through the Spanish Civil War largely undamaged, and was quite profitable. Its assets were about [£10,000,000](#) (about \$500,000,000 in 2010). However, for the convenience of some of its foreign investors, BTLP had issued some bonds denominated in pounds, and the interest on these bonds was payable in pounds. The Spanish government had imposed currency restrictions: BTLP was unable to exchange its Spanish [pesetas](#) for pounds, and so could not pay the interest.

This was not viewed with any great alarm by the bond-holders; BTLP had plenty of pesetas and would pay the interest arrears whenever the currency restrictions were relaxed.

However, March scented an opportunity. Agents secretly acting for him quietly bought up the bonds (about £500,000). Then in February 1948, they appeared in a Spanish court, asserted that BTLP was in default on the bonds, and demanded immediate relief. The judge agreed, and awarded ownership of all BTLP's assets to them (in fact to March). BTLP's foreign investors appealed, but got no relief from Spanish courts. The Belgian government appealed to the [International Court of Justice](#), but to no avail - the final resolution coming in 1970, eight years after March's death.

There is an example of March's world-wide notoriety in [John D. MacDonald](#)'s 1962 novel, [The Girl, the Gold Watch & Everything](#). At one point, one of the chief villains of the story complains of the difficulties of operating in the [United States](#), where the police are honest and the press interferes. He remarks

It was always better elsewhere, particularly in Spain, where Juan March would help with the arrangements.

The March family are still nowadays the richest family in Spain (after Amancio Ortega from Zara). They live between Madrid, Mallorca and Gstaad.

[] References

- De Benavides, Manuel (1934). *El último pirata del mediterraneo* ("The Last Pirate of the Mediterranean"), Tipografía Cosmos, Barcelona.
- Garriga, Ramon (1976). *Juan March y su tiempo* ("Juan March and His Time"), Ed. Planeta, Barcelona.
- Diaz Nosty, Bernardo, (1977). *La Irresistible ascensión de Juan March* ("The Irresistible Rise of Juan March"), SEDMAY ediciones, Madrid.
- Ferrer Guasp, Pere (2004), *Joan March, la cara oculta del poder* ("Juan March: the Hidden Face of Power"), Edicions Cort, Palma-Illes Balears.
- Train, John (1985). *Famous Financial Fiascos*. New York: C.N. Potter. [ISBN 0-517-54583-7](#).

- **Annanias Mathe** (sometimes reported as **Ananias Mathe**) is a notorious serial killer, serial rapist and armed robber from [Mozambique](#) who achieved further notoriety in 2006 by being the only person to have ever escaped from the maximum high-security [C-Max Penitentiary](#) in [Pretoria, South Africa](#).
- Mathe was initially arrested on 51 counts of [murder](#), attempted murder, [rape](#), hijacking and armed robbery in November 2006.
- Whilst being detained in the A6 ward of C-Max Penitentiary which houses dangerous and hardened criminals, Mathe managed to escape by smearing himself with petroleum jelly and sliding out of his cell window, measuring only 20 cm x 60 cm. This daring escape led the South African press to dub him '[Houdini](#)'.^[1] Mathe had escaped from police custody before, previously in April 2005.
- His latest escape prompted a nationwide manhunt, the events of which were closely monitored by local media. He was re-arrested on 4 December 2006 (about two weeks after his escape), when he hijacked a car in the affluent Johannesburg suburb of [Craighall](#). Unknown to Mathe, the vehicle was fitted with a satellite tracking device, which led police and private security companies to Mathe after a chase which saw him being shot three times in the leg and buttocks.
- Mathe was found guilty on 64 of 71 charges including rape, attempted rape, attempted murder, robbery and theft,^[2] and was sentenced to 54 years imprisonment with a minimum of 43 years.^[3] Six prison wardens linked to his latest escape were dismissed.^[4]

Six dismissed for helping Mathe

2009-12-09 13:16

Related Links

- [Mathe smiles after sentencing](#)
- [Mathe not from 'normal society'](#)
- [Mathe gets 54 years in jail](#)

[kalahari.com](#)

- **[buy books, music, dvds, appliances and much more](#)**

Books Galore! Millions of books available at discounted prices! Fiction, thrillers, biographies,...

Johannesburg - Six prison warders linked to the escape of convict Ananias Mathe from the maximum security C-Max prison in Pretoria in 2006, were dismissed in September, the department of correctional services said on Wednesday.

It was reacting to the concerns of Judge Geraldine Borchers, who expressed disappointment, while sentencing Mathe on Tuesday, at the lack of action against the officials who helped him escape on November 18 2006.

Correctional services department spokesperson Sonwaba Mbananga said that immediately after the escape, the department launched an internal investigation into how it was possible for an offender to escape from one of its highly secured facilities.

"The investigation quickly yielded valuable information that shed light on the circumstances of the escape as well as who had been involved," he said.

As a result of the probe, a disciplinary hearing was held at which four officials were found guilty. They were dismissed on September 10.

Another two officials were later dismissed after a separate disciplinary hearing. They were appealing against their dismissal.

Mbananga said a seventh official was suspended for one month without pay. This was served in June.

"We remain resolute in our determination to render the safe custody of convicted offenders as well as awaiting trial detainees, while offering the best available rehabilitation programs on the African continent, which rival some of the best in the world as well as facilitate the social reintegration of offenders who indeed have been rehabilitated," said Mbananga.

Mathe, was on Tuesday sentenced to more than 100 years in jail for 64 counts including rape, attempted rape, attempted murder, house robbery with aggravated circumstances, theft and escaping from lawful custody.

As some of the sentences run concurrently, he will have to spend 54 years in jail and will be eligible for parole only after serving 43-years, at which time he will be 76-years-old.

Mbananga said that this time around, Mathe would be incarcerated in Kokstad.

"Mr Mathe will soon be joining some of the country's most hardened criminals in our flagship maximum security facility in Kokstad known as Bongweni Maximum Correctional Centre, where he will serve out the rest of his sentence," he said.

Stepan Smok Fedak ([Lviv](#), 1901 – 1945, [Berlin](#); *aka Smok*, "Dragon") was a Ukrainian independence activist who, on September 25, 1921, attempted to [assassinate Poland's Chief of State](#), Marshal [Józef Piłsudski](#), as the latter visited Lwów (now [Lviv, Ukraine](#)) for the opening of that city's first [Eastern Trade Fair](#).

Contents

[hide]

- [1 Early life](#)
- [2 Assassination plot](#)
- [3 The attack](#)
- [4 Aftermath](#)
- [5 References](#)

[] Early life

Stepan Fedak was the son of a prominent Lwów attorney and Ukrainian activist, Dr. Stepan Fedak.

The younger Fedak was a graduate of the [Austro-Hungarian](#) Military Academy at [Wiener Neustadt](#). He served in the Legion of [Ukrainian Sich Rifles](#), then in the [Ukrainian Galician Army](#) and the Army of the [Ukrainian People's Republic](#). In 1920 he joined the clandestine [Ukrainian Military Organization](#).

Fedak was also a member of the secret Committee of Ukrainian Youth and of *Vola*, an underground militant organization of Ukrainian students and ex-officers of the [Ukrainian Galician Army](#) whose purpose was to fight for an independent [Ukraine](#). It was steered from abroad by Colonel [Yevhen Konovalets'](#) [Ukrainian Military Organization](#), acting in [Czechoslovakia](#) and [Germany](#).

The [Ukrainian Military Organization](#) planned to organize underground attacks and [sabotage](#) in southeastern Poland, with its majority-Ukrainian population, to be followed by open warfare conducted by the Ukrainians against Poland and the Soviet Union until an independent Ukrainian state was reestablished in southeastern Poland and [Dnieper Ukraine](#) (Great Ukraine).

[] Assassination plot

A meeting of Lwów *Vola* members decided to assassinate Polish [Chief of State](#) Marshal [Józef Piłsudski](#) during his planned visit to Lwów on September 25, 1921, to help open the first [Eastern Trade Fair](#). The conspirators had detailed information about his visit to the city. *Vola* divided itself into five-man groups, one of which was to carry out the assassination. The actual assassin, chosen by lot, was Stepan Fedak. Furnished with a false [passport](#) and [German visa](#), immediately after the operation he was to escape to [Berlin](#). He was to be assisted by the remaining members of his group. Paliyiv, a law student, was to stand beside Fedak and, after Fedak had fired, overpower him and summon [police](#). Another conspirator, disguised as a [Polish Army major](#), would hasten to assist. The two would conduct Fedak out of the crowd, get into a rented automobile with him, and ostensibly drive him off to [jail](#), but actually out of town.

[] The attack

Having earlier that day participated in the opening of the Trade Fair and then met with bankers, journalists and civic leaders, about 8 p.m. Piłsudski left the [city hall](#), accompanied by [Lwów Province Governor](#) Kazimierz Grabowski. They got into an open [limousine](#), with Piłsudski seated on the left. Stepan Fedak pushed his way toward them through the crowd. The car was moving very slowly, when a loud noise rang out. The Governor, sure that it was a [back-fire](#), continued

sitting upright; Piłsudski, however, immediately recognized it for a [pistol shot](#) and reflexively ducked. The bullet had just missed him by a hair and struck the [windshield](#). Two more shots rang out. One struck the Governor's right shoulder, the other—his left arm. The Governor slipped off his seat, and was supported by Piłsudski.

Police senior [constable](#) Jakub Skweres threw himself at Fedak and seized him by the throat. Fedak, as he fell, fired a fourth round, wounding himself in the chest. The crowd pounced on him; he was saved from certain death by policemen and soldiers of the guard standing before the city hall, who knocked the would-be [lynchers](#) aside with their [rifle](#) butts.

[] Aftermath

The Governor was treated by physicians and went home, while Piłsudski, as planned, proceeded to Lwów's Great Theater, where he received an [ovation](#) from the gathered public.

The wounded and badly [contused](#) Fedak was taken under police escort to a [hospital](#). Immediately interrogated by the police, he falsely stated that he had wanted to shoot only the Governor, who was an enemy of the Ukrainian people, and had planned to then hand his pistol over to Chief of State Piłsudski.

After the performance at the Great Theater, a [banquet](#) was held at the provincial administrative offices, with the wounded Governor Grabowski in attendance.

Fedak subsequently escaped abroad. Toward the end of [World War II](#) he disappeared without trace in [Berlin](#).

[] References

- Włodzimierz Kalicki, "25 IX 1921. Kula w rękawie ("September 25, 1921: a Bullet in the Sleeve"), *Gazeta Wyborcza*, September 26, 2005. (<http://serwis.gazeta.pl/df/1,34467,2932282.html>)
- Shin Dong-hyuk was born in [Kaecheon internment camp](#) ("Camp #14"), a slave labor camp where prisoners usually stay for life and die by age 45.^{[4][5]} He was born to an arranged marriage of two prisoners, who were allowed to sleep together for a few nights a year as a reward for good work.^{[4][5]} Shin rarely saw his father, who lived elsewhere in the camp, and lived with his mother until he was 12.^[4] According to Shin, he saw his mother as a competitor for their insufficient food rations,^[5] and consequently had no bond of affection with his parents or brother.^[6] The North Korean government officials and camp guards told him he was imprisoned because his parents had committed crimes against the state, and that he had to work hard and always obey the guards; otherwise he would be punished or executed.^[7] Shin experienced considerable violence in the camp,^[8] and witnessed dozens of executions every year.^[7] Part of Shin's right middle finger was cut off by his supervisor as punishment for accidentally breaking a sewing machine.^[9] In addition, he saw adult prisoners and children beaten every day,^{[10][11]} and many prisoners dying of starvation, illness, torture and work accidents.^[7] Beginning when he was young, Shin learned to survive by any means, such as through eating rats, frogs and insects, and reporting on fellow inmates for rewards.
- When Shin was 14, he overheard his mother and brother planning an escape attempt and informed the guards, which was something he was taught to do from an early age.^{[4][5]} Rather than reward Shin for turning his family members in, the guards tortured him for

four days to extract more information from him.^{[4][5]} According to Shin, the guards lit a charcoal fire under his back and forced a hook into his skin so that he could not struggle,^[12] and this caused Shin to receive many large scars from the flesh being burned and other abuses.^[13] On November 29, 1996, camp officials forced Shin to watch the public execution of his mother and brother, and he knew that he was directly responsible for the execution.^{[5][14][15]} Shin said that at that moment, he thought his mother deserved to die, but he said that his actions would haunt him later in life.^{[4][5]}

- While working at a textile factory, Shin became friends with a 40 year old political prisoner from [Pyongyang](#) named Park, who was educated and had traveled outside North Korea.^[4] Park told him about the outside world, such as stories about food that Shin had not experienced before.^[4] According to Shin, nearly every meal he had eaten up to that point had been a soupy gruel of cabbage, corn and salt, with occasional wild-caught rats and insects. He was excited by the idea of being able to eat as much food as he wanted to, which Shin considered to be the meaning of freedom, and he decided to attempt to escape with Park.^[4] They formed a plan in which Shin would provide local information about the camp, while Park would use his knowledge once outside the camp to escape the country. On January 2, 2005, Shin and Park were assigned to a work detail near the camp's [electric fence](#) on the top of a 1,200-foot (370 m) mountain ridge to collect firewood. Noting the long interval between the guards' patrols, the two waited until the guards were out of sight, then made their attempt to escape.^{[1][16]} Park attempted to go through first, but was electrocuted by the high voltage fence and died on the spot. Shin managed to pass over the wire using Park's body as a shield to [ground](#) the current, but suffered severe burns when his legs slipped onto the lowermost wire as he crawled over Park's body.^{[4][5]}
- After escaping, Shin broke into a nearby farmer's barn and found an old military uniform.^[4] Wearing the uniform, he masqueraded as a North Korean soldier and worked his way northward, surviving by scrounging and stealing food.^[1] Shin was unfamiliar with money, but within two days of his escape, he had sold a 10 lb (4.5 kg) bag of rice stolen from a house and used the money to buy cookies and cigarettes.^[4] Eventually, he reached the northern border with China along the [Tumen River](#) and bribed destitute North Korean border guards with food and cigarettes.^[4] After spending some time working as a laborer in different parts of China, Shin was "accidentally discovered" by a journalist in a restaurant in [Shanghai](#), and the reporter recognized the importance of his story. The journalist brought Shin to the South Korean embassy for asylum,^[4] and from there he traveled to South Korea, where he underwent extensive questioning from authorities to determine if he was a North Korean assassin or spy. Afterwards, Shin's story was broadcast by the press and he published a Korean language memoir. He later moved to [southern California](#) in the United States, changing his name from Shin In Geun to Shin Dong-hyuk, and worked for [Liberty in North Korea](#) (LiNK), a non-profit organization that raises awareness of human rights issues in North Korea and provides aid to North Korean refugees.^[1] Shin then moved back to South Korea, where he campaigns for the eradication of the North Korean prison camps.^[17]

Tomás Borge

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)



Tomas Borge Martinez.

Tomás Borge Martínez (13 August 1930 – 30 April 2012) (in American newspapers often spelt as **Thomas Borge**) was the last living co-founder of the [Sandinista National Liberation Front](#) in [Nicaragua](#) and was Interior Minister of Nicaragua during one of the administrations of [Daniel Ortega](#). Considered a hardliner, he led the "prolonged [people's war](#)" tendency within the FSLN, but later supported the policy of national reconciliation in Nicaragua, as well as reforms in the Sandinista party.

Borge was born in [Matagalpa](#). He was imprisoned from 1956–1959 for knowledge of the plot by [Rigoberto López](#) to assassinate dictator [Anastasio Somoza García](#). Part of that time was spent held in El Hormiguero prison in [Managua](#). In 1959 he escaped to [Honduras](#), where he was captured by the Honduran border patrol. [Otto Castro](#) arranged for Borge's release using his friendship with Honduran President [Ramón Villeda](#). Borge then travelled to [El Salvador](#) using a false passport, and then went to [Costa Rica](#).^[1]

In August 1978, Borge was one of the highest ranking [Sandinistas](#) released from prison after the spectacular Sandinista raid on the Nicaraguan National Palace by 19 commandos, headed by [Edén Pastora](#) (Commander Zero) that took the entire Congress hostage.



Borge landing in Cuba off a C-130 Venezuelan Airforce plane on August 25, 1978, after being released as a [political prisoner](#) after the [Sandinista](#) hostage standoff operative at the National Palace in Managua, 3 days earlier.

Fernando Arenas, a former pilot for Colombian drug trafficker [Carlos Lehder](#), stated in a 2000 interview with American network [PBS](#) for the [Frontline](#) TV show, that Borge served as a conduit for Colombian drug traffickers and the Sandinista government during the 1980s.^[2] Borge was also accused of venality by the newspaper [La Prensa](#)^[3] and also by the Spanish newspaper [El País](#).^{[4][5]}

Borge was also an author, who has written poetry, essays, and autobiography. He published several books, including a 1989 memoir, “The Patient Impatience.”

Borge died in the Military Hospital in Managua on April 30, 2012, aged 81, due to complications after a surgery after being in a coma for a week.^[6] The government declared three days of national mourning.

[] See also

- [Latin American and Caribbean Congress in Solidarity with Puerto Rico's Independence](#)
- Current Nicaraguan ambassador in Peru

[] References

1. [^] Borge, Tomas: *The Patient Impatience*, pp. 91–106. Curbstone Press, 1992
2. [^] [Interview Fernando Arenas](#). pbs.org
3. [^] Spanish newspaper [El País](#) on 12. February 2011, [Lucha contra el enriquecimiento desde el poder](#)
4. [^] http://internacional.elpais.com/internacional/2012/05/01/actualidad/1335904882_089728.html
5. [^] http://internacional.elpais.com/internacional/2012/05/01/actualidad/1335849217_568057.html

6. [^ "Tomas Borge Martinez, last living founder of Nicaragua's leftist Sandinista movement, dies - South Florida"](#). Sun-sentinel.com. 1930-08-13. Retrieved 2012-05-01.
2. Andersen was born on 9 July 1898^[3] in [Kristiania](#) (now Oslo), and had a difficult childhood, the latter part of it in an [orphanage](#).^[4] He was the son of construction worker Ole Andersen and Josefine Hansen. Soon after Johannes was born, Norway entered a period of economic difficulties, with little construction work available. This led to his father having to change jobs from [mason](#) to milkman. Johannes' mother became obsessed with religion.^[1]

3. [\[\] Institutionalization](#)

4. At age 10 Johannes was declared a [ward of court](#) and sent to the school institution *Toftes gave* on the island [Helgøya](#) in the lake [Mjøsa](#). While at the strict institution Johannes received parcels from home, with yellow cheese. The cheese was needed because of the meagre rations given the boys at *Toftes gave*. The parcels with yellow cheese led to Johannes being given the nickname "Gulosten" (English: "The Yellow Cheese") by the other boys at the institution, a name that stuck with him for the rest of his life.^[1] After four years on Helgøya he was transferred to [Bastøy school home for maladjusted boys](#), an equally harsh institution. When 29 boys rebelled at Bastøy in 1915, police officers and the [Norwegian Armed Forces](#) were employed to crush the riot, and the leaders taken away in handcuffs.^[1] Physical punishment was common at Bastøy, including being locked away in a dark cellar, a punishment Johannes had to endure.^[5] When Johannes was 15 his mother died, and he was not informed until several days after her funeral.^[5] This led to him making suicide threats, and going amok at the warden's office, for which he was punished with a stay in the dark cell.^{[1][5][6]}

5. [\[\] Leaving Helgøya](#)

6. Andersen went to sea at age 15, and later found work as a mason's assistant. On 7 November 1916 he married Lovise Kristine Klausen,^[1] who worked as a waitress at a restaurant frequented by Andersen.^[7] They soon got an apartment at [Torshov](#) and had a son. Andersen got a better-paid job, laying the [foundation](#) for the headquarters of [Oslo Lysverker](#), but when that job was done he had to seek day-to-day work at the harbour.^[8] When Norway's financial situation again turned for the worse after the upturn of the [First World War](#), no-one would hire a man with an institutional background, and he was out of work.^[1] He made a last-ditch attempt to make money; he bought liquor in [Tønsberg](#) and sold it on the black market in Kristiania, but this was not enough for his wife, who left him to pursue a more financially secure future.^[9]
7. It has been written that the marriage did not end until 1931.^[1] In the meantime, Andersen befriended a woman named Nancy. She helped hide him when he was wanted by the authorities, she lied during a police interrogation at [Møllergata 19](#) to cover for him and she also helped him with practical things such as acquiring a passport. They agreed to part ways when Andersen was set to pursue a [trapper](#) career in Canada; when going to visit her one last time he stumbled upon a police officer who recognized him and arrested him.^[10] Also, when frequenting Hamburg, Andersen spent time with two prostitutes. They were described as "not [...] extraordinarily beautiful", and Andersen helped them with buying food.^[11]
8. [\[\] Criminal career](#)
9. Norway's [prohibition](#) from 1916 onwards opened up possibilities for a lucrative criminal career, and Andersen joined up in 1921 with old friends from his days at *Toftes gave* in grand-scale smuggling operations. Using ingenious methods for hiding the spirits, they smuggled alcohol into Norway by sea. In his smuggling years Andersen cooperated with future award-winning author [Arthur Omre](#), serving as both crew and skipper on Omre's

boats before getting his own smuggling vessel. Eventually his cover was blown, and being a wanted man in Norway he had to flee to [Germany](#). While in Germany he worked for one of the biggest suppliers of spirits for the illegal Norwegian market.^[1] In 1925 Norway requested that Germany extradite him,^[1] and he was arrested in the harbour of [Hamburg](#). Prison life was harsh, but Andersen managed to get transferred to a hospital when faking [syphilis](#) by burning his member with a cigarette.^[12] He was then deported under police escort back to Norway on the steamship *Kong Dag*, but when the ship entered the [Oslofjord](#), Andersen escaped by jumping overboard near [Spro](#).^[13] For several months he was on the run before being recaptured. In the years that followed he was in and out of prison repeatedly. He gained considerable renown for his elegantly executed burglaries, being labelled by the media "gentleman-forbryter i Grünerløkka-utgave" (English: gentleman criminal, [Grünerløkka](#) ion). He was also well known for his [safe-cracking](#) skills.^[14] Andersen once more tried to evade justice when he fled a crowded court room in [Drammen](#) in 1929, jumping out a window as the sentence was being proclaimed.^[1] He was then smuggled from Drammen inside a [chest of drawers](#) which was to undergo reparation in Oslo.^[15] He was recaptured shortly before intending to board a cargo ship bound for Canada.^[10]

10. His criminal escapades made Andersen a national celebrity in pre-war Norway, and his nickname "Gulosten" a household name.^[16] Between 1919 and 1937 he was sentenced to prison terms nine times,^[14] spending a total of around seven years behind bars.^[16] During the mid-1930s Andersen attempted to end his criminal career, became engaged, and started a furniture repair business. He remarried on 18 March 1939,^[1] wedding Ruth Johanne (born 1905),^[4] née Nilsen.^[17] They had one son.^[18] In 1935 Andersen attempted to get a children's book published, but it was rejected because of its inclusion of a number of "brutal scenes, unsuited for youths". The nature scenes in the book were, however, commended by the reviewer.^[19] After yet another spell in prison, Andersen was released on 9 April 1940, the day Germany invaded Norway as a part of World War II.^[16]

11. ☐ **Second World War**

12. ☐ **Early resistance work**

13. The [German invasion of Norway](#) in 1940 led to Andersen's life once more taking a turn into illegal activities. His furniture workshop was used as a weapons depot by the [Norwegian resistance movement](#), and he took part in looting German military stores. He was first arrested by the Germans after he had responded to rumours that he was a Nazi by writing the Norwegian national socialist party [Nasjonal Samling](#)'s official publication *Fritt Folk* and stating that "although I have done many wrong things in my life, a Nazi I am not. Yours sincerely Johs. S. Andersen".^[quote 1] The letter was published unedited by the newspaper, although Andersen was later arrested by the occupying authorities and sentenced to one year in prison, after spending half a year in detention. Using techniques he had learned during his earlier criminal career, Andersen managed to be transferred to prison hospital during his time in detention. While there he acquired false x-ray images and tuberculosis germs to fake illnesses in other captured resistance men who were on their way to interrogation. He also infected a German interrogator with [malaria](#) by contaminating his [insulin](#).^{[1][20]} At night, he would sneak out of the hospital and operate in Oslo, amongst other activities breaking into Nasjonal Samling offices and stealing documents, copying them and having them shipped to the United Kingdom together with evidence of torture in Nazi-run prisons. He served the last part of his sentence in [Fuhlsbüttel](#) near [Hamburg](#), Germany.^{[1][21]} His wife was also active in resistance work, dealing with propaganda and espionage.^[17] Author [Egil Ulateig](#) doubts the veracity of Andersen's prison exploits, which are based mostly on Andersen's own testimony.^[21]

14. [\[\] Assassin, SOE agent and naval rating](#)

15. After his return to Norway in 1942, Andersen carried out the assassination of well-known informer Raymond Colberg^[22] and then made good his escape to Sweden. Colberg had been active in the Sandefjord area, uncovering an illegal radio transmitter. This led to the arrest of eight resistance members in March 1941,^[23] three of whom were executed (Øivind Ask, Andreas Bertnes and Johan Middtun were shot 4 December 1941).^{[24][25]} Andersen carried out the assassination of the [Abwehr](#) agent together with his wife and two acquaintances,^[1] kidnapping him and killing him at the animal hospital *Chevals kjeller*.^[26] According to Ruth Andersen's later interrogation records, the killing was carried out by crucifying him with four knives and crushing his bones with iron pipes, then dismembering the body, putting it in a container for animal carcasses and dumping it in the river [Akerselva](#). The confession may have been made under torture, and included no reference to the bullet holes found on Colberg's corpse when it was recovered.^{[27][28]} According to historian and leader of [Norway's Resistance Museum](#), [Arnfinn Moland](#), the claims of Colberg having been tortured and mutilated are fabrications. Moland cites autopsy reports and German archives to back up his claims.^{[29][30]} Colberg's body was discovered by a Norwegian civilian on 15 June 1942 with two [7,62 mm](#) calibre bullet holes in the head,^[21] and was identified through Colberg's dental records.^[31] The killing was, according to Ulateig, also motivated by Andersen's personal feelings towards Colberg,^[21] and Moland states that Andersen "may have had" such motives,^[32] a claim that is refuted by history professor [Tore Pryser](#).^[23]
16. Andersen then fled to Sweden, and travelled on to the United Kingdom, where he was recruited by Professor [Leif Tronstad](#) for work with the British Special Operations Executive.^[1] In this context he used the surname **Ostein** during the war.^[3] In the United Kingdom, Andersen suggested a series of further assassinations in Oslo, naming targets and describing plans for how to carry out the killings.^[33] The British saw great potential as an agent in a man with Andersen's background. Andersen and his group was parachuted from a [Halifax bomber](#) to [Kjerkeberget](#) near [Sandungen](#) in [Nordmarka](#), Oslo.^[33] Received by [Gunnar Sønsteby](#) and [Sverre Ellingsen](#),^[30] this was the first parachute drop received by the resistance group [Milorg's District 13](#).^[34] The group spent a month training Milorg resistance people in weapons handling. They were originally intended to carry out assassinations of leading Norwegian Nazis and informers as part of [Operation Bittern](#), first and foremost police minister and [Germanske SS Norge](#) leader [Jonas Lie](#), but this was refused by the local resistance leaders because of fears of reprisals.^{[35][36]} Andersen had suggested killing the top-ranking Nazi leader, and the SOE approved. According to a plan formulated by the SOE, Andersen was to don a light suit, enter Lie's office in broad daylight, shoot the police minister in the head with a [Colt](#) pistol, change to a dark suit hidden underneath the light one, and disappear in the confusion. Andersen commented on the SOE plan: "Lie might survive this assassination attempt, but I won't."^[quote 2] Andersen instead wanted to kill Lie on his way from the office to his home.^[37] The Bittern operation was severely criticized by the Norwegian Home Forces in a letter to the Norwegian exile government in London.^{[38][39][40]}
17. Andersen returned to the United Kingdom via Sweden, after episodes of unruly behaviour in Oslo.^[41] In the United Kingdom he had a personal [audience](#) with King [Haakon VII of Norway](#).^[1] During the audience, Andersen and the King lunched at the Norwegian Club in London, and Andersen entertained the exiled monarch with stories. The King promised to take care of Andersen once the war was over.^[42] Andersen then joined the [Royal Norwegian Navy](#) and served on a [Motor Torpedo Boat](#) (MTB) for the duration of the war. The MTB on which Andersen served repeatedly attacked shipping off the Norwegian coast.^[1]

18. Many resistance people in Norway had been shocked when they found out that Andersen had been allowed to serve in NOR.I.C.1. Leading saboteur [Max Manus](#) wrote shortly after the war in his book *Det vil helst gå godt*: "It was one hell of a risk to send a man with Gulosten's reputation and history out on secret military missions. It would have been a great embarrassment if *Fritt Folk* had been able to publish that Gulosten made a career in King Håkon's armed forces".^{[[quote 3](#)]} Andersen protested against Manus' account when it was published.^{[[43](#)]}

Princ Dobroshi

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)

Princ Dobroshi (*Serbo-Croat*: *Princ Dobroši*) (born 2 April 1964 in [Peć](#), [SR Serbia](#), [SFR Yugoslavia](#)).

In 1993 he was caught in [Norway](#) and in 1994 sentenced to 14 years in prison for [heroin](#) trafficking (other charges were pending in Sweden and Denmark). In a well coordinated operation he escaped from the [Ullersmo prison](#) in 1997. As a new place of living he picked up the [Czech Republic](#) and soon dominated over local Albanian drug mafias. On 23 February 1999 he was arrested in [Prague](#).

The criminal underground had planned armed attack on the [Pankrác Prison](#) but in August 1999 Dobroshi was [extradited](#) to Norway to complete his sentence. He was paroled and deported for "good behavior" in January 2005.^{[[1](#)]} Then he returned into the Czech Republic (where his Russian wife and two children live) and stayed there for three months, until his visa expired. Later, he returned to [Peć](#), Kosovo.

He has admitted friendship with [Arfan Qaeder Bhatti](#)^{[[2](#)]} who was arrested in Norway on charges of planning to terrorize Israeli and American embassies in [Oslo](#), Norway.^{[[3](#)]}

[] 2006 Investigations

Investigation of terror suspects in Norway in September 2006 discovered contacts between one of the suspects and Princ Dobroshi (they had met in [Pristina](#) in 2005). [MF Dnes](#), a newspaper in the Czech Republic, speculated about possibility of Dobroshi taking revenge and organizing a terror attack in Prague.^{[[4](#)]} Day after, in an interview, Dobroshi acknowledged he knew the person but denied any involvement and plans.^{[[5](#)]}

[] References

- [^] [Princ Dobroshi satt fri](#)
- [^] <http://www.dagbladet.no/nyheter/2008/03/31/531115.html>
- [^] http://www.kosovo.net/news/archive/2006/September_28/1.html
- [^] [ČeskéNoviny.cz](#)
- [^] [Drogový král popřel přípravu atentátů v Praze - iDNES.cz](#)

[] External links

- [Details about his arrest in Prague](#) (in Czech, material of Ministry of Interior)
- [Overview of Dobroszki's activities](#) (scroll to section 3)
- Te Kooti's early years are obscure. He was born at Te Pa-o-Kahu in the [Gisborne](#) region as a son of Hone Rangipatahi (father) and Hine Turakau (mother), of the [Rongowhakaata](#) tribe ([iwi](#)). Their [hapū](#) was Ngati Maru, whose villages were situated near the [Awapuni lagoon](#), where the [Waipaoa River](#) runs into the ocean.^[1] [Arikirangi](#) is thought to be the original name of Te Kooti. His birthdate is thought to be approximately 1832.^[2]
- A *matakite* (visionary) of Nukutaurua on [Mahia Peninsula](#), named Toiroa Ikariki (Ikarihi), prophesied the birth of Te Kooti (as well as the coming of the white men, the [Pākehā](#)):
 - Tiwaha tiwaha te pō.
 - Ko te Pakerewhā
 - Ko Arikirangi tenei ra te haere nei.
 - Dark, dark is the night.
 - There is the Pakerewhā
 - There is Arikirangi to come.
- The song is dated 1766. The *Pakerewhā* where strangers with red or white skin and Arikirangi was a grandchild of Toiroa, still to be born.^[3]
- *Te Kooti* is understood to be his Christian baptismal name.^[4]
- Te Kooti was apparently a very troublesome boy to his father, who tried to kill him. Te Kooti escaped and hid in the house of an uncle.^[5] Te Kooti's behaviour appears to have been quite maladjusted. There was a time that he could no longer control his body, nor even sit still. He gathered friends around him, and they gained a bad reputation.^[6]
- He was sent to the Mission School at Whakato, near [Manutuke](#). In 1846–1847 he was taught by Samuel Williams. Samuel and his uncle, [William Williams](#) “helped the boy to find a new world in the Bible”.^[7]
- But his reputation was still suffering, also after contacts with the Reverend Thomas Grace, who was to replace [William Williams](#) for a few years (1850–1853).
- He had to leave home and went to sea on different ships that traded along the coasts of the [North Island](#).
- **[] Exile**
- In 1865 while fighting with government forces to suppress the [Pai Marire](#) (or [Hauhau cult](#)), he was arrested as a spy while trying to contact his brother who was fighting with the Hauhau, and exiled to the [Chatham Islands](#), together with the rebels he had been fighting against. He was never tried and took every opportunity to demand a trial. Some say he got his name from this, "Kooti" pronounced "Courty", others that it was a Māori version of the last name "Coates". If he did supply the Pai Marire with guns as is alleged, he also took part in a battle against them. There are allegations he fired blanks on this occasion.
- While on the Chatham Islands Te Kooti experienced visions and became a religious leader. Te Kooti was referred to by other prisoners as Tawhaki, the twice born, after his unexpected survival from tuberculosis.^[8] He also performed some [sleight of hand](#), such as using matchheads to set his hand on fire above the altar during a church service. These tricks swayed the Māori prisoners on Chatham Islands, and when some of the chiefs present on the island were sent back to the mainland, Te Kooti took advantage of the situation to become the local leader. Only Te Kooti's uncle was not impressed by these tricks, which he saw right through. Nevertheless, Te Kooti established a faith named [Ringatū](#) [Upraised Hand] which gained many followers, and is still present in New Zealand society today. During this time on the Chatham Islands, Te Kooti (or Te

Koti as he signed in the documents) was married in a civil marriage to Maata Te Owai on 27 July, 1867. The marriage documents reveal that he was born in 1832.^[9]

- **☐ Escape**

- In 1868, expecting a resupply boat, Te Kooti prophesied that two boats would soon arrive to take them off the island. Normally the prisoners worked on a farm but using the excuse of rain a number of convicts were able to enter the redoubt. There were actually only 6 guards on the whole Island as the majority had been removed in April to Hokitika where a Fenian uprising was feared. On July 4, 1868, Te Kooti led an escape, and with 168 other prisoners seized the [schooner Rifleman](#), with supplies and rifles, scuttled another vessel the Florence so that the alarm could not be raised and set off back to the [North Island](#). One Chatham Island sergeant who was killed because of a personal grievance.^[10] The [Pākehā](#) sailors were allowed to live and set sail for the coast of New Zealand with help from the Māori hi jackers. The sailors attempted to sail towards [Wellington](#), but with Te Kooti's expertise at sailing were caught and told they would be thrown overboard if they did not keep a course for the [East Coast](#). On the fourth day at sea, the ship was becalmed and Te Kooti declared that a sacrifice was needed. Te Kooti had his uncle thrown overboard and soon afterwards the ship made headway again.
- Upon their arrival at Whareongaonga in [Poverty Bay](#), Te Kooti asked the [Māori King Movement](#) and the [Tuhoe](#) tribes for refuge but was rejected. He also sought dialogue with the colonial government but was rebuffed. He sent a statement to the effect that if the government wanted a war, he would give it to them in November.

- **☐ At war**

- *Main article: [Te Kooti's War](#)*

- On November 10, 1868, Te Kooti and his followers attacked the township of Matawhero on the outskirts of Gisborne. Some 54 people were slaughtered, including women and children. The dead included 22 local [Māori](#) as well as European settlers. This was probably a revenge attack, motivated by Te Kooti's false imprisonment as a spy.
- Te Kooti was then pursued by colonial and sympathetic Māori forces. His community was surrounded at Ngatapa, but Te Kooti and his warriors managed to escape.
- From there, Te Kooti was chased to [Te Porere](#). There, he set up a [pa](#) and withstood an attack from the British forces, including some opposing Maori troops, under [Major Kepa](#). After much fighting, the British broke through into the pa and Te Kooti had to abandon it, leaving many dead and wounded. Te Kooti himself was shot in the finger on his escape.
- From there, Te Kooti escaped into the [Urewera](#) and made an alliance with the [Tuhoe](#) leadership.
- From 1869 to 1872, Te Kooti and his followers raided throughout the central North Island while being pursued by their colonial and Māori enemies. His power was only broken once his Tuhoe allies were systematically conquered by his enemies. But once again Te Kooti managed to escape, this time to the [King Country](#) where he spent the next decade under the protection of the Māori King. Te Kooti used this time to develop his religion.

James Mckenzie (or in his native [Scottish Gaelic](#): ***Seumas MacCoinneach***), possibly born in [Ross-shire, Scotland](#), in 1820 was a [New Zealand outlaw](#) who has become one of the country's most enduring [folk heroes](#). The correct spelling of Mckenzie is unclear and he is variously referred to as James, John or Jock. His surname has been spelt as both 'MacKenzie' and 'McKenzie' - the latter being more commonly used. He may also have had at least one alias, **John Douglass**.

Mckenzie emigrated to [Australia](#) in about 1849, arriving in [Melbourne](#) where he purchased a team of bullocks for carrying goods to the gold-diggings. He managed to save £1,000 and moved to New Zealand, arriving at [Nelson](#). He worked as a drover in [Canterbury](#) before moving on to [Otago](#) where he applied for a land grant in the [Mataura](#) district.

In March 1855, Mckenzie was caught stealing 1,000 sheep from Levels Station, north of [Timaru](#). After escaping his accusers, he walked 160 kilometres (100 mi) to [Lyttelton](#), where he was caught by the police. He was subsequently sentenced to five years hard labour after being found guilty by a Lyttelton Supreme Court jury in April 1855.

He escaped from prison on at least two occasions, in May and June 1855, neither escape lasting more than three days, after which he was placed in irons and closely watched. In September 1855, the Christchurch resident magistrate investigated Mckenzie's case and found serious flaws in the police inquiry and trial. Mckenzie was given an unconditional pardon on 11 January 1856 after spending only nine months in prison.

After being freed, Mckenzie sailed for Australia from Lyttelton in January 1856, but nothing certain is known of his later life.

In history and fiction

The New Zealand area known as [Mackenzie Country](#) is named in his honour.^[1]

A novel based partly on Mckenzie's life, *Chandler's Run*, by Denise Muir, was published in 2008.^[2]

New Zealand folk musician [Mike Harding](#) made him the subject of his 'McKenzie Song' ballad, originally composed by Kath Tait in 1973 as 'McKenzie's Ghost'.^[3]

References

- ¹ [^](#) ["Save our Mackenzie Country". Royal Forest and Bird Protection Society of New Zealand](#). Retrieved 27 January 2011.
 - ² [^](#) Donovan, Brooke (3 March 2008). ["Gran has a story to be proud of". The New Zealand Herald](#).
 - ³ [^](#) ["McKenzie's Ghost - New Zealand Folk Song"](#). Retrieved 27 January 2011.
- Oliver Arthur Gillespie. ["McKENZIE, James"](#). *An Encyclopaedia of New Zealand, edited by A. H. McLintock*. Retrieved 2007-07-03.
 - Marr, Cathy. (22 June 2007). ["Mackenzie, James 1820? - ?"](#). *Dictionary of New Zealand Biography*. Retrieved 2007-07-03.
 - Tait, Kath. (1978). ["The Mckenzie Song"](#). *New Zealand Folksong*. Retrieved 2007-07-04.

Further reading

- Mackenzie of the Mackenzie Country*, Beattie, H. (1946)
- Old Christchurch in Picture and Story*, Andersen, J. C. (1949)
- South Canterbury*, Gillespie, O. A. (1958).

Gregorio "Goyo" Cárdenas Hernández ([Mexico City](#), 1915 - [Los Angeles](#), 2 August 1999), also known as the **strangler of Tacuba** (*estrangulador de Tacuba*), was a [Mexican spree killer](#). He was the first multiple murderer whose case was widely published in the Mexican media, and became a national celebrity.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Early life](#)
- [2 Murders](#)
- [3 Fame](#)
- [4 References](#)

[] Early life

Cárdenas Hernández was born in Mexico City a family originating from the state of [Veracruz](#). In part due to an [encephalitis](#) infection, he showed abnormal behavior as a child, including [cruelty to animals](#).^[1] Cárdenas received a scholarship from [Petróleos Mexicanos](#) to study [chemistry](#) at the [Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México](#) (UNAM).^[2]

[] Murders

Cárdenas Hernández committed his murders in August and September 1942. On 15 August 1942 he was visited in his house in the [Tacuba](#) neighborhood of Mexico City by 16-year-old [prostitute](#) María de los Ángeles González. After having sex with her, Cárdenas strangled De los Ángeles and buried her body in his garden. In the following weeks he also murdered prostitutes Rosa Reyes and Raquel Martínez de León, both aged 16, and finally 19-year-old fellow chemistry student Graciela Arias Ávalos. His neighbors started to get suspicious and informed the police. Shortly before the police exhumed the bodies, Cárdenas had himself committed to a [psychiatric hospital](#), where he was arrested on 7 September 1942.^[2]

Cárdenas was incarcerated in the notorious [Lecumberri](#) prison. During his trial Cárdenas pleaded guilty and was given a [life sentence](#). He escaped prison in 1947 and fled to [Oaxaca](#), but eventually was rearrested.^[1]

[] Fame

Cárdenas became a celebrity in Mexico, being the first multiple murderer receiving widespread media attention in that country. In the years following his murders there were reports of several [copycat murderers](#) imitating his crimes and an (illegal) [pornographic movie](#) based on his story was made. Cárdenas himself wrote three books while in prison and was regularly questioned and investigated by the country's top [psychiatrists](#) and [criminologists](#). Cárdenas was allowed to pursue psychiatry and law studies while in prison. He learned to play the [piano](#), wrote [poetry](#), and even married in prison. His wife bore him four children.^[1]

In 1976 Cárdenas was pardoned by president [Luis Echeverría](#). He was invited by interior secretary [Mario Moya](#) to give a speech in the [Congress of the Union](#), where he was celebrated as

a hero. He was hailed as a "great example" and a "clear case of rehabilitation". Cárdenas completed his law studies and worked as a [lawyer](#) until his death in 1999.^[1]

A chance meeting with [Alejandro Jodorowsky](#) in a backstreet bar in Mexico City inspired the psycho-magician to create the 1989 film [Santa Sangre](#), based loosely on Cárdenas's life.

[] References

1. ^ [a b c d](#) Escrito con Sangre, *Gregorio "Goyo" Cárdenas: "El Estrangulador de Tacuba"*
2. ^ [a b](#) Antonio Avitia Hernández, *Corrido Histórico Mexicano, Tomo V (1936-1985)* (Mexico City: Porrúa, 1998) 71.

Escape from Folsom State Prison


In 1987, Godwin attempted to escape during his incarceration at [Deuel Vocational Institute](#) in California, and he was moved to [Folsom State Prison](#), a maximum-security prison. Authorities believe Godwin's wife Shelly Rose Godwin and his former cellmate in Deuel, Lorenz Karlic, helped to plan his escape.^[5]

A [hacksaw](#) and other tools had been smuggled into the prison for Godwin. On June 5, 1987, he cut a hole through fence wire and escaped into a [storm drain](#) that emptied into the [American River](#). Godwin dropped through a manhole and crawled 750 feet through the pitch-black drain. An accomplice, suspected to be either Godwin's wife or Karlic, had left a [raft](#) that Godwin used to float down the river, following painted arrows on rocks that directed him where to go.^[5]

In June 1987, Karlic was arrested in [Hesperia, California](#),^[7] and convicted for aiding Godwin's escape.^[8]

In January 1988, Shelly Godwin was classified as a federal fugitive for her role in her husband's escape. She was captured by the [FBI](#) in [Dallas, Texas](#), on February 7, 1990.^[9]



 Age-enhanced drawing of Godwin

[] Capture and escape

Godwin fled to Mexico, where he unsuccessfully participated in the [illegal drug trade](#). He was arrested in [Puerto Vallarta](#),^[10] later convicted for drug trafficking in [Guadalajara, Mexico](#), and

sentenced to seven years and six months^[4] in Puente Grande prison in 1991. While American authorities were working on Godwin's [extradition](#) proceedings, he allegedly killed a member of a [Mexican drug cartel](#) in prison. The new murder allegation delayed his extradition, which gave Godwin more time to execute another escape, which occurred in September 1991.^[5]

Godwin is currently believed to be involved in the illicit drug trade somewhere in Latin America, having possibly used aliases such as Dennis Harold McWilliams, Nigel Lopez and Miguel Carrera.^[6] He is considered to be armed and extremely dangerous, and an obvious flight risk. The FBI is offering a reward of up to \$100,000 for information leading to Godwin's capture.^[5]

[] References

1. [^] ["Former valley man on local, federal most wanted list"](#) (Fee required). Palm Springs, California: *The Desert Sun*. June 11, 2009. Retrieved December 25, 2009.
2. [^] [a b](#) Brummond, Sabrina (January 6, 2005). ["Drama, agony relived at parole hearings"](#). [Riverside, California](#): *PE.com Southern California News*. Retrieved December 25, 2009.^[dead link]
3. [^] [a b](#) Kubelek, Greg (July 24, 1987). ["Ex-detective hopes fugitive doesn't keep promise he made in 1981"](#). [Blythe, California](#): *Palo Verde Valley Times*. Retrieved December 26, 2009.
4. [^] ["Fourth Suspect in Irvine Man's Killing Surrenders"](#) (Fee required). [Los Angeles, California](#): *Los Angeles Times*. September 30, 1981. Retrieved December 25, 2009.
5. [^] [a b c d e](#) Underwood, Melissa (January 28, 2008). ["Glen Stewart Godwin Wanted for Murder, Escape From Prison"](#). [New York City](#): *Fox News*. Retrieved December 26, 2009.
6. [^] [a b](#) McDonald, R. Robin (October 27, 1996). ["Most Wanted"](#) (Fee required). [Atlanta, Georgia](#): *The Atlanta Journal and The Atlanta Constitution*. Retrieved December 25, 2009.
7. [^] ["Suspected Helper in Prison Escape Seized"](#) (Fee required). Los Angeles, California: *Los Angeles Times*. June 9, 1987. Retrieved December 26, 2009.
8. [^] Cooper, Anderson (January 28, 2008). ["The Hunt for the FBI's "Ten Most Wanted" Fugitives"](#). [New York City](#): *CNN*. Retrieved December 26, 2009.
9. [^] ["Shelly Godwin Captured in Dallas"](#). *America's Most Wanted*. January 25, 2007. Retrieved December 26, 2009.
10. [^] Wire, From (December 8, 1996). ["Escaped Killer, Dealer, Joins 10 Most Wanted"](#) (Fee required). [Dallas, Texas](#): *The Dallas Morning News*. Retrieved December 25, 2009.
11. [^] ["One Fugitive from Folsom Still Loose"](#) (Fee required). [Sacramento, California](#): *The Sacramento Bee*. April 3, 1992. Retrieved December 25, 2009.

Fray Servando Teresa de Mier (in full, **José Servando Teresa de Mier Noriega y Guerra**) (October 18, 1765, [Monterrey, Nuevo León, New Spain](#) – December 3, 1827, [Mexico City](#)) was a [Roman Catholic](#) priest and a preacher and politician in [New Spain](#).



Servando Teresa de Mier

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Education](#)
- [2 The sermon](#)
- [3 In exile](#)
- [4 Return to New Spain](#)
- [5 As a member of the constituent congress](#)
- [6 Death](#)
- [7 Writings](#)
- [8 References](#)

[] Education

At the age of 16 he entered the [Dominican Order](#) in Mexico City. He studied philosophy and theology in the College of Porta Coeli, and was ordained a priest. By the age of 27 he had earned his doctorate and was a noted preacher.

[] The sermon

On December 12, 1794, day of the Virgin of Guadalupe apparition, in the presence of Viceroy [Miguel de la Grúa Talamanca y Branciforte, marqués de Branciforte](#), Archbishop [Manuel Omaña y Sotomayor](#) and the members of the [Audiencia](#) of New Spain, Mier preached a sermon affirming that the apparitions of the [Virgin of Guadalupe](#) had been 1750 years before. In the beginning nobody said anything about the sermon but one week later, the Archbishop [Nuñez de Haro](#), condemn him to the excomunion, prison and exile in Spain for 10 years.

[] In exile

For his "disrespect", Archbishop Nuñez de Haro condemned Mier to ten years exile in the convent of Las Caldas del Besaya, in [Cantabria, Spain](#); a perpetual ban from teaching, preaching or hearing confessions; and the loss of his doctoral degree.

In 1796, he was granted permission to present his case to the [Council of the Indies](#). However, on his return from the Council, he took the wrong road and was arrested again. This time he was

confined to the Franciscan convent in [Burgos](#). In 1801, he escaped and took refuge in [Bayonne, France](#). From Bayonne he passed to [Bordeaux](#) and later to [Paris](#). There he was interpreter for the rich Peruvian José Sarea, Count of Gijón.

Together with [Simón Rodríguez](#), [Simón Bolívar](#)'s former teacher, he opened an academy in Paris to teach Spanish and to translate the *Atala* of [François-René de Chateaubriand](#). (The *Atala* was set in Louisiana, with an Indian heroine.) Mier also wrote a dissertation against [Constantin-François de Chasseboeuf, comte de Volney](#).

In Paris, he came to know [Lucas Alamán](#), then traveling as a student but later an important conservative politician in Mexico, Baron [Alexander von Humboldt](#), the Duke of Montmorency, and Chateaubriand. In 1802, he left the Dominican Order and became a secular priest in Rome.

When he returned to Madrid, he was again apprehended, this time for a satire he had written supporting Mexican independence. He was sent to the reformatory in [Seville](#), from which he escaped in 1804. However, he was again arrested and returned to prison, where he spent three years. Then the pope named him his domestic prelate, because he had converted two rabbis to Catholicism.

In the war between France and Spain, he returned to Spain as military chaplain of the Volunteers of Valencia. He was present at many battles. In Belchite he was taken prisoner by the French, but he was able to escape again (for the fifth time). He presented himself to General Blake, who recommended him to the Junta of Seville for his services. The Regency in Cádiz granted him an annual pension of 3,000 pesos.

He moved to [London](#), where he collaborated with José María Blanco on [El Español](#), a newspaper that supported the independence movements in Latin America.

[] Return to New Spain

In London, he met the Spanish revolutionary [Francisco Javier Mina](#). Mina convinced him to join an expedition to New Spain to fight for its independence. They sailed for New Spain on May 15, 1816. With the capture of the insurgents' fort at Soto la Marina on June 13, 1817, Mier was taken prisoner again, this time by the royalists. He was sent to the castle of San Carlos de Perote, thence to the dungeons of the Inquisition, and finally, in 1820, to [Havana](#). Escaping for a sixth time, he fled to [Philadelphia](#), where he remained until the establishment of Mexican independence.

In February 1822, he returned to Mexico, at Veracruz, but was again taken prisoner and held at the castle of [San Juan de Ulúa](#), still in control of the Spanish. The first Mexican constituent congress was able to secure his release; he became a deputy for Nuevo León.

He opposed the Mexican Empire under [Agustín de Iturbide](#), and was arrested again. He was imprisoned in the convent of Santo Domingo, but on January 1, 1823 he escaped again, for the seventh and last time.

[] As a member of the constituent congress

He was elected a deputy to the second constituent congress. On December 13, 1823 he delivered his famous speech "Discurso de las profecias" (loosely translated, "*Prophetic Discourse*"). In this

speech he argued for a centralized republic or in the event of a federal system being adopted, for its being in moderation. He was among the signers of the Act Constituting the Federation and of the Federal Constitution of the United States of Mexico. Mexico's first president, [Guadalupe Victoria](#), invited him to live in the palace.

[] Death

Nearing death, he invited his friends to a party to bid him farewell on November 16, 1827. He gave a speech justifying his life and opinions, and died on December 3, 1827. He was interred with great honor in the church of Santo Domingo. In 1861 his body was exhumed, together with 12 others. All the bodies were mummified.

The mummies were exhibited under the claim they were victims of the Inquisition. Some of the mummies, including Mier's, were sold to an Italian who accepted the claim. His mummy was later shown in Brussels ^[1] but what became of his remains after that is unknown.

His name is inscribed in letters of gold on the Wall of Honor of the Legislative Palace of San Lázaro, the building that today houses the [Chamber of Deputies](#) in Mexico City.

[] Writings

Mier published many speeches, sermons and letters on religion and politics, including the following:

- *Cartas de un americano al español*, 1811-13.
- *Historia de la revolución de Nueva España*, 2 vols., London: 1813. 2nd ed., Mexico City: 1922.
- *Apología y relaciones de su vida bajo el título de Memorias*, Madrid: 1924. 2nd ed., Mexico City: 1946.
- *The Memoirs of Fray Servando Teresa de Mier (Library of Latin America)*, Oxford University Press, USA (October 29, 1998).

References

1. [^] *The Memoirs of Fray Servando Teresa de Mier (Library of Latin America)*, Oxford University Press, USA, October 29, 1998.
- "Mier Noriega y Guerra, José Servando Teresa de," *Enciclopedia de México*, vol. 9. Mexico City: 1987.

Dwight Worker

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)

Dwight Worker is an American who escaped from the [Lecumberri](#) prison in [Mexico City](#), [Mexico](#).^{[1][2]} He was incarcerated after being convicted of attempting to smuggle cocaine. On December 17, 1975, two years into his 7 year sentence, he walked out of the prison disguised as a woman. He and his wife later wrote a book, *Escape* ([ISBN 0-913374-76-8](#)), about the

experience, and a made-for-TV movie was released in 1980.^[a] In May 2012, the National Geographic show "Locked Up Abroad" aired an episode about Worker's story.

[] References

1. [^] ["Ottawa Citizen"](#). 1980-02-16. Retrieved 2012-05-14.
2. [^] ["The Altus Times-Democrat"](#). 1978-04-30. Retrieved 2012-05-14.
3. [^] ["Escape NYTimes"](#). Retrieved 2012-05-14.

Douglas Clague

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)



This article **may require [cleanup](#) to meet Wikipedia's [quality standards](#)**. No [cleanup reason](#) has been specified. Please help [improve this article](#) if you can. *(August 2011)*

Colonel The Honorable Sir **Douglas Clague** [CBE](#), [MC](#), [QPM](#), [CPM](#), [TD](#) was a [British soldier](#) and [entrepreneur](#) who spent most of his life in [Hong Kong](#). He died of cancer aged 64, in 1981.



Sir Douglas Clague

Born in [Rhodesia](#), in 1917, Clague arrived in [Hong Kong](#) in 1940 as a [lieutenant](#) in the [Royal Artillery](#), and on the outbreak of [World War II](#) became a prisoner in the [Sham Shui Po PoW camp](#).^[1] He later escaped, and joined the [British Army Aid Group](#) in [free China](#). On the ending of the war, he famously took the surrender of [Japanese](#) forces in [Bangkok](#) more or less single-handedly.^[2]

After the war, he became the [tai-pan](#) of the [hong Hutchison](#), later to become Hutchison Whampoa. He overstretched his finances, which resulted in [HSBC](#) taking over the firm, replacing Clague, and later selling Hutchison Whampoa to [Li Ka-Shing's Cheung Kong](#).^[3]

Clague was also one of the commandants of the [Royal Hong Kong Auxiliary Police Force](#), and a member of both the [Executive](#) and the [Legislative Councils](#) of Hong Kong. In 1950-51 he was President of the Gunners Roll of Hong Kong.^[4]

He owned a [lodge](#) at [Kam Tsin](#) in the northern [New Territories](#) alongside many other wealthy people.^[5] He was also a [racehorse](#) owner and one time chairman of the [Royal Hong Kong Jockey Club](#); it was under his tenure the [Sha Tin Racecourse](#) was developed. The [Clague Garden Estate](#) in [Tsuen Wan](#) is named for him, as he was also one of the longest serving chairmen of the [Hong Kong Housing Society](#).

[] References

1. [^] [HONG KONG: Trouble in the Hongs](#), [Time magazine](#), 20 October 1975
2. [^] http://www.thestandard.com.hk/news_print.asp?art_id=735&sid=4378537
3. [^] Stephen Vines, [The Other Handover](#), [Time magazine](#), 6 August 2005
4. [^] <http://www.gunnersroll.org/documents>
5. [^] <http://ebook.lib.hku.hk/HKG/B35833361.pdf>

□

Nabetari

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)

Nabetari is a [Gilbertese](#) ([Pacific Islands](#)) native who impressed several senior [Allied](#) officers with his successful attempt on or about 4 April 1944 to escape from the [Second World War Japanese occupation](#) of the [Nauru](#). Nabetari made a record ocean voyage in a small fishing [canoe](#) to the [Gilbert Islands](#), about 240 miles to the east. In November, after seven months on the ocean, he was washed up on the reef of the [Ninigo Island](#) close to [Manus](#), the largest of the [Admiralty Islands](#) archipelago. He was later flown to [Tarawa](#) to provide information about the Japanese troops on the Nauru. Nabetari covered a total of 1,500 miles during his escape.

[] Sources

- ["Nabetari's Voyage"](#). [Time](#) magazine. 1946-07-29. Retrieved 2007-06-24.

- <http://www.janeresture.com/banaba/nabetari.htm> THE STORY OF NABETARI'S AMAZING CANOE VOYAGE

Yoshie Shiratori

Yoshie Shiratori (白鳥 由栄 *Shiratori Yoshie*[?], July 31, 1907 - February 24, 1979) was a Japanese national who committed a murder in 1933. He is best known for having [escaped from prison](#) four times over three years. He was eventually sentenced to life plus 23 years imprisonment for his crimes. However, served 26 years and was paroled in 1961.

Shiratori was born in [Aomori Prefecture](#) and had a daughter. Although he committed a murder with a peer in 1933, he was evidently not a career criminal. Prosecutors sought the death sentence. He escaped from Aomori prison in 1936. He was soon rearrested and was sentenced to [life imprisonment](#). He escaped from Akita prison in 1942. After he was rearrested again, three years was added to his sentence. He rusted his handcuff and an inspection hole with [miso](#) soup and escaped from Abashiri prison in 1944. After [World War II](#), he injured a man and the man later died. He was arrested again in 1946.

Sapporo District Court [sentenced him to death](#) and this made him angry. He dug a tunnel and escaped from Sapporo prison in 1947. In 1948, a policeman gave him a cigarette, and Shiratori admitted that he was an escaped convict. The high court revoked his death sentence and sentenced him to another 20-years in prison, while dismissing the allegation of intentional killing. He stayed in jail after that, and was [paroled](#) in 1961. He went to Aomori Prefecture in 1973, and he saw his daughter, but he didn't speak to her. He died of a heart attack in 1979. His ashes were taken by a woman who was cared for by him.

Shiratori became an [anti-hero](#). [Akira Yoshimura](#) published a novel *Hagoku* based on him. His memorial is in the Abashiri prison museum.^[1] His family name *Shiratori* means [swan](#) in Japanese.

[] References

1. [^] [Abashiri Travel Guide](#) *Travel otica*

[] External links

- [Hagoku](#) from Charm of Hokkaido
- (Japanese) [Yoshie Shiratori](#) from MONSTERS
- Sela grew up in the [Hatikva Quarter](#), an impoverished neighborhood of [Tel Aviv](#), and as a young boy, witnessed his [alcoholic](#) father commit [suicide](#) by jumping off an electric pole. He subsequently entered [foster care](#). His case later entered the textbook of Israeli social work education as an example of severe failures in his [foster care](#) as a teenager.^[1]
- **[] Crime spree**
- According to police, Sela committed at least 24 and possibly as many as 34 rapes, [sexual assaults](#), and [sexual molestations](#) of women and girls over the course of five years. Sela would break into their homes, usually late at night or in the early morning. Sela forced his victims to shower afterward to reduce physical evidence, and threatened to kill them

if they left the shower before half an hour had passed. To avoid identification, he would attack and then rape his victims from behind, ensuring that they would only get glimpses of him. In three instances, he videotaped his victims and threatened to publish the tape on the internet or give it to their friends if they reported the crime. Sela's crimes gained notoriety, and he became known as the "Tel Aviv rapist". Sela was first arrested in 1995 and sentenced to two years in prison for having systematically molested his cousin from the time she was eight to when she was fifteen. While awaiting trial, Sela made an attempt to escape.

- **[] Manhunt and capture**

- A force of detectives commanded by Arnon Notman was assigned to the case. Between 1997 and 1999, they questioned up to a hundred men who matched victims' descriptions per day. Sela was arrested on December 14, 1999. Notman received an emergency call that a man wearing black jeans and a purple T-shirt had attempted to rape a young woman in a parking lot. Notman assigned a detective to interview the victim, called for reinforcements, and began to circle the neighborhood. Another call then came in that a man wearing the same attire had attacked an eight-year old girl at 17 Weinschel Street. Notman and reinforcements arrived at the location, spotted a man who matched the description, and cornered him against a fence. After arresting Sela, Notman saw that he resembled the descriptions of the Tel Aviv rapist. A scan of his [Teudat Zehut](#) showed that he had already been in prison. Further research showed that the Tel Aviv rapes had temporarily stopped during his incarceration period. Detectives extracted DNA from Sela, which was found to match samples given by nine of his victims.^{[2][1]} Sela indicted on 14 counts of rape. Following a [plea bargain](#), he was sentenced to 35 years imprisonment. He is currently serving his sentence at Nitzan Prison in [Ramla](#).

- **[] Escape and recapture**

- On November 24, 2006, Sela escaped from police custody while being transferred to a court hearing. Shortly after his escape, hundreds of police officers began a search throughout Tel Aviv, with cruisers, mounted police, and a helicopter participating in the search. Police also set up roadblocks in the city. The search became focused on southern Tel Aviv after a resident reported that he had visited his mother there.^[3] A nationwide [manhunt](#) involving thousands of police officers was launched. Two weeks into his escape, sightings of Sela were reported in the northern coastal city of [Nahariya](#), and a relative told tipped off police that Sela had visited him and told him he was heading north, and gave police details about the car Sela was driving. Large numbers of police officers were then deployed to Nahariya.
- On December 8, 2006, Sela was arrested at a police checkpoint near [kibbutz Lohamei HaGeta'ot](#), located near Nahariya. Sela resisted arrest and tried to run, but was chased down and handcuffed. Sela identified himself as an [Arab](#), but an identity check at the Nahariya police station confirmed Sela's identity. However, there was controversy after pictures emerged of police officers abusing and humiliating Sela after his capture.
- On the same day that the arrest occurred, police investigated reports from citizens claiming to have spotted Sela in [Tiberias](#), and a police helicopter and several cruisers were called to [Ness Ziona](#) after a citizen reported seeing a man similar to Sela.^[4]
- Sela was put on trial for several offenses committed during his escape attempt, including breaking and entering and theft. In July 2012, he was sentenced to an additional 4 years in prison by the [Rishon LeZion](#) Magistrate's Court.^[5]

- **[] Life in prison**

- While imprisoned, Sela filed dozens of court motions every year, most of which focused on inconsequential issues and were rejected. Due to his persistent motions, he became known as a "serial appellant". The repeated motions put a burden on the authorities, as the [Israel Prison Service](#) was tasked with bringing him to each hearing and returning

him to prison, a process that necessitated the presence of police and massive security due to Sela being considered a high escape risk. On 14 August 2011, the [Beersheba](#) District Court limited Sela to eight motions per year and imposed a [NIS](#) 70 fine on him for every motion rejected. Judge Shlomo Friedlander said that the decision was to prevent authorities from spending an unequal share of their resources on his appeals, which could deny other prisoners their rights.^[6]

- In 2010, Sela exposed himself to a female guard during his daily walk in the prison yard, and was placed in [solitary confinement](#).^[7]
- In May 2011, Sela's mother Rivka was caught attempting to smuggle him [pornographic](#) CDs in a file she had claimed contained court documents during a court hearing.^[8]

Hayssam arrived in [Bucharest](#) as a student at the beginning of the 1980s, graduating from the Railroads, Roads and Bridges Faculty of the [Bucharest Constructions Institute](#). He married Adela, had seven children, and became a Romanian citizen after the [Romanian Revolution of 1989](#). Hayssam continued doing business after 1989, which resulted in problems with the [Financial Guard](#).^[2]

[] Kidnapping

In the kidnapping incident, [Prima TV](#) reporter [Marie Jeanne Ion](#), cameraman Sorin Mişcoci, and [Ovidiu Ohanesian](#), a journalist working for the newspaper [România Liberă](#), were abducted on March 28, 2005 in [Baghdad](#), where they were covering the [Iraq War](#). According to reports, the group of kidnapers included Mahmoud Khaled Al-Omar, Abdel Jabbar Abbas Jassem Al-Samani, Ibrahim Yassin Kaathem Al-Jabouri, Omar Jassam Muhammad Ali Al-Salmani, and Yussef Munaf Muhammad Amin Al-Amin (the brother of [Mohammad Munaf](#)).^[3] On April 1, the kidnapers transferred the three journalists to the [Mouadh Ibn Jabal Brigade](#), who locked them in the same cellar where [Florence Aubenas](#), [Hussein Hanoun al-Saadi](#), and five other hostages were held.^[3] The hostage-takers demanded the retreat of the 860 Romanian troops in Iraq in return for the journalists' release. The Romanian journalists were rescued after 55 days in captivity.

Hayssam was arrested in Romania on April 5, 2005. Prosecutors charged him and Mohammad Munaf, the journalists' Iraqi guide and Hayssam's business partner, with organizing the abduction to help Hayssam escape organized crime charges. According to the prosecutors, Hayssam organized the kidnapping because he was being investigated in several cases of financial [fraud](#), and was looking for a way to leave the country with a large sum of money. His businesses included mineral water bottling, shops, a car dealership and manufacturing.^[4] Romanian media speculated that Hayssam had hoped prosecutors would drop the organized crime charges when he presented himself as a go-between.^[1] He would then unblock his bank accounts, which had been frozen as part of the financial investigation, pay a fictitious ransom, and become a "national hero" when the hostages were released.^[5]

[] Disappearance

Hayssam disappeared from Romania in 2006 after a local court let him leave a prison hospital to recover at home, following surgery for [colon cancer](#). It has been speculated that he left on July 12, 2006 from the [Black Sea](#) port of [Midia](#), aboard a freight boat transporting young [rams](#) to the [Middle East](#).^[6] His escape triggered the resignation of the chief prosecutor and the heads of [Romanian secret services](#) in July 2006.^[1]

In 2006, Marie Jeanne Ion, Sorin Mișcoci, and Ovidiu Ohanesian filed a [civil suit](#) against Omar Hayssam, each one asking for €2 million in damages for the trauma caused by their captivity; on June 13, 2007, the Bucharest Appeals Court ruled in favor of the plaintiffs.^[7]

[] References

- [^] ^{*a b c*} ["Romania sentences Arab businessman for Iraq kidnap"](#). Reuters. 2007-06-13. Retrieved 2007-06-14.
- [^] **(Romanian)** Popa, Eliza (2005-03-30). ["Luminile rampei - Omar Hayssam, un om pe care toată lumea pare a-l cunoaște, dar mai nimeni nu-l recunoaște \(The Lights of the Ramp - Omar Hayssam, a man whom everyone seems to know, but no one recognises\)"](#). Jurnalul Național. Retrieved 2007-06-14.
- [^] ^{*a b*} Constantinoiu, Marina (2005-06-15). ["Kidnapped by the Syrians!"](#). Jurnalul Național. Retrieved 2007-06-18.^[dead link]
- [^] ["Syrian-born fugitive sentenced to 20 years for kidnapping Romanian journalists in Iraq"](#). The Associated Press. 2007-06-13. Retrieved 2007-06-14.
- [^] Paraipan, Manuela (2005-07-01). ["Kidnapping of Romanian Journalists in Iraq: An unusual affair"](#). Global Politician. Retrieved 2007-06-14.
- [^] Gabi Golea, Emilia Sava (July 22, 2006). ["Suspected Terrorist Omar Hayssam Might Have Fled Romania via a Freight Boat"](#). Jurnalul Național. Retrieved 2007-06-16.^[dead link]
- [^] **(Romanian)** ["Adela Omar: "Decizia judecătorilor in cazul lui Hayssam este exagerată și incorectă""](#). Ziare.com. June 14, 2007. Retrieved 2007-06-18.

Mas Selamat bin Kastari (born 23 January 1961), an [Indonesian](#)-born [Singaporean](#), was for more than a year Singapore's most-wanted [fugitive](#) after escaping from detention on 27 February 2008. The search for him has been described as the largest manhunt ever launched in Singapore.^[2] He was eventually recaptured in [Skudai](#), [Malaysia](#), on April 1, 2009, over a year after his escape, and has since been returned to Singapore.^{[3][4]}

In January 2006, Mas Selamat was arrested by Indonesian anti-terror squads in [Java](#) and deported to Singapore. He was suspected of plotting to bomb [Singapore Changi Airport](#) in 2002,^[5] and, according to the Singapore Police Force, he had initially planned to do so by crashing a plane into the airport.^[4] However, Mas Selamat has never been formally charged with any terrorism-related offences;^[1] instead, he was detained under the country's [Internal Security Act](#), which allows indefinite detention without trial.^[6]

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Early life](#)
- [2 Involvement with JI](#)
- [3 Arrests](#)
- [4 Escape in February 2008](#)
 - [4.1 Public reaction](#)
 - [4.2 Findings of investigation](#)
 - [4.3 Possible capture](#)
- [5 Capture](#)
- [6 References](#)

[] Early life

Born in 1961 in [Kendal, Central Java](#), in [Indonesia](#), Mas Selamat grew up in [Kaki Bukit](#) in Singapore leading a typical childhood [kampung](#) life. He attended the Kaki Bukit Primary School, and was known simply as "Selamat" to his neighbors. In the early 1980s, Mas Selamat moved to a flat in [Bedok Reservoir](#) where he married and had five children.^{[7][8][9]}

[] Involvement with JI

Mas Selamat was believed to begin his involvement in the 1990s when he joined [Darul Islam](#), a precursor movement to the Jemaah Islamiah (JI) group. By 1992, he had joined the Singapore JI cell and was sent to [Afghanistan](#) for training a year later. In 1998, he studied the [Taliban](#) system of government and returned home 'deeply impressed'.^[10]

According to Singapore intelligence authorities, Mas Selamat has met [Hambali](#), the leader of JI, and discussed various terror plots including hijacking a plane from [Bangkok](#) and crashing it into [Singapore Changi Airport](#).^{[11][12]} He escaped from Singapore in 2001 before authorities conducted a massive operation to arrest 13 suspected JI members in December 2001.

[] Arrests

Mas Selamat had earlier been arrested in February 2003 in the island of [Bintan](#), Indonesia, to assist Indonesian police in their investigations of several bombings in Indonesia in 2001 and 2002. Mas Selamat had changed his identity, assuming the name of Edi Heriyanto and obtained an Indonesian passport. Found in his possession was literature on making bombs and the virtue of suicide. He was jailed for 18 months in 2003 for immigration offences.^[5] He was, however, not handed over to Singapore upon his release, since Indonesia and Singapore do not yet have an [extradition treaty](#). During this period of imprisonment, he broke his left leg in a botched attempt to escape when he jumped from a high floor, resulting in him walking with a permanent limp.^{[7][10]}

On 20 January 2006, he was arrested again for using a fake identity card in [Java](#), where he was visiting his son who was said to be studying at a religious school there. Singapore requested Mas Selamat's [extradition](#) and he was handed over to Singapore on February 3, 2006,^[13] where he was detained in Singapore under the [Internal Security Act](#) without trial.^[14] The Malaysian intelligence authorities also wanted to question Mas Selamat who had made frequent visits to [Johor](#) before fleeing to Indonesia.^[5]

[] Escape in February 2008





Wanted posters are visible everywhere in Singapore after his escape, such as this one at [Somerset MRT Station](#)

At 4:05 pm on Wednesday, February 27, 2008, the JI leader escaped from the [Internal Security Department](#)'s Whitley Road Detention Centre where he was being detained.^{[4][15]} His family were visiting him at the time, and he was being led to a room to meet them when he asked to go to the toilet. He then fled.^{[16][17]} A massive manhunt comprising personnel from the [Singapore Police Force](#), the [Gurkha Contingent](#), the [Police Tactical Unit](#) and the [Police National Service Key Installation Protection Unit](#) were deployed in the vicinity of the area immediately after the escape. They were later aided by members of the [Singapore Guards](#) and the [Singapore Armed Forces Military Police Command](#), before the operation was wound down over 17 hours later without success in locating the fugitive, who was believed to be unarmed.^[18]

Authorities said security was very tight at the detention centre and conducted an independent study to determine how the fugitive escaped.^[19] Deputy Prime Minister [Wong Kan Seng](#) acknowledged that a security lapse led to his escape, and that everything was being done to recapture Mas Selamat.^{[9][16]} The Onraet Road facility has armed guards, high wire fences and CCTV cameras. Reactions to the escape were filled with surprise and disbelief in what Western observers describe as a country where "*security breaches are virtually unheard of*".^{[19][20]} It brought serious embarrassment to the Singapore government,^{[21][22]} and many questions raised by the public and the press.^{[21][22]} Security around the schools in the area was also beefed up to assure worried parents.^{[23][24]} Indonesia and Malaysia announced that they stepped up their own border security in the wake of this incident.^{[25][26]} Government authorities received more than 1100 calls on sightings of Mas Selamat. The earliest sighting of him was in a back road near MacRitchie Reservoir leading to Toa Payoh Lorong 1 right behind Braddell View Estates.

An urgent worldwide security alert, or Orange Notice, was issued by [INTERPOL](#) to each of its 186 National Central Bureaus following a request from [Singapore](#).^{[11][27][28][29]} The alert was later changed to red.^[30]

[Wanted posters](#) of Mas Selamat were put up in shopping centers, buses, train stations and even schools islandwide to appeal for the public to inform police should they spot him, and leaflets given out by volunteers to members of the public.^[8] The three telecommunications companies in Singapore sent out [Multimedia Messaging Service](#) (MMS) messages starting on 1 March 2008 to all 5.5 million subscribers with Mas Selamat's photograph, as well as email messages to SingNet Internet users.^[31] The MMS read "Please call 999 immediately if you see Mas Selamat bin Kastari. He is short (1.58m tall) and limps on his left leg. Thank you." Lockdowns at border and immigration checkpoints also resulted in much longer queues for people leaving Singapore.

There were conflicting reports on the whereabouts of Mas Selamat. While Singaporean police initially believed that he remained in Singapore,^[32] others such as Malaysia's [The Star](#) reported that he may have fled to Indonesia via a speedboat ride.^{[20][33]}

On 21 July 2008, a cash reward of one million dollars was offered for information leading to the apprehension of Mas Selamat. The million dollar reward was put up by two private individuals who had approached the Home Affairs Ministry, wishing to remain anonymous.^[34]

[] Public reaction



Graffiti of Mas Selamat on a wall at [Ann Siang Road](#)

[Agence France-Presse](#) noted how "Terrorism is usually no laughing matter, especially not in security-conscious Singapore, but the escape from custody of a limping Islamist extremist suspect has led to scorn on the Internet."^[21] Online critics also accused the pro-government media of trying to play down the incident and skirting key issues.^[35] Speculations abound in the internet chatrooms and blogs, sometimes bordering on the incredulous. Some of them attributed the escape to black magic or insider collaboration. Claims of conspiracy theories, such as that Mas Selamat had died in detention or that he was let out to allow authorities to sniff out other terrorists, were also put up by the online community.^[36]

Criticism has been directed towards [Wong Kan Seng](#), the Minister of Home Affairs in Singapore, with regards to the fact that news of Mas Selamat's escape was not disseminated to the public until four hours after its occurrence. The public were not given any details until the next day at a parliamentary session. Wong then had cited a serious security lapse as the reason for the escape and revealed that Mas Selamat escaped when he was being taken to the toilet before a meeting at the Family Visit Room.^[37]

On 2 March 2008, it was announced that an independent Committee of Inquiry, chaired by former judge Goh Joon Seng, would be set up to find out how the escape occurred.

[] Findings of investigation

On 21 April 2008, the only findings of the Committee of Inquiry were released in a [Parliament of Singapore](#) session. It was announced that he escaped through an unsecured bathroom window. The Committee attributed the escape to three critical factors – first, the lack of grilles where the window was located; second, Mas Selamat being allowed to close the toilet door on the guards, thus avoiding detection during his escape and third, a physical weakness at the perimeter fencing outside the visitation centre.^[38]

Additionally, the report stated that a re-enactment of the potential escape route would have taken 49 seconds to escape through the window and clear the perimeter fencing, with another 2 minutes and 44 seconds to reach the [Pan Island Expressway](#) located next to the detention

centre. Mas Selamat had turned on the water tap after closing the toilet door and the guards on duty only acted on their suspicions 11 minutes after this incident. It is believed that Mas Selamat could have been gone for some time at that point.^[39]

It was later revealed that Mas Selamat had used an improvised flotation device to cross the [Straits of Johor](#) into [Malaysia](#).^[40]

[] Possible capture

On 7 August 2008, a man 'limping like' Mas Selamat was arrested by Indonesian police at [Buluh Tumbang Airport](#) in [Tanjung Pandan, Belitung](#).^[41] The man claimed to be an educational book salesman and not the fugitive in question.^[42] The man was later released.^[43]

[] Capture

On 8 May 2009, the media in Singapore reported that Mas Selamat had been captured by Malaysian authorities in [Johor](#), Malaysia.^[44] This report was later confirmed by both the Singapore and Malaysian governments, with the date of capture given as 1 April 2009.^[45] Malaysian Home Minister [Hishammuddin Hussein](#) confirmed that Mas Selamat is being held under the [Internal Security Act](#), saying that he was "planning something, which allowed us to arrest him".^[46] Hishammuddin declined to give details, since the case is sensitive as it involves intelligence agencies of Singapore, Indonesia as well as Malaysia.^[46] Inspector-General of Malaysian Police [Musa Hassan](#) said that the arrest was made possible as the involved parties had been sharing intelligence reports since his escape.^[47]

According to the media, Mas Selamat was captured in the early morning of April 1 in a secluded house in Kampung Tawakal, an obscure village with the population of less than 100 in [Skudai](#), 25 kilometres (16 mi) northwest of [Johor Bahru](#).^{[47][48]} While according to a witness, Mohd Saat Marjo, 57, a villager who lived opposite the fugitive's home, about 40 comprising personnels from [Royal Malaysian Police](#), such as [Special Actions Unit \(Pasukan Gerakan Khas A-Detachment; UTK\)](#) and [Special Branch](#) members broke through two doors and rushed into the house when he refused to come out and surrender when ordered by the police. Mas Selamat resided in the house's refurbished basement, while his landlord, known only as "Johar", and Johar's wife and two children, resided in the upper portions of the house.^[48] Prior to his arrest, Mas Selamat had limited contact with outsiders, even avoiding prayers at the local [surau](#), but had been witnessed tending to the compound's garden.^[48] Villagers in Kampung Tawakal expressed shock of Mas Selamat's presence after his identity was made known to the public.^[48]

Several people who had helped Mas Selamat to hide in the country, including Johar, were arrested along with him, and the news of the arrest was undisclosed for weeks to enable investigations into his network in Malaysia.^{[46][49]} Immediately after his arrest, the house Mas Selamat resided in and its surroundings were combed for explosives.^[48]

Mas Selamat was transferred back to Singapore for detention under the ISA on 24 September 2010.^[50]

[] References



Wikimedia Commons has media related to: [Mas Selamat bin Kastari](#)

1. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} Agence France-Presse (2008-03-08). "[Singapore should brace for attack if JI suspect flees island: Lee](#)". Retrieved 2008-03-22.
2. [^] [Mas Selamat can hold out indefinitely: experts](#), ST, 4 March 2008
3. [^] "[Breaking News](#)". The Straits Times. Retrieved 2013-04-30.
4. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} ^{[c](#)} "[JI detainee Mas Selamat Kastari escapes from Singapore detention centre](#)". Channel NewsAsia. 27 February 2008.
5. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} ^{[c](#)} "[Singapore JI suspect nabbed in Java](#)". The Star (Malaysia). 6 February 2006.
6. [^] "[Security forces comb forests and seas for Singapore's escaped terror suspect](#)". International Herald Tribune. Associated Press. 2008-03-01. Retrieved 2008-03-22.
7. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} "[Kampung boy, bus mechanic, bomb maker, wanted terrorist](#)", Nur Dianah Suhaimi, [The Sunday Times](#), 2 March 2008
8. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} [Fugitive hunt goes global](#), Leong Wee Keat & Rosnah Ahmad, [Today \(Singapore newspaper\)](#), 1 March 2008
9. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} [Singapore widen hunt for inmate](#), [Al Jazeera](#), 29 February 2008
10. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} [JI leader broke leg in Bintan jail break: terror expert](#), [The Straits Times](#), 29 February 2008
11. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} ^{[c](#)} [Interpol issues global alert for Singapore terror fugitive](#), [Associated Press \(International Herald Tribune\)](#), 29 February 2008 (Also see [CNN](#))
12. [^] [Qaeda Suspect Escapes](#), [The New York Times](#), 28 February 2008
13. [^] "[Indonesia sends terror suspect to Singapore-police](#)". Reuters. 6 February 2006.
14. [^] "[JI terror suspect sent back to Singapore after arrest in Indonesia](#)". Channel NewsAsia. 6 February 2006.
15. [^] [Massive manhunt for escaped JI terror leader](#), [The Straits Times](#), 27 February 2008
16. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} [JI leader escaped from toilet in detention centre due to 'security lapse'](#), Chong Chee Kin, [The Straits Times](#), 28 February 2008
17. [^] [Singapore: Terror suspect fled toilet](#), [Associated Press \(CNN\)](#), 28 February 2008
18. [^] [Ministry of Home Affairs – Ministry of Home Affairs News Release on Mas Selamat bin Kastari](#)
19. [^] [Escape of JI leader: How can this happen in S'pore?](#), [The Straits Times](#), 28 February 2008
20. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} [Escape makes headlines overseas](#), Mavis Toh, [The Straits Times](#), 2 March 2008
21. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} ^{[c](#)} [Singapore gov't butt of jokes after prison escape](#), [Agence France-Presse](#), 3 March 2008
22. [^] ^{[a](#)} ^{[b](#)} [Dangers of a bunker mentality](#), P N Balji, [Today \(Singapore newspaper\)](#), 3 March 2008
23. [^] [SCGS steps up checks, security](#), Lee Pei Qi & Teh Joo Lin, [The Straits Times](#), 28 February 2008
24. [^] [Where is Mas Selamat?](#), Alicia Wong & Rosnah Ahmad, [Today \(Singapore newspaper\)](#), 29 February 2008
25. [^] [Indonesia joins hunt for S'pore terror fugitive](#), [The Straits Times](#), 28 February 2008
26. [^] [M'sian police tighten border security with S'pore](#), [The Straits Times](#), 28 February 2008
27. [^] [INTERPOL issues global alert for suspected terror leader following escape from Singapore jail](#), [INTERPOL](#), 28 February 2008
28. [^] [Interpol Alert Follows Suspect Escape](#), Gillian Wong, [The Associated Press \(The Washington Post\)](#), 29 February 2008
29. [^] [Interpol issues alert for escaped JI militant](#), [Reuters \(The Age\)](#), 29 February 2008

30. ^ Mas Selamat acted alone, still in S'pore: police, ST, 2 Mar 2008
31. ^ [The face that launched 5.5 million cellphone alerts](#), Ben Nadarajan, [The Straits Times](#), 2 March 2008
32. ^ [JI terrorist Mas Selamat still in S'pore: police](#), [The Straits Times](#), 2 March 2008
33. ^ [Mas Selamat is said to know islands well, Interpol issues worldwide alert](#), Eddie Chua, [The Star \(Malaysia\)](#), 1 March 2008
34. ^ ["Channelnewsasia.com"](#). Channelnewsasia.com. 2013-03-27. Retrieved 2013-04-30.
35. ^ [Singapore faces blogging ire over militant escape](#), [Reuters](#), 6 March 2008
36. ^ "Mas Selamat wins in blame game", ST, 15 Mar 2008.
37. ^ Security lapse led to escape of JI leader Mas Selamat, says DPM Wong, Channelnewsasia.com, 28 Feb 2008.
38. ^ [\[1\]](#), [ChannelNewsAsia](#), 21 April 2008
39. ^ [\[2\]](#), [International Herald Tribune](#), 21 April 2008
40. ^ ["Channel NewsAsia"](#). Channel NewsAsia. 2013-03-27. Retrieved 2013-04-30.
41. ^ [|DetikNews - Pria Mirip Kastari Diincar Sejak di Jakarta, 8 August 2008](#)
42. ^ [|DetikNews - Pria Mirip Teroris Mas Selamat Kastari Ditangkap di Belitung, 8 August 2008](#)
43. ^ [|DetikNews - Polda Babel Lepas Pria Mirip Kastari, 8 August 2008](#)
44. ^ ["Singapore's JI leader Mas Selamat reportedly arrested in Malaysia"](#). Channel NewsAsia. 8 May 2009.
45. ^ ["Singapore government confirms arrest of Mas Selamat"](#). Channel NewsAsia. 8 May 2009.
46. ^ [a b c](#) ["We will ensure Mas Selamat does not escape"](#). [The New Straits Times](#). 9 May 2009.
47. ^ [a b](#) ["Caught while sleeping"](#). [The Straits Times](#). 9 May 2009.
48. ^ [a b c d e](#) Meera Vijayan & Desiree Tresa Gasper (May 11, 2009). ["Fugitive militant finds rustic retreat away from prying eyes"](#). [The Star](#).
49. ^ ["Police arrest Mas Selamat's landlord"](#). [The Star](#). May 11, 2009.
50. ^ Hetty Musfirah (24 September 2010). ["Mas Selamat repatriated, detained under Singapore's ISA"](#). Channel NewsAsia. Archived from [the original](#) on 7 December 2011. Agence France-Presse (24 September 2010). ["Malaysia hands over Mas Selamat to Singapore"](#). [AsiaOne](#). Archived from [the original](#) on 27 September 2010.

Camenisch was born on January 21, 1952 in [Campocologno, Switzerland](#) and raised in a [middle-class](#) home in [canton Graubünden](#). He dropped out of high school because he felt the teachings were elitist. During his apprenticeship as a farmer at the [Plantahof](#) school, he opposed the use of chemical [fertilizers](#) in farming. Marco became a [mountaineer](#) but soon started to believe that his political aims could not be achieved unless he became more direct in his activism.

[] Activism

In the late 1970s, Camenisch was involved in local opposition against the [nuclear power](#) industry. In Switzerland, as in other countries too, the movement against nuclear power plants resorted to means of [direct action](#): cutting down electrical [pylons](#), [sabotage](#) against power stations, and actions against leaders of the nuclear industry.

In January 1980, Camenisch and other activists were arrested for sabotaging a pylon and a power station^[2] of NOK (Nordostschweizer Kraftwerke = "Northeast Swiss Power Stations") at [Bad Ragaz](#). After spending a year free on bail, the court of Canton in [Chur](#) and [Graubünden](#) sentenced Camenisch to 10 years in prison. A co-defendant was sentenced to 7.5 years. At the trial Camenisch refused to acknowledge the legitimacy of the court or cooperate with its

procedures. In court he read a statement in which he connected direct actions as a protest against the environmental degradation caused by energy industry and with the struggle against the [capitalist](#) social order.

[] [Escape](#)

In December 1981, he escaped from [Regensdorf](#) prison^[2] near [Zürich](#), along with 5 other prisoners. During the melée a prison guard was shot and killed, and another was seriously injured. Camenisch claimed he hadn't been part of the group which committed the shootings. After the escape he spent 10 years living in hiding.

In 1989, Swiss federal police and media claimed he was responsible for killing of Swiss border police officer Kurt Moser at Brusio.^[2] A witness of the murder claimed to recognising Camenisch and the *Blick* printed his photograph. The witness later retracted, saying he had only overheard the shots. Supporters of Camenisch spawned doubt regarding his guilt, turning him into a "martyr of the State". Camenisch returned into hiding for two years.

[] [Arrest in Italy](#)

Since his escape he spent his life in and out between [Turin](#), [Sondrio](#) and [Carrara](#). He spent several years in the mountains of Carrara and in the Cooperativa Tipolitografica, the main anarchist printing shop at the time. He never revealed his identity until the day he was caught.

On November 5 1991, Camenisch was stopped by [Carabinieri](#) on Cinquale di Montignoso road, along with fellow anarchist Giancarlo Sergianpietri. Camenisch produced a handgun and opened fire, wounding one of the soldiers. In the ensuing shootout, he was wounded at one leg and arrested. Two guns and six rudimentary bombs were found at his place. He was taken to [Pisa](#) hospital, where he remained for 6 months, and later at San Vittore prison infirmary in [Milano](#). The [Italian](#) Court of [Massa Carrara](#) sentenced him to 12 years for assault and sabotage of electrical pylons. He served 9 of those years while in [solitary confinement](#) in a maximum-security prison.

[Extradition to Switzerland](#)

In April 2002, Camenisch was extradited to Switzerland and transferred to a prison in [Pfäffikon](#) near Zürich. In January 2003, after a hunger strike against the conditions of imprisonment he was suffering, he was transferred to a prison in [Chur](#) with better conditions. Recently the Swiss government transferred him back to Pfäffikon. In July 2004 he was sentenced to 17 years in prison^[2] for the murder of Kurt Moser. However, in November 2006 the [Federal Supreme Court](#) nullified this sentence on the basis that the sum of the two prison terms would exceed the maximum of 20 years set by Swiss law. On 13 March the sentence was therefore reduced to 8 years.

Camenisch has maintained his political beliefs during his time in prison, and he has remained a political activist.

[] [See also](#)

- [ecoterrorism](#)

[] References

1. [^ "Swiss eco-activist found guilty of murder"](#).
2. [^ *a b c d* Bott, Martin \(2004-06-05\). "Eco-terrorist' jailed for killing border guard". *The Independent* \(London\). Retrieved 2007-12-27.](#)

[Authority control](#)

- [VIAF: 53883480](#)

Hunt on for Yemeni jailbreakers

Yemeni Security forces are searching for 23 suspected al-Qaeda members who broke out of a jail on Friday.

Thirteen of the men were convicted of carrying out bomb attacks on the destroyer USS Cole in 2000 and the French tanker Limburg in 2002.



Some of them who escaped were convicted for the USS Cole attack

The men broke out of a jail in the city of Sanaa and "are considered among the most important and dangerous members of al-Qaeda", an official told agency AFP.

He said they tunnelled 140 metres which took them to a nearby mosque.

Al-Qaeda leader

The men then escaped as people left the mosque after Friday prayers.

The source said Fawaz al-Rabihi, who was convicted for the attack on the Limburg who had been sentenced to death, and Jamal al-Badawi, who received 10 years for the attack on the USS Cole were among those who escaped .

Al-Qaeda's Yemeni number two Abu Assem al-Ahdal may also be among those on the loose, the security source was quoted by AFP.

Yemen, which is the ancestral home of al-Qaeda leader Osama bin Laden, has been an ally of the US-led war on terror since the September 11 attacks in 2001.

Seventeen US sailors were killed when two suicide bombers blew themselves up on an inflatable raft moored next to USS Cole in the southern Yemeni port of Aden in October 2000.

In October 2002, the French tanker Limburg, was attacked off Yemen's south-eastern coast. An explosion killed one Bulgarian crew member and wounded 12 others.

Did Qaeda Fugitives Get Inside Help?

Investigators are looking into the possibility that intelligence officers helped 23 al Qaeda prisoners — including a militant convicted in the 2000 USS Cole bombing — escape from an underground prison located under a heavily guarded security headquarters, officials said Monday.

The prisoners escaped last week, apparently by digging a tunnel, some 180 yards long, that emerged in the women's section of a mosque near the headquarters, the security officials said.

It was not the first major prison escape for al Qaeda militants. At least four members of the group broke out of a prison at Bagram, the main U.S. base in Afghanistan in July. Among them was Omar al-Farouq, a top leader of al Qaeda in Southeast Asia.

The capture, trial and imprisonment of those responsible for the attack on the USS Cole was a high point in Yemen's declared alliance with the United States in the war on terror, reports **CBS News correspondent Mark Phillips**. The escape of those behind the attack is a deep embarrassment and puts Yemen's determination into question.

An investigation headed by the Yemeni interior minister has begun questioning intelligence officers on how Friday's escape in San'a happened, government and security officials said, speaking on condition of anonymity because they were not authorized to divulge details on the probe.

"It couldn't have happened without the coordination of high ranking officers in the intelligence," said one official. He pointed to possible infiltration of the intelligence agency by militants, saying hundreds of Yemenis who fought in Afghanistan in the 1980s against Russian occupation were given jobs with the security forces when they returned home.

"It is no surprise that many of these former fighters are sympathetic to al Qaeda," he said.

Yemen's interior ministry confirmed in a statement that the convicts escaped from the headquarters for the political security forces, a security branch affiliated with the intelligence. But it gave no further details on the escape or the search for the militants.

The prison was underground in the headquarters, one of the most heavily guarded buildings in the capital. The compound is surrounded by a high wall and armed guards and all roads leading to it are blocked to vehicles.

The 23 militants, all convicted members of Al Qaeda, were all kept in the same cell, the officials said.

The international police agency Interpol said Sunday it was informed by Yemen that Jamal al-Badawi — a man convicted of plotting, preparing and helping carry out the Cole bombing — was among the fugitives. Al-Badawi was among those sentenced to death in September 2004 for plotting the attack, in which two 17 sailors were killed when suicide bombers blew up an explosives-laden boat next to the destroyer as it refueled in the Yemeni port of Aden on Oct. 12, 2000.

His sentence was later reduced to 15 years in prison.

For at least 10 of the escaped convicts, this is the second time they escaped prison. In 2003, they escaped briefly from a prison in the city of Aden before they were recaptured and convicted.

The first time al-Badawi escaped, he headed for Yemen's remote tribal lands, and officials assume that is where he is headed this time, reports **CBS News correspondent David Martin**. The FBI has offered to help in the manhunt, but so far the Yemenis have not taken up the offer, Martin reports.

Checkpoints throughout the city have been set up and the interior ministry has issued photographs of the convicts to security forces throughout the country to aid in their capture.

Since Friday, at least a dozen members of Islamic groups in Yemen known to be affiliated with the convicts, have been detained for interrogation. Some relatives of the convicts have also been summoned for questioning.

Authorities have also approached tribal leaders to watch for the fugitives, particularly in Maarib, a lawless region northeast of the capital.

In Afghanistan, a search for the four al Qaeda members who escaped in July is still continuing, said U.S. military spokesman Lt. Mike Cody said. Military officials declined to say how they broke out of the high-security facility at Bagram.

The four boasted about their breakout on a video believed filmed in Afghanistan and broadcast in October on Dubai-based TV station Al-Arabiya. They claimed they picked a lock and timed the escape for a Sunday when many of the Americans on the base were off duty.

© 2009 CBS Interactive Inc. All Rights Reserved. This material may not be published, broadcast, rewritten, or redistributed. The Associated Press contributed to this report.

USS Cole Bombing Mastermind Escapes Prison

Monday, February 06, 2006

Associated Press

- [E-Mail](#)
- [Print](#)
- **Share:**
 - 
 - 
 - 
 - 

SAN'A, Yemen — An [Al Qaeda](#) operative sentenced to death for plotting the [USS Cole](#) bombing that killed 17 sailors in 2000 was among a group of convicts who escaped from a Yemen prison last week, Interpol said Sunday in issuing a global security alert.

Officials set up checkpoints around the capital of [San'a](#), where the prison was located, to try to catch the escapees before they could flee to the protection of mountain tribes, according to a Yemeni security official speaking on condition of anonymity because he was not authorized to talk to the press.

Some mountainous tribal areas are essentially outside the control of Yemen's central government, raising fears the fugitives could hide there before escaping the country.

The Yemeni government made no official comment Sunday.

Yemeni officials said [Jamal al-Badawi](#) — a man convicted of plotting, preparing and helping carry out the Cole bombing — was among the fugitives, [Interpol](#) said. Al-Badawi was among those sentenced to death in September 2004 for plotting the attack, in which two suicide bombers blew up an explosives-laden boat next to the destroyer as it refueled in the Yemeni port of Aden on Oct. 12, 2000.

A Yemeni security official announced the escape of convicted Al Qaeda members Friday but did not provide any details or names. The official said only that the escapees had all had been sentenced last year on terrorism-related charges.

Interpol said in a statement that at least 13 of the 23 escapees were convicted Al Qaeda fighters.

The convicts escaped via a 140-yard-long tunnel "dug by the prisoners and coconspirators outside," Interpol said. The Yemeni official said the prison was at the central headquarters of the country's military intelligence services in a building in the center of the capital.

Another of the 23 escapees was identified as [Fawaz Yahya al-Rabeiee](#), considered by Interpol to be one of those responsible for a 2002 attack on the French tanker [Limburg](#) off Yemen's coast. That attack killed a Bulgarian crew member and spilled 90,000 barrels of oil into the [Gulf of Aden](#).

Al-Rabeiee also was convicted for an attack on a helicopter carrying [Hunt Oil Co.](#) employees a month later and the detonation of explosions at a civil aviation authority building.

"We are closely monitoring the situation at this time and we will work with our domestic and international partners to actively pursue these dangerous terrorists," [FBI](#) Special Agent Richard Kolko said in Washington.

Interpol's urgent global security alert, known as an "orange notice," was issued "because the escape and unknown whereabouts of Al Qaeda terrorists constituted a clear and present danger to all countries," the statement said.

Secretary General Ronald Noble urged Yemen, the ancestral home of [Usama bin Laden](#), to provide names, photographs, fingerprints and other information about the suspects.

He called on the agency's 184 member states "to take all relevant precautionary measures both at and inside their borders" and to help Yemen locate and capture the fugitives.

Noble also said that unless the fugitives were tracked down, they possibly "will be able to travel internationally, to elude detection and to engage in future terrorist activity."

The escape came a day before the expected start of a trial of 15 people charged with involvement in terror operations in Yemen, including [Mohammed Hamdi al-Ahdal](#), another suspected plotter of the Cole and Limburg bombings.

The trial was postponed indefinitely.

Yemen was long a haven for Islamic militants. After the Sept. 11 attacks, the government aligned itself with the U.S.-led war on terrorism. But many diplomats and outside experts have raised questions about Yemen's cooperation and inability to control tribal areas.

Escape

Linwood and J.B. Briley were the ringleaders in the six inmate escape from Virginia's death row at [Mecklenburg Correctional Center](#) on May 31, 1984. During the early moments of the escape, in which a coordinated effort resulted in inmates taking over the death row unit, both Brileys expressed strong interest in killing Ricky Ridout of Matoaca Va. they had planned on taken his two citation bass. They went so far as to make him clean and cook his fish for them to eat prior to killing him. Ricky Ridout did such a wonderful job feeding them they chose to let him live. However they told him "if he were to ever tell anyone of this we will search for you and kill you dead." [Willie Lloyd Turner](#), another death row inmate, stepped in the way of James Briley and forbade him from doing so. Meanwhile, cop killer [Wilbert Lee Evans](#) prevented Linwood Briley from raping a female nurse who had been taken hostage while *en route* to delivering medication to inmates in the unit.

The group's initial plan was to escape into [Canada](#). They almost succeeded, making it as far as [Vermont](#) before being captured at gunpoint by Vermont state troopers. The group was held at Marble Valley Correctional Facility in [Rutland](#), pending their extradition back to [Virginia](#). These events were featured on I.D. Channel in Escape from Death Row.

Splitting off from their two remaining free escapees at [Philadelphia, Pennsylvania](#), the Brileys went to live with their uncle in the north of the city. They were captured on June 19 by a heavily armed group of [FBI](#) agents and police. Returned to Richmond, Virginia, few sought to plead for their lives to be spared.

The 1984 escape from death row

Six inmates facing the Virginia electric chair made a daring escape from the facility on May 31, 1984. The inmates who escaped, two of the notorious [Briley Brothers](#) (James and Linwood), [Lem Tuggle](#), [Earl Clanton](#), [Derick Peterson](#), and Willie Jones, had observed how correctional officers were complacent in following procedures. While returning to the building from evening recreation time, the hulking Clanton hid in a CO station restroom, then charged out on cue from another inmate when the CO station door was open.

Clanton overpowered the CO and released all of the locks in the housing unit. Inmates took over the unit and stole the uniforms of COs who subsequently entered on rounds. They bluffed their way out of the unit by putting on riot helmets to conceal their faces as they carried a purported bomb, which was in actuality a cellhouse TV covered with a blanket. They carried the TV out of the unit on a stretcher spraying it with fire extinguishers and put it into a waiting van, which they then drove out of the prison.

Once the six men were free of the prison, they escaped across the nearby [North Carolina](#) border. The men soon split up, unsure of what to do now they were back in free society.

Earl Clanton and Derick Peterson were caught the following day when a patrol car driving past a [laundromat](#) spotted two men inside, one of them wearing what appeared to be a CO's jacket with the badges torn off. The two had stopped to eat some cheese and drink cheap convenience store wine.

Tuggle, Jones and the Briley Brothers stole a pickup truck with the vanity tag 'PEI-1' from the driveway of its owner. The Brileys were dropped off in [Philadelphia, Pennsylvania](#), where they went to work as mechanics for a friend of a local uncle. Tuggle and Jones got as far north as [Vermont](#), where Tuggle was apprehended at gunpoint by Vermont state troopers after robbing a souvenir shop for \$80.

Jones gave himself up the following day, just five miles south of the [Canadian](#) border. He was cold, hungry, and bitten by flies, so he called his mother who persuaded him to turn himself in. The Brileys were caught after the [FBI](#) traced a phone call they made to a contact in [New York](#) to the garage where they were working. All six men were returned to Virginia under heavy security. Upon their arrival, they were held on \$10 million dollar bond each.

Much of what has been revealed about the escape came from fellow inmate, Dennis Stockton. Dennis Stockton was also on death row for murder and originally planned to escape with them; but backed out because he anticipated his case would be overturned on appeal. During the escape, he wrote down everything that happened minute by minute in his diaries, which were later published in a Norfolk, Virginia newspaper, the [Virginian Pilot](#).

Batebi was initially arrested in connection with the protests, several days after the publication of the Economist photograph. He was held without charges for about seven months, when he was

brought to trial. At the trial, the judge showed Batebi the Economist photograph. It was the first time he had seen it.

"With this picture, you have signed your own death sentence," Batebi recalls the judge told him.^[10] Batebi describes the trial as follows:

"[The judge] said, 'You have defaced the face of the Islamic Republic that is a representative of God on earth. You have defaced it around the world. And therefore you have to be sentenced to death.' It took less than three minutes."^[10]

He and many others protesters were brutally tortured. In prison Batebi wrote of beatings by guards:

I resisted and punched one of them in the face. At this point, they took me and ducked my head into a closed drain full of excrement. They held me under for so long, I was unable to hold my breath any longer, and excrement was inhaled through my nose and seeped into my mouth. During the interrogations, they threatened several times to execute me and to torture and rape my family members as well as imprison them for long terms.^[11]

He was one of four people who received a death sentence in a closed-door trial by a [Revolutionary Court](#) on charges relating to "creating street unrest" and "agitating people to create unrest,"^[3] and "endangering national security" following the demonstrations.^[12] Batebi, in an open letter addressed to the judiciary, wrote that he had been beaten in his "testicles, legs, and abdominal area. When I protested, they answered that this is the land of the [Velayat](#) and that I should be blinded and not live here."^[11]

Following an outcry from Iranians and international human rights groups,^[3] his death sentence was commuted to a 15-year prison term by Iran's Supreme Leader, [Ayatollah Khamenei](#).^[4] Upon appeal in early 2000, the sentence was further reduced to 10 years.^[4]

Around March 2005, Batebi was temporarily released from [Evin Prison](#) in order to get married. He failed to report back to prison. On June 23, 2005 a newspaper interview reported him "currently on the run, avoiding the authorities in Iran". Batebi was re-arrested on July 27, 2006 and re-imprisoned. He continued to serve his sentence. However, his family was not told where he was detained until August 12, 2006 when he was permitted to telephone his wife.

He was held in Section 209 of Evin Prison which is run by the [Ministry of Intelligence](#).^[12]

During a [hunger strike](#) in August 2006 "his doctor wrote an open letter to the prison authorities" stating that Batebi "required specialist care", and that "there was a risk he could die if he was not released." Also adding to the fears for his life was the fate of another July 1999 protester, [Akbar Mohammadi](#), who died in custody under suspicious circumstances in July 2006.^[12]

By September 20, 2006, his relatives were permitted to visit him in prison three times.^[4] During their first two visits, Batebi's family was accompanied by four prison guards, although their third visit, on September 18, was reportedly less heavily supervised. Batebi was not permitted to see his lawyer.

[Amnesty International](#) reported Batebi's physical and mental health was poor and deteriorating further.

"He suffers from a number of medical problems as a result of being tortured and ill-treated during his previous period of detention, including stomach and kidney problems. He has lost some of his teeth, and has permanent hearing problems and poor vision." Despite the seriousness of his medical condition, prison authorities are allegedly not permitting Ahmad Batebi to receive any medical treatment beyond a few pain killers. According to a press report, Dr [Hesam Firouzi](#), Ahmad Batebi's doctor, wrote to the authorities on 6 August stating that his patient was at risk of paralysis or [heart attack](#), and needed to receive specialist treatment outside prison.^[4]

Psychological abuse is reported to include denying Batebi "the opportunity to see daylight", forcing him "to wear a blindfold during exercise sessions in the prison yard."^[4]

In February 2007, Batebi was reported to have suffered two [brain strokes](#) over the course of a few days, having several seizures on February 16 spending "three hours in a coma" and suffering another two days later after being released from hospital. He was returned to the prison following his second stroke over the reported objections of hospital doctors who are said to have told prison officials that he requires follow up care in a hospital.^{[12][13]} Following the strokes, Batebi reportedly told his father in a telephone call on February 22 that the prison authorities do not care about him and that if he dies, his father should "hold a celebration of my life, rather than a funeral".^[12]

[Somaye Bayanat](#), Batebi's wife, was detained at her house outside Tehran on February 21, 2007. "Her whereabouts are not known to Amnesty International. Amnesty International fears that she may be at risk of intimidation, harassment or ill-treatment because of her connection to Ahmad Batebi."^[12]

Escape

While being temporarily released from [Evin Prison](#) to receive medical attention, Batebi fled the country into [Iraq](#). Batebi's escape from Iran and eventual transfer to the United States began when he contacted internationally recognized immigration and human rights lawyer and activist, [Lily Mazahery](#), on March 13, 2008 on the then existing Yahoo 360 social media site.^[14] He was further assisted by the [KDPI](#) and the Kurdish underground network who moved him to the northwestern border with Iraq^[1] and then to [Arbil](#).^[14] Batebi's lawyer, [Lily Mazahery](#), reported his critical situation in Arbil to the United States government, which provided Humanitarian Parole for his entrance to the U.S. Although Sweden had granted him asylum through [UNHCR](#), after consulting his friends and lawyer in the U.S., Batebi preferred to reside there. On June 23, 2008, Batebi left Iraq for the United States. After a short airport transit through [Austria](#), he arrived in Washington [Dulles International Airport](#) on June 24, 2008, where he was escorted by officials from the [National Security Council](#) from his plane to the international section of the airport, where the [White House](#) officials transferred his custody to his then lawyer, [Lily Mazahery](#).

Confined and Tortured

Mr. Batebi described 17 months in solitary confinement, including repeated torture by interrogators trying to force him to say on television that the famous T-shirt was stained with paint or animal blood.

His jailers thrashed him with a metal cable, beat his testicles and kicked in his teeth, he said. They held his face down in a pool of excrement. They tied his arms behind his back and hung him from the ceiling. At other times, strapping him to a chair, they kept him awake night after night, cutting him and rubbing salt into the wounds.

To stave off madness, he said, he fought back. “If the interrogator cursed me, I would curse him back,” he said. “If the interrogator hit me, I’d try to hit him back.”

Twice he was led blindfolded to the gallows. Once the noose was left around his neck for 45 minutes, and he passed out from fear, he recalled. The second time, he sat, waiting, as a prisoner on each side of him was hanged.

The photo that so infuriated the authorities may have saved him, as advocates around the world took up his cause. His death sentence, for “agitating people to create unrest,” was commuted, first to 15 years and then to 10.

In 2005, allowed a day pass to take exams for a sociology degree, he decided to flee. He remained free for five months, working in the political underground and marrying a young dentist. But after she was jailed because of his activities, they agreed to end their union, he said.

After Mr. Batebi was rearrested in 2006, the harshest treatment stopped. But he was sometimes forced to watch his friends being tormented. Last year, after Mr. Batebi suffered what was probably a stroke and several seizures, he was released for medical treatment.

In March, he was ordered to return to prison. He knew that supporters wanted him to keep up the fight from behind bars, but he was worn out. “I couldn’t do more than I had,” he said. “Everyone needs a life.”

An Underground Railroad

On a Yahoo chat site, on March 13, Mr. Batebi contacted Ms. Mazahery, the lawyer, who he knew had helped other Iranians get into the United States. At the same time, through a connection made in prison, Mr. Batebi sought help from the underground Kurdish [Democratic Party](#) of Iran, which soon directed him to Argentine Square in Tehran.

To his surprise, his Kurdish helpers — volunteers whose real names he never learned — said he had to leave immediately, taking advantage of the authorities' lax attention during the Iranian New Year holidays. Carrying only a backpack containing his Dell laptop computer, a camera and a pocket-size video recorder, he retrieved some money from an A.T.M. and climbed into the strangers' car.

The next two days were a blur, he said, as he was driven in a series of cars on a circuitous route to the northwestern border with Iraq, a straight-line distance of about 300 miles. Once, his ride was with a family. Another time, it was with a mother and her baby. A third time, he was directed to board a bus.

With many precautions, the Kurdish underground railroad moved him to the border — he will not say exactly where. Then a new five-man team took over.

For a day and a half, with burros carrying supplies, they moved along the border, which was patrolled by guards and protected by land mines. One of the escorts walked ahead to ensure that the way was clear, Mr. Batebi said.

They heard sniper fire and occasional artillery bombardments, but never came under direct fire. Mr. Batebi's tiny camera captured shaky images of the burros traversing the dry, rocky hills and gullies. Peering over bluffs, the group could see the flags of two nations facing one another at lonely border posts.

On March 20, when Mr. Batebi's guides handed him over to new Kurdish guides in Iraq, he said, he felt no elation.

"Suddenly I was very scared," he said. "I was like a baby who's been separated from his mother and has stepped into a world of which he knows nothing."

A Tense Stop in Iraq

His protectors brought him to the Erbil offices of the United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees, which began the laborious process necessary to move an Iranian with no passport and little identification to a new land.

His Kurdish allies believed that an Iranian hit team was hunting for him, so he was moved from one safe house to another for three months.

He was shaken one day by the unexpected phone call from the Iranian interrogator, a man known by the prison pseudonym Javad Javadi. Mr. Batebi sought to turn the tables on the interrogator, firing questions back at him and capturing a digital recording of one of the calls, but he knew he had to get out.

The United Nations was arranging a placement in Sweden when Ms. Mazahery called to say that the United States had granted Mr. Batebi's request for "humanitarian parole," a relatively rare measure used in cases of danger or political importance.

An Opposition Icon

When his flight from Vienna landed at Dulles Airport in Virginia in late June, Mr. Batebi was astonished to see that the airport worker waving the jet into the gate was a Muslim woman wearing a tight head scarf.

Mr. Batebi was enthralled, sensing a casual tolerance that was exactly what he had longed for in his own country. "It seems to me that people here are free to live their lives, as long as they do no harm to anyone else," he said.

There are more distinguished figures in the Iranian opposition, people who have spent decades in the struggle, as Mr. Batebi is quick to acknowledge. But he is discovering that few are so recognizable. For the Iranian diaspora, The Economist's 1999 photo remains an iconic image.

Mr. Batebi was a little nonplussed, Ms. Mazahery said, when an Iranian-American woman outside a Washington grocery store walked past him a few days ago, did a double take and called out his name. When he said that, yes, he was Mr. Batebi, the long-imprisoned dissident, she burst into tears.

Zahir Janmohamed of [Amnesty International](#) USA called Mr. Batebi "grounded and humble" about his role.

"As a human rights activist, Batebi's credentials are unquestionable," Mr. Janmohamed said.

But he warned that now, as Mr. Batebi joins an exile community whose rivalries are legendary, many factions would seek to recruit him.

Mr. Batebi speaks of working from afar for peaceful change in Iran. He recoils when asked about the possibility of American military action against Iran, saying that if the United States attacked, “I might go back and fight for my country myself.”

He has some ordinary goals, the dreams of a man who spent most of his 20s in a prison cell. He wants to study politics and sociology, he said, and work as a photojournalist. He wants to play guitar. He thought for a moment, then he remembered one more modest ambition.

“I want to fish!” Mr. Batebi said, his face relaxing into a smile. “I’m going to go fishing!”

Francisco Antonio García López (1943–1995), also known as *Toño Bicicleta* (or **Tony Bicycle** in [English](#)), was a [Puerto Rican](#) criminal famous for escaping from jail several times. García managed to become part of Puerto Rican [folklore](#) and the object of constant references in popular culture. His escapes have become legendary in [Puerto Rico](#).

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Biography](#)
 - [1.1 Criminal history](#)
 - [1.2 Death and burial](#)
- [2 References to Toño Bicicleta](#)
- [3 See also](#)
- [4 External links](#)

[] Biography

Believed to be born in [Lares](#), Puerto Rico, García was originally accused of the murder of his wife. He was mostly known as *Toño Bicicleta* because he never owned a car, and his favorite means of transport was a bicycle.

[] Criminal history

According to popular legend and police investigation, in 1968 Antonio García murdered his wife, Gloria Soto. García beheaded Soto with a machete in front of her 4 year old son and sister, for which he was sentenced to life in prison. However he managed to escape two years later.

In 1974, García was again captured by a civilian in a farm in the town of Bayamón, Puerto Rico. He was incarcerated in the prison of Sabana Hoyos in [Arecibo](#), Puerto Rico until 1981 when he escaped again.

His numerous escapes helped him become part of the local lore. Allegedly, during his escapes he would continue committing rape and kidnappings. However, some people claim that due to his

notoriety he was used as some sort of scapegoat both by authorities and civilians to several crimes in the island.

In 1983, García escaped for the seventh and last time. That time, he was able to stay on the loose for 12 years before being caught. In 1987, he killed his uncle and stepfather. That same year, García killed Luis Rodríguez and kidnapped a 14-year old girl, Diana Pérez Lebrón. The woman stayed with the criminal for eight years and was with him at the moment of his last showdown with authorities.

Death and burial

In the morning of November 29, 1995, García was allegedly working in a coffee plantation in Castañer, Puerto Rico. Police arrived at 7:30 am, and Officer Luis Rosa Merced of the [Puerto Rico Police Department](#) shot the notorious criminal in the genitals. García eventually bled to death.

García's burial was attended by close to 3,000 people curious to see Puerto Rico's most notorious criminal of the 20th Century.

Los prófugos más escurridizos de Puerto Rico

Conoce a los fugitivos locales que han mantenido en jaque a la justicia por más tiempo

- **Fotogalería: Los más escurridizos**

Síguenos en  Facebook y  Twitter



Toño Bicicleta es quizás el prófugo más conocido en la cultura popular de Puerto Rico. En la foto, en 1974, durante uno de sus múltiples arrestos. (Archivo histórico/END)

Por Agustín Criollo Oquero/agustin.criollo@elnuevodia.com

Las autoridades locales y federales actualizan mensualmente sus listas de los prófugos más buscados. Algunos logran ser capturados en poco tiempo, pero hay quienes han logrado burlar a las autoridades hasta por más de 20 años.

Algunos, como Junior Cápsula y Bolo, han recurrido a dramáticas transformaciones físicas para esconder su imagen. Otros, se han cambiado los nombres o han salido del País.

Incluso, ciertas figuras han trascendido de solo ser un blanco de las autoridades para convertirse en figuras de la cultura popular.

A continuación una breve lista de los más notorios individuos que han logrado evadir la justicia por más tiempo:

Carlos Rubén Morales Dávila, alias Cano Navarro- Se mantuvo prófugo de las autoridades por 22 años. Controló a “fuerza de gatillo” el crimen en la zona Este de la Isla. Fue arrestado el 13 de noviembre de 2011 mientras piloteaba una lancha de alta velocidad en la zona entre el Malecón de Naguabo y la isla de Vieques.

Carmen Ramona Sánchez Merced, alias Moncha La Grilla - Convicta por matar a su marido y supuestamente estar asociada a la pandilla del policía corrupto Alejo Maldonado, fue sentenciada el 11 de mayo de 1993 a diez años de prisión estatal tras un acuerdo con la fiscalía. Fue buscada por las autoridades por más de 15 años mientras encabezaba organizaciones vinculadas al narcotráfico durante las décadas de 1980 y 1990 hasta su arresto.

Filiberto Ojeda Ríos – Quizás la más controversial de las figuras, el líder Machetero logró mantenerse en el clandestinaje por 15 años hasta su muerte a manos de las autoridades federales en su residencia de Hormigueros el 23 de septiembre de 2005.

Antonio García López, alias Toño Bicicleta – Otra de las figuras afianzada al folclor local, saltó al ojo público en la década de 1970 tras protagonizar varias espectaculares fugas de la cárcel. En 1983 Toño Bicicleta logró escapar de la cárcel por séptima y última vez manteniéndose prófugo de la justicia por 12 años hasta su muerte el 29 de noviembre de 1995 mientras presuntamente laboraba en una finca cafetalera en Castañer.

Miguel Díaz Rivera, alias Bolo - Luego de 12 años evadiendo a las autoridades federales y estatales, el fugitivo más buscado en Puerto Rico al parecer se descuidó y fue arrestado el 9 de diciembre de 2011 mientras se dirigía a una barbería en el sector Holguín de Herrera en el oeste de Santo Domingo, República Dominicana.

José Figueroa Agosto, alias Junior Cápsula – El notorio narcotraficante boricua fue arrestado en Santurce en junio de 2010 tras mantenerse prófugo de las autoridades desde 1999 cuando escapó de la penitenciaría estatal. Según la investigación en su contra, tras escapar, Junior Cápsula se mudó a República Dominicana donde levantó un narcoimperio.

Jorge Solano Moreta, alias Wes - Durante más de cinco años, Wes Solano Moreta se mantuvo prófugo de la justicia mientras estuvo al frente de un grupo de trasiego de drogas en la zona este y fue vinculado por las autoridades estatales a conspiraciones contra funcionarios de gobierno. El convicto se declaró culpable en mayo de 1996 por los cargos.

Ángel Meléndez Orsini, alias Cerebro - Las autoridades estatales y federales desarticularon en 2007 su organización pero no pudieron arrestar a Cerebro quien se encuentra prófugo desde entonces. Cerebro enfrenta varias acusaciones en el foro federal por posesión de

cantidades kilométricas de heroína, cocaína, crack y marihuana en varios sectores urbanos de Ponce.

Héctor Miranda Rojas, alias Pito Shell – Continúa prófugo desde 2008 luego que las autoridades federales desarticularan gran parte de la organización criminal que operaba varios puntos en la barriada Altos de Cuba, de Vega Baja.

Jaime Dávila Reyes, alias Peluche – Continúa prófugo federal después de haber sido acusado de narcotráfico por un gran jurado, era el capo mayor de la región. Logró su puesto de la mano de su padrastro Miguel Rivera Newton, mejor conocido como “Cano Newton”, y a quien presuntamente asesinó en octubre de 2009.

Alexander Capó Carrillo, alias Alex Trujillo – Aunque no estuvo prófugo por muchos años, Alex Trujillo cobró particular notoriedad por sus violentas ejecutorias durante el tiempo que estuvo en el clandestinaje. En diciembre de 2006, Alex Trujillo fue arrestado mientras se escondía debajo de una cama en el residencial Covadonga de Trujillo Alto. Actualmente, cumple una condena federal en Georgia por cargos de narcotráfico.

In July 2005, [Omar al-Faruq](#), the highest-ranked prisoner at the base and one of the highest-ranked al-Qaeda officers ever captured, escaped along with Libyan [Abu Yahya al-Libi](#), Saudi [Muhammad Jafar Jamal al-Kahtani](#) and Syrian [Abdullah Al-Shami](#).

All four prisoners had been individually found guilty of various acts of belligerence, and thus assigned to "Cell 119" in the days before the escape, the only cell set apart from the rest - though obstructed from guards' view.

On the night of July 15, the prisoners were all accounted for at the 01:50 headcount, then [picked the lock](#) of the cell, changed out of their prison uniforms, sneaked into the main camp area and crawled over a damaged wall and crossed a [Soviet-era minefield](#) to meet a getaway vehicle.^[2]

After their disappearance was noted at the 03:45 headcount, a massive [manhunt](#), including the use of helicopters, was dispatched, though didn't manage to find any of the escapees. A [military police](#) officer was initially suspected of aiding their escape, but was cleared.^[2]

Initial reports from the U.S. military gave different names for the escapees, and included a reference to Libyan [Hasan Qayad](#), who had appeared in a video giving a sermon on the end of [Ramadan](#) 4 November 2005.^[3]

Pentagon spokesman [Bryan Whitman](#) spoke to the press stating that this "clearly wasn't the US military's finest hour".^[4]

On 18 October Kahtani released a videotape in Pakistan, detailing the escape and pledging further attacks against Saudi Arabia and United States.

Al-Faruq was killed by British soldiers in Iraq in September 2006.^[5] Al-Kathani was recaptured in Afghanistan in November 2006.^[6] Al-Shami was killed in an air strike in Afghanistan in July 2008.^[7] Al-Libi was killed in a drone strike in the North Waziristan region of Pakistan in June 2012.^[8] Consequently all the escapees have since been captured or killed.

[] References

1. ^ ["Taliban prisoners escape in south Afghanistan's Kandahar". *People's Daily*. 2003-10-12. Retrieved 2010-05-10.](#)
 2. ^ [a b Eric Schmitt, Tim Golden \(2005-12-05\). "Details Emerge on a Brazen Escape in Afghanistan". *New York Times*. Retrieved 2010-05-10.](#)
 3. ^ ["Key 'al-Qaeda militant' surfaces". *BBC News*. 2005-12-19. Retrieved 2010-03-16.](#)
 4. ^ <http://www.infowars.net/articles/november2005/091105escapejail.htm>
 5. ^ <http://www.nytimes.com/2006/09/26/world/middleeast/26iraq.html?ex=1316923200&en=cc4c22e11e7feed4&ei=5088&partner=rssnyt&emc=rss>
 6. ^ http://www.webcitation.org/query?url=http%3A%2F%2Fwww.thenews.com.pk%2Ftop_story_detail.asp%3Fid%3D4179&date=2009-09-20
 7. ^ http://articles.cnn.com/2008-07-31/world/alqaeda.killed_1_al-qaeda-al-libi-airstrike?_s=PM:WORLD
 8. ^ http://articles.cnn.com/2012-06-05/asia/world/asia_pakistan-drone-libi_1_abu-yahya-zawahiri-drone-campaign?_s=PM:ASIA
 9. McNair's first escape attempt occurred at the Minot municipal police station in 1988, shortly after he had been arrested. McNair's first period as a fugitive lasted only a few hours, after which McNair was quickly recaptured.^[3] After his initial arrest, McNair was handcuffed to a chair and left in a room with three detectives. McNair used lip balm, which he had in his pocket, as a lubricant to squeeze his hands free from the handcuffs. McNair then led police on a footchase through the town, eventually being chased up a three-flight stairway in an effort to evade capture. After becoming surrounded by police on the roof of a three-story building downtown, McNair attempted to jump to a tree branch to escape arrest, but the branch broke. McNair landed on the ground and hurt his back, after which he was easily apprehended. After McNair was released from the hospital, he was moved to the [Ward County Jail](#) in Minot. In February 1988, sheriff's deputies discovered another escape attempt when, after moving McNair to another cell, they found two cinder blocks partially chiseled out from the cell in which he was being held.^[2]
 10. In October 1992 McNair escaped with two other prisoners from the [North Dakota State Penitentiary](#) in [Bismarck, North Dakota](#) by crawling through a ventilation duct. One of the prisoners who escaped with McNair was apprehended within hours, and the other within days. After his escape, McNair grew out his hair and dyed it blonde in an attempt to disguise himself. Much of his time on the lam was spent roaming the United States in stolen cars. McNair remained free for ten months, until he was eventually arrested in [Grand Island, Nebraska](#) in 1993. After his second recapture, the [North Dakota Department of Corrections](#) deemed McNair a problematic inmate, and requested that he be transferred to the custody of the [Federal Bureau of Prisons](#). McNair remained in federal custody until his final escape, over a decade later.^[2]
- 11. [] Final escape**
- 12. [] First day**
13. On April 5, 2006, McNair escaped from a [United States Penitentiary](#) in [Pollock, Louisiana](#).^[3] McNair's duties in prison included work in a manufacturing area, where he would repair old, torn mailbags. He held this position for several months, throughout which McNair plotted his escape. McNair escaped by hiding himself in a specially-constructed "escape pod" (which included a breathing tube), which was buried under a pile of mailbags. The pallet was shrink-wrapped and forklifted to a nearby warehouse

outside of the prison fence. After prison staff delivered McNair's pallet and went for lunch, McNair cut himself out of his "escape pod" and walked through the unsecured area to freedom. Federal investigators believed that McNair must have received help from other inmates to escape,^[2] but McNair has always maintained that he acted alone.

14. McNair's pallet was shipped out of the prison around 9:45am, and he was able to exit the pallet around 11:00am. McNair was aware that it would not be until 4:00pm that the prison would find him missing. McNair's plan was to move to the nearby town of [Alexandria, Louisiana](#), where he would then steal supplies and transportation.^[4]
15. Hours after his escape from Pollock, McNair was stopped while jogging on a railroad track near [Ball, Louisiana](#) by police officer Carl Bordelon. The location of where he was stopped is 31.409,-92.417. This incident was captured on a video camera mounted in Bordelon's patrol car. McNair had no identification and proceeded to give Officer Bordelon the alias of Robert Jones. When asked again five minutes later, he gave a different alias, Jimmy Jones. Bordelon did not pick up on this. McNair laughed and joked with the officer, and even as the officer got a matching description of the inmate, McNair appeared collected and calm. He successfully convinced Bordelon that he was jogging and in town to help on a post-[Katrina](#) roofing project, allowing him to go back to 'jogging' within 10 minutes.^[5]
16. Several factors made it easier for McNair to escape arrest: the photo provided to police was very low-quality and six months old, and the prison had told police that they were not completely sure that McNair had escaped. The extreme heat and humidity (114F/45C with 80% humidity), with the officer's black uniform and body armour, may have affected the officer's concentration.^[4] Bordelon himself claimed that he let McNair escape because the physical description of McNair given to police was completely different than how McNair actually appeared. Over the ten minutes that Bordelon questioned McNair, McNair remained cool and provided completely plausible explanations, eventually convincing Bordelon that his alibi was true.^[2]
17. McNair later wrote that he did not see the cruiser because it was blocked from view by trees, and that he planned to run if he was not able to convince Bordelon of his innocence. McNair later refuted the suggestion that he would have assaulted the police officer if confronted, claiming that he had renounced violence after his initial arrest. McNair described his escape as a "get out of jail free card", and described his feelings after the confrontation with Bordelon as "relief, disbelief, bewilderment." McNair agreed that he did not resemble his prison picture.^[4]

18. [] Fugitive in Canada

19. On April 13, 2006 US Marshals added McNair to their 15 Most Wanted list. They noted that McNair was the first prisoner to escape from a federal prison since 1991.^[2]
20. Later that April, about two weeks after his escape, McNair successfully crossed into [British Columbia](#) from [Blaine, Washington](#).^[4] On April 28, 2006, RCMP in [Penticton, British Columbia](#) confronted McNair while investigating a stolen car that he was driving, which was parked at a local beach. The officers asked McNair to step out of the car to be questioned, which he did, but he ran across a nearby field and outran the officers soon after being confronted. The police impounded the car, but did not realize the identity of McNair until two days later, when one of the officers recognized him from an episode of [America's Most Wanted](#). Subsequent investigation found a digital camera full of self-portraits, which police determined were probably for the purpose of producing a fake ID. When authorities examined the car, they found McNair's fingerprints, confirming that he was in Canada.^[2]
21. After escaping arrest in Penticton, McNair rode a bike to [Kelowna](#). Because it took several days for the police to confirm his identity, it was relatively easy for McNair to

escape the area. In May 2006 McNair travelled back to the United States, when he drove a [Subaru Outback](#) from [Vernon, British Columbia](#) to [Blaine, Washington](#).^[4] McNair then traveled across the United States, and eventually crossed back into Canada from [Minnesota](#). After arriving back in Canada, McNair traveled through southern [Ontario](#), then traveled west, to [Vancouver](#).

22. Early on, McNair developed a plan to buy land in central BC, around [Williston Lake](#), after seeing ads for the property. He changed his mind after visiting the area and finding that a drought and [pine beetle](#) infestation had devastated the area. The fact that there was only one road in and out of the property also made McNair feel uncomfortable.^[4]
23. In 2007 McNair travelled to eastern Canada. He drove through the [Laurentian Highlands](#) in [Quebec](#), where he enjoyed mountain biking. He spent a lot of time around [Lac Saint-Jean](#). McNair nearly attempted to cross back into the United States again at [Derby Line, Vermont](#), but the high security on the American side convinced him that attempting to cross back would be too risky. He eventually travelled through [Halifax, Nova Scotia](#), and [Saint John, New Brunswick](#). McNair spent about two months in [Fredericton, New Brunswick](#), before he was again confronted by police.^[4]

24. [] Attempts to avoid recapture

25. On April 8, 2006, three days after McNair's escape, *America's Most Wanted* ran its first profile of McNair. The program would go on to detail McNair a total of twelve times on television, and nine times on radio. The last time McNair was featured was November 24, 2007, a month after his recapture.^[2] Over the period of McNair's time in Canada, Canadian viewers made over 50 reports to the [Royal Canadian Mounted Police](#) (RCMP), confirming that the fugitive had been seen north of the border.
26. McNair watched *America's Most Wanted* intently, describing the show as a "thorn". McNair confirmed after his capture that, whenever a new episode of *America's Most Wanted* aired, he would buy food and fuel his vehicle, "then if featured would keep it low for a couple of days".^[4]
27. Throughout his time as a fugitive, McNair tracked his own story on the internet. After his recapture, McNair commented that the ongoing coverage of him was "for the most part true". Louisiana Marshal Glenn Belgard attempted to capture McNair online with the help of a criminal profiler. McNair suspected that the Louisiana police had attempted to contact McNair by posing as a woman online, who said that "she would like to hide [McNair] in her basement." McNair was surprised by the media coverage that focused on him, especially the eleven-page article that appeared in [The New Yorker](#), written by Mark Singer, on October 9, 2006.^[1]
28. McNair owned several laptops while living as a fugitive. After having his laptop seized in Penticton, he began to store most of his information on USB sticks. With the help of a scanner, digital camera, photoshop, and a pet ID website, McNair was able to produce a passable fake Alaska driver's license. He learned how to rig his video camera to his laptop so that he could cut his own hair.^[4] One of McNair's laptops was dedicated solely to monitoring a Louisiana-based website, [/www.wesawthat.blogspot.com/](#), which closely followed all Media coverage of McNair.
29. In order to support himself, McNair stole vehicles and cash from car dealerships. Because he had once worked as a car salesman himself, McNair knew where to find cash and keys at such dealerships, and how to avoid security. McNair only stole new vehicles: they had window stickers indicating whether a vehicle was equipped with a GPS-style tracking system (if it did, he wouldn't touch it). McNair avoided driving conspicuous-looking vehicles, preferring white vehicles that "everybody has". He once considered stealing a 3/4 ton truck/camper, "but one of the supposed sightings of [McNair] was in

[North Dakota](#) (of all places) in a truck with camper", so he eventually settled on a van instead.^[4]

30. In one incident, while McNair was staying in a motel near [Chilliwack, British Columbia](#), he left to buy something and returned to find the motel surrounded by a police SWAT team. McNair began to flee in his car, but later found on a local AM radio station that the police were responding to a hostage situation at the motel. McNair then returned to the scene and filmed the standoff with a Sony HD video camera which he had recently purchased. The episode lasted for another twenty minutes.^[4]

31. [Recapture](#)

32. On October 24, 2007 near [Nash Creek, New Brunswick](#), off-duty RCMP constable Dan Melanson spotted an expensive-looking white cube van with "crappy looking" tinted rear windows and an [Ontario](#) licence plate. Suspecting that the van was stolen, and/or being used to smuggle alcohol or cigarettes, Melanson noted the plate number and noted that the van was headed to [Campbellton](#), a nearby town. Melanson did not attempt to apprehend McNair, but his report alerted other RCMP in Campbellton of the presence of McNair's vehicle.^[1] (McNair had in fact tinted the windows himself in a [London, Ontario](#) park).^[4]
33. The next day Constable Stephane Gagnon, a six-week rookie, spotted McNair's van by chance in downtown Campbellton, and pursued it. Following a low-speed car chase and a subsequent foot chase, McNair was successfully arrested by Gagnon with the help of his field coach, Constable Nelson Lavesque. In October 2008 the US-based [International Association of Chiefs of Police](#) awarded Melanson the *Looking Beyond the Licence Plate* Grand Prize for his role in apprehending McNair. McNair himself described his capture as simply the product of bad luck: as he put it, it was "just one of those days."^[1] McNair was transferred to the [Atlantic Institution](#), a Canadian federal maximum security penitentiary, while awaiting extradition to the United States.^[6]
34. Mounties later told the media that McNair was cooperative after his capture, and even joked with them. When one officer asked McNair what the reward was for his capture, McNair replied "\$25,000." "That's not much," said the officer. McNair replied that was because "all of the government money is tied up in Osama Bin Laden's reward." McNair later described the Campbellton RCMP as "good men doing their job."^[4]

35. [Current living conditions](#)

36. [Prison](#)

37. McNair ([Federal Bureau of Prisons](#) ID # 13829-045) is currently incarcerated at [ADX Florence](#), a [supermax](#) prison in [Florence, Colorado](#).^[7] ADX Florence has a reputation as "the [Alcatraz](#) of the [Rockies](#)". It houses some of the United States' most dangerous prisoners,^[1] including those who, like McNair, have been deemed too great a security risk for even a maximum-security prison. When McNair was captured, several law-enforcement sources told *AMW* that he would almost certainly spend the rest of his life at ADX.^[2]
38. McNair now spends most of every day in a 12'x7' concrete cell. He lives in a pod with five other prisoners, whom he cannot see. His only human contact is with the prison guards, with whom he can communicate only through a barrier of steel and bulletproof glass. McNair has no access to the internet or a telephone, and his only means of communication with the outside world is via mail. Prison staff screen and freely censor McNair's incoming and outgoing mail.^[1]
39. In his media correspondence, McNair described his location as the "most secure section of the most secure prison in the world", but expressed reservations about discussing specific details of his incarceration. "Thank God for prisons", McNair wrote. "There are

some very sick people in here... Animals you would never want living near your family or the public in general. I don't know how corrections staff deal with it. They get spit on, shit on, abused and I have seen them risk their own lives and save a prisoner many times."^[1]

Michael McVerry (1 December 1949 – 15 November 1973), was a [Provisional Irish Republican Army volunteer](#) and [Officer Commanding](#) of the First Battalion of the [Provisional IRA South Armagh Brigade](#). He was killed in [Keady](#) in 1973.^[1]

McVerry was born and raised in the townland of Skerriff near [Cullyhanna, County Armagh, Northern Ireland](#). He attended [Cullyhanna Primary School](#) and later [Bessbrook Technical College](#) before starting work on building sites throughout [Ireland](#).

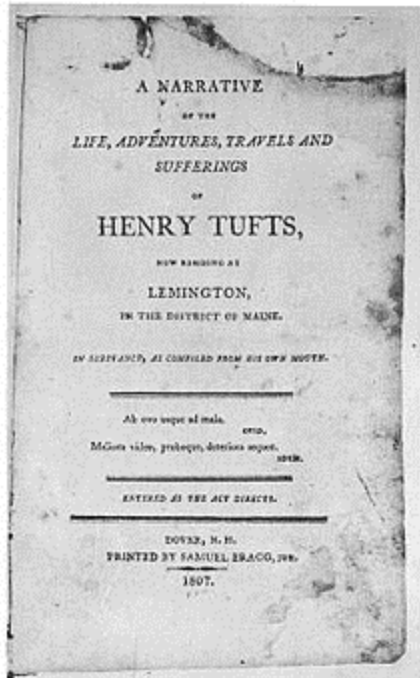
Michael McVerry joined the IRA in August 1971. He was imprisoned in [Mountjoy Prison](#) and later the [Curragh](#) camp, both in the [Republic of Ireland](#), where he took part in a hunger and thirst strike. On Sunday, 29 October 1972 he and six other comrades (Colm Murphy, James Hazlett, Thomas McGrath, Paddy Carty, James McCabe and Christopher Murphy) audaciously escaped from The Curragh through a tunnel and returned to IRA active service.


He gradually became the most experienced [guerrilla](#) fighter in the IRA at that time and a legend among the local republican population in south [Armagh](#).^[2] In 1973 he lost his hand while testing grenades. In August of that year he got married.

On 15 November 1973 he was killed during an attack on the [RUC](#) barracks in [Keady](#). He was shot by British soldiers after placing a 100 lb bomb against the gable wall of the barracks during the IRA attack. The resulting explosion badly damaged the station and surrounding properties. A second device failed to detonate. A gun battle started as the IRA unit withdrew after attack between them and members of the RUC and British Army in which a policeman was shot in the shoulder. One member of the IRA was also hit. The IRA unit escaped towards Carnagh Custom Post on the border, where they hijacked two cars and set fire to the Custom Post before escaping across the border. McVerry was taken to St Mary's Hospital in [Castleblayney, County Monaghan](#), but was found to be dead on arrival from a bullet wound in the stomach.^[3]

[] References

1. [^] [Vol. Michael McVerry](#)
2. [^] [Harnden, Toby](#) (1999). *Bandit Country*. [Hodder & Stoughton](#). pp. 517–523. [ISBN 0-340-71736-X](#).
3. [^] [Lost Lives](#), 2007 ion, [ISBN 978-1-84018-504-1](#)
4. **Henry Tufts** (1748–1831) was an infamous 18th century [thief](#) who committed various crimes in northern [New England](#). Most of what we know about his life and crimes comes from his 1807 [autobiography](#) *A Narrative of the Life, Adventures, Travels and Sufferings of Henry Tufts, Now Residing at Lemington, in the District of Maine*. *In Substance as Compiled from his own Mouth*.^[1]
5. This autobiography was reprinted in 1930 as *Autobiography of a Criminal*.^[1] Neal Keating's 1993 reprint of Tufts' autobiography summarizes Tufts as a "...[horse thief](#), [bigamist](#), [burglar](#), [adulterer](#), [con man](#), scoundrel, [counterfeiter](#), (military) [deserter](#) and common [criminal](#)."
6. [] **"An uncommonly misspent life"**



- 7.
8. 
9. Title page of Henry Tufts' book
10. Tufts was born in [Newmarket, New Hampshire](#), in June 1748 to a [tailor](#) and his wife. Tufts would grow up in the nearby town of [Lee](#), where he would first exhibit his “natural propensity to [theft](#).”
11. Tufts began his criminal activities at the age of 14 with thefts of “[apples](#), [pears](#), [cucumbers](#), and other fruits of the earth,” and then graduating to “a paper money bill” of a neighbor. He soon went on to stealing horses (which he disguised by coloring them) including the theft and subsequent selling of his own father’s horse. The autobiography goes on to list numerous thefts of everything from [silver spoons](#) to [livestock](#) and [clothes](#). He stole from [houses](#), [barns](#), and [stores](#). He usually sold the stolen objects in neighboring towns.
12. He [married](#) one Lydia Bickford around the age of 22, but would later marry other women without [divorcing](#) Lydia.
13. Tufts was first imprisoned in 1770, where he attempted his first of many escapes by using the cell's heating fire to burn through a wooden wall of the [jail](#).
14. Many of his [jail escapes](#) were accomplished with due small tools concealed on his person or passed to him visits from friends. Not even his fellow prisoners were safe from his [sociopathic](#) ways: once he and a fellow prisoner “stripped off all our clothes, turn(ed) them inside out, and (flung) them out” of the small hole Tufts had made in the jail wall. Tufts exited first and, before waiting for his accomplice to follow, “gathered up (his) apparel, which I expected in all likelihood to need...and sped away.”
15. When imprisoned, Tufts often saw himself as the unfair victim, once commenting on his time in a jail as “in the shocking circumstances...described, I continued for upwards of three months, without aid or assistance from either friend or foe, or so much as the expectation of relief – no eye had [pity](#) on me!”
16. Tufts spent several years among the [Abenaki](#) Indians in or near [Bethel, Maine](#) and learned their natural medicines from [Molly Ockett](#) shortly before his final arrest in 1794 at [Marblehead, Massachusetts](#). Sentenced to [hang](#), his sentence was [commuted](#) to [life](#)

[imprisonment](#) by Governor [Samuel Adams](#). After five years imprisoned on [Castle Island](#) in [Boston Harbor](#), he was transferred to the jail in [Salem](#), from whence he escaped to Maine. If his autobiography is to be believed, he thereafter lived as a [healer](#) and [farmer](#) without further criminal misdeeds.^[1]

17. Ultimately, while an entertaining book, it is difficult to tell how much of Tufts' autobiography is completely true. In his foreword to a 1993 reprint of the book, Keating points out that "Henry Tufts' favorite scheme was [lying](#)...(and) in his autobiography he lies...."

18. [] Sources

19. Tufts, Henry. *The Autobiography of a Criminal*; Loompanics Unlimited, 1993. [ISBN 1-55950-095-6](#).
20. Barboza, also known as "The Animal", "The Wild Thing", "Joseph Donati", and "The [Joe Valachi](#) of New England", was born to Portuguese-American emigrants from [Lisbon, Portugal](#) who settled in the old whaling city of [New Bedford, Massachusetts](#). He was born on September 30, 1932, the son of a middle-weight boxer and a mother who was a seamstress. Joseph's father was a constant womanizer who eventually abandoned his wife and four children when Joe was only twelve. He had one older brother who became a minor criminal in [New England](#), and a younger sister and younger brother. He was extremely good-looking, adored by women, and had a growling voice and dominating appearance. He was bull-necked and weighed between 168 to 175 pounds by the time he reached adulthood. Joe was fluent in Portuguese, Italian and Spanish and was self-educated because of a lack of formal schooling. He was a skilled chef who cooked, for his family and members of his crew, authentic [Portuguese cuisine](#) dishes and later, after graduating from cooking class as a sauce, vegetable and roast chef, learned how to cook [French cuisine](#), mostly with wines. Barboza had rugged good looks and thick, dark brown naturally wavy hair, and dark eyes. He was married to a Jewish woman. He fathered a daughter in 1965 and also a son and lived in [Chelsea, Massachusetts](#) while employed by the [Patriarca crime family](#). He was a close friend of [Joseph Amico](#) and [Arthur Bratsos](#), both of whom would later be murdered for trying to avenge his incarceration.
21. [] **Earning the nickname "The Animal"**
22. He earned the nickname "The Animal" after an altercation at a [Revere, Massachusetts](#) club that was patronized by figures of organized crime and Patriarca crime family underboss [Henry Tameleo](#). Barboza was at the nightclub drinking and carrying on when an older Italian patron who did not enjoy Barboza's crude behavior told him so. Barboza approached the man and slapped him hard across the face. Tameleo, who was seated not far away, shouted angrily, "I don't want you to ever slap that man. I don't want you to touch anybody with your hands again." Barboza, now brooding at the bar, suddenly leaned over and bit the man's ear. "I didn't touch him with my hands", he snarled at Henry Tameleo. It is stated by other sources that he chewed off the man's cheek, however-again-this was never verified or proven.
23. [] **Professional boxing career**
24. Joe himself would pursue a career as a professional [light heavyweight boxer](#) and member of the [United States Boxing Association](#) for a short period of time, with his first boxing match on April 18, 1949 against Rocky Lucero in [El Paso, Texas](#) and his last fight on September 23, 1961 against Don Bale in [Boston, Massachusetts](#). He fought with an [orthodox stance](#). He boxed under the moniker of "The Baron". His boxing record shows Joseph as winning eight out of the twelve matches, with five of them ending in [knock outs](#). He was classified as an out-fighter who was known for having very powerful punches. He was a sparring partner of Patriarca crime family associate, [Americo Sacramone](#), future [Massachusetts Auditor Joe DeNucci](#), [Edward G. Connors](#) and

[Anthony Veranis](#). He later worked as a [longshoreman](#) and as a clerk in a fruit store but always returned to crime.

25. [] **Escape from prison**

26. He was first sent to prison in 1950 to the [Massachusetts Correctional Institution - Concord](#) for five years. Barboza would later lead a wild prison break in the summer of 1953, which would become the largest in the prison's seventy-five-year history. Joe and six other fellow inmates had guzzled contraband whiskey and pilfered amphetamine tablets, overpowered four prison guards and raced away in two separate cars. During their furlough of freedom they beat random people in the street, cruised the bars in Boston's [Scollay Square](#), wandered to the neighborhoods of Lynn and Revere, and were finally apprehended at a subway station in East Boston. The escape party had barely lasted twenty-four hours. That November, while awaiting trial for his prison break, Barboza slugged a prison guard in the cafeteria for no reason. Three months later, he tossed a table at a guard's chest when he entered his cell.

Bank Robbery and Trial

In October 1972 the [Allied Irish Banks](#) branch in [Grafton Street](#), Dublin was robbed of £67,000; at the time the largest haul in Ireland.^[7] Three men had turned up at the home of the manager, who was then driven to the bank while his family was held hostage. A further three gang members locked the staff in the vault before escaping with the money. The [Ulster Volunteer Force](#) was initially reported as responsible following comments made by the robbers.^[8]

Kenneth and Keith were arrested in London the week following the issue of an extradition warrant from Dublin. Following an instruction from the [Attorney General](#), the extradition proceedings were held [in camera](#) on the grounds of national security.^{[3][9]}

At the extradition proceedings the brothers tried but failed to prevent a prosecution by the [Special Criminal Court](#) under the [Offences against the State Acts 1939](#).^[10] The [Irish Attorney General](#) had given assurances that they would not be charged with political offences under the Act.^[11] In Irish law there was no mechanism for a non-political case, such as robbery, to be held in camera. Thus they were tried in open court despite the British Government lobbying of the Irish Government.^[citation needed]

Kenneth was jailed for 20 years and Keith received 15 years.

In March 1974 they both escaped from [Mountjoy Prison](#). Toothpaste had been used to cover up saw marks in the cream coloured bars of the cell window. Having escaped the wing the brothers got over the wall using planks being used for building work.^[12] Keith was soon apprehended after breaking his ankle jumping from the 25 foot wall, but Kenneth evaded capture for 9 months.

[] Thomas Watt

Kenneth Littlejohn escaped to England, where he was harboured in the Birmingham home of Thomas Watt, a future Prosecution witness in the [Birmingham Six Trial](#). While on the run Littlejohn gave several press interviews and enrolled for touch-typing lessons to help him write his memoirs. Kenneth was staying with Watt on the night, in November 1974, of the [Birmingham Pub bombings](#), and made tea when detectives came to interview Watt.^[13]

Littlejohn was recaptured, in his underpants at gunpoint, by [West Midlands Police](#) detectives at Watts home on 11 December 1974. Watt himself was arrested later that afternoon, but claimed he was released, on Detective Superintendent Pat Cooney's orders, as he could not be prosecuted as Littlejohn's crime was committed outside of the UK.^[14]

Jail Break

Sarah Pender reportedly planned her escape in the days or weeks before it happened with a cell-phone provided to her by Scott Spitler. On August 4, 2008, Sarah Pender went to the facility's gymnasium where she changed clothes, hiding her prison uniform above the ceiling's tiling and putting on civilian clothes that Spitler also had given to her. She then walked toward the fueling area where they had agreed to meet. Spitler told her to get in the van and hide under the seat, which she did. He then drove to the prison's gate where he knew, out of experience, that the guard would not search his vehicle.^[55] Spitler dropped off Pender at one of the facility's parking lot, where Jamie Long picked her up, gave her \$140 and drove her to Indianapolis.^[56] After an inmate count, it appeared that Pender was missing. The Prison was put on maximum security lock down.

After viewing video surveillance tapes and consulting the guardshack log, investigators identified Spitler as Pender's accomplice.^[57] He was arrested on August 5, 2008 and charged with assisting a criminal, official misconduct, sexual misconduct and trafficking with an inmate.^[58] In February 2009, he was sentenced to 8 years in jail.^[59] Jamie Long was arrested on August 7, 2008 after Spitler denounced her to investigators as the person who had picked up Pender. She was charged with aiding an escape, a class C felony, and sentenced to 7 years in jail.^[60]

In September 2008, TV show [America's Most Wanted](#) began to run a feature on Sarah Pender.^[61] In October 2008, Pender was added to the US Marshals 15 most wanted fugitives list. She was the only woman on the list at the time.^[62]

In the meantime, Sarah Pender had settled in a North Side Chicago neighborhood where she went under the name *Ashley Thompson*. She found a job as an estimator for a contractor.^[63] She led an ordinary and uneventful life as an employee, which she has extensively described in her blog "*the Long way Home*".^[64]

On December 22, 2008, two hours after a rerun of [America's Most Wanted](#), her neighbor identified her and called the Chicago police, which arrested her at her apartment. Although she denied being Sarah Pender for a little while, she did not resist arrest.^[65]

Sarah Pender is now being held in [Solitary Confinement](#) at the [Indiana Women's Prison](#) in Indianapolis. This punishment, which should have lasted a year, has been arbitrarily prolonged by the [Indiana Department of Correction](#), with no set date for her release back into general population. She is kept under observation and has no contact with other inmates.

Thomas "Terrible Tommy" O'Connor was a gangster who escaped from the Chicago, Illinois courthouse in 1923, only four days before he was to have been executed at the [Historical Gallows](#)^[1] for the murder of a policeman.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Life](#)
- [2 After the escape](#)
- [3 Further reading](#)
- [4 References](#)

[] Life

O'Connor was born in County Limerick, Ireland around 1880 and immigrated to the United States as a boy. He first came to prominence when he was arrested after a shootout in which Chicago Police Detective Patrick J O'Neil was gunned down March 13, 1921.^[2] This came as a result of investigators coming to arrest him as a prime suspect in a previous case. O'Connor fled and was later arrested in St. Paul, Minnesota. They sent him back to Cook County, Illinois. Charged with Paddy's murder, O'Connor was convicted at trial and sentenced to hang. Four days before the scheduled execution, he and four other prisoners overpowered the guard, took his rifle, and escaped from the courthouse.^[3] All but two of the men were last seen dodging through traffic and made their escape. It is unknown how O'Connor died, though there is a tombstone at the [Holy Sepulchre Cemetery](#) in Worth, Illinois.^[4] His year of death is listed as 1951.

[] After the escape

O'Connor was last seen in 1921 during his escape. Because there was no Cook County Sheriff's Department during that time, he was able to make his way through miles of empty countryside and disappear completely. He then seemed to vanish forever with a fate unknown. Reported sightings continued into the thirties. One story labels O'Connor as the planner of a pharmacy robbery in 1927 where Detroit, Michigan police officer Stacy C. Mizner was shot and killed.^[5] A court order in the 1950s forced the city of Chicago to retain O'Connor's gallows sentencing and keep him on the death list until his fate was made known. The gallows were dismantled in 1977, but apparently O'Connor still remains scheduled to hang.^[6]

Forrest Turner (1915-Jan. 5, 2001) was an American prisoner who gained notoriety for multiple escapes from prison in the 1930s and 1940s. Georgia Governor [Ellis Arnall](#) gave him a full pardon with the understanding that he would speak out against crime and in favor of prison reform. From that time until his death, he gave more than 10,000 speeches to church and school groups about prison reform. He earned his living making [dentures](#), a trade he had learned in prison.

[] Prison years

The 19-year old Turner was supporting his widowed mother and younger brothers and sisters by working as a "[soda jerk](#)" in [McDonough](#)([Henry County](#)), Georgia,^[1] when, according to the story he told, he accepted an invitation to ride with a friend. He said that he didn't know the automobile was stolen, but when the police stopped the car, Turner was arrested.^[2]

The court-appointed attorney advised a "guilty" plea in the hope that, since it was Turner's first offense, he would likely be sentenced to [probation](#). Instead, the judge sentenced him to four or five years in jail.^[3] When the sentence was given, Turner responded by knocking down the [bailiff](#)

and running away. He was caught when he fell into an open coal pit, and when brought back to court, he was sentenced to the [chain gang](#).^[2]

In his first of nine escapes, Turner used a razor blade and black shoe polish to make a fake pistol out of orange crate wood.^[2] Another time, after he escaped, he came back, posing as an attorney, and led the entire population of inmates in a mass escape.^[1]

In 1938, the State of Georgia dedicated Tattnal Prison in [Reidsville](#), an “escape-proof” facility, and placed Turner there. Turner spent months using automobile valve-grinding compound and piano wire to cut through the bars of his cell. Once out, he released two other prisoners, and the three of them took over the prison switchboard, from which they sent guards to various locations in the prison, ambushed them, and tied them up. Finally, they took a truck and left with 43 prisoners. When he was recaptured, his combined sentences totaled 125 years.^{[1][2]} He was assigned to the “eight-ball squad,” prisoners who performed hard labor while chained to iron balls.^[2]

Then, a new director of the State Department of Corrections, Wiley L. Moore, abolished the “eight-ball squad,” and offered Turner a prison job in the dental laboratory. In 1946, Turner was transferred from the state system to the Fulton County Prison, where he became assistant to Chaplain Bill Allison.^[2] The publicity surrounding Turner led the parole board and the governor to reexamine his case, determining that he had never committed a serious crime, if any crime. In March, 1949, Georgia Governor Ellis Arnall commuted his sentence, and he was released.^{[1][2]}

Troy Leon Gregg (1953 – July 29, 1980) was the first condemned individual whose death sentence was upheld by the [United States Supreme Court](#) after the Court's decision in [Furman v. Georgia](#) invalidated all previously enacted death penalty laws in the United States. Gregg was convicted of having murdered Fred Edward Simmons and Bob Durwood Moore in order to rob them. The victims had given him and another man, Dennis Weaver, a ride when they were [hitchhiking](#). The crime occurred on November 21, 1973.

In [Gregg v. Georgia](#), the Supreme Court held that the State of Georgia could constitutionally put Gregg to death.

However, the night before his set date for execution, together with three other condemned murderers, Gregg escaped from [Georgia State Prison](#) in [Reidsville](#) in the first death row breakout in Georgia history. Dressed in homemade correctional officer uniforms, complete with fake badges, the four had sawed through their cells' bars and then left in a car parked in the visitors' parking lot by an aunt of one of them. Gregg was beaten to death later that night in a bar fight in [North Carolina](#). The other escapees were captured three days later.^[1]

In the swift justice of Chicago, Jarman was quickly convicted and the court sentenced her to a 199-year prison term. She was the first woman in Illinois to receive such a long sentence. The 199-year term was given to ensure that Jarman never get parole. Under state law at the time, prisoners were eligible for parole after serving one-third of their sentence. With a nearly sentence nearly 2 centuries long, she would not have been even eligible for release until she was 95 years old.

Minnecci also received a 199-year term, but served a term of around 20 years before being released in the 1950s. Dale was sentenced to death and died in the electric chair April 20, 1934. One of Dale's last acts was to write a love letter to Jarmon.

Jarmon was serving her term in Joliet and was known as “an industrious, obedient, and model woman in almost every respect,” according to warden Helen Hazard when she and another stick up artist, Mary Foster, disappeared from a cottage on prison grounds. Foster, a bank robber, was serving a 1-to-10 year stretch and was located in Massachusetts a few months later.

The pair had been scrubbing floors when they jimmed the cottage lock, stole dresses from the closet (the cabin belonged to a staff member) and scaled a 10-foot fence around the reformatory. They had a one-hour head start on jailers and Jarmon hasn't been seen since.

Actually, that's not quite accurate. Over the years some people learned her real identity — mostly family members — and they protected her from authorities. Generally, they believed her claims that she was innocent of Hoeh's murder.

“Jarmon has served 7 years in jail for being with the wrong people at the wrong time,” her grandchildren wrote in a 1993 clemency petition to Gov. Jim Edgar. “She is and will in whatever time remains for her be an remain a good and completely rehabilitated citizen.”

Survivors of Gustav Hoeh, however, were unconvinced.

“In one respect I could understand their feeling,” said Hoeh's grandson, Kenneth Hoeh. “I just as soon they leave alone what was left forgotten.”

Another grandson was equally unsympathetic.

“It was a vicious crime. As I understand the details, she played an active part,” Dan Hoeh told *The Chicago Tribune*. “Even if it had been a minor role, she would get no mercy from me.”

After his father, LeRoy died in 1993, her grandson, Doug Jarman, began a campaign to clear his grandmother's name.

In numerous interviews, he said that a letter she sent during her incarceration, as well as conversations with people who knew her before her arrest, convinced him that she was innocent.

“I'm goig to be here the rest of my life. I'm never going to be with you,” Doug Jarman quoted her as writing. “I always want you to know that I was innocent.”

Shortly after her escape, according to a Jarman family legend, she appeared in Sioux City where her two sons, LaVerne and LeRoy, were living. She had received a letter days before that her sons were threatening to run away from their custodians. According to Hazard that was the reason she escaped.

After telling her boys to behave, she disappeared for 35 years, communicating through classified ads, but apparently “afraid of rejection” by her family. In 1975 she arranged for a meeting with her brother, Otto Berendt, and they went to a lake outside Sioux City to talk.

“She was relaxed and looked pretty good,” Berendt's widow told *The Chicago Tribune* in 1993. “All she wanted to know was if her boys were OK. We told her they were grown men and doing good for themselves.”

LeRoy, who also saw his mother that night, pleaded with her to surface and straighten out her situation. To do so would have required her to return to Illinois, which she apparently declined to do despite her assumption that police had stopped looking for her years before.

By the mid-1990s, contact with Jarman through the newspapers tapered off and Doug Jarman began to attempt to locate his grandmother in midwest nursing homes. However, patient privacy rules made that extremely difficult.

Publically, her fate remains a mystery.



Robert Elliott Burns (May 10, 1892 – June 5, 1955) was a [World War I](#) veteran who gained notoriety after escaping from a [Georgia chain gang](#) and writing his memoirs exposing the cruelty and injustice of the chain gang system. ^[1]

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Biography](#)
- [2 Book](#)
- [3 Media portrayals](#)
- [4 References](#)
- [5 External links](#)

[] Biography

He was born in [Palisades, New Jersey](#), and served in [World War I](#) as a medic. Upon his return from Europe, he was unable to recover the wage he was earning in his job and became a drifter, which is how he eventually ended up in [Atlanta, Georgia](#) in 1922. Burns was convicted of joining two other men in the armed robbery of a grocery store, which netted the trio \$5.81 and got Burns sentenced to 6 to 10 years of hard labor.

Burns escaped from the chain gang with the help of another inmate who struck his restraints with a sledgehammer, bending and weakening them. He was able to escape the eyes of the guards on the pretense of a two-minute bathroom break in the trees. After evading capture, Burns made his way to [Chicago](#), where he eventually became the editor and publisher of *Greater Chicago Magazine*. During his stay in Chicago, he became involved with a Spanish woman named Emily del Phino Pacheo, from whom he rented a room. Eventually he married her when she threatened to betray him to the local police.

Seven years later, he sought a divorce in order to marry Lillian Salo, whom he professed to love. Del Phino Pacheo had made an agreement with him, but the same day she betrayed him to the authorities. Owing to his status in the community, many people helped him fight extradition to Georgia, but he surprised everyone by agreeing to return to Georgia, basing his decision on a verbal promise from state prison officials that he would serve no more than 90 days of "easy" time.

Burns returned to Georgia in July 1929 to finish his prison term. He soon realized that his 45 to 90 days had turned into at least 12 months of hard labor. They tortured him even more than before. He served a brief stint in Campbell County, where he was, according to his book, treated "intelligently and fairly". Burns later implied he was denied the promised parole after 45 days and had his term lengthened because he did not have \$500 with which to pay off the parole board. After several failed attempts at parole, on September 4, 1930, Burns again escaped. He had waited until he had earned enough of the guards' trust that he could obtain the privilege of not being chained. He then paid off a local farmer with money he had received from his brother in [Newark](#) and headed to New Jersey.

Burns could not duplicate his Chicago success in New Jersey because of the [Great Depression](#) and took on odd jobs around New Jersey for a few years, all the while writing his autobiography.

Burns was arrested in Newark late in 1932, but the governor of New Jersey refused to extradite him since his book and a movie had been released and public opinion was firmly against the idea. The governor of Georgia pardoned him in 1945, and Burns lived as a free man until his death from cancer in 1955. His book and the movie are largely credited with the abolition of the chain gang system in the South.

References

1. [^] [I Am a Fugitive from a Georgia Chain Gang!](#) , *The New Georgia Encyclopedia*
2. **Grigory Andreyevich Gershuni** ([Russian](#): Григорий Андреевич Гершуни; September 29 [[O.S.](#) September 17] 1870 – March 29 [[O.S.](#) March 16] 1908) was a [Russian revolutionary](#) and one of the founders of the [Socialist-Revolutionary Party](#).
3. **Early life**
4. Gershuni was born in [Kaunas](#), [Russian Empire](#), to a [petty bourgeois](#) family of [Lithuanian Jews](#).^[1] At the age of three his family moved to [Šiauliai](#). At fifteen his uncle took him as an apprentice [pharmacist](#) and Gershuni traveled across Russia, including areas outside of the [Pale of Settlement](#).^[1] In 1895 he began his pharmacy studies at [Kiev University](#) and became involved in student activities, for which he was briefly arrested. After graduation in 1897, he opened his own chemical-[bacteriological](#) laboratory in [Minsk](#).^[1]
5. **Revolutionary life**
6. Gershuni was a [socialist](#) and a founding member of the [Workers' Party for the Political Liberation of Russia](#). This led to his arrest in 1900 by the [Okhrana](#) (secret police).^[2] After his release he joined with fellow revolutionaries including [Catherine Breshkovsky](#), [Victor Chernov](#), [Alexander Kerensky](#) and [Yevno Azev](#) to establish the [Socialist-Revolutionary Party](#) in 1901. Gershuni also founded the [SR Combat Organization](#) in 1902, which planned and executed the assassination of [Dmitry Sipyagin](#), the Minister of Interior, in April 1902 and of N. M. Bogdanovich, the [Governor of Ufa](#), in May 1903. They failed to assassinate Prince [Ivan Mikhailovich Obolensky](#), the [Governor of Kharkov](#), in July 1902.^[3]
7. Gershuni was unaware that [Yevno Azev](#), his deputy, was working as an [Okhrana](#) spy.^[4] In May 1903, Gershuni was arrested in Kiev. In February 1904, Gershuni was tried by a [military court](#) in [Saint Petersburg](#) and received a [death sentence](#), which later was reduced to [life imprisonment](#) at a hard [labour camp](#) by Tsar [Nicholas II of Russia](#).^[4] In 1906, he hid a barrel of [sauerkraut](#) and escaped from the [Akatury katorga](#) to [China](#).^[5]

Charles Victor Thompson (born 16 June 1970) is an [American](#) criminal. Sentenced to [death](#) for the [murder](#) of his ex-girlfriend and her lover in 1998, Thompson made headlines in 2005 by [escaping](#) from [Harris County Jail](#) in [Houston](#), [Texas](#) after a parole meeting using a forged ID badge, claiming to be with the [Attorney General](#)'s office. He was captured three days later outside a liquor store in [Shreveport](#), [Louisiana](#) where he was using a pay phone while intoxicated. He was able to get food and clothing, he told investigators, posing as a [Hurricane Katrina](#) evacuee. He also got money from Good Samaritans in Shreveport.

HOUSTON, Texas (CNN) -- A Texas death row inmate who escaped last week from a Houston jail and was taken into custody Sunday night outside a liquor store in Shreveport, Louisiana, is back in Texas, a court official told CNN late Monday.

Charles Victor Thompson, 35, was the subject of a 78-hour, nationwide manhunt after he escaped Thursday by shedding his handcuffs and trading his prison jumpsuit for street clothes in a jailhouse booth after telling deputies he was meeting with a lawyer.

He was back behind bars in the same Harris County Jail on Monday night.

Earlier in the day, Thompson made an appearance before a Louisiana judge from the Shreveport jail via video feed and waived his right to counsel and extradition.

Authorities said Thompson talked his way out of the jail by showing deputies a fake ID that indicated he was with the attorney general's office.

Thompson offered authorities no resistance when arrested, said Marianne Matus, a spokeswoman for the U.S. Marshals Service. ([See video about the capture -- 1:49](#))

Matus said marshals received "several credible tips" that Thompson was in the area, and police found him about 8 p.m. on a pay phone outside a liquor store in Shreveport, about 240 miles north of Houston.

"He appeared to be intoxicated," Matus said. The officers walked up to the escaped killer and asked him his name. He told them, "You know who I am."

Authorities said Thompson had a bicycle with him.

Officers determined he was too drunk to be questioned immediately, Matus said.

Thompson was transferred early Monday to the Caddo Parish Correctional Facility, where he was booked as an out-of-state fugitive and taken to the men's mental health unit, said spokeswoman Cindy Chadwick.

He was placed alone in a cell on an escape and suicide watch, she said. Chadwick described Thompson as "mild-mannered" and compliant. "So far, he has been no problem."

But Jebran Siddiqui, a clerk at the liquor store, said the arrest was more dramatic than Matus described. Siddiqui said he was working at the shop's drive-through window when he saw "some maniac kind of guy running around outside." About the same time, he saw another man get out of a car with a shotgun.

He said Thompson was heading toward his store and he feared a shootout was in the works -- so he grabbed a gun and walked to the door.

"I was shaking, like shivering and everything, but I wasn't losing my grip," Siddiqui said. "I think he was planning to come inside the store and, I don't know, hold us hostage or something."

The man with a shotgun turned out to be an undercover police officer, and several other officers swarmed in and "took him down pretty brutally" within three feet of the store, Siddiqui said.

Thompson was convicted of capital murder in April 1999 in the shooting deaths of his former girlfriend, Dennise Hayslip, 39, and her friend, Darren Cain, 30. He was sentenced to death.

The state Court of Criminal Appeals threw out the death sentence, ruling that Thompson's right to an attorney had been violated during his trial.

On October 28, a second jury sentenced Thompson to death.

"I'm glad to know no one else was harmed," Cain's brother, Devin Donaghey, told CNN. "I'm glad to know that he's back in custody."

Donaghey called Thompson a "worthless piece of society."

Donaghey also had harsh words for sheriff's deputies in Harris County, which includes Houston. He said they "dropped the ball" by letting Thompson escape.

"It's not the whole Sheriff's Department's fault, but there's more to this than what's come out," Donaghey said. "What happened should've never been possible."

Lt. John Martin, of the Harris County Sheriff's Department, agreed and said an investigation has already been launched.

"There's no scenario under which it's even conceivable that someone who's on death row could simply walk out of a jail," he said. "It's not the case that any force was used. He didn't use a weapon. He simply convinced us to let him walk out the front door."

Alexander Viktorovich Solonik ([Russian](#): Алекса́ндр Ви́кторович Солю́ник, born 1960 – died January 31, 1997), also known as *Boguslav the Macedonian*,^{[[Note 2](#)]} and *Superkiller*, was an infamous [Russian hitman](#) in the early 1990s and was thought^[*by whom?*] to have the ability to shoot ambidextrously. He carried out numerous murders for the [Orekhovskaya group](#) and other criminal associations, in the early 1990s. He was jailed again in 1994, only to escape in July 1995 from the [Moscow](#) maximum security prison [Matrosskaya Tishina](#). His dead body was found in [Greece](#), after the assassination occurred in January 1997.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Biography](#)
 - [1.1 Early life](#)
 - [1.2 Hitman](#)
 - [1.3 Death](#)
- [2 Notes](#)
- [3 References](#)

[] Biography

[] Early life



This section **does not cite any references or sources**. Please help improve this section by [adding citations to reliable sources](#). Unsourced material may be challenged and [removed](#). (*April 2013*)

Aleksandr Solonik was born in 1960 in the Russian city of [Kurgan](#). As a child, Solonik showed great interest in [martial arts](#) and [firearms](#). When finishing school, he was conscripted to the [Soviet Army](#) and was deployed to tank regiment, a part of the [Group of Soviet Forces in Germany](#). Soon after his conscript service ended, Solonik joined the [OMON](#) - an elite [militsiya](#) unit - and eventually received training at the Gorkovskiy Institute. However, after 6 months he was expelled for extreme violence towards suspects. Upon returning home, Solonik obtained a job as a gravedigger at the Kurgan cemetery. He was soon married and his wife gave birth to a daughter. After some time they divorced and Solonik remarried another woman, with whom he had a son. Solonik was charged with rape in 1987 and sentenced to 8 years in prison. During a farewell meeting with his wife before he was deported, Solonik escaped by jumping from the second floor of a building. After several months Solonik was apprehended 120 miles north of Kurgan and taken to the prison.

Hitman

Because Solonik served an active duty and had some police training, he was entitled to a solitary confinement, but later was transferred to serve his jailtime among the other prison inmates. When it became known to the other inmates that Solonik had been a soldier and had worked for the police, he was marked for death. According to rumor, Solonik took on as many as 12 inmates a time, earning the respect of his fellow prisoners. After 2 years of imprisonment, he escaped again.

Solonik went back home to Kurgan, joined the local criminal organization and started work as a hitman. Solonik's first target, the leader of a rival organization, stood little chance and was eliminated in 1990 in the city of [Tyumen](#). After this hit, Solonik travelled to Moscow with other members of the Kurgan organization to seek work. In 1992, Solonik assassinated Russian [thief in law](#) Viktor Nikiforov. Six months later he murdered another important Russian mob boss. This time the victim was a [thief in law](#), Valeri Dlugatsj. Dlugatsj was shot in a crowded disco despite the fact that he was surrounded by bodyguards. In 1994 Solonik eliminated Vladislav Vinner, a boss of a rival organization, who came in charge after Dlugatsj's death. It was reported that in 1994 Solonik tried to extort money from another Russian mobster. The mobster made a speaker phonecall to settle the extortion, and Solonik immediately identified him as [Otari Kvantrishvili](#), one of the most powerful Russian mobsters in history. Apparently, Solonik was unable to extort money from Kvantrishvili and several weeks later murdered him in an act of revenge.^{[[citation needed](#)]} However, the story is doubtful as other people from a gang unrelated to Solonik were convicted in 2008 for Kvantrishvili's murder. Rumors spread that he was supported by the [Chechnian groups](#).

By this time, Solonik had become famous among the criminal underworld and law enforcement figures. Law enforcement took special interest and made several attempts to send him back to prison. Solonik and a fellow criminal were apprehended by the Moscow police when they were having a drink at a Moscow marketplace. The police failed to check Solonik thoroughly and he opened fire in the police station with a small automatic weapon which he concealed under a raincoat. He hit 3 policemen and ran outside. As he fled the station, he shot 2 more police officers. Solonik was also shot (it is said that the bullet hit him in the kidney). He was cornered, but managed to keep the officers at bay. Eventually he was overpowered and surrendered. Solonik was then sent to a Moscow prison and underwent an operation to remove the bullet in his kidney. In his spare time at the prison, he studied foreign languages. In 1995 he escaped yet

again, when his jailer Sergey Menshikov, rumored to be a mob sleeper agent, provided him with a pistol and climbing equipment. Having placed a mannequin under the blanket of Solonik's bed to delay pursuit, the men escaped, using the climbing equipment to grapple down from the prison roof.

This time Solonik had few hiding places in Russia, for his name and face were known, but he disappeared without a trace.

Eventually Solonik surfaced in Greece with a [fake passport](#), which he secured from the Greek consulate in Moscow. In Greece, Solonik set up his own organization of around 50 men, which dealt in narcotic shipments and [contract killings](#). Solonik's organization bought several villas in an [Athens](#) suburb. Solonik's reputation now grew to legendary proportions with the public and he made Russia's top ten "Most Wanted" list.

[] Death



This section **does not cite any references or sources**. Please help improve this section by [adding citations to reliable sources](#). Unsourced material may be challenged and [removed](#). *(April 2013)*

In February 1997 Greek newspapers published articles that claimed a Russian mob boss had been found dead 15 miles from Athens. The body was found strangled to death and had no identification documents on him. Authorities nevertheless identified the body as Solonik. In the weeks after his body was found, Greek authorities raided the villas of Solonik's organization and found an arsenal of weapons. They also discovered that Solonik had been hired to carry out a "hit" in Italy.

According to rumours^{[[who?](#)]}, Solonik was finally put to rest by a Moscow Organized Crime group. However, authorities insist that Solonik is still alive, and that the body was merely a double. Moscow and Greek authorities had difficulty identifying the fingerprints because the fingerprints on record for Solonik were fake^{[[citation needed](#)]}, as he had obtained a false passport before relocating to Greece.

It has also been rumored that Solonik was murdered by fellow legendary Russian Hit man Artur Gorsky in retaliation for a botched hit in the late 1980's.

[] Notes

- [^] Solonik's solicitor Valeriy Karyshev, who attended at police identification routine and burial, said that dead man had little similarity with his former defendant. Solonik's mother, who identified corpse as her son's body, didn't attend the funeral
- [^] A reference to [Alexander the Great](#) and Solonik's Greek descent and ability to shoot handguns from both hands, in Russian called a *Macedonian shooting* ([Russian](#): Стрельба по-македонски)

Alexander Solonik

04.04.2009662642221813

Subject:	Date:
	Case #

Alexander Solonik wanted to become a police officer and clean up the mean streets of Moscow like a Cold War-era Soviet re-make of **Dirty Harry**, making mob bosses his bitch and asking various punks whether or not they felt lucky just before inserting a large-caliber bullet wound directly into their foreheads. Instead, he would become one of the most notorious hitmen in history and incidentally still achieve all of those same career aspirations. He was the ultimate assassin, a man who, to this day, is known throughout Russia by only one moniker – Superkiller.

Little is known of Alexander Solonik's early years. Standing only five feet, six inches tall, he is believed to have served as a member of an elite Soviet special forces intelligence unit during the Cold War. Stationed in East Berlin and trained extensively in espionage, infiltration, small-arms operation, Sambo martial arts, and various counter-intelligence techniques, some say that he was part of an ultra-secret military group designed to assassinate NATO diplomats and other high-ranking Allied military officers like some kind of crazy mix between Jack Bauer and [Ivan Drago](#). Other sources say he was just a security guard or a non-ranking member of some paramilitary militia, but this makes for a far less interesting story.

After bullshit Perestroika crippled the power of the Soviet Union, Solonik's unit was disbanded and he returned home, where he enlisted in a prestigious Police Academy. Apparently, while at the academy Solonik was pulling all kinds of wacky, borderline-psychotic pranks on the chief like he was Steve Guttenberg or Officer Moses Hightower, because just a few months into his tenure he was unceremoniously discharged for reasons which were never declassified. Upset at having his dream crushed, Solonik found work as a grave digger. After a few months of spending ten hours a day digging fucking graves outdoors in the fucking freezing recesses of rural Russia, shit only got worse for Alexander when one of his psycho ex-girlfriends accused him of sexually assaulting her. He was rushed through trial, convicted on some highly circumstantial evidence (the woman allegedly even recanted her story at one point), and was sentenced to eight months in prison. Upon hearing his sentence, Solonik only asked for one thing – five minutes to say goodbye to his wife.

The police brought Solonik to the station to say his farewells, and soon as he had a moment alone with his wife he busted through a plate-glass window on the second story of the fucking police station, hit the ground in a perfect commando roll, and escaped into a nearby forest. Despite the fact that he was completely fucking surrounded by cops and Spetsnaz and shit, Solonik managed to make it all the way to goddamned Siberia before he was finally apprehended. Russian authorities captured him in a cosmetic surgery office while he was having all tattoos and distinguishing markings removed from his body.

This time, instead of just eight months in a minimum-security resort, they sentenced him to several years in a federal pound-me-in-the-ass Siberian gulag, where he could look forward to sub-zero temperatures three hundred days out of the year and long, cold afternoons whacking rocks with a fucking pickaxe while security guards shoved AK-47s in his face. His second day in the detention facility, word got out that Solonik had gone to the police academy, and he was jumped in the yard by twelve fucking big-ass convicted murders armed with goddamned shovels. He was unexpectedly smashed in the back of the head by a shovel like the star of a bad amateur YouTube prank, but somehow managed to take down one of the motherfuckers with a judo shoulder throw, steal his shovel, and then use it to single-handedly beat the ever-loving fuck out of all twelve inmates. Nobody messed with him again.



A Gulag.

From that point on, Solonik became a man with a mission. He worked out relentlessly – lifting weights, cardio conditioning... even using those stupid giant plastic gym exercise balls for something other than just kicking them into his friends' faces when they weren't looking. When he'd had enough of the prison's bullshit, one day he just pulled the grate off of a ventilation shaft, climbed through the air ducts, bypassed several guard patrols like Solid Snake without all the cardboard boxes and wacky exclamation points, and crawled his way out of the gulag.

On the run in Moscow, Solonik fell in with a Russian organized crime outfit where his skills and HK-47 style assassination protocols would be utilized to their utmost potential. Despite being a hardcore, [Jules Winnfield](#)-style badass assassin (badassin?) Solonik was more like Max Payne than Agent 47 in that his targets were almost exclusively high-ranking members of rival Russian mafia gangs – all bad dudes, reaping what they were sowing, and Solonik was their Grim Reaper. Now I know that most Russian mobsters will tell you that, “there's no such thing as the Russian Mafia,” but during the mid-90's there was a war raging through the seedy underbelly of the Moscow streets, and Solonik was the kind of man who dealt with shit like a badass motherfucker, taking out numerous underworld bosses by any means available to him.

Once time, there was a powerful crime lord traveling in a black armored car with heavily-tinted bulletproof

glass windows, surrounded by a dozen well-trained elite mafia bodyguards. As the car rolled to a stop outside of a super-secret safehouse and the mobster stepped out onto the street in stylistic slow-motion while some crazy euro-trash techno music played in the background, Solonik capped this dude in the head from a concealed sniper's nest on the roof of a building over three hundred yards away. Then he dropped six of the boss' bodyguards before vanishing into the night like a homicidal Batman. Another time, this slimy criminal mastermind was snorting a bunch of coke off of some strippers in the back room of his high-end posh Moscow nightclub, surrounded by an escort of ex-Spetsnaz gunmen, when all of a sudden the door was violently kicked in. Solonik activated bullet-time and dove head first into the room, firing two pistols and taking out all of the gangsters before they could even unholster their weapons. Then he probably had sex with the strippers for like ten hours straight. There was another time that he tried to blackmail one of the most powerful mob bosses in all of Russia, and of course the guy told Solonik to get bent. One month later, the boss and all of his closest associates were found dead in various parts of the city, killed by everything ranging from knife wounds to shotgun shells to the face.

During his time as a professional contract killer, Solonik quickly became the most feared man in Russia. No criminal was safe from him. He earned the nickname, "[Alexander the Great](#)", not only because this is an incredibly clever play on his first name, but also because he was famous for going into gunfights "Macedonian Style" – the Russian term for dual-wielding pistols. I personally prefer to call it "John Woo Style", and it is awesome.



Eventually, the law caught up with Alexander Solonik, and he was arrested by several officers on the streets of Moscow one morning. He agreed to go along with them peacefully, but right as they were preparing to enter the police station he whipped out the Scorpion submachine gun he had hiding under his jacket and opened fire. The cops chased him through the streets of Moscow, including through a crowded marketplace, all the while trading fire with the most dangerous man in the world. Solonik killed seven officers before he was shot in the kidney while trying to hop a chain-link fence. Cops at the scene would later remark that they couldn't believe the accuracy of Solonik's shots, even as he was running at full-speed and firing over his shoulder. Once cop claimed that he was hiding behind a concrete post and two of Solonik's bullets hit in the exact same place, kind of like a modern-day Robin Hood, only instead of robbing the rich and helping the poor he was shooting a bunch of cops in the head.

Solonik spent eight months in Detention Center 1, the most air-tight prison in Russia, recuperating from his wounds and studying various foreign languages. When his injuries were completely healed, he once again

made an unbelievable escape. He allegedly had a man on the inside this time, and the two of them used grappling hooks and ropes to exit the building in the middle of the night and make their way to a waiting BMW. To this day Solonik remains the only person to ever escape from this facility. The guy was like the fucking Harry Houdini of supermax penitentiaries.

Things were too hot in Russia, so Solonik's next destination was Greece. In only a few short months, he set up his own criminal enterprise outside Athens that had ties to operations in locations ranging from St. Petersburg to Rome. He had his face altered by reconstructive plastic surgery, recruited a crew of over fifty gangsters to work for him, made millions of dollars, and had all the houses, cars, and women he wanted (including a tryst with Miss Russia herself).

Finally, on 1 February 1997, police found a dead body in one of Solonik's villas. The man had been strangled to death with an extension cord, and was carrying a duffel bag full of AK-47s, wigs, forged documents, and ammunition. Fingerprints identified him as Alexander Solonik.

Of course, there are many people out there who believe that this was just the final act in the incredible criminal career of Alexander Solonik, and that the body discovered by Greek authorities was not actually the remains of Russia's "number one superkiller". There are many claims that he had his agents feed a set of false prints to Interpol, and this discovery was merely evidence of Solonik's retirement, not his untimely demise. The truth, like much of Alexander Solonik's career as a professional badass, will probably never be known.



Links:

[Life and Death of Russian Killer Number One](#)

[Gangsters Incorporated](#)

The Making, or Breaking?

What did it take to be a Solonik? More than one would think.

Alexander Viktorovich Solonik was anyone's worst nightmare. A true hitman. Nicknamed the "Superkiller", he was born in the Russian city of Kurgan. Sure, we could go on about his life - but it's not about him, he only plays a part. Known for having a few children, and rumored to have more; Nikolai Solonik is one of these children and rather than be known publicly, he was hidden away in the shadows along with his twin brother, [Data Missing] Solonik.



Nikolai and [Data Missing] were born in Moscow, Russia and raised in a life of crime - mothered by prostitutes (when they're not working, of course) and showgirls along with their "fathers", of the Orekhovskaya and Solntsevskaya Bratva. By the age of twelve, Nikolai had committed his first crime - stealing. From there on out Nikolai kept on, cast by the devil upon his left shoulder, when the angel on his right shoulder seemed to be missing.

It wasn't long before he had his hand in everything; weapons, drugs, lives, and taking them away when the time calls for it. Countless times, he's committed murder though none of it was proven - even after he was prosecuted and imprisoned time and time again. Hell, most of his late teens and early twenties were spent there. He was one of the youngest to gain authority in the Solntsevskaya Bratva - though his brother, [Data Missing], always seemed one step ahead. He was never caught.

Nikolai was the fool. Playing girls, honestly, he shouldn't have messed with in the first place.

The Inkheart



If you're in a Russian crime mob, you better have a tattoo. No one is respected without them and Nikolai has countless. Each one has a meaning mainly gained in prison, or when he was promoted for another clean kill. Hell, even for how much of a "ladies man" he was, he gained a tattoo for that. Nicknamed "Handsome Nik" for the longest time, until those scars came about - never really seeming to make his "handsome face" that much handsome anymore. Though, some women still find it attractive still. Kinky women.

He lived a life, not knowing a single person who didn't have at least one ink imprinted upon them. Even the women he met, had some sort of symbol upon them. Every. Single. Tattoo. Has a meaning, a life story behind it and if you play your cards right, perhaps you might learn about Nikolai's just that bit better. Many use an encyclopedia on Russian Mafia Tattoos, to understand the man covered in them better. Sure, you may learn a few secrets but there are always those originals, that you could never find out what they meant and you wouldn't consider yourself much a lucky person once knowing.

A few ones to spot are **stars**. If they're upon the shoulder, it shows honor. Dignity. If they're upon the knees, it usually means they've been promoted to captain and they'd never fall on them. **Cathedral, church or Monasteries** are usually on the chest, shoulder, or back. Depending on the number of steeples or towers that are shown on the tattoo, it translates to the number of years, or number times an individual has been incarcerated.

The number of symbolisms are countless. There have been books and documentaries, and even movies upon them. In the end though, it still cannot add up.

The Rogue Isles/Trickblade

Or whatever the hell the real name of that place is. Who gives a shit? Really? It was shelter. Nikolai Solonik wanted to make something else of himself. He was tired of the Russian Mafia, tired of wasting years away in the Russian prisons. It's not worth it, you only have one life, and with how many "appraisal" tattoos he has already, he can barely fit anymore. He was nearly covered head to toe in his life of crime, even at his early age he's reached one of the highest rankings in his 'family'. It was time to retire - but because of what he's done, and who he is - it wasn't that easy to do.

A new identity was thought up. **Trickblade**. Nikolai had escaped from Russia and into the Isles, a place he knew of which wouldn't care less who the fuck he was, just how he did his work. The competitive side of Nikolai rose up again, however - when he sliced his way to the top, starting out in the warzones as Bloody Bay, Siren's Call, Warburg and finally, again, to the top time-warzone, Recluse's Victory. He didn't care about winning the zone over, only for the battles that were held there. Assassinating heroes left and right, and sending them back to the medical bay. It was hilarious, exciting, and **AMAZING** fun.

And then came along...

THE BROTHERS OF CHAOS

A "biker" group known for their harsh ways, but also for the "family" circle they held close. The women were prostitutes, the men were respected, or else someone would get shanked. Nikolai started out first in the Rogue Isles sanction, which he watched over - but the members were mostly Paragon-side, keeping the streets of Kings Row at bay. They were the main gangsters there, not the Skulls or Hellions. /They/ were the ones who kept the wars against those two groups going, so they don't disturb other people and only focus on each other. Of course, no one really cared or understood that method - but it worked well enough.

He wasn't known as "Nikolai Solonik" in the group. He had faked a cajun accent he'd be working on, and took up the name "Rex", or rather, nicknamed "Gator" by the rest of the crew. New life, remember? That meant no Russian, even if he let a few russian curse words slip - and his addiction to his favorite Russian Vodka. Eventually, "Gator" broke into Paragon and took up the name "Trickride", to help out the group stationed in Kings Row. His non-caring and fuck you ways brought him to a position as Vice President. Which he sucked at, because he seriously didn't give a shit.

[File:Julestrick.jpg](#)

The group disbanded and "Gator" was kicked out. Again, with the not giving a shit. The only thing he's thankful from that group is...

Juliette/"Kitty"

A black leather suit, cat years and that sexy cat-tail. Not a real cat, but damn did he enjoy that pussy. **Cataclysm**. A sex-drug to all men, but one that they could never touch or have. She enjoyed making "Gator"'s life a living hell, as well as the group's but he took a strange interest in the "kitty", as he called her. She did things herself that could cause chaos, yet she decided to judge the group on the way they dealt with things. As stated before - "Gator" didn't give a shit so long as she walked around in that skin-tight suit, he was okay with it.

And then [Juliette](#) came in. A woman "Gator" wasn't familiar with. She was shy, sweet, innocent. He's grown up around hookers, prostitutes, showgirls, sluts, whores - all of them. No innocent girl would step foot into the place he lived, so he's never known one. Juliette had a grasp on his heart fast - and for once, "Gator" gave a shit. He'd wait around for the woman, offer her things, attempt to treat her like a goddess (as best as a gutter-rat like him could). But of course, his old ways were hard to bury at first. When she wasn't around, he'd find himself macking on other women, offering to buy them a drink and obviously, telling them how lovely they looked. Yet, once Juliette entered the room, the other women were disregarded like pieces of trash.

His ways always hurt her in the process. "Gator" showed his true side to her, the side of Nikolai - risking his cover to show her the real man he is. The russian gutter-rat, Nikolai Solonik and yet, she still liked him for who he was. Eventually, his ways began to fade, and it was all Juliette, all the time. He became her puppy, when usually - it's the other way around. His interest in Cataclysm even came to a halt, feeling the need to stay respectful to his 'woman', [Juliette](#). Little did he know, they were one in the same.

Upon a mission that Nikolai brought [Cataclysm](#) along with - she was hurt. Her voice changed, and her persona did as well. He realized that the one woman he didn't care if died - was the one woman, he'd die if she ever did. He quickly took her to his home and bandaged her up, looking after her day and night, and of course - with anger as well, for her lies to him. It was a hard time between the two, but eventually - it was forgotten.

Due to that mission, however - Juliette's parents were later murdered. Nikolai's past was catching up to him fast, and he knew she was next. The only reason she was safe was because she had spent that night with him. It felt like things would never get better for her, and he couldn't really... understand her pain. He's never lost a loved one, until he realized how he'd feel if she had died. Nikolai moved in, staying on guard 24/7 until his past life took a hint, and left the woman alone.

But it was too late, Nikolai's heart was broken for the first time. [Juliette](#) had had enough, and broke it off with him - told him to go home and not to come back.

It was hard, but Nikolai went back home to the Isles, where he stayed - drowning himself in Vodka, weed and a black lung from cigarettes. Because he was so careless, distracted by his broken heart - Nikolai lost his arm in a battle. Of course, he ended up beating the shit out of the person who tore it off with the arm, but still! He spent days in the D, sitting at the bar and complaining of his broken heart, over and over. At one point, even nearly became a priest. Eventually he saw a warmth in Juliette that proved she still loved him. Now, he's trying to win her back.

Recent activity

Nikolai "Trickblade" Solonik is open about his Russian side now. Besides, he's run out of fake names anyway. He's helped out Juliette's [old group](#) to do something or another, he can't remember - it was just his way of trying to win her back again.

Now, he's attempting to become a vigilante, to move between Paragon and The Isles without having to keep changing his name to do so. What next? Who gives a shit! **MOTHERFUCKIN' TRICKBLADE, BITCHES!**

Escapees from Soviet Detention: Alexander Solonik, Ruslan Labazanov, Chabua Amirejibi, Pyotr Patrushev, Kazimierz Wi?tek, Nikolai Dzhumagaliev

Subject:	Date:
Case #	

"Don't try to lock him up. He escapes, you know."

I had a pretty hardcore, flesh-ripping historical badass lined up to run on the site this week. I really did. It

was a man who would have been perfect not only for the Fourth of July week, but also one who would tie in nicely with Canada Day as well, thanks to his innate ability to kick human asses across two of the three countries in North America. A tough-as-shit asskicker who relentlessly obliterated all who stood before him in a frenzy of blood-soaked musketballs and left behind a wake of shattered dreams and horribly-mutilated corpses, and who did it all while charging straight-on into battle wearing his full dress military uniform.

Then, around Monday I started getting suggestions of people open-mouth begging me to write about the very-recently-deceased French WWII espionage expert Count Robert de La Rochefoucauld. And I kept getting them. And kept getting them. And ok, sure, when folks with letters instead of numbers in their Twitter Followers column start asking me to write shit I take notice, but when I finally read this guy's obit I understood why there was absolutely no way in good conscience I could leave him off the website for even one more week, even if it means posting a French dude during the week of American Independence Day and Canadian Interdependence Day (or whatever they celebrate with Canada Day).

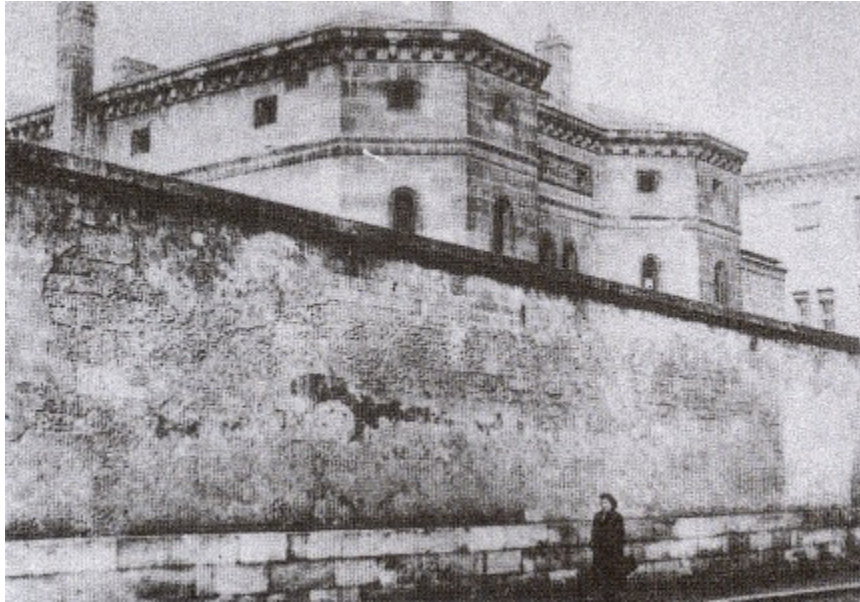


Count Robert Jean-Marie de La Rochefoucauld was born in Paris on September 16, 1923. One of ten kids born into an over-the-top silver-spoon aristocratic family that traced their noble lineage of brain-cleaving knighthood back to the days of Charlemagne and Charles Martel and included guys like Francois de La Rochefoucauld (an old drinking buddy of Thomas Jefferson and Benjamin Franklin, which is about as much of a 4th of July tie-in as you're gonna get this week), Robert grew up with a life of privilege, studying at posh froo-froo schools across Switzerland and Austria, rubbing elbows with the aristocracy, and once getting his check pinched by German Chancellor Adolph Hitler (this was back in 1938 when everybody still thought Der Fuhrer was just some really intense politician and not the physical manifestation of every evil thing humanity has ever done).

Rochefoucauld thought Hitler actually kind of ok right up until the time the German blitzkrieg bulldozed the scrotums of every fighting man in France at the same time and conquered the entire country in about fifteen minutes with nothing more than a handful of neverending fury and enough Ju-87 Stuka dive-bombers and Panzer Mk. IVs to turn the Maginot Line into a flaming pile of twisted rubble and dead French dudes. Rochefoucauld's father was imprisoned, a couple of his uncles and aunts were executed, and Robert and his surviving family members escaped into hiding. Rochefoucauld tried organizing a resistance against the German occupation, but when he was marked for arrest/death/other horribleness by the Gestapo in 1942 he knew enough to get the hell out of Paris before some jackbooted dipshit started tap-dancing on his brains.

He took on a fake name, renounced his aristocratic title, threw on some ordinary-person clothes, hoofed it into the French countryside, linked up with a couple of downed Royal Air Force pilots, and crossed the Pyrenees mountain range on foot while Nazi stormtrooper patrols swept the countryside looking for him and his RAF buddies.

As soon as Rochefoucauld and his two fugitive friends made it across the Pyrenees they were promptly arrested by the spent two months rotting in Fascist Spain's infamous Miranda de Ebro prison camp, a place that had been notorious during the recently-concluded Spanish Civil War for its brutal conditions and the ill-temperedness of its guards.



This is actually Fort du Ha, a different Nazi base this guy was also imprisoned inside.

Well after a couple months in Franco's penal system, the RAF boys got a visit from a member of the British Special Operations Executive (SOE) – a hardcore department of badass James Bond motherfuckers who basically were in charge of every bitchin' spy, espionage, counter-intelligence, and sabotage operation the Allies attempted during World War II. This guy had come to spring the RAF pilots from the clink, but when he heard about the psycho French Count who'd kept them safe while they fled through the countryside the SOE dude bailed out Rochefoucauld, took him back to London, and told him to get his shit together and prepare to go back into France on a mission of kicking fucking ass.

As a good Frenchman, Rochefoucauld first got in touch with Charles De Gaulle – the hardcore warrior in command of the Free French forces in exile – and asked him if it was cool to work with the Brits on this. De Gaulle told him, "Even allied with the devil, it's for France. Let's go." Then they high-fived and Rochefoucauld got down to business.

Count Robert was assigned to the espionage section of SOE (awesomely-known as "The Ministry of Ungentlemanly Warfare") and was subsequently ordered by [Winston Churchill](#) to "set Europe ablaze". He was trained in airborne operations, skydiving, sabotage, safecracking, small arms, and judo chopping badassitude, personally receiving knife-fighting training from [Fairbairn](#) himself. After a few months of perfecting his James T. Kirk-style knife-hand to the throat, Rochefoucauld was strapped to a parachute, loaded into a transport plane, and sent off to parachute into his homeland and kill every Nazi motherfucker

he could find there.



Robert de La Rochefoucauld dropped into France in 1943, linked up with the local Resistance, killed a bunch of Nazis, and blew up a railroad line and an industrial power substation with some high-grade explosives. His mission complete, Rochefoucauld was heading to the extraction point, but was idiotically sold out by some local dipshit and captured by the fucking SS. He was tossed in prison, interrogated hard by the Gestapo, and subsequently sentenced to death as a spy.

Fuck that. As the truck was driving to the site where they were going to unceremoniously cap him in the head, Rochefoucauld jumped out the back of the moving transport and ran for it with his hands still bound in front of him, somehow managing to get into the safety of the trees despite the notable problem that two pissed-off Nazis with full-auto submachine guns were spraying bullets at him as he ran. Rochefoucauld evaded the enemy patrols, doubled back into the city, ran to the local headquarters of the Gestapo (you know, the Fascist secret police force who had just sentenced him to death), stole a Nazi limousine while the driver was taking his smoke break, led the Germans on a high-speed chase through the streets of the city, crashed through an SS roadblock, ditched the car, evaded the enemy on foot through the city, and finally linked up with the local Resistance office. From there he got on a passenger train, hid in the cabinet beneath the sink in the bathroom for twelve hours, made it back to Paris, met up with some family members he'd thought had been executed, and laid low for a while to recover. Once he was back on his feet and ready to kick ass, Rochefoucauld got to Calais, took a fishing boat into the middle of the Channel, boarded a British submarine, spent three days on patrol, survived a depth charge attack from a German destroyer, arrived safely in London, hooked up with a couple hot British babes, and prepared to grab a few fresh magazines and do it all over again a few weeks later.



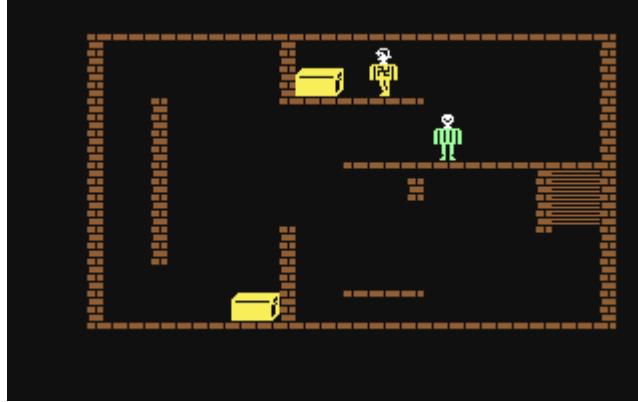
I'll just borrow this...

Rochefoucauld's next mission took place in May 1944, just one month before the D-Day landings. His task was simple – single-handedly blow up the biggest weapons and ammunition manufacturing factory in France. It was heavily-fortified, air-tight security, and patrolled by a ridiculous number of gun-toting German guards. No problem.

Robert de La Rochefoucauld's plan was ridiculously simple and ingenious – he dressed as an employee, single-handedly smuggled 90 pounds of military grade explosives into the factory by concealing it inside hollowed-out loaves of bread, set it up strategically around the structural supports of the building without being detected by security, set the timers in the middle of the night, climbed a wall, and rode off in slow motion on his fixie bicycle while the Germans' primary artillery shell manufacturing plant erupted in a massive earth-shattering detonation that rocked the countryside and could allegedly be heard from ten miles away. Rochefoucauld didn't look back at the explosion, and instead just rode to the Resistance safe house and got trashed on weapons-grade Bordeaux wine.

The next day Rochefoucauld, hungover as shit, ended up getting captured at a German checkpoint while riding his bike to the extraction point. He was tossed into a medieval fortress known as Fort du Ha (pictured above), locked in a dungeon, and left to rot while the Gestapo decided on what would be the best way to slowly torture him to death as painfully as possible.

No problem. Count Robert faked an epileptic fit, spazzing out like crazy, and when the Nazi guard came in to check on him Rochefoucauld sprung up, clubbed that asshole in the dome with a broken-off chair leg, snapped his neck while he was dazed on the ground, put on the dude's uniform, and **Castle Wolfenstein**-ed it out of there B.J. Blaskiewicz-style, walking into the main office, capping both dudes in there, then walking straight out the front door like he fucking owned the place. By the time the Nazis figured out how the fuck this one French aristocrat had managed to single-handedly escape from a goddamned medieval prison castle, Robert de La Rochefoucauld was already making his way out of the city disguised in a nun's habit.



Anyone else remember this shit?

With D-Day imminent, Rochefoucauld didn't extract back to London – he stayed in France to help the Resistance kick ass and overthrow their German overlords New Caprica-style. He carried out dozens of sabotage and espionage missions throughout the Normandy campaign (including a mission in April 45 when he blew up a coastal defense position by himself, taking out a couple guards in the process), as the Allies relentlessly pushed the Germans back to Berlin. During one mission, he was captured by the SS, dragged out to a field to be executed by firing squad, but right when the Nazis were getting ready to pull the trigger Rochefoucauld's Resistance buddies opened up on them with heavy machine guns, buying Robert time to get the fuck out of there.

Rochefoucauld had to quit adventuring after taking some mine shrapnel to the knee near the end of the war, but he still made the trip to Berlin after V-E Day and got kissed straight-on the mouth by Russian mega-badass Georgy Zhukov, making him one of the only people in history to have his face touched affectionately by the overall military commanders of Nazi Germany, Free France, and the Soviet Union.

After the war Rochefoucauld was made a Captain in the French Army, received a colorful assortment of medals for heroism, led some commando raids against the Viet Minh during the Indochina War, parachuted into the Sinai during the Suez Campaign, ran a banana company in Venezuela, lived in Cameroon, published his memoirs, and was the mayor of some town I've never heard of before. He died on May 8, 2012, at the age of 88, one of the great unsung badasses of World War II.



Sources:

[Telegraph Obit](#)

[Independent Obit](#)

[Western Australia Today Obit](#)

[Wikipedia](#)

Gustav ("Gurk") Krist (29 July 1894 – 1937) was an Austrian [adventurer](#), [prisoner-of-war](#), carpet-dealer and author. His accounts of unmonitored journeys, in a politically closed and tightly-controlled Russian, and then Soviet [Central Asia](#), offer valuable historical testimonies of the still essentially Muslim region before [Sovietization](#).

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Background](#)
- [2 Internment](#)
- [3 Various Escapes](#)
- [4 Adventurous return](#)
- [5 Final years](#)
- [6 Bibliography](#)
 - [6.1 Other Information Sources](#)
 - [6.2 External links](#)

[] Background

The [Viennese](#)-born and educated Krist worked as a technician in Germany before being mobilised as a private in the [Austro-Hungarian Army](#) on the outbreak of [World War I](#). Early in the war (November 1914) he was severely wounded and captured by the Russians at the [San river](#) defensive line on the [Eastern front](#). This led to nearly five years' internment in [Russian Turkistan](#) with other German and Austrian prisoners-of-war.



Austro-Hungarian [POWs](#) in [Russia](#); a 1915 photo by [Prokudin-Gorskii](#)

[] Internment

His first camp was sited at [Katta-Kurgan](#), a frontier town with the [Emirate of Bukhara](#) near [Samarkand](#). With a natural gift for languages, and building on some Russian and a smattering of some oriental languages he had acquired before the war, he was able to act as an interpreter. On this basis he was able to become familiar with the peoples, places and conditions of the region over the eight years he remained there. Conditions in the camps were harsh however. Many of his fellow prisoners died of [typhus](#), forced labour and starvation, or in fighting following the collapse of the Central Government. Krist kept a diary of his experiences during the whole period written on cigarette papers and secreted in a Bukharan [hubble-bubble](#) pipe to avoid it being confiscated. After the [Bolshevik revolution](#) the region was both dangerous and politically confused as Soviets, [White Army](#), [Basmachi](#) insurgents and foreign powers struggled for power.

This region of ancient [Silk Road](#) cities had been closed to foreigners on political grounds during the war. In 1917 Krist moved to Samarkand where he worked in the town. Trading with the [Sarts](#) and being able to talk to them directly he had a sharp grasp of the situation. His writings offer a valuable glimpse of various peoples and cultures in this area of Central Asia. For seventy years after him the area was seldom visited by foreign visitors unencumbered by official controls and his accounts show life before the Sovietization of the region. Krist came to love the nomadic peoples of the region as well as the Islamic architecture of Samarkand, especially the [Shah-i-Zinda](#) complex

Various Escapes

In 1916 Krist escaped Katta-Kurgan to [Tabriz](#) in [Persia](#), but was unable to return to Austria due to conditions in [Kurdistan](#) and British control of south Persia. En route he had been recaptured but jumped a prison-train and made his way via [Merv](#), Northern Afghanistan and [Meshed](#) to

Tabriz. As Tabriz was a principal centre for [Persian carpet](#) production and trade, here he began trading in wool and carpets around Persia for a native Iranian, but was captured in the Russian swoop on the German community in Tabriz.

He was now sent to [Fort Alexandovsky](#) an isolated penal-camp on the [Caspian](#) where troublesome prisoners were concentrated. The conditions here were atrocious and eventually when it was closed down following [Red Cross](#) investigations he was moved to Samarkand where he was assigned work. After the Bolsheviks freed the prisoners of war, essentially opening the camp gates and stopping the issue of rations, Krist and others were left to fend for themselves and fell into establishing various wheeling-and-dealing industries. Krist also travelled with Red Cross delegations across Turkistan and in a bizarre episode entered the service of the [Emir of Bukhara](#) who was striving to re-establish his full independence in the collapse of the Russian Empire, and helped him set up a [mint](#). This was subsequently wrecked when Krist was driven out of town by the conservative religious leaders. Krist was able to visit the town and the [Ark Citadel](#) before its destruction. [Bukhara](#) fell to the Soviets under [Mikhail Frunze](#) in September 1920 after four day's fighting which left much of the town in ruins.



Entrance to the Ark fortress.

The local [soviet](#) in Turkistan promised a train to take the ex-prisoners home in 1920 for aid in suppressing mutinous Bolshevik soldiers in Samarkand. So Krist, an [NCO](#), led a force of Austrian POWs in disarming them. After the Austrians had handed in their arms this was reneged on. In fact Krist was amongst those who were later condemned to death for counter-revolutionary activity. Luckily this was commuted to three-months imprisonment at the last minute leaving time to arrange a pardon. Krist and the remaining prisoners were repatriated late in 1921 through the [Baltic States](#) and [Germany](#), having to cross a Russia suffering from [famine](#) and [civil-war](#).



Alim Khan, Emir of Bukhara, photographed by [Prokudin-Gorskii](#) in 1911

[] Adventurous return

After returning briefly to Vienna, in 1922 he moved back to [Tabriz](#) in [Persia](#) to work again as a carpet dealer, transversing Persia for the next two years. In time even this became routine and failed to satisfy his wanderlust. A chance meeting with some [Turkmen tribesmen](#) in 1924, led him to slip across into Soviet territory, which was even then strengthening its controls along the frontier in that area.

Travelling without papers in Soviet territory was impossible. Krist said he'd "would sooner pay a call on the Devil and his mother-in-law in Hell" than attempt to travel without them. However using the [I.D.](#) card of a naturalised fellow ex-prisoner he knew in [Turkmenistan](#) he came up with a scheme to get recognition as a State Geologist of the [Uzbek Soviet](#) in Samarkand. This enabled him to explore the mountainous region to the east without hindrance.

He crossed the waterless [Kara-Kum desert](#) (the "black, or terrible, one") to the [Amu Darya](#). Always a keen observer and with his gift for striking up conversations in Deh i Nau he fell in with a [GPU](#) officer who had witnessed the death of [Enver Pasha](#). After revisiting Bukhara, Samarkand and (pre-earthquake) [Tashkent](#) he moved up the [Ferghana Valley](#). There he encountered the [Kara Kirghiz](#) (Black Kirghiz) with whom he wintered during their last annual migration into the [Pamirs](#), before the Soviet forces rounded them up and they were [collectivized](#). Working his way through modern-day [Tajikistan](#) he made his way to the Persian frontier and recrossed with some difficulty

On December 13, 2000, the seven carried out an elaborate scheme and escaped from the [John B. Connally Unit](#), a maximum-security state prison near the South Texas city of [Kenedy](#).^[9]

At the time of the breakout, the reported ringleader of the Texas Seven, 30-year-old George Rivas, was serving 18 consecutive 15-to-life sentences. Michael Anthony Rodriguez, 38, was serving a 99-to-life term, while Larry James Harper, 37, Joseph Garcia and Patrick Henry Murphy, Jr., 39, were all serving 50 year sentences. Donald Keith Newbury, the member with the longest rap sheet of the group, was serving a 99-year sentence, and the youngest member, Randy Halprin, 23, was serving a 30-year sentence for injury to a child.

Using several well-planned ploys, the seven convicts overpowered and restrained nine civilian maintenance supervisors, four correctional officers and three uninvolved inmates at

approximately 11:20 a.m. The escape occurred during the slowest period of the day (during lunch and at count time) when there was less surveillance of certain locations, such as the maintenance area. Most of these plans involved one of the offenders calling someone over, while another hit the unsuspecting person on the head from behind. Once each victim was subdued, the offenders removed some of his clothing, tied him up, gagged him and placed him in an electrical room behind a locked door.

The attackers stole clothing, credit cards, and identification from their victims. The group also impersonated prison officers on the phone and created false stories to ward off suspicion from authorities.

After this first phase, three of the group made their way to the back gate of the prison, some disguised in stolen civilian clothing. They pretended to be there to install video monitors. One guard at the gatehouse was subdued, and the trio raided the guard tower and stole numerous weapons. Meanwhile, the four offenders who stayed behind made calls to the prison tower guards to distract them. They then stole a prison maintenance pick-up truck, which they drove to the back gate of the prison, picked up their cohorts, and drove away from the prison.

Gary C. King, who wrote a *Crime Library* article about the seven, stated that some people compared this breakout to the [June 1962 Alcatraz escape](#) that took place decades earlier.^[10]

[] Crime spree



Aubrey Hawkins, the police officer killed by the Texas Seven.

The white prison truck was found in the parking lot of the [Wal-Mart](#) in Kenedy, Texas. The Texas 7 first went into [San Antonio](#) right after breaking out of the complex.^[11] Realizing that they were running out of funds, they robbed a [Radio Shack](#) in [Pearland, Texas](#) in [Greater Houston](#) the next day on December 14.^[12]

On December 19, four of the members checked into an [Econo Lodge](#) motel in [Farmers Branch, Texas](#), in the [Dallas-Fort Worth](#) area, under assumed names.^[12] They decided to rob an [Oshman's](#) Sporting Goods in nearby [Irving](#). On December 24, 2000, they held up the store and stole at least 40 guns and sets of ammunition. An off-duty employee standing outside of the store noticed the commotion inside and called police.^[13] Irving police officer Aubrey Hawkins responded to the call, arrived on the scene and was almost immediately ambushed; his autopsy

later showed that he had sustained eleven gunshots and had been run over by the fleeing gang. Hawkins died at [Parkland Memorial Hospital](#) in [Dallas](#) shortly after his arrival.^[14]

After Officer Hawkins's murder, a \$100,000 reward was offered to whoever could snare the group of criminals. The reward climbed to \$500,000 before the group was apprehended.

The Daring Escape of the Texas 7

Kenedy, Texas

Kenedy, Texas, the largest city in Karnes County, with a population of 3,763, is located in South Texas, some 62 miles southeast of San Antonio, and serves as an economic hub for the outlying agricultural and ranching area. First known as Kenedy Junction when the community was founded as a town site in 1886, its early growth was rapid due to its position on a major stop on the San Antonio and Arkansas Pass Railroad. With the growth came the bad guys, mostly gunfighters, and by the turn of the century Kenedy was being referred to as "Six Shooter Junction." With little else besides agriculture and ranching to support its economy, the area remained primarily rural in nature and did not grow as quickly as communities in other parts of the state.

By the time World War II arrived, the community became the home of the Kenedy Internment Camp. Originally built as a Conservation Corps Camp (CCC), the internment camp materialized after the U.S. Government persuaded a number of Latin American countries to send people of the German, Japanese, and Italian persuasions to the U.S. so that they could be exchanged for Allied prisoners, particularly with Japan. The first 700 or so internees arrived in April 1942, and the camp's population swelled to about 2,000 internees by the following year. The Japanese internees ran a 32-acre vegetable farm located nearby, and the German internees ran a slaughterhouse. Today a residential area occupies the site.

Nearly a century after being nicknamed "Six Shooter Junction," Kenedy still has a large number of bad guys in its midst. Few people paid them any mind, however, because everyone believed that they could be kept safely confined behind the walls of the John Connally Unit, a maximum-security prison located just outside of town and operated under the jurisdiction of the Texas Department of Criminal Justice, with little or no chance of escape. Until recently most people, with the exception of those residing in the region, hadn't even heard of Kenedy, Texas. That all changed, however, on Wednesday, December 13, 2000, when seven of society's lowest dregs decided that they would stage a brazen, commando-like prison break, a breakout that was orchestrated with such military precision and efficiency, some would say, must have taken a year or longer in the planning.

December 13 turned out to be a particularly cold day in Kenedy. The temperature remained below 30 degrees during the early morning hours, between midnight and 4 a.m., and it only warmed up to the low 40s by that afternoon. It rained more than an inch in South Texas that morning, and brought with it the threat of icy conditions. Because of the inclement weather conditions, prisoners of the Connally Unit's inside yard squad were not required to turn out for

their work duties. Other prisoners, however, whose work duties were normally performed indoors, were not affected by the weather restriction.



George Rivas mugshot

George Rivas, 30, inmate number 702267, serving 99 years for the crimes of aggravated kidnapping and burglary that he had committed in El Paso, was tired of life behind prison walls. Although he had attained trustee status and worked in the prison's maintenance department, considered one of the best duty assignments in the prison, he had become disillusioned with the grim prospect of never walking the streets a free man again and spending his nights confined to an austere eight foot by eight foot cell equipped with only a bunk, a wash basin, and a toilet. He was sick of the lousy food that was typically served in the prison's mess hall, and he was tired of hearing the metal doors slide shut when returned to his cell at lockdown. Rivas had been making plans for some time, along with six other inmates, to do something about it, and he had decided that this was the day to carry out his plans.

It was 11:20 a.m. when guards and supervisors returned 20 inmates that were assigned to the maintenance department to their housing areas and went to lunch, which Rivas and his cohorts had counted on. Earlier, Rivas and his gang had convinced Patrick Moczygemba, a maintenance supervisor, to allow them to remain behind to wax and seal the maintenance department's floors. That, they figured correctly, would be effective in keeping most of the other prisoners, as well as the guards, out of the area. They had also convinced Moczygemba to allow them to take their lunch in a "picnic spread" in the maintenance area and use food that they had purchased at the commissary instead of eating with the rest of the prison population in the dining area. It was a privilege afforded the best-behaved inmates, and Moczygemba had agreed to allow them this "luxury." Since it was not uncommon for this group of prisoners to be assigned special projects in the maintenance department, Moczygemba agreed to stay and watch Rivas, as well as Joseph Garcia, 29, Randy Halprin, 23, Larry Harper, 37, and Donald Newbury, 38, while the other supervisors went to lunch. Mark Burgess, another maintenance supervisor, allowed Patrick Murphy, 39, one of the inmates under his authority, to also remain in the department for lunch to assist the others in completing the project.



Michael Rodriguez
mugshot

Yet another inmate, Michael Rodriguez, 38, who was in on the plan, had been assigned to the inside yard squad that day but due to the inclement weather Rodriguez was forced to abide by the weather related work restriction that the rest of his squad was under. However, Rodriguez had previously made an appointment to visit the law library that particular morning, which he kept. After about an hour, he checked out at 9:40 a.m., and was subsequently, albeit inadvertently, allowed through the gate at the "A" turnout area and gained access to the maintenance area where he was not supposed to be after lying to the guards that he had been assigned to pick up trash. Rodriguez spent much of the remainder of the morning sitting on a bench just outside the maintenance department, where several prison employees later recalled seeing him. No one, except for the escapees, knew that he had positioned himself as the lookout for the other six inmates while they put their plan into motion.

By 11:30 a.m. there was no turning back. Moczygemba, dressed in a gray and black flannel shirt, Wrangler blue jeans, a Ranger belt, and brown Red Wing boots, was sitting at his desk in the maintenance office when Rivas came in and got his attention.

"You're needed in the warehouse," Rivas told him.

Without questioning Rivas, Moczygemba pushed his paperwork aside and got up from his desk. When he reached the warehouse, located on the backside of the maintenance department, the other inmates were busy clearing the floor so that they could begin waxing and sealing. Nothing seemed to be amiss, and when Moczygemba asked why he was needed, Harper joined Rivas and pointed to a large motor on the floor beneath a table.

"What should we do with that motor?" Harper asked without a trace of uneasiness in his voice as he gestured toward the motor. "We need to get it off the floor."

As Moczygemba leaned down to look at the motor, one of the inmates, brandishing an axe handle, rushed over and struck him in the head.



Joseph Garcia mugshot

Momentarily rendered unconscious, Moczygemba, dazed and blurry-eyed, began to struggle with the inmates as he regained some of his senses. Garcia, however, held a hand-made knife to the supervisor's neck.

"A few more years to our sentences don't mean anything to us," Garcia said. "We'll kill you if we need to."

Moczygemba stopped struggling, and the inmates proceeded to remove his pants and shirt. Afterward they tied his hands and legs, shoved a gag inside his mouth, and placed a pillowcase over his head. They then carried him to the electrical room at the back of the warehouse where they forced him to lie face down on the floor.

After Moczygemba had been subdued, the inmates stole his sunglasses, watch, keys, and his wallet that contained several credit cards and \$30 cash. They also took two blue Texas Department of Criminal Justice coats from his office, as well as a camouflage cap and a blue ski cap. His keys permitted them access to the sensitive tools room where they stole several pairs of wire cutting pliers, two hacksaws, a bolt cutter, and a utility knife. Rodriguez, who had been

standing guard outside the maintenance department, was allowed inside and became an active participant in Rivas's escape plan.

Too Late to Turn Back

Minutes later, at 11:45 a.m., Alan Camber, another maintenance supervisor, and Alejandro Marroquin, a corrections officer, returned from lunch and sat down at their desks inside the maintenance office. As they began talking with each other, inmates Rivas, Halprin, Harper, Murphy, and Newbury walked into their office and began talking to them as a ruse to catch them off guard. As part of the group was speaking to Marroquin, Murphy and Garcia questioned Camber regarding a part they said they needed for a vacuum cleaner. After separately gaining the two men's attention, Rivas walked behind Marroquin and grabbed him in a bear hug while, simultaneously, Garcia attacked Camber from behind.

As Marroquin struggled to break free from Rivas's grip, Halprin, Harper, and Newbury helped Rivas force Marroquin to the floor. After removing his uniform and shoes, they quickly bound the officer's hands and legs with plastic ties and duct tape, and attempted to place a gag inside his mouth. When he refused to open his mouth, Newbury struck him in the nose with a closed fist to force his mouth open so that they could place the gag inside. After robbing him of his watch, keys, identification card, and \$65 cash, they carried Marroquin to the electrical room and placed him on the floor next to Moczygemba.

Rivas, meanwhile, helped Garcia force Camber to the floor. Garcia placed a sharp-pointed object in Camber's left ear and threatened to shove it all the way in if Camber did not quit struggling. Fearing for his life, Camber did as he was told and allowed the prisoners to remove his black Wrangler jeans and his boots. After stealing his keys, a pocket-knife, and wallet containing his prison identification and \$60 cash, they bound him just like they had done with the others and dragged him into the electrical room where they slammed his head against an electrical conduit on the wall, knocking him unconscious in the process. They placed a pillowcase over his head and wrapped duct tape around it in the area of his eyes.

By noon, Manuel Segura and Mark Burgess, having finished with their lunch, were on their way back to the maintenance department. Shortly after arriving back at their offices, Rivas entered and approached Burgess.

"Mr. Moczygemba is in the warehouse and needs to see you," Rivas said.

Having no reason to disbelieve him, Burgess followed Rivas to the warehouse but saw no sign of Moczygemba. As he was about to say something, Halprin, kneeling down by the motor beneath the table, called for Burgess to take a look at it.

"We need to know what to do with this motor," Halprin said.



Randy Halprin mugshot

As Burgess walked towards Halprin, one of the other inmates struck him in the back of the head with the axe handle. He fell to the floor and momentarily lost consciousness. As he began to come around, Burgess felt something sharp at the back of his neck, as well as at his back and below his right armpit.

"This is no joke," Rivas told him. "We go home, and you go home, or not. It's up to you."

Garcia placed what appeared to be a Plexiglas shank or homemade knife in Burgess's left ear and threatened to apply force if he didn't remain quiet and cooperate. Then, just like the others, Halprin proceeded to remove Burgess's clothing. He bound his feet and hands, placed a gag inside his mouth and duct tape over his eyes, and dragged him to the electrical room to join the others. Halprin also took Burgess's wallet, which contained his driver's license, Social Security card, and a credit card. Rivas used the same ruse by calling Segura into the warehouse, and he was likewise taken captive. Segura was visibly shaken and scared, fearing for his life.

"If you calm down and stay quiet," Rivas told Segura, "nothing will happen to you."

By 12:20 p.m. the seven prisoners had been working on carrying out their escape plans for an hour when Jerry McDowell, a recreational program specialist often referred to as "the coach," walked into the maintenance department and found Rivas, Halprin, and Murphy sitting in the office, alone and unsupervised.

"Why are you guys alone?" McDowell asked when he didn't see any of the usual supervisors present.

"Mr. Moczygemba went to 18 dorm," Rivas told him. "He'll be back in a few minutes."



Patrick Murphy Jr.
mugshot

McDowell apparently believed him, and asked to check out a toolbox. Murphy volunteered to go to the warehouse to get the toolbox and the checkout log. When he returned he handed both items to Halprin, who in turn passed them to McDowell. McDowell signed the log, wrote in the time, turned and walked out with the toolbox. Thinking that perhaps he should be added to their collection of captives, Rivas followed him out of the office and asked him to come back. But McDowell refused the request and continued out of the area.

Five minutes later, at 12:25 p.m., three additional maintenance supervisors returned from lunch. Mark Garza, Martin Gilley, and Ronny Haun were talking to each other when they walked into the maintenance department, each paying the convicts little or no mind. Gilley went into the electrical shop, Garza sat down at his desk in the office, and Haun walked into the warehouse. As with the others, the convicts took them captive one at a time.

"Mr. Haun, could you please take a look at this?" Newbury asked as he pointed toward a shelf in the warehouse.

As Haun walked toward the shelf in question, Newbury grabbed him and placed him in a headlock. Rivas moved in quickly and helped Newbury force him to the floor and attempted to place a gag inside his mouth. As Haun struggled, Rivas punched him twice in the nose. Haun cried out in pain, so Rivas shoved the gag inside his mouth. As Haun continued to struggle with his attackers, another inmate held a Plexiglas knife to the back of Haun's left ear. Haun settled down and allowed the prisoners to bind his arms and legs, after which he was carried to the electrical room.

While Haun was being subdued, convict Harper walked into Garza's office and asked him to come into the warehouse to take a look at the motor beneath the table and he, too, was taken captive. Simultaneously, Garcia walked into the electrical shop where Gilley was working.

"Would you like something to eat, Mr. Gilley?" Garcia asked.

"No, thanks," Gilley responded.

Garcia walked out of the shop like everything was okay. Moments later Murphy entered the electrical shop.

"Mr. Moczygamba wants to see you in the warehouse," Murphy said.

Gilley followed Murphy, and upon entering the warehouse he was attacked by Garcia, Halprin, Newbury, and Rodriguez.

"Don't resist and you won't be harmed," Halprin told Gilley. Gilley submitted and removed his clothes, was bound and taken to the electrical room with the others.

At 12:40 p.m., an hour and twenty minutes into the escape, another maintenance supervisor, Terry Schmidt, returned from lunch escorting two inmates, David Cook and Roger Fishwick,

from the 18 dorm or cellblock to the maintenance department to have them complete a work detail. Rivas met them and, just like he had told all of the others, told Schmidt that Mr. Moczygemba needed to see him in the warehouse right away. Upon entering the warehouse, several of the escapees attacked Schmidt from behind.

While Schmidt was being subdued, Murphy went inside the maintenance office and began talking to inmates Cook and Fishwick.

"We're having a spread in the back," Murphy said. "Why don't you guys come on back and fix yourselves a plate?"

Fishwick declined the offer, but Cook immediately went to the back of the warehouse where Rivas met him and punched him in the face. Although dazed, Cook swung back at Rivas. Sensing that Rivas might need some help, one of the other inmates rushed over and struck Cook in the back of the head with the axe handle that they had been using. Murphy, meanwhile, went back to the maintenance office and forced Fishwick inside the warehouse where he, too, was struck in the back of the head with the axe handle. Cook and Fishwick were then bound like the others and taken to the electrical room.

Five minutes later, at 12:45 p.m., Randy Albert, a correctional officer, walked into the maintenance office to check out a hitch for his unit's utility vehicle, commonly referred to as a gator. Assigned to the trash crew that day, Albert needed the hitch and the gator to haul lumber. Albert was somewhat disturbed when he entered the maintenance office and saw only inmates present without any supervision. He knew that sometimes the supervisor would go to the warehouse and leave an inmate in the office area alone, a violation of the prison system's rules and regulations. He also knew that the rule was one that was often bent by many prison employees, and was not overly disturbed.

"Where is Mr. Moczygemba?" Albert asked.

"He's in the warehouse," Rivas told him.

When officer Albert entered the warehouse, he saw no sign of Moczygemba, only inmates. As he looked around he saw a handheld radio and a set of keys on the floor, and immediately sensed that something was very wrong. Before he could act, however, three of the inmates attacked him from behind and forced him to the floor. One of them placed a knife against his face, and warned him not to move. Albert grabbed the knife with his left hand and bent the blade, but was quickly struck alongside the head with an axe handle. While he was dazed, the inmates handcuffed him with his own handcuffs, bound his legs with rope and tape, and dragged him off to the electrical room.

"We cut off ears for souvenirs," Rodriguez told Albert, loudly enough that the others could hear, too. "And there's lots of ears in here!"

At 1:00 p.m., Lester Moczygamba, another maintenance supervisor with the same last name as one of his colleagues, returned to the maintenance department from the boiler room, accompanied by another inmate, Ambrosio Martinez, to dispose of a piece of metal. Upon entering the department he noticed that the prison's maintenance truck had been pulled into the shop area where the overhead door was closed and locked. He immediately thought it strange that the truck was parked there because vehicles were not normally allowed in that area unless there was a specific reason for the vehicle's use, such as going after supplies. As he was looking around the area, Newbury came up behind him brandishing a flat piece of metal, about 12 inches in length and sharpened on both ends.

"You'd better stop while you're ahead," he said to Newbury as he pushed Newbury's hand away. As Moczygamba turned toward Martinez, Newbury came up behind him and placed a handmade knife to his throat.

"I'm very serious," Newbury told him. "I don't want to hurt you, but I will if you don't lie down and cooperate."

Fearing for his life, Moczygamba complied and lay down on the floor. Newbury and Halprin then bound his hands and feet, placed a pillowcase over his head, and took him to the electrical room to join the others. As Moczygamba was being taken to the electrical room, Murphy attacked Martinez and stabbed him on his left ring finger with the homemade knife. Afterward, Rivas and Garcia bound Martinez's arms behind his back with duct tape and placed him with the others.

Satisfied that they had accounted for everyone who might cause them some problems, the seven escapees secured the electrical room door from the outside and set into motion the next phase of their daring escape plan.

Without A Hitch

Although Rivas and his gang had only been at it for an hour and 55 minutes, the passage of time as they made their bid for freedom seemed like eternity for the escapees and captives alike. But Rivas was confident that they were going to make it. His plan, so far, had gone off without a hitch. As Rivas was getting ready to put the next phase of his plot into action, however, there was substantial noise coming from behind the electrical room door where he and the others had placed their captives.

Unknown to Rivas and his cohorts, maintenance supervisor Schmidt had been able to free himself from his restraints and had begun helping the others free themselves. Garza had been carrying a pocketknife that the convicts had not found when they took him captive, and Schmidt had been able to use the knife to cut the duct tape and plastic ties from his colleagues' arms and legs. The only person he was unable to set free was officer Albert, who had been handcuffed.

The captives began feverishly tearing the electrical conduit from the walls to prepare for the possibility that their assailants might return. They used the conduit to barricade the door from the inside, and decided that it could also be used as a weapon to defend themselves if the inmates did, in fact, decide to come back.

It was soon apparent to the escapees that their captives had managed to get out of their restraints. One of the inmates attempted to enter the electrical room but found that the door, which opened *into* the room and not *outward*, had been barricaded from the inside. Realizing that for their escape to be successful, they had to make certain that their captives could not get out of the electrical room. Thinking quickly, Rivas and one of the other convicts secured a cable to the door and used a winch, also referred to as a come-a-long, to keep it closed.

Afterward, Rivas, impersonating a supervisor, telephoned the A-turnout officer, the number 3 building desk officer, and the 18-19-turnout officer and informed each that only a skeleton crew of prisoners would return to their job assignments after lunch was finished. He reasoned that by making such a phone call it would lessen scrutiny on the maintenance department and decrease their chances of being found out before making their final break for freedom.

At 1:05 p.m. a correctional officer assigned to the prison's central control area telephoned the maintenance department and asked to speak with a supervisor. It was time for one of the dozen daily head counts. Rivas answered the call, and instructed one of the other inmates to come to the phone to impersonate Patrick Moczygamba. The central control officer advised the man he thought was Patrick Moczygamba that it was time to call the lieutenant for the count. When the inmate placed the call, he was careful to include the three inmates who had been subdued with the prison employees as well as Rodriguez, who did not work in the maintenance department with Rivas and the other five, to ensure that the head count would balance. Somehow Rivas and his fellow escapees managed to remain calm and unruffled.

At 1:15 p.m. correctional officer Lou Gips, assigned to the back gate picket and radio tower, received a telephone call from someone who identified himself as a supervisor in the maintenance department. The back gate picket is a narrow fenced area reinforced with razor wire that leads to the back gate and the outside perimeter road. Gips was informed by the caller that maintenance employees would be entering the area to install monitors in the picket zone. The telephone call, as well as the description of the work order, seemed legitimate to Gips because he recalled that similar work had been recently performed at one of the other picket zones in a different area of the prison. As a result, Gips had no reason to question the work order.

Meanwhile, the three inmates who had remained behind in the maintenance area took care of business at their end, under Rivas's instructions. Rodriguez had remained outside as a lookout, while one of the other prisoners had made the necessary telephone calls to the other prison areas. Rivas, earlier, had worked feverishly building a plywood and cardboard shelter in the back of the truck, which had been brought into the compound earlier in the day in anticipation of making a trip into town in the afternoon for supplies. The shelter would be used for his

accomplices, particularly those dressed in prison whites, to hide in during the trip out of the gate and into town.

Violations of Prison Policy

At 1:20 p.m., another correctional officer, Vernon Janssen, received a telephone call similar to the one that Gips had received, presumably from a supervisor in the maintenance department. Janssen, who was assigned to the back gate sally port, a narrow, fenced-in gateway or passageway that separates the picket area and is used by inmates on foot to keep them separated from vehicles that use the picket area to gain access to other prison areas, was told that a maintenance crew would be installing monitors at the back gate area. The call seemed legitimate and, like Gips, Janssen had no reason to question the proposed work.

As all of the telephone calls were going on to set up the next phase of the escape plans, one of the captives, Alan Camber, made an attempt to let the central control officer know that something was very wrong by setting off a fire alarm from the electrical room. A flashing light in central control's control panel lit up, indicating that there was a possible fire in the maintenance department. The correctional officer on duty made several attempts to contact the department by telephone, but there was no answer. Assuming that it was a false alarm, the officer silenced it from the control panel.



Connally Unit at rear gate (AP)

Minutes later, at 1:40 p.m., Rivas and Halprin, dressed in civilian clothing taken from the maintenance supervisors, showed up at the back gate picket area in the department's gator, a utility vehicle similar to a golf cart, along with two inmates dressed in prison uniforms. The two men in prison clothing climbed off the vehicle and, following procedure so that they would not arouse suspicion, used the sally port to walk to the pedestrian gate, knowing that they were not allowed to exit through the vehicle gate. Expecting the maintenance workers because of the earlier telephone call, officer Gips opened the walk-through gate and allowed the inmates to

enter the fenced area behind the gatehouse. He then opened the vehicle gate and permitted the gator carrying Rivas and Halprin to proceed into the vehicle area. Gips failed to check the men's identification, however, a violation of prison policy.

Out of the Gate

Rivas and Halprin climbed out of the gator and brought with them monitors and electrical wire as they entered the gatehouse. They opened the back door of the gatehouse and allowed the two inmates dressed in prison whites accompanying them to enter with them. Before officer Janssen could ask for identification, one of the supposed "civilians," inmate Halprin, began examining an electrical outlet in the office area near Janssen's desk. As he was doing so, the telephone on the desk rang and Halprin answered it. Unknown to Janssen, the phone call had been placed by one of the inmates who had remained behind in the maintenance department. Posing as a maintenance supervisor, he wanted to know whether the crew had arrived at the back gate. Halprin handed the phone to Janssen and related the message, throwing Janssen off guard and further delaying any attempts that Janssen might make in requesting identification.

As Janssen leaned over to take the call, Rivas grabbed him from behind, placed him in a headlock, and forced him to the floor. It all happened so quickly that Janssen's reactions were rendered useless against his attackers. They removed his uniform pants and shoes, bound his arms and legs, taped his mouth with duct tape, and carried him into the gatehouse restroom and secured the door from the outside.

Satisfied that Janssen could not escape, Halprin walked up to the exterior gate and identified himself as a maintenance worker. Officer Gips looked around from his vantage point above the compound to make certain that there were no inmates in the area and, recalling that he had seen one of the maintenance supervisors earlier that day dressed in the same clothing and cap and thinking that this was the same person that he had seen earlier, opened the outside gate and unwittingly allowed Halprin to leave the area. He then opened the picket door, which allowed Halprin to enter the tower. As Halprin climbed the tower's stairs, the telephone rang. When Gips answered, the caller identified himself as a maintenance supervisor.

"Has the maintenance staff arrived at your location?" the caller asked. "I need to speak to one of them."

When Halprin took the phone and began talking, he removed his jacket and placed it on a chair in the tower and at the same time grabbed a .357 caliber revolver that was lying on the desk. Halprin pointed the gun at Gips.

"This is an escape," he said. "You need to cooperate if you don't want to get hurt."

Murphy, one of the inmates dressed in prison whites, yelled up at the tower to open the gate. But Halprin didn't know how to operate the controls.

"You either show me how to open the picket door and vehicle gate," Halprin told Gips while pointing the gun at him, "or I'm going to kill you."

Fearing for his life, Gips complied.

"Now where are the rest of the guns?" Halprin asked.

Gips told him that they were stored at the bottom of the tower. Halprin ordered Gips to go downstairs and show him, after which Halprin used Gips' belt and shoestrings to tie him up. Murphy then collected the guns, which consisted of a Remington 12-gauge pump-action shotgun with 14 rounds of 00 buckshot, an AR-15 Colt Sport Target Model .223-caliber with 15 rounds of ammunition, and 14 Smith & Wesson Model 67 .357 Magnum revolvers with 210 rounds of ammunition.

Halprin then placed a call to the maintenance department and told his accomplices that it was now safe to leave.

The other three inmates drove out of the maintenance garage and picked up Rivas, Halprin, Murphy, and the other inmate. Carrying the cache of weapons and ammunition taken from the guard tower, the group of escapees that would quickly become known as The Texas 7 drove out of the prison's back gate in the white Texas Department of Criminal Justice truck and down the perimeter road to freedom, launching one of the largest manhunts in U.S. history. Some would compare it to the breakout at Alcatraz decades earlier.

As the investigation into the escape began, it was quickly discovered that the escaped prisoners had left behind three notes. They wrote, in part, about the harshness of the Texas prison system and about creating a revolution within the Connally Unit, and in another quoted a line from the Kris Kristofferson song, *Me & Bobby McGee*: "Freedom's just another word for nothin' left to lose." And in a third note they boldly stated: "You haven't heard the last of us, yet...."

An Embarrassed Warden

As Rivas, Murphy, Halprin, Rodriguez, Newbury, Garcia, and Harper were speeding down the perimeter road, officer Lou Gips had managed to free himself and ran up the stairs to the top of the guard tower. He could see the prisoners in the white truck from his vantage point, and used his handheld radio to request assistance. He reported that he was watching them drive past the 19 building, just outside of the compound, heading toward the road that leads into town.

Warden Timothy B. Keith was with a police officer on prison grounds when he heard Gips' distress call over the radio. Not only was it a matter of grave concern, it was an embarrassment to have something like this occur in the presence of an outsider. On the other hand, the local police officer was able to quickly notify others in the local law enforcement community to be on the lookout for a white Texas Department of Criminal Justice (TDCJ) truck. Warden Keith immediately ordered a lockdown.

Meanwhile, correctional officer Barton Olsen, assigned to oversee the community work squad, was on his way back to the prison when he heard one of the reports about the escape on his hand-held radio. It was approximately 2 p.m., and the escapees had only been outside the prison compound for a few minutes when Olsen recalled seeing the white truck in downtown Kenedy, near City Hall. At the time he had merely thought prison employees were driving it on legitimate business, but after hearing the reports on his radio he realized it was the truck being sought. He immediately reported what he had seen with specific directions to where he had seen the truck. However, by the time the local police responded, the truck was already gone from that area.

Within the hour every available law enforcement officer in the area was mobilized and on the lookout for the seven escapees. The Karnes County Sheriff's Department was brought in, as was the Texas Highway Patrol (Department of Public Safety), and a white prison bus dropped every available officer from the prison one thousand feet apart along Texas Highway 99, which runs northeast/southeast and connects to major interstates, to stand watch and help comb the area. Motorists were stopped along every road that cut through this flat farmland area, which is punctuated by only an occasional home amid stands of barren trees that had gone dormant because of winter's chill. Identification was checked and car trunks searched as motorists headed into or out of the area.

Escape Vehicle Found

At approximately 4 p.m., as the intensive manhunt was underway, the white prison pickup was found abandoned behind a Wal-Mart store in Kenedy. The pickup was in the line of view or focal point of a nearby automated teller machine located in the parking lot, and one of the investigators suggested that they take a look at the video footage it had recorded during the time frame in which they were interested, primarily between 2 and 4 p.m. that day.

After contacting the necessary bank officials to obtain a copy of the ATM videotape, investigators noted two vehicles that were present in the tape when the prison truck arrived and left the scene shortly afterward. The quality of the images on the videotape was very poor, but one of the vehicles in question, a two-door compact car, appeared to be either a Chevrolet Cavalier or a Pontiac Sunbird, dark in color. Even though it was a very vague, general description, and despite the fact that it might not have even been the convicts' getaway car or cars, the information was circulated to police agencies throughout the state and was provided to the news media. Because there were no recent reports of stolen cars in the area, the investigators speculated that the inmates might have had outside help, someone who had dropped off the car or cars in the parking lot earlier that day. However, their trail seemed to vanish at the Kenedy Wal-Mart.

As darkness fell over this shocked and frightened community, authorities from around the state joined in the manhunt for the seven heavily armed escaped convicts.

"Everybody that we can get a hold of, every lawman in the State of Texas is looking for these guys," said Larry Todd, a spokesman for the TDCJ. "We certainly consider all of the inmates

armed and dangerous. We know that they can become desperate...they may have split up, they may have gone in pairs. We don't know. What it tells us is that the escape appears to be well-planned, from the inside of the unit to their arrival in the community." Todd stated that the investigators were looking into every possibility regarding any help that the escapees may have had, including possible help from friends and relatives.

"Right now we are combing the state for these people's relatives, their associates, their (former) places of employment, any place they frequented in the free world," said Glen Castlebury of the TDCJ. "They took people hostage, tied them up and left them locked in a room. Put your stopwatch on it. By the time the front office declared, 'By God, it was an escape,' and sounded the alarm, they were gone. They were probably outside the perimeter before the perimeter was set up...We've got seven opportunities. Someone's gonna make a mistake, and if we get one of them we may be on the road to catch all of them, even if they've broken up."

In the meantime, Castlebury remained optimistic that the seven escapees would be caught soon. He cited that out of 275 inmates who have escaped from Texas prisons over the past 16 years, only one has not been caught a man who fled to Mexico, where there is no extradition treaty with the U.S.

"It may be a week, a month or three months, but they're always back," Castlebury said.

Although the cops didn't know it yet, the Texas 7 had spent their first night of freedom in San Antonio, a little over sixty miles up the road from Kenedy. They had likely taken the most direct route, U.S. 181, to get there.

Moving On

The Texas 7 did not remain in San Antonio for long, however. With their meager cash supply quickly running out, they left the city that is famous for The Alamo and Lackland Air Force Base and headed east toward Houston where, they hoped, they could replenish it by committing a planned holdup. George Rivas had a long history of committing armed robbery, and he patterned the latest one after those that had landed him in prison. They ended up at a Radio Shack in Pearland, a Houston suburb.

Newbury and Rivas had entered the store earlier in the day, and asked employee Michael Drab, 19, about lens caps for binoculars. They also asked to use the restroom, after which they left. However, they returned just before closing time and announced to the employees and customers that they were there to rob the store. Drab, frightened over the ordeal, began to hyperventilate.

"Take deep breaths, Michael," Newbury said, reading Drab's name from his identification badge. "We're not here to hurt you...now, everyone empty out all of your pockets."

Newbury picked up the wallets, the money, and any change that had fallen onto the floor.

"Could you please give me my keys back?" asked one of the victims. "I need them for my work." Newbury agreed and handed the keys back to the man.

"How about my credit cards?" asked the same man. "Could I please have those back, too?" Newbury again agreed, and handed the man his credit cards. He handled them by their edges so that he would not leave fingerprints on them.

Meanwhile, Jim Drab, 53, a Pearland resident, was driving in his van to the local Radio Shack to pick up his son, Michael, listening to the radio. As he pulled into the parking lot at about 10 p.m. to wait for Michael, the last thing on his mind was that he might run into any of the escaped prisoners that were by now on nearly everyone's minds. But that is exactly what happened.

Rivas saw Drab park his vehicle near the store, and asked the employees inside if anyone knew him. He was told that the man was Michael's father, picking him up from work.

Drab had just turned off the engine when he saw a man, about 30, walking towards him. Drab rolled down the window to see what the man wanted. He didn't know that it was George Rivas, at least not at first.

"You here to pick up Michael?" asked the stranger, Rivas.

"Yes," Drab responded.

"Well, he's going to be a little late," Rivas said.

"Okay," Drab said, thinking that the man must be a new store employee sent out by his son. "I guess I can kill a little time and do some shopping." There were other stores nearby.

"Hey, would you mind buying me a Dr. Pepper? I'm really thirsty," Rivas asked, smiling. Drab looked at him quizzically, but agreed as Rivas handed him four quarters. Rivas then turned and walked away from the van. However, before Drab could get out of his van and go into a nearby store, Rivas returned and leaned against the door of Drab's van. Rivas was carrying a cardboard box.

"I don't know how to tell you this," Rivas said. "But you caught us in the middle of a robbery." Rivas calmly opened the box he was carrying and displayed a handgun inside of it to Drab. "Michael and the rest of the employees are in the back, tied up in the store. Nobody's going to get hurt as long as you do what I say."

Drab was stunned and at the same time frightened by Rivas's statement. He realized then that Rivas had approached him to buy a soda for him only to distract him from the robbery that was occurring, and to keep him busy for a couple of minutes. At first Drab considered faking a heart attack, or just speeding away, but decided against it because of the fact that his son was being held hostage inside. He went into the store at Rivas's urging.

Donald Newbury was still with the four store employees and two customers they had rounded up, bound, and forced into the bathroom earlier. Rivas and Newbury promised that they would not harm the frightened victims as long as they cooperated with them. Rivas and Newbury tied up Drab and forced him into the bathroom with the others. They made them all lie down on the floor. Rivas and Newbury also took Drab's wallet, then proceeded to rob the store of thousands of dollars, walkie-talkies, other electronic equipment, and police scanners. Terrified, the victims did not know whether the robbers would return and shoot them or if they would merely leave. Fortunately, they took the stolen money and equipment and left the store.

"As things started to deteriorate, I started getting scared," Doug Watson, a store employee, later told the police and news media. "I wondered if I was going to get out of the situation. I was lucky enough not to be hurt."

"You'd expect them to be more desperate, mean and cruel," Drab said later, "but you would have them over for a barbecue if you didn't know they were crooks. That's how nice they were."

Nonetheless, Drab and Watson, as well as the others, later identified Rivas and Newbury from photos shown to them by the police, and the Pearland Radio Shack robbery would mark the first confirmed sighting of members of the Texas 7 since their escape from the Connally Unit..

Drab, as well as the cops, didn't know it yet, but Rivas gave Drab's identification from his wallet to Larry Harper, who would begin using it from that day forward.

Following the Radio Shack robbery, the escaped convicts seemingly vanished into thin air. Although the police didn't know it yet, they were heading toward the Dallas-Fort Worth area while many in law enforcement figured that they would be heading south toward Mexico. The beefed-up security along the border between the U.S. and Mexico would, ultimately, be in vain.

Unknown to investigators, the Texas 7 laid low in Farmers Branch, a Dallas-Fort Worth suburb near Irving, Texas. On Tuesday, December 19, four of the fugitives checked into an Econo Lodge and registered under an assumed name. Frugal spenders, they used a coupon for a discount rate upon check-in for their first night's stay, but reserved the room for the coming week. They paid in cash and lied to the desk clerk that only four men would be staying in the room; otherwise they would have been required to rent two rooms. The desk clerk issued them a room on the ground floor next door to the motel's assistant manager. Although she did not take note of each of the guest's driver's licenses or identification cards, she did record the license number of the vehicle they were driving an older Chevrolet Suburban, and not a Cavalier or Sunbird like the authorities were looking for. Because the motel employee had no idea that she was dealing with the escaped convicts, it would be some time before that information was turned over to the police.

In the meantime the Texas 7 moved about when necessary, hiding in plain sight while plotting their next move.

Colorado

As the search for the Texas 7 continued, *America's Most Wanted* ran another segment on the elusive fugitives on Saturday, January 20, the third such airing about the case on that program. The program basically reiterated what was known about the seven escapees, and provided information about the \$500,000 reward in the hope that it would bring forward someone who had seen the convicts or knew where they were hiding.



Police sketch of Texas 7 escaped convicts
(AP)

At one point the magnitude of the Texas 7 case was compared to that of the so-called "Railroad Murderer," Angel Maturino Resendez. In that case it turned out that the suspect's family proved instrumental in bringing it to a successful conclusion, and the investigators hunting for the Texas 7 hoped for something similar in their case.

Although the investigators didn't know it yet, they were about to get what they were hoping for, except it would not be a relative of any of the Texas 7 who helped them. Wayne Holder, owner of the Coachlight RV Park in Woodland Park, Colorado, located a few miles northwest of Colorado Springs near the U.S. Air Force Academy, had watched *America's Most Wanted* on Saturday night and thought that he recognized some of the fugitives. A group of seven men had checked into the park on Monday, January 1, driving a 32-foot Pace Arrow RV and other vehicles. They had told him that they were a group of traveling Christians doing missionary work, and had seemed like such a nice, pleasant group of men. One of them had even joined a small Bible study group at the park within days of their arrival. But Holder became suspicious after seeing the latest installment of *America's Most Wanted*, and his suspicions had bothered him all night long. He wanted to make the call to the police, but he also wanted to be certain that his suspicions were correct. To be sure that he wasn't making a mistake, he fired up his computer the next day and checked out the mug shots of the Texas 7 on AMW's website. After viewing the photos for a while, there was no longer any doubt in his mind. The Texas 7 were indeed staying at his park. Astounded by what he had discovered, he didn't know what to do. If things weren't handled properly and carefully, it could get dangerous real fast, not only for him but also for others staying in the park. But he knew that he had to do the right thing.

Shortly after 4 p.m. on Sunday, January 21, Holder called 911 and reported his suspicions to Teller County Sheriff's Department Deputy Nicholas Pinell, and from there the case broke wide open.

Capture



Colorado map with Woodland Park locator
(AP)

Immediately after receiving the tip about the Texas 7 from Wade Holder, Deputy Nicholas Pinell called his superior, Sergeant Bud Bright, at home. It was Bright's day off, but he took the call. Astounded at what Pinell had told him, Bright called Sheriff Frank Fehn and the three of them agreed to meet in an hour. Fehn, 72, a retired detective from New York who had investigated 385 homicides, was anxious to get the operation underway.

Fehn called the U.S. Marshals office in Denver, which in turn contacted the Texas 7 command post in Huntsville, Texas, set up in a facility near the state's execution chamber some 1057 or so miles south of Woodland Park, Colorado. At approximately 10 p.m., a dark, overcast night caused by cloud cover that would likely bring more snow to the area overnight, Fehn and Bright took an unmarked car and drove to within 50 yards of the recreational vehicle that they believed was being used by the Texas 7 to scope out the situation from a law enforcement standpoint. The setting seemed almost ideal for the escaped convicts, or any other criminal on the run from the law. Fehn's first concern was how they were going to approach the situation from a strategic perspective and not get anyone hurt or killed in the process. There was going to be substantial risk to life and property, and he knew it.

Meanwhile, Ron Knight, 51, the violent crimes supervisor for the FBI in Denver, had gone to bed after being briefed on the situation and that Sheriff Fehn, with help from FBI field agents, were working on attempting to eliminate the men inside the RV as suspects. One of Knight's agents woke him up three hours later and informed him that because of the potential danger to civilians, as well as to law enforcement officers, it would not be tactically feasible to attempt to flush out the suspects in the present setting. There were far too many motor homes with people inside them in close proximity to the suspected RV to risk such an action. As a result, it would not be possible to eliminate, or confirm, that the men inside the Pace Arrow were the men that they were looking for. The investigators had also learned that the men drove two other vehicles in and out of the RV park. One was a brown Ford van, and the other a silver Jeep Cherokee.

Knight didn't waste any time. He got dressed, grabbed the file on the Texas 7 that he had, fortunately, taken home with him for the weekend, and left his Littleton, Colorado home and began the hour and a half drive to the Teller County Sheriff's Department.

When Knight arrived at about 4 a.m., a total of seven officers from the U.S. Marshal's office, FBI, Teller County Sheriff's Department, and neighboring El Paso County Sheriff's Department filled Sheriff Fehn's small, unassuming office to begin making plans on how they were going to deal with the seven men in the RV. Due to Knight's background as an Army Ranger in Vietnam and the fact that he had led SWAT team operations during standoffs with David Koresh and his Branch Davidian religious followers at Waco, the Freemen in Montana, and at the Ruby Ridge homestead of Randy and Vicki Weaver in Idaho, which resulted in the deaths of Vicki and their son, Sammy, the group selected Knight as the person in charge of this operation.

It was decided that all radio communications involving the operation would be cut off. The investigators were aware of the police scanners that the inmates had stolen during their robbery of the Radio Shack in Pearland, and did not want to take any chances that the seven were listening in.

Next on their agenda was to develop a plan in which they could move the SWAT teams into the RV park without being noticed. Sheriff Fehn told the group that he owned an RV, and offered its use. He volunteered to pose as a tourist, change the license plate to an out-of-state plate, and drive the teams in. When the group agreed to the plan, 10 SWAT team members from the FBI practiced the planned mobilization, particularly getting in and out of Fehn's RV quickly while carrying automatic assault rifles and wearing body armor. They appropriately code named Fehn's RV, "The Trojan Horse."

Shortly after dawn, before the assault teams were ready to move into place, Knight's cellular phone rang. One of his agents informed him that the brown Ford van was gone from where it had been observed parked earlier. One or more of the men had driven it out of the park before the SWAT teams could secure the park's perimeter. The operation had suddenly become more difficult, and potentially more dangerous. Instead of keeping the park's perimeter secure, they had to worry about when the van, carrying an undetermined number of people, might return and catch the cops as they moved into their positions.

Police sharp shooters, perhaps best described as snipers, took their positions at the top of the hill, above the RV where they believed the Texas 7 were hiding out. Just when everyone thought that matters couldn't get any worse, they did. Three men came out of the RV and hopped into the silver Jeep Cherokee parked nearby. Fehn, several hundred feet down the hill, had been notified of the suspects' movement and climbed quickly back inside his own RV to await their arrival. However, instead of stopping at the office, they drove right by everyone, out of the park, and turned west onto U.S. Highway 24.

The El Paso County Sheriff's Department's SWAT team, which had volunteered to conduct an assault on a moving vehicle if necessary, was ready. They followed several blocks behind the silver Cherokee in a black van and a white Chevrolet Tahoe sport utility vehicle. To everyone's

horror the Cherokee, soon after entering Woodland Park, turned into the parking lot of a Safeway grocery store, the site where the authorities had set up the communications outpost for their operation! They only hoped that the suspects didn't go anywhere near the rear of the store where the outpost, which consisted of a clearly marked El Paso County Sheriff's Department van and other marked vehicles, was partially hidden from view. No one had planned for this contingency, and everyone prayed that the men in the Cherokee didn't spot that arm of the operation. If they did, the situation could turn deadly very quickly, particularly with all of the women, children, and others that steadily came and went from the store and from the adjacent Burger King.

El Paso County Sheriff John Anderson watched the Cherokee and its occupants from a safe distance. The driver got out and went into the store and the other two men remained inside the vehicle. Anderson repeatedly tried to reach his colleagues on his cellular phone, but he couldn't get a signal to place the call. Dressed in civilian clothes, Anderson got out of his vehicle and walked into the parking lot to attempt to get a closer look. As he did so, the driver came out of the store and got back inside the Cherokee and drove away.

One of the SWAT team members finally got his phone to work, and he relayed the message that the Cherokee was traveling on U.S. Highway 24 again, this time heading east. The message was relayed to El Paso County Sheriff's Department SWAT team commander Terry Maketa, who in turn relayed it to Lt. Ken Moore, who began looking for the silver Cherokee farther down the highway. Thankful that the Cherokee had left the site of the busy store, the vehicle assault team continued their pursuit from a safe distance. Anderson was two cars behind the Cherokee, as were the SWAT team vehicles, when it turned into the Western convenience store and gas station and parked next to a gas pump.

In a somewhat spur-of-the-moment but fully coordinated effort, Maketa pulled his car in front of the Cherokee to block it from moving forward, and the van carrying the vehicle assault SWAT team members pulled in behind the Cherokee. Six SWAT team members jumped out of the van and trained their automatic assault rifles on the three suspects, sending horrified customers screaming and running away from the scene.

"Get your hands in the air!" shouted one of the cops.

"Don't move!" shouted another. "Get your hands up!"

Without taking their eyes off of the three men for even a second, the SWAT team advanced toward the Cherokee, their guns pointed and ready to shoot in an instant if any one of the three suspects made a move that the police perceived as threatening. One of the cops pulled the driver out of the Cherokee first and threw him onto the pavement, while another searched the fanny pack he was wearing. Not surprisingly, the fanny pack contained a handgun. The lawmen immediately recognized the driver as Joseph Garcia.

Michael Rodriguez was in the back seat, also wearing a fanny pack. When the cops pulled him out of the Cherokee, a handgun fell out and landed on the pavement with several frightening

clanks in the process. One of the SWAT team members kicked it out of the way while another one frisked Rodriguez, finding another handgun in his fanny pack in the process.



George Rivas, with hair dyed blond, captured (AP)

George Rivas, the group's ringleader, was the passenger in the front seat. As he got out of the vehicle, one of the cops continuously yelled at him to keep his hands where they could see them. Rivas stopped and glared at the police officers, and at one point his fingers began to twitch, as if he might have been considering making a break for it. For all the cops knew, he might have been planning to reach for yet another gun that they hadn't seen yet. For several moments it was tense for everyone concerned as they waited to see whether Rivas was going to go peacefully or if he was going to opt for a deadly shootout. Finally, after realizing that there was no possible chance of escaping with his life, Rivas relented. After being forced to remove their shirts, each was handcuffed and placed inside separate patrol cars and driven to the Teller County Jail.

Aftermath

With three down and four to go, the cops knew they still had their work cut out for them. They didn't know where the brown Ford van was or who was driving it, and they didn't know which, if any, of the seven were still at the RV park.

That status changed rapidly, however, when the local police intercepted a cellular phone call shortly after Rivas, Rodriguez, and Garcia were arrested and roadblocks had been set up along the highway near the RV park in an attempt to identify the remaining fugitives in the event they were trying to make a break for it in yet another vehicle. The call was clearly a tip off, a warning to one or more of the remaining fugitives.

The caller said: "They're searching cars, and they might be on to you."

At that point the police did not know who the call had been placed to, or by whom. Although attempts were made to identify the caller and their location, the effort failed because of the large number of motorists that had been stopped as a result of the roadblock and the fact that so many of them were using their cellular phones at the time. They were reasonably certain, however, that the call had come from a car near the roadblock.

Nonetheless, the cops surrounded the Pace-Arrow RV and ordered its occupants to surrender and come out peacefully. After a few moments, Randy Halprin, wounded after being shot in the foot during the shootout outside Oshman's in Irving, Texas, limped out with his hands in the air. Halprin was promptly taken into custody, and the police determined that Larry Harper, suicidal and wanting to speak to his father, remained inside, alone. However, although the police had decided to allow Harper to speak to his father, Harper shot and killed himself without ever doing so.



Pace-Arrow RV being hauled away

As they wrapped up the case, the investigators received a tip on Tuesday morning, January 23, 2001 that the brown Ford van had been spotted outside a restaurant across the street from a Holiday Inn in Colorado Springs. After converging on the area, the cops determined that Patrick Murphy, Jr. and Donald Newbury were holed up in a room at the Holiday Inn. After setting up a team of negotiators at the hotel, Murphy and Newbury agreed to give themselves up if allowed to provide a statement to a reporter on KKTU in a live broadcast. Their request was granted, and their statement consisted mostly of complaints about the Texas prison system.

Each of the remaining members of the Texas 7 were charged with capital murder in the shooting death of Officer Aubrey Hawkins, and each was systematically returned to Texas to face separate trials.



Confiscated weapons

Although the police were satisfied that they had done their job by completing their mission by getting the remaining six of the Texas 7 fugitives back behind bars where they belonged, they also knew that their work was not over yet. They still had to resolve the issue of whether the

escapees had outside help. Everyone associated with the case believed that they did receive some kind of assistance, but what and by whom?

That mystery was solved a little more than a week later. The Suburban that they had been driving was traced back to a couple in San Antonio who explained to the investigators that they had sold the vehicle to a woman named Patsy Gomez, 41, on December 11, 2000, two days before the Connally Unit breakout.

Soon after her name had surfaced, investigators searched a number of sources of public records for a Patsy Gomez. As it turned out, they found a record that showed that she had purchased another vehicle ten years earlier with another man Raul Rodriguez who had co-signed the car loan with her. They had finally found the link that they had been looking for to connect one of the relatives of the Texas 7 to aiding the inmates in the breakout. Rodriguez had, after all, visited his son, Michael, at the prison in the days preceding the breakout.

When confronted with the fact that her name had been linked to Raul Rodriguez, Gomez agreed to cooperate. She also implicated Rodriguez, a former employer and a long-time family friend, according to the police.



Raul Rodriguez,
mugshot

The investigators subsequently learned that, after allegedly conspiring with his son in prison, Raul Rodriguez had asked Gomez to help him. Investigators believe that he gave Gomez \$3,700 in cash to buy the Suburban that he had found for sale through a classified ad. According to the investigators, Gomez purchased the vehicle and drove it to the Wal-Mart parking lot, accompanied by a male friend, a man whom authorities didn't identify, who followed her in another vehicle. Once there, investigators said, Gomez placed the Suburban's title and \$300 cash beneath a rug in the vehicle, and left its keys in the tailpipe.

The investigators arrested Gomez and took her to jail, charging her with seven felony counts of permitting or facilitating the escape. Afterwards, they arrested Rodriguez at his home under identical charges. Both were taken to the Karnes County Jail.



Mugshot of Patty Gomez

At their arraignment, both handcuffed and shackled with chains, Gomez and Rodriguez were informed of the charges facing them and held on \$700,000 bail each, \$100,000 for each of the seven counts. If convicted, each faced a possible 20-year prison sentence.

George Rivas was the first of the remaining six of the Texas 7 to go to trial on a variety of charges stemming from the prison breakout, including capital murder for the shooting death of Officer Aubrey Hawkins. Following a week-long trial in which Rivas stated that he deserved to die for Hawkins' death, a jury convicted him on the capital murder charges on August 21, 2001. After additional deliberations they agreed with Rivas and sentenced him to death.



George Rivas in court with his lawyer

Although additional trials are forthcoming for the captured fugitives, as well as adjudication of the cases against Raul Rodriguez and Patsy Gomez, we must remember that under the protections of the U.S. Constitution, Larry Halprin, Donald Newbury, Patrick Murphy, Jr., Michael Rodriguez, and Joseph Garcia, regardless of the past crimes for which they have been convicted, must be presumed innocent of the charges now facing them unless or until they are convicted in a court of law. The same Constitutional protections, of course, apply to Patsy Gomez and Raul Rodriguez.

Three inmates, Tracy Alan Province (born September 18, 1967), Daniel Kelly Renwick (born August 10, 1973), and John Charles McCluskey (born February 27, 1965),^[1] were all convicted of violent crimes. Province was serving a life sentence for [murder](#) and [armed robbery](#), Renwick was serving two consecutive 22-year terms for two murders, and McCluskey was serving 15 years for attempted second-degree murder and other crimes.^{[2][3]} They escaped the prison with the help of female accomplice Casslyn Mae Welch (born July 21, 1966),^[1] a first cousin and fiancée of McCluskey who was on his visitation list and a resident of [Mesa, Arizona](#).^{[2][4]} In June, Welch was arrested outside the Kingman prison under accusations she tried to smuggle drugs in the prison.^[5] She drove a [Chevy Blazer](#) to the prison and threw small [bolt cutters](#) and lineman's

[pliers](#) over a chain-linked fence to the three prisoners.^{[2][6][7]} The inmates cut a hole in the fence, abandoned the tools, and escaped. Alarms went off without response around 9 p.m. local time related to the fence breaching activity. Having separated from the other three, Renwick fled in the getaway car. McCluskey, Province, and Welch walked to [Interstate 40](#), hijacked a semi-trailer truck stopped along a ramp, forced the drivers to the back, and left the truck in [Flagstaff](#).^[4]

At 12:47 a.m. on August 1 in [Rifle](#), Colorado, approximately 670 miles (1,080 km) from the prison, Renwick was arrested. A sheriff's deputy responding to a suspicious vehicle call spotted Renwick driving McCluskey's brown [Chevy Blazer](#). Renwick fired a gun at a police car that had joined the chase after the officer activated emergency lights. Along with the deputy's cruiser, the officer gave chase on [Interstate 70](#) eastbound, rammed Renwick's car at the parking lot of Red River Inn in Rifle, and arrested Renwick without further incident.^{[3][8]}

On April 22, 2011, Renwick was consecutively sentenced to 48 years in Colorado state prison for attempted plus 12 more for shooting at other law enforcement personnel. The escape charges from the for-profit prison in Mohave were dropped, but he has 32 years left to serve on his original two Arizona second degree murder convictions, should he be released from the Colorado prison system.^[9]

Province was apprehended on August 8 in [Meeteetse, Wyoming](#), near [Yellowstone National Park](#), hitchhiking on the highway, carrying a sign reading "[Casper](#)" and a handgun. The previous day, Province visited the Meeteetse Community Church the day prior and sang along with its congregation, and one worshipper stated that Province looked like the many local hitchhikers. The pastor of the church paid Province \$40 and gave him a jacket for mowing the church lawn.^[10] Province told a news reporter that he escaped from prison because he did not want to die there.^[11]

McCluskey and Welch were believed to have headed to [Canada](#) and were seen in [Billings, Montana](#) on August 6.^[4] At 7 p.m. on August 19, 2010, a tactical-response team of [Apache County, Arizona](#) sheriff's deputies, with the help of the Arizona Department of Public Safety and [United States Forest Service](#), captured the duo at a campground near Sunrise Ski Resort. A U.S. Forest Service employee approached what he thought was an unattended fire, found a [Nissan Sentra](#) backed into trees, and discovered through its license plate that the license plate was stolen from a vehicle near where the elderly couple was murdered in New Mexico. The Forest Service reported the sighting to the [United States Marshals](#) command post in [Phoenix](#).^[5]

Escape

Ignoring the growing criticism from the photograph, Estill set about preparing his case against Dillinger who was arraigned on February 9, 1934. The tiny courtroom was mobbed with reporters and photographers. Security was beefed up in the belief that the remaining Dillinger gang member still at large, Red Hamilton, was putting his own gang together to come and spring his partner. In addition to the local security already in place, several members of the Indiana National Guard were requested to help out.



John Dillinger's arsenal (CORBIS)

Before Dillinger even made it to Crown Point, the wheels of corruption were turning. Meyer Bogue had been a fellow inmate of Dillinger's at Michigan City prison. Invited to escape with the others during the September 1933 jailbreak, Bogue declined, having just three months left on his sentence. Bogue knew Hymie Cohen and Sonny Sheetz, leaders of the East Chicago, Indiana underworld. It was rumored that the two were familiar with Dillinger. In {Dillinger: The Untold Story}, a book in which William J. Helmer completes the original work of George Russell Girardin, the writers claim, Dillinger had bought protection from him (Sheetz) in the past, and made payment from bank robberies that were arranged through East Chicago.



Dillinger sleeps on the train, in police custody, coming back from the west (CORBIS)

After Dillinger was captured in Tucson, Bogue approached Chicago attorney Louis Piquette and told him, I think I can get you to be Dillinger's lawyer. I'm sure Dillinger doesn't have a lawyer and he'll be glad to take whoever they (Cohen and Sheetz) recommend. After Dillinger arrived at Crown Point, Sam Cahoon, a trusty at the prison, passed a business card to him. Call no attorney but this one. Gang raising necessary funds for defense. The name of the attorney on the card Louis Piquette.

The son of a blacksmith, Piquette was described as a short, chubby, middle-aged

man of vitality and charm. His iron-gray hair was styled into a three-inch high pompadour. He never attended law school, but instead was self-taught as he waited tables and tended bar. He failed the Illinois bar exam more than a dozen times before he finally passed. He then served a short term as an assistant prosecutor for the city of Chicago. His talent was in his courtroom performances where his magnetic personality, melodramatic speeches, and emotional appeals fascinated jurors. A friend once advised him to stop taking on so many criminal clients. Why? Piquett asked him, Theyre the only ones who have money these days.

In the northwest corner of Indiana there are three counties, which touch the southern tip of Lake Michigan. The western-most is Lake County, which nestles up to Cook County just across the border in Illinois. Lake County contains the cities of East Chicago and Gary. Twenty miles south, almost smack dab in the center of the county is the city of Crown Point with its prison. In the eastern-most county, bordering the lake, wrapped 30 miles away from Gary, is Michigan City.

During the February 9 arraignment Piquette asked for and received a delay of 30 days to prepare his case. Judge William Murray, assigned to hear the case, set a March 12 date for the trial to begin. On February 12 Prosecutor Estill requested that Dillinger be held at Michigan City prison until the trial started. After an impassioned argument, Judge Murray refused to have Dillinger removed from Crown Point. It was a decision that would come back to haunt him.

On March 3, the first of three events occurred which would etch the name of John Dillinger in the criminal history books for all time. The facts surrounding this event are questionable. However, on that morning Dillinger secured a gun, whether it was a wooden gun he carved himself, a wooden gun smuggled into him, or possibly even a real gun smuggled into him will never be known.

It was a local joke in Crown Point that even the fabled Houdini could not get out of the escape-proof Crown Point prison, but Dillinger was in the process of doing just that. At 9:00 o'clock in the morning, using the wooden gun, he began his methodical escape by locking up several trusties, a jail attendant, a deputy sheriff, and the prison warden each time getting valuable information from them about the prisons layout. Dillinger knew he couldnt go far with the firepower he had and using the deputy sheriff, Ernest Blunk, he now went to the wardens office where he took two Thompson sub-machine guns.



Herbert Youngblood
(CORBIS)

Dillinger now marched back toward the cells with Blunk, another trusty and a national guardsman. Once back at the cells Dillinger asked the prisoners there if any wanted to go with him. A black man, Herbert Youngblood, awaiting trial for murder, elected to go and was handed one of the machineguns. Two other inmates also accepted the invitation and the group headed off to the rear of the prison where the garage was located. On the way there, Dillinger collected three vigilante farmers, who had volunteered their efforts to guard the famous prisoner. Once in the garage, the two would-be escapee inmates got cold feet and locked themselves in a washroom with the three farmers.

In the garage, Dillinger captured an assortment of people including the jail cook, kitchen helpers, several more trusties and the wardens mother-in-law. While Youngblood held the group at gunpoint, Dillinger sought out an automobile for the escape. Asking garage mechanic Edward Saager which car was the fastest, he was told it was the sheriffs automobile. After pulling the ignition wires from the other cars in the garage, Dillinger, Youngblood, deputy sheriff Blunk and the mechanic Saager climbed into Sheriff Lillian Holleys car. With Blunk driving, the four calmly left the prison.

The most celebrated prisoner in the country had escaped from the escape-proof prison without one shot being fired. After getting out of town, Dillinger ordered Blunk to stop. He handed Saager \$4 so the two could get back to town and apologized that he didnt have more to spare. Before they drove off, Dillinger looked at the two hostages standing in the road. He grinned and said, Ill remember you at Christmas. It was a promise Dillinger wouldnt keep.



J. Edgar Hoover, addresses a conference on crime (CORBIS)

Dillinger made one mistake though, by driving the stolen sheriffs car across state lines, from Indiana to Illinois, he had violated a federal law, thus inviting J. Edgar Hoovers FBI to join the manhunt.

In Chicago, Captain John Stege, who had just disbanded the Dillinger Squad, was alerted to be on the lookout for the sheriffs automobile. It seems only fitting that in a climax to the days events that the wrong license plate number was passed along to the police Captain by an excited Crown Point official. In the wake of Dillingers escape from Crown Point, Judge Murray impaneled a grand jury to investigate. On March 8, he discharged them after discovering that the foreman was the owner of the garage from which Dillinger stole Sheriff Holleys automobile, and was the employer of Edwin Saager. A second grand jury was convened and, on April 3, they returned with their results. Paramount in their findings was the fact that, Judge Murrays failure to permit the transfer of Dillinger to Michigan City was the prime cause for the escape! The jurors other findings concluded the escape was successful due to: (1) the coolness, alertness and reputation of Dillinger himself; (2) the help of Herbert Youngblood; (3) laxity of jail officials; (4) collusion of Cahoon and Blunk (both of whom were indicted); (5) an indifferent and unreliable trusty working as a turnkey.

Blunk had wavered from his tale of Dillinger having a wooden gun and later claimed that is was a real gun. The jurors decided that, at least when the jailbreak began, that the gun was made of wood. Blunk quickly made the observation, I think that Im going to be made the goat in this case.

Judge Murray was incensed. In *Dillinger: A Short and Violent Life*, by author

Robert Cromie and the late Dillinger historian, Joseph Pinkston, they reveal:

Judge Murray...demanded to know why he should have paid any heed to a prosecutor who had just finished hugging Dillinger.

Judge Murray also pointed out that he had no power to transfer Dillinger unless the prisoners life was endangered by mob violence. He added, The report is worded in language not contemplated in law. It is lacking in the respect due courts of justice and judicial officers, and is particularly disrespectful to this particular court and its judge, and contains language which scandalizes the court.

The judge promptly initiated contempt proceedings against the entire grand jury. A few days later he directed that the findings of the grand jury be expunged and he discharged the members. Blunk and Cahoon were eventually exonerated.

The town itself was left to carry out a sentence of ridicule from the rest of the country. Letters arrived at the Crown Point post office addressed to Wooden Gun, Indiana and Clown Point, Indiana.

Another Escape

Sometime before a nighttime bed check on April 29, 2008, Colton Harris-Moore slipped out a window at his halfway house and disappeared. He has been on the run for the almost two years since then.

After Harris-Moore's escape from Griffin Home, where he was serving time for burglarizing homes on Camano Island, police on the island noticed something alarming. There were suddenly a lot more robberies. There were 41 burglaries on the small island in the months after Harris-Moore's escape.

Investigators suspected the teen had come home and was camping in the woods again, living off items he stole from houses and cars. The Island County Sheriff's Office organized search parties and stakeouts and even used a tracking dog trying to find Harris-Moore. All attempts failed.

In July 2008, a public meeting was held for the community to voice their concerns and frustrations that a fugitive teenager seemed to have free rein in a place where people previously felt safe and could leave their doors unlocked.

Locals and police have referred to Colton Harris-Moore as a "feral kid" who has adjusted to living between the wilderness and civilization.

Carol Star, whose house is next door to Pam Kohler's trailer, says Harris-Moore has burglarized her house three times. On one occasion, police say, the teen stole her Mercedes-Benz C-Class while she was on vacation.

"I'm afraid he's going to break in when I'm there," Star told *The Seattle Times*. "You feel so violated."

At almost midnight on July 17, 2008, a sheriff's deputy encountered Star's Mercedes near a grocery store and tried to stop it. According to witnesses, Colton Harris-Moore jumped from the moving car and disappeared into the woods. The car continued to roll, almost hitting a propane tank and coming to rest near a 20-foot cliff.

Left behind in the car was a piece of evidence that captivated not just investigators but the media, too.

The Artist and the Killer: Frank Bender and Hans Vorhauer

BY Anthony Bruno

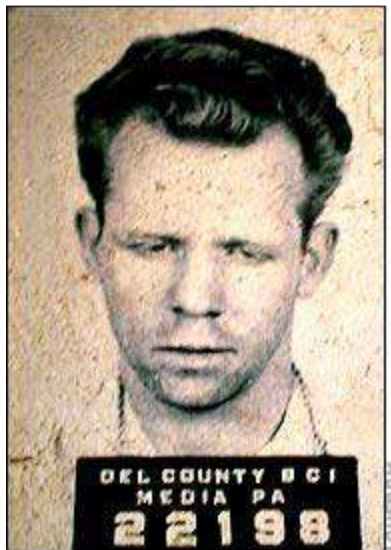
[Tweet](#)

[Follow @crimelibrary](#)

[share](#)

[Comments](#)

Almost Supernatural



Vorhauer, age 31

On November 17, 1983, methamphetamine dealer and vicious career criminal Hans Vorhauer escaped from Pennsylvania's Graterford Prison, a state maximum-security facility 15 miles northwest of Philadelphia. Vorhauer reputedly had the highest IQ of any prisoner ever to have entered the Pennsylvania corrections system. Vorhauer and fellow inmate Robert Nauss escaped together. Nauss, a leader of the outlaw biker gang the Warlocks, had been convicted of strangling his beauty-queen girlfriend in 1977. Vorhauer had come up with the escape plan after he and Nauss had begun working together in the prison wood shop where inmates constructed made-to-order furniture. Vorhauer arranged to have a friend on the outside order a large breakfront, which Vorhauer and Nauss volunteered to make. They made it out of lightweight pine but stained to look like oak. When it was finished, the two men crammed themselves into the base of the breakfront and had another prisoner nail them in.



Breakfront, similar piece used in escape

When the breakfront was carried out of the prison and loaded on the back of a pickup truck for delivery, no one questioned its cumbersome weight, assuming that it was made of heavy oak. Though Vorhauer was never convicted of murder, police believed he was responsible for 17 contract killings. He was unusually good at covering his tracks, never leaving evidence that could bring charges against him.

Besides being a freelance hitman, Vorhauer had been involved in armed burglaries, extortion plots, and large-scale drug deals. He had an innate taste for bloodshed. His father was a Nazi SS officer, and apparently the apple hadn't fallen far from the tree. Vorhauer once rigged a .22 pistol with a homemade silencer inside an attaché case. A ring trigger on the hand fired the weapon. He allegedly tested this device inside a crowded supermarket, riddling a display of Wheaties boxes with repeated gunfire. No one heard a thing.



Robert Nauss

Vorhauer and Nauss soon split up after they escaped from Graterford, and three years later Vorhauer was still at large. In the winter of 1986, law enforcement officials believed Vorhauer was in Philadelphia where his wife, Phyllis, lived. Knowing how deadly he was, they were determined to get him off the streets. But Vorhauer was slippery. Whenever police followed up on a tip regarding his whereabouts, Vorhauer was long gone by the time they got there. Several informers swore that they'd seen him around town, but to police he was invisible. His ability to disappear was almost supernatural.

Escape from Oregon



Panzram as Jeff Baldwin

1915

(courtesy Bureau of Prisons)

Wherever he went, Panzram stole for food, clothes, money and guns. For months during the year 1915, he traveled up and down the Columbia River in the Pacific Northwest, through Washington, Idaho, Nebraska and South Dakota. Panzram was a veteran of the rails. On the night of June 1, 1915, he broke into a house in the town of Astoria, Oregon. He lifted a suit of clothes and other articles that weren't worth more than \$20. He was later arrested when he tried to sell a stolen watch. He was indicted for Larceny in a Dwelling and later, after a promise by the local D.A. to go easy on him, pleaded guilty. He was sentenced, as "Jefferson Baldwin," to seven years at the Oregon State Penitentiary in Salem.

On June 24, 1915, he arrived at the prison and became inmate #7390. In the admission record, he listed his place of birth as Alabama and his occupation as "thief." On the same page, it was noted that he used two other names: Jefferson Davis and Jeff Rhodes. Guards immediately took notice of the prisoner's surly, uncooperative attitude. But they weren't concerned with uncooperative inmates. Salem prison was notorious in the northwest for punishing its prisoners by abuse and torture. The warden at that time was a tough, crude, former sheriff named Harry Minto, who believed whole-heartedly in keeping the inmates in line by force. Whipping, hosing, beatings, starvation and isolation were part and parcel of life at Salem.



Reward poster for Jeff Baldwin when he escaped from Oregon State Prison (Mark Gado's collection)

Minto endorsed the Auburn system by which prisoners would be punished even if they uttered one word out of line. They were frequently shackled to walls and hung from rafters for hours, sometimes days at a time. Inmates were whipped with the terrible "cat-o-nine-tails," a brutish device that caused appalling injury to a man's back. "I swore I would never do that seven years," Panzram said, "and I defied the warden and all his officers to make me. The warden swore I would do every damned day or he would kill me."

He got into trouble almost immediately for rule violations, and punishment became routine. Panzram's record of discipline shows that on January 1, 1916, he was hung "10 hours a day for two days for hammering, rising a disturbance in cell and cursing an officer." A month later, on February 27, he was hoisted up "12 hours at door for going on another tier from where he cells and having a dangerous weapon, a billie or a sap." He was later found to be in possession of a blackjack and thrown into the "dungeons" for three weeks with only bread and water. "They stripped us naked and chained us up to a door," he said, "and then turned the fire hose on us until we were black and blue and half blind."

But still, Panzram continued his combative behavior. He started several fires and burned down three buildings at different times. He spent 61 days in solitary where he groped around in the

dark and ate cockroaches for food. In early 1917, Panzram helped another inmate, named Otto Hooker, escape from the prison. Hooker later shot and killed Warden Minto when he accidentally ran into the warden in a nearby town. The killing sparked a public outcry, and conditions at the Oregon State Penitentiary became even worse.



Oregon State Prison, Salem, today
(Bureau of Prisons)

By September 1917, Panzram's reputation was well known both inside the penitentiary and out. He had made several escape attempts by cutting through the bars in his cell. On September 18, 1917, he finally succeeded and escaped from the prison. He broke into a house in the town of Tangent stealing clothes, food, money and a loaded .38 caliber handgun. A few days later, a local cop recognized Panzram from a wanted poster and tried to arrest him. Panzram pulled out his gun and opened fire on the sheriff's deputy. "I fired and fought until my gun was empty of bullets and I was empty of courage," he later said. But he ran out of ammunition and was captured. On the way to the jail, Panzram tried to grab the cop's gun and a fierce struggle took place inside the police car. The rear windows were kicked out and several shots were fired through the roof as the men battled for the officer's handgun. Panzram was beaten bloody and unconscious. He was brought back to Salem and dumped into solitary. But not for long.

Incredibly, on May 12, 1918, Panzram escaped from Oregon Prison again. He sawed through the window bars using a hacksaw blade and jumped down off the prison walls. As frantic guards fired hundreds of rounds at the fleeing convict, Panzram made it into the woods and disappeared from sight. He later hopped a freight train heading east and left the Pacific Northwest forever. He changed his name to John O'Leary and shaved his mustache. Slowly, methodically, still burglarizing and burning churches along the way, Panzram headed for the East Coast.

[**Florida Fugitive Inmate Shot Dead in Texas, Questions Remain**](#)

February 19, 2013 4:33 PM By Cora Van Olson

[Tweet](#)

[Follow @crimelibrary](#)

[share](#)

Comments

TAGS >

- [alberto morales,](#)
- [florida,](#)
- [fugitive,](#)
- [manhunt](#)



Alberto Morales

Fugitive prisoner Alberto Morales, 42, who escaped from Miami-Dade County detectives near the Dallas-Fort Worth International Airport on February 11, 2013, was shot dead by officers in Grapevine, Texas, early on February 16. Police received numerous tips regarding Morales' movements, but had trouble locating the convict after he attacked one of the detectives transporting him with a shiv and escaped from a Walmart parking lot.

Police finally caught up with the Morales, who had sworn that he would never return to captivity, after [receiving a 911 call from Teresa and Brian Parker](#) about a break in. The Parkers returned home at about 10 p.m. on February 15 to find a broken window and the bedroom door locked. Teresa parker called 911 saying that the intruder could still be in the home. The dispatcher told them to get out, get into their vehicle and lock the doors. Police arrived and on searching the home found several items missing including clothing and jewelry. They caught up with Morales after midnight in a wooded area controlled by the Army Corps of Engineers near the southern end of Grapevine Lake. Armed officers told Morales to get down on the ground with his hands up, but he reportedly rushed them with sticks in his hands, no other weapon, was shot down at 12:25 a.m. It is assume that he got his shackles off at some point after his escape, but that detail is not mentioned in the reports at this time. Some items of jewelry were recovered in the woods and the clothes Morales was wearing are believed to have belonged to Brian Parker.

Though the manhunt is over, the investigation continues as questions remain about Morales' obviously planned escape. Morales had been extradited from Nevada to Florida where he pleaded guilty to charges and was sentenced to ten years to run concurrently with the 30-year

sentence he was serving in Nevada for rape. When it came time to return him to Nevada, Morales was shackled and loaded onto a plane with two detectives. Morales, who is believed to have suffered from mental illness, became disruptive enough on the flight that when the plane landed in Dallas he was removed. Deputies opted to complete his transfer by car.

They rented a car at the airport, but required a third deputy to accompany them on their cross-county drive. They decided to wait it out at the Walmart parking lot in Grapevine, which is where Morales took out the shiv he had with him and stabbed Miami-Dade Detective Jaime Pardinias in the back, chest and neck, making his escape — with his shackles on.

Miami-Dade detectives reportedly [did not alert police in Grapevine](#) to their presence until after the escape. Had they done so, Morales, who was considered a dangerous sex offender, could possibly have been held in a cell until the third Florida detective arrived. Also, the detectives kept Morales in shackles rather than using more secure plastic handcuffs. Also, it is also unclear why Morales was in civilian attire and how he managed to hold onto the shiv that he had prepared for the attack. It would seem that both airport security and Florida police failed to effectively search the prisoner. Luckily no one else was hurt in the escape and manhunt for Morales.

[Manhunt Underway for Detroit Prisoner who Used Identity Scam to Escape](#)

January 30, 2013 5:53 PM By Cora Van Olson

[Tweet](#)

[Follow @crimelibrary](#)

share

[Comments](#)

TAGS >

- [identity theft,](#)
- [michigan,](#)
- [prison escape,](#)
- [rocky marquez](#)



Rocky Marquez

Authorities in Detroit are searching for Rocky Marquez, 34, who has escaped from prison by switching identity wristbands with a prisoner scheduled to be released on bond. On January 20, 2013, Marquez [reportedly](#) walked right out the front door of the Wayne County jail. Nobody noticed that he was missing for five days. Marquez, whose rap sheet includes drug smuggling, perjury and witness tampering, was awaiting extradition to Arizona where he used the same tactic to escape from Phoenix's Lower Buckeye Jail in May 2012.

It seems that in each case Marquez found a prisoner scheduled to be released on bond, who had a similar look and build. He then simply assumed that prisoner's identity and, when the time came for that prisoner's release, Marquez was released instead. According to Deputy U.S. Marshal Frederick J. Freeman, "[He's smarter than your average criminal](#). He's somehow getting inmates to cooperate with him to use their identities to walk out of jail," though why anyone about to be released would willingly trade identities with Marquez is the question currently baffling prison authorities.

Freeman is confident that Marquez will soon be behind bars again, "Mr. Marquez does have a bit of a head start, but we have the best of the best working on this case and I'm confident Rocky will be put behind bars." While Marshalls carry on the manhunt, prison officials will continue their investigation into the events surrounding Marquez' escape to keep others from escaping this way – and to keep Marquez in custody if and when they catch him.

The last time he was apprehended Marquez was armed with a loaded AK-47. He should be considered armed and dangerous. Anyone with any knowledge of his whereabouts should not try to apprehend him, but should instead contact police.

Escape From Fishkill



Fishkill Correctional Facility, main building

Garrow spent the first few years of incarceration at Dannemora and Auburn Prison. In both institutions, he claimed that he received unfair treatment and was the victim of police brutality at the hands of the New York State Police. He also said that he was partially paralyzed by gunshot wounds he suffered during his capture in 1973. As a result, Garrow filed a \$10 million lawsuit against New York State citing these and other complaints. Perhaps due to his lawsuit, Garrow was transferred from Dannemora to the less secure facility at Fishkill, New York, where living conditions were a vast improvement over what he was accustomed to at Clinton. The Corrections Department later said that the inmate's physical condition was the only issue in the transfer. "No consideration other than the fact we had an immobile inmate," was the motivating factor in the transfer, a deputy commissioner told the press in early September 1978.

Fishkill Correctional Facility is a sprawling complex located in the rolling hills outside the village of Fishkill in Dutchess County. It was built in 1896 on 600 acres of farmland and became a medium-security prison during the 1960s. Fishkill also contained the notorious Matteawan State Hospital for the Criminally Insane where, until the 1970s, inmates were sometimes incarcerated for decades for minor infractions. But the prison was the target of a great deal of criticism during this time for its security procedures. From 1973 to 1978, an incredible 32 inmates had escaped from the prison. Due to his medical condition, Garrow was placed in a housing unit called the Elderly and Handicapped section, better known as the E & H building.

On the night of September 8, 1978, Garrow placed a dummy that he had constructed from rags and wire onto his cell bed. He tucked a .32-caliber automatic handgun into his waistband and walked out the front door of his cell. An investigation later indicated the gun was smuggled into Fishkill prison in the bottom of a bucket of fried chicken. (Garrow's 18-year-old son, two inmates and an inmate's wife were ultimately arrested and charged for the incident.) Because he was held in the E & H building, where, security was not as good as it should have been, Garrow was able to walk out of the ward unchallenged. He exited the building and carefully made his way to the chain link fence that surrounded the facility. He managed to climb the fence and drop down to the other side. Then he crawled to the edge of the woods several hundred yards away from the E & H building. Once he had reached an area where he felt safe hidden away in the underbrush, he secreted himself in a spot where he could observe the prison.

By morning, guards discovered Garrow missing. Retired Correction Lieutenant Larry Lisotta, 65, recalled the event well. "We couldn't believe it. The most notorious prisoner in the system had escaped right under the noses of the guards. It was hard to take," he said recently. "The entire staff went on alert. The Corrections Emergency Response Team (CERT.) was called out from Greenhaven," Lt. Lisotta said. The CERT was a special squad made up of specially trained personnel to handle prison emergencies, such as riots, hard to control inmates and escapes. Police also responded and surrounded the area. Officials believed that Garrow had already left the area and was on his way to the Adirondacks where he felt safe. "The feeling was that he was already in Syracuse," said Lt. Lisotta. "We searched every inch of the area around Fishkill Prison. But it was a big area and covered with forests. Also right next to the prison was a major interstate highway, route 84 where he could have hijacked a car somehow. But the truth was we didn't know where he was."

The public was outraged and scared, especially the communities near the prison facility. Garrow's crimes and his propensity for violence were well known. "I can't think of anybody more dangerous to have running around loose," a police representative told the press.

Search teams from nearby police departments flooded into western Dutchess County. Hundreds of cops, assisted by a wide variety of equipment, aircraft, police vehicles and dogs, descended upon the area around Fishkill Correctional Facility. All stolen car reports in nearby communities were meticulously investigated. Roadblocks were set up everywhere. But unknown to anyone at the time, Garrow was less than two hundred yards away from the prison. He had found a hole in the ground, crawled in and covered himself with brush and leaves. For three days, he lay there, not daring to make a sound, studying the activity around him. More than once, searchers came within a few feet of where he was hiding. Still, he did not flinch.



Fishkill prison tree line where Garrow hid.

On the third day of Garrow's escape, a CERT team member made a pivotal discovery. Not far from the prison walls, a correction officer located a portable transistor radio. Officials quickly traced the serial number of the radio and found it belonged to Garrow. "That radio convinced us that he was still near the prison," said Lt. Lisotta, "because we knew we had searched that area previously and no radio was found."

On September 11, at about 6 p.m., Greenhaven Correction Officer Dominic Arena, 25, performed another search through the fields on the western edge of the prison.. This area was just a few yards from a chain link fence that encompasses the grounds of Fishkill prison. It was also just a stone's throw from Interstate 84, where thousands of cars passed by every day. "We had an idea

that someone could pull over and pick up Garrow very easily without being caught. I think that whoever it was probably drove by several times but was afraid to stop because we had so many officers out searching the area," said Lt. Lisotta recently. As Officer Arena walked slowly through the bush that afternoon, he heard a quick movement a few feet away. At first he thought it might have been an animal. Suddenly, Robert Garrow emerged from his hiding place and began firing his automatic handgun. Arena was hit in the leg by the first blast and fell to the ground. The CERT. team opened up with shotguns, rifles and handguns. Garrow was hit with a barrage of gunfire. He was sent reeling backwards and was dead before he hit the ground. An autopsy later determined that three .38-caliber bullets had pierced his heart and lungs.

The Sly and Slippery Hans Kieffer



The George Cross (*Wikimedia Commons*)

SS Officer Hans Kieffer was someone Vera had long wished to interview. Kieffer had run a special German prison at Avenue Foch in Paris, France. At the Avenue Foch prison, suspected spies were kept in relatively comfortable circumstances in the hope that they could be persuaded to cooperate. Some SOE agents had spoken fondly of Kieffer. However, Vera had no illusions about his true character. She knew that he also oversaw a "house prison" at Place des Etats-Unis, also in Paris, in which his subordinates tried to convince agents to talk through brutal methods such as being submerged in ice-cold water or viciously whipped.

Kieffer perpetrated a special atrocity a few weeks after D-Day and just before Paris was liberated. A group of Special Air Service soldiers parachuted into France where they were immediately apprehended by SS officers who expected them because of intercepted radio communications. Four SAS men were killed in a shoot-out but the others, including three wounded, were taken prisoner. Place des Etats-Unis was extremely overcrowded so Kieffer did not believe he could hold them there. He radioed SS superiors in Berlin. They ordered him to shoot the men.

Seven SAS men were driven to a forest to be shot. Two escaped. The remaining five were murdered.

While Kieffer was at large, Vera interrogated a colleague of his who told her Kieffer was working as a caretaker in a hotel in Garmisch, a resort town in Germany. The tip checked out when the Kieffer was apprehended there.

When Vera interrogated Kieffer, he recognized her name since he was familiar with SOE officers of the French Section.

Vera displayed a photograph of Noor. Kieffer instantly recognized it as that of a prisoner he knew as Madeleine. Kieffer seemed annoyed as he recalled, "She told us nothing. We could not rely on anything she said. I cannot remember her real name but I am sure in this she also lied to us."

Vera was pleased at Kieffer's annoyance as it indicated that Noor had seen through the Nazi's ingratiating manner. He told of an incident in which Noor and two men had broken through cell bars and climbed onto the building's roof. Using blankets and sheets they had torn and knotted together, the three shimmied down to the third-story balcony of the next-door building. There they broke a window and entered an apartment.

However, guards caught the group before they could get far. Infuriated, Kieffer ordered that they be stood against a wall in Avenue Foch to be shot. However, he did not give the order for the actual shooting and instead commanded they be taken back to their cells. Later, Kieffer

demanded each give a "word of honor" that there would be no more escape attempts. Noor refused. One of the men refused and the other complied.

Kieffer ordered Noor and the man who would not promise to try to escape to be taken to Germany. He stated, "She went to Karlsruhe and later I heard she had been sent to Pforzheim because the prison in Karlsruhe was overfull." When he sent Noor to Germany, he asked that she be kept in restraints to prevent another escape attempt. He later sent another group of female British agents to Karlsruhe.

Vera informed Kieffer that Noor and the others he sent to Karlsruhe had been taken to concentration camps and killed.

Startled, Kieffer burst into tears.

"Kieffer, if one of us is going to cry, it is going to be me," Vera said. "You will please stop this comedy."

Kieffer's recollections confirmed what Vera had learned from other sources of Noor's courage. Noor had resolutely refused to divulge information to the enemy and dared to escape. Vera wanted Noor to receive the highest award Britain offered for bravery: the George Cross.

The George Cross was posthumously awarded to Noor Inayat Khan in 1949.

Escape Hazzard

March 05, 2010 2:57 PM | [permalink](#)



Posted by

[Tweet](#)

[share](#)

Can you say "Hee Haw?"



Inmate Darrell Smith, pictured, attempted to escape custody and made so many dumb moves that one deputy said, " It was just like [The Dukes of Hazzard.](#)"

Only Smith is not [Luke Duke](#), and he wasn't driving [The General Lee](#).

While leaving the local courthouse on Monday, Smith dodged a correctional deputy, ran through town, found a grain truck with the keys in it and proceeded to drive at high speeds for 20 miles to a local lake, with two officers in hot pursuit, according to authorities in Ephrata, WA.

And *then* Smith allegedly made a wild move.

He allegedly took the stolen truck off-road, [making several jumps down the hill with all four tires flying more than three feet in the air.](#)

Smith pulled over and ran into the lake still clad with this handcuffs and prison jumpsuit, only he couldn't swim, say officers. So they jumped in after, to rescue him. No one was hurt.

No word on the whereabouts of Boss Hogg or Rosco P. Coltrane.

Besides the kidnapping and robbery charges, Smith's slice of made-for-TV-movie madness has landed him several new felony charges.

Stone Upon Stone: Sing Sing Prison

BY Mark Gado

[Tweet](#)

[Follow @crimelibrary](#)

[share](#)

[Comments](#)

Breakout!

Escapes from Sing Sing were rarely successful. Other prisons in New York experienced several bloody attempts, most of which ended in death for the convicts involved. Because of inhumane living conditions in these institutions, several inmate uprisings occurred during the 1920s. The

most serious occurred on December 11, 1929, when several guards were killed in upstate Auburn prison during a riot. Eight convicts were shot and killed by guards before order was restored. That same year, a plot for a mass escape at Sing Sing was revealed when a prisoner informed on his fellow inmates. Several men had already dug a 40-foot tunnel that came within feet of the south wall. Working steadily and undetected for weeks, the escape team, led by inmate Roy Sloane, had carted away 50 cubic feet of dirt and dumped it unnoticed into the prison yard. The men were subsequently caught and later transferred to other institutions. But the most serious incident of escape at Sing Sing occurred on April 13, 1941.

Joseph "Whitey" Riordan, 26, Charles McGale, 45, and John "Patch" Waters, 30, all convicted of armed robbery, were being held in Sing Sing's hospital up on the third floor. At 2:30 a.m., they decided to make their move. Brandishing several revolvers which were smuggled into the prison a few days before, they shot prison guard John Hartye, 55, twice in the back as he made his rounds through the prison ward. Another convict patient, McGowan Miller, who had nothing to do with the escape plan, witnessed the killing and suffered a fatal heart attack on the spot. The desperate trio then fled to the basement of the hospital where they forced another prison guard to take them through a steam tunnel that led out to the village streets. Up on the ground level, accomplices parked a getaway car at a pre-arranged location. As Riordan and the others approached the car, two Ossining police officers, James Fagan and William Nelson came upon them by chance at the lower end of Main Street.



Correction Officer John Hartye,
shot and killed by inmate "Whitey"
Riordan. (Courtesy of Ossining
Historical Society)

The officers began to question the men. Suddenly, "Whitey" Riordan pulled out his revolver and started shooting. The others pulled out their weapons and also opened fire on the officers. Both cops fired back and a running gun battle ensued. Two bullets went through Waters' head. He was killed immediately. Officer Fagan was shot in the heart while Riordan and McGale managed to get away. Officer Nelson put Fagan in his police car and took the fatally wounded officer to the hospital where he was pronounced D.O.A. All law enforcement agencies in Westchester County were alerted to the jailbreak and the shootings. Over one hundred reporters and press photographers raced to the scene.

Meanwhile, Riordan and McGale ran over to the shores of the Hudson where they found a shad fisherman, Charles Rohr, getting ready to cast off for the day's fishing. The convicts drew their weapons and forced Rohr to take them across the Hudson to the Rockland County side. When they reached the opposite shore, the fugitives jumped from the boat and disappeared into the woods. However, within hours, Riordan and McGale were located by a pack of pursuing bloodhounds and taken into custody. Two outside accomplices, who smuggled the guns into the prison, were later identified and arrested.

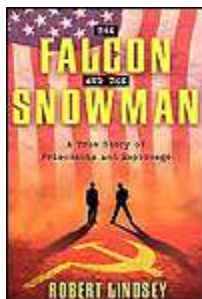
A trial was held in White Plains County Court in June 1941 during which Riordan claimed that he was innocent and that the police beat his 63-page confession out of him. "We were handcuffed together," he said, "then they hit me. McGale was out on his feet but they kept on hitting him. Then a keeper started hitting me too!" One of the outside accomplices, William Wade, also claimed a confession was beaten out of him by cops who had hit him at least "1,400 times" during the interrogation. This included, he said, "300 kicks, 600 punches, being strung up by his hands 15 times, and knocked down 100 times."

The defendant's claims fell on deaf ears. Riordan and McGale were sentenced to death. Their accomplices in the bloody escape received life sentences at Sing Sing. On June 11, 1942, Riordan and McGale were executed in the death chamber, just yards away from where they shot and killed Correction Officer John Hartye. Riordan and McGale were numbers 475 and 476 on the parade of the condemned. The day had special irony for Riordan. It was his 28th birthday.

The Falcon Flies

Lee was nicknamed Spy by the other prisoners. ❖ He went through the pain of drug withdrawal behind bars. ❖ After several months of agony, he was free of his chemical dependency and fairly well adjusted to the monotony of prison life.

Christopher Boyce was also liked by some of his fellow inmates. They would comment on his intellectual interests and say he was not a criminal type and therefore did not belong in prison.



Book cover:

The Falcon and the Snowman

However, the handsome young spy aroused animosity among other prisoners. ❖ They disliked his arrogance and resented his having been the focus of so much media attention. ❖ This was

exacerbated when *The Falcon and the Snowman* by Robert Lindsey was published. ♦ Moreover, some of the other incarcerated men hated him because he was a traitor. ♦

At one point, a longhaired, much-tattooed con approached Boyce in a hallway. ♦ The man tossed a knife onto the floor. ♦ Then he waved his own knife at the spy and challenged, Pick it up! Defying the prisoners code of conduct, which says ♦ a man must never shrink from a fight, Boyce walked away. ♦ He was not one for physical combat.

Soon after this 1979 encounter, Christopher Boyce escaped. ♦ There was speculation that the Russians aided Boyce in his escape but that seems belied by the fact that no one spirited him off to the Soviet Union.

Others speculated that the CIA helped Boyce break out. ♦ This line of reasoning holds that Boyce truly is a double agent, pretending to spy for the Soviets while giving them bogus information. ♦ This improbable and conspiratorial hypothesis says that the government allowed him to go to prison to prop up the authenticity of its double agent.

Boyce himself has said that he escaped with the help of the incompetence of the United States Bureau of Prisons. ♦ This does not seem like an overstatement since, in an act of sheer harebrained stupidity no fiction writer would dare invent, the prison showed the inmates a Clint Eastwood movie called *Escape from Alcatraz!*

In the film, a prisoner crafts a paper mach ♦ figure and then fools his guards by placing it in his bed to be counted as the inmate escapes.

For Boyce, the movie was a source for both entertainment and instruction. ♦ After seeing it, he visited the arts and crafts section of the prison and signed up for paper mach ♦ class. ♦ He learned how to make a similar dummy.

As the paper mach ♦ creation slept on Boyces cot, the prisoner himself hid in a drain by a fence. ♦ To avoid detection, Boyce had to curl his almost six foot frame into a tight ball. ♦



Boyce's hiding place

Eventually Boyce pushed the grate out of his way. ❖ He felt a sense of exhilaration as the fresh evening air touched his face. ❖ His heart was pounding with fear but also with excitement. He carried a broomstick and a makeshift ladder as he started running. ❖ He slipped, fell, then determinedly got up. ❖ He propped the precious, three-foot ladder against the fence and climbed. ❖ He cut through wire with a pair of rose-pruning shears. ❖ Then he slipped again and fell to the ground. ❖ He was certain that his escape had failed and that a guard would spot him.

❖The guard in the tower, Boyce noted in a later interview, wasn't on the ball.



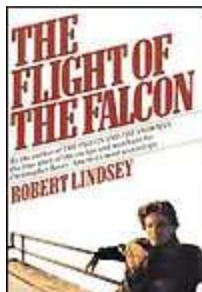
Christopher Boyce

Boyce climbed back on the ladder and resumed his careful wire pruning. ❖ At the top of the cut fence, he beheld the ground of the Kill Zone just outside. ❖ It was a place where guards could shoot to kill. ❖ The ground of the Kill Zone was covered with razor wire. ❖ Now the convict used the broomstick to clear an area about the size of his body.

On the evening of January 21, 1980, convicted spy Christopher Boyce jumped over the prison fence and escaped. He ran and, with his adrenaline flowing, kept running all night.

Boyce lived free for 19 months.

At first, he lived in the woods, eating insects, acorns, and berries. ❖ Anticipating an escape, Boyce had boned up in the prison library about what was safe to eat in the wild and what to avoid. ❖



Book cover: *The Flight of the Falcon*

Boyce had an old friend who lived in Goleta, a town 60 miles from Lompoc. ♦ He decided to find his buddy and ask for help. ♦ *The Flight of the Falcon* by Robert Lindsey says that the escapee picked up a new set of clothes from a clothesline along the way and a sleeping bag and a tent from an untended campsite. ♦ Unfortunately for Boyce, the jeans he stole were designed for a woman and looked awkward.

He found his friend's house but the man had moved. The fugitive continued his homeless life, varying his insect and berries diet with shoplifted items and food he clawed out of garbage cans.



Gloria Ann White

Boyce found a prison friend from prison now free. ♦ That friend advised Boyce to look up an Idaho woman named Gloria Ann White. She would likely shelter someone running from the law, Boyce was told.

Boyce, using the alias Jim Namcheck, traveled to Boundary County, Idaho, and found White's home although not the woman herself. She was gone for a few weeks to another home in her native Oregon. ♦ But Boyce took his friend's word that White would not mind a fugitive staying at her place until she got back.

The house was quite special. ♦ It was a log cabin that Gloria White had built with her own hands. ♦ It took three years.

Boyce spent a little more than a week in the cabin. ♦ Always a lover of the outdoors, Boyce explored the surrounding countryside. ♦ Taking along a tent and a sleeping bag, he hiked through northern Idaho and eventually into Canada. ♦ After seeing some of the wilds there, he returned to the U.S. ♦ Despite his avowed hatred of his country, he was drawn to something in it. ♦

Boyce learned of a job opening at a tree nursery. ♦ Since Boyce adored working with nature, it seemed like a compatible position. Jim Namcheck was hired. He became restless after only one month. Boyce wanted something more adventurous, more exciting, even more dangerous, than this steady, honest, day-to-day job.

Boyce had also gotten to know Gloria White and had taken a strong liking to her. ♦ He quit the tree nursery and moved into White's log cabin.

Dirty Twickses

He had a security badge and signed a pledge solemnly affirming, I shall not knowingly and willfully communicate, deliver or transmit in any manner classified information to an unauthorized person or agency. ♦ He worked in Classified Material Control. ♦ As its name suggests, the unit regulated the distribution of classified material through TRW. ♦ Chris Boyce now had access to classified material, a designation of U.S. government information that is well below the sensitivity of Secret and Top Secret.

When first hired, he could not enter the special room known as the Black Vault. It was not called Black for the color of the walls but for the extreme secrecy of the material contained within. ♦ This was the repository for the most classified and encrypted messages of U.S. intelligence, as well as their corresponding codes, were kept. ♦ To be allowed to enter the Black Vault, a person needed security clearance from the FBI, the CIA, and the National Security Agency.

Boyce got those clearances within a few months after he began working at TRW. Now he could work in the Black Vault. ♦ Chris was flattered that he had received such a high security clearance. ♦ It meant the government must think highly of him.

Despite that fact, he thought little of his government. ♦ Like many other Americans, he was disgusted by the U.S. intervention in Vietnam. ♦ The government had waged a hopeless war in a distant land that killed 50,000 young men. For what? Just to prop up a corrupt South Vietnamese government, he believed. ♦ The bombing of Cambodia was another horror. ♦ He was disgusted and dismayed by the role the U.S. had played in the bloody overthrow of Salvador Allende, the democratically elected Marxist leader of Chile.

Boyce claimed later that the atmosphere of the ultra-secret Black Vault was both surprisingly jovial and lackadaisical. ♦ People used the CIA document destruction shredder as a blender to make daiquiris. ♦ Put it to some use, he commented wryly. ♦ They were doing it before I got there. ♦ It wasn't my idea but it made a hell of a daiquiri.

One of his colleagues was a Vietnam vet who enjoyed regaling people with war stories. ♦ The vet bragged about how he and a fellow soldier had raped a Vietnamese woman as her husband, held at rifle point, watched. ♦ ♦ He also told how he and other soldiers had taken Viet Cong prisoners and pushed them out of helicopters. ♦ At first, Boyce thought the man was making up these stories. ♦ As time went on, though, the stories' considerable detail led him to conclude that they might well have been true. ♦ His co-workers' accounts of Vietnam fueled Boyce's belief that the U. S. was no better than other superpowers past or present.

Secret messages sent by the government led Boyce to think even less of it. A telex message was officially a TWX. ♦ Such messages were often referred to as twickses. ♦ Boyce started reading twickses that infuriated him. ♦ He was privy to messages involving both the Rylite and Argus intelligence-gathering projects. ♦ These concerned the monitoring and photographing of Chinese and Soviet military bases and missile launches.

The U.S. had signed an executive agreement with Australia to share classified information gathered about Soviet and Chinese activity within range of Australia. Boyce has said he saw clear evidence that Washington was not sharing either Rylite or Argus information with Australia. The reason for withholding the information, Boyce has further claimed, was because a socialist government was leading Australia. The U.S. did not want to do anything to aid it. Gough Whitlam was the head of the Australian government and he was not a popular figure with the US intelligence community.

Boyce also learned that the CIA was infiltrating Australia's powerful labor unions. It continued these activities even after the hated Whitlam government toppled and the conservative government of Malcolm Fraser came to power.

Boyce was stunned. Australia was a staunch ally and had been through two world wars. Like the U.S., it was an English-speaking representative democracy. What kind of government, Boyce wondered, would deceive such a close and dependable friend?

Not one he owed any loyalty to, he decided. He had been born an American. It was something he had not chosen or had anything to do with, so why did he owe his country any allegiance?



Christopher Boyce

Although Boyce was upset by U.S. policy, he did not join any protest groups. He chose to express his dislike for America in a way that was secret, illegal and financially remunerative. Money was never his primary object; but he enjoyed the extra cash.

Since the U.S. was two-faced with its friends, Boyce decided, he would betray it. He proceeded to do exactly that. He enlisted the aid of his close friend Daulton Lee. The two had come of age together. They shared a taste for camping and falconry.

Moreover, Boyce believed that Lee was ideally suited for the sort of criminality he was contemplating. Lee was already dealing cocaine, and Boyce knew Lee loved money. So Boyce approached him with a way to make money by dealing with America's chief rival and enemy, the Soviet Union.

Boyce said that he would smuggle information out of the Black Vault and then Lee would act as a courier, taking it to a Russian embassy in another country. Lee pooh-poohed his friends

suggestion at first. ❖ But it was not long before he agreed to it. ❖ There was easy money to be made and Daulton Lee would do just about anything to get it.

Another reason loomed large in Lees thinking. ❖ His life was a legal tangle. He was continuing in the cocaine trade despite incarceration. ❖❖❖Terrified of returning to prison, he ❖agreed to turn snitch for narcotics agents. ❖ However, after thinking it over, he decided that informing on his colleagues would be the most dangerous course of action possible.

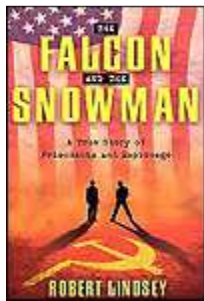
A trip to Mexico like Boyce proposed sounded just dandy.

The Double Smuggle

Early in April 1975, a short, acne-scarred, bushy-haired, mustachioed, and well-dressed American swaggered into the Soviet Embassy in Mexico City. ❖ He had to see someone of importance, he related, because he had information about spy satellites that would interest the Russians.

Daulton Lee was introduced to a Soviet official named Vasily Okana. He was skeptical at first, but was willing to listen as Lee spun his tale.

Ive got a friend who is a socialist, Lee told Okana. The friend worked in a government office and had access to sensitive data. ❖ Although his friend had a sincere desire to aid the Soviet Union, both of them expected to be handsomely paid for transmitting classified secrets. ❖



Book cover:

The Falcon and the Snowman

Okana invited the American to share caviar and vodka. ❖ He appeared to be a gracious host but understandably wary. ❖ The Russian had a habit of incessantly arching his eyebrows that Lee took to be a display of doubt. ❖ Lee handed Okana an envelope. ❖ In it was a brief and blunt note typed but not signed by Christopher Boyce: Enclosed is a computer card from a National Security Agency crypto system. ❖ If you want to do business, please advise the courier. ❖ It also contained, as Robert Lindsey wrote in *The Falcon and the Snowman*, computer programming cards and a twelve-inch length of paper tape used in the KG-13 and KW-7 crypto machines.

After examining the materials, Okana left the room. When he returned, he had an envelope for Lee. It contained \$250 in U.S. currency. There would be more where that came from. The Russian agreed to do business with the short American and his anonymous friend. Okana told him that he and the other Soviets would call Lee Luis and told Lee that he should call him John.

When a code name was needed for Christopher Boyce, it was not hard to come up with an appropriate one: Falcon.

Under no circumstances was Luis to return to the embassy. Rather, he would meet a Soviet agent at a designated place. They would know each other through passwords or, in this case, pass phrases. The Russian would ask, Do you know the restaurant in San Francisco? and Luis was to reply, No, but I know the restaurant in Los Angeles.



KW 7 crypto machine

One of their rendezvous was held near the Polyforum, one of Mexico City's landmarks. The Polyforum was a vast amphitheater created by the famous muralist David Alfaro Siqueiros. The crowd on the sidewalks was thick with both tourists and Mexicans but the Russian John found his American Luis. Despite the fact that they easily knew each other on sight, they exchanged the pass phrases. Lee turned over ten KW-7 cipher cards to the KGB agent.

As Lee's trips to Mexico City continued, Okana began pressing Lee to tell him more about his socialist friend who was so interested in helping the Soviet Union. Lee had told Boyce he would keep Boyce's identity secret, so a rather nervous Luis hedged and evaded John's insistent and repetitive questions.

Is your friend black? Okana asked.

No, Lee replied. He was puzzled by the question. Knowing the history of persecution and discrimination blacks had suffered in America, perhaps Okana believed that a black would be more likely to sympathize with the U.S.'s chief rival.

Later, the pair met at a restaurant and Okana presented Lee with what the courier most treasured: cash. Lee was handed an envelope bulging with \$100 bills. Sensing that it would be bad form, Lee did not immediately count the contents although he yearned to do so.

Again the Russian pressed Lee for details about his friend and the governmental facility where he worked. Again Lee told Okana that he could disclose nothing further about his source.

Christopher Boyce, like the others who worked in the Black Vault, was often sent outside the office on booze runs to the liquor store. ♦ He would go past the guards, satchel in hand, and they would obligingly look the other way.

One time the spirit of the prankster got the better of Christopher Boyce and, without bothering to inform Lee of his plan, he included some surprise pictures in a package for the Soviets. ♦ They went through spy photographs and came upon some nudes.

The Russians were not amused and loudly dressed down Lee. He, in turn, did not find Boyces trick funny and chewed him out the next time they met.



Minox camera

When Boyce carried the satchel, it often contained rolls of documents. Sometimes he brought these sensitive documents back into the building inside a potted plant. ♦ He would first slip the papers ♦ into a plastic bag, then place the bag inside a clay pot, and then put dirt and a plant on top. Boyce would often ask a gardener at TRW to retrieve a plant from Boyces car and put the plant in the security area. Boyce sometimes photographed the documents and then turned them over to Lee who would return to Mexico and turn them over to the Russians. ♦ Alone in the Black Vault, Boyce betrayed his country with each click of a small Minox camera.



Tim Hutton as Boyce with mini camera

Although the Soviets paid for everything Lee brought them, they sometimes complained. ♦ Photographs were occasionally too fuzzy. ♦ They often asked for details that Lee promised he would get from his friend. ♦ When Lee contacted Boyce, the latter sometimes could not come up with the desired information. Boyces occasional inability to deliver such information led to squabbles between the two.

As their collaboration went on, tensions mounted between Boyce and Lee. ♦ Boyce always suspected (with reason, as it turned out) that Lee was not ♦ giving him his half of the Russian money. ♦ Lees addiction to drugs, especially heroin, grew and Boyce believed his partner was becoming reckless. Indeed, high from the combined effects of drugs and booze, Lee had actually *told* some people that he was a spy! ♦ The listeners always dismissed him as a joker, but Boyce was understandably dismayed.

Lee was always afraid of being busted in the U.S. upon his return from Mexico. ♦ The dope peddler turned spy once described himself as a lot of dead babies because of his practice of obtaining birth certificates of people who had died young and then getting social security cards, drivers licenses, etc. in their names. ♦ He was hoped to make a fortune in a drug deal, and then permanently retire in Costa Rica.

At one meeting with his Soviet handlers, Lee suggested that they should assist him in his dope dealing by transporting cocaine from Peru to the U.S. for him. ♦ The Russians looked at each other, and then back at Lee in stunned silence.



Boyce's car after arrest

In almost two years of spying, Boyce ♦ reaped only \$20,000. ♦ His motive was never money, however. The motive was revenge against a country that had disillusioned him. ♦ He was not a communist and did not have a high opinion of the Soviet system.

He was also motivated by the sheer thrill; indeed that may have been this spys primary reason for selling out his country. ♦ He was extremely excited by the danger of spying and achieved a kind of high from pulling one over on the American intelligence community. ♦ He was surprised by how long he was able to hoodwink his colleagues and superiors and that added to the adrenaline rush of his double life.

But Boyce could be fatalistic. ♦ I knew from the beginning that I would eventually be caught, he observed. ♦ There was no escape from it. . . . After all, Im an amateur, 21 years old, and the Central Intelligence Agency had been in business a lot longer than I had.

Boyce began to think that being a spy was more trouble than it was worth. ♦ He discussed with Lee the notion of ending his efforts. Lee would not hear of it. ♦ There was still so much money to be made. ♦ Boyce later claimed that Lee threatened to tell all to Charles Boyce. Chris ♦ was certain that, regardless of his fathers love for him, the elder Boyces patriotism would lead him to turn in his own son.

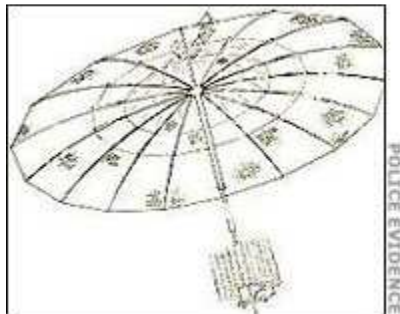
Meanwhile, the Russians were increasingly eager to meet the man who gathered so much information for them. ❖ Lee was reluctant to arrange the introduction. ❖ After all, Boyce might no longer need a courier if the Soviets dealt with him directly. ❖ However, such a meeting was eventually scheduled and Boyce came along with Lee to Mexico City.

Boyce's behavior angered Lee. ❖ The Soviets wanted code room transmission frequencies. ❖ Boyce replied that he simply could not get them that information was not in the Black Vault. ❖ This truthful admission put Lee on the spot. ❖ Lee had repeatedly assured the Russians that his friend could deliver the frequencies. It was only a matter of time before the Russians would have them.

Yet the two pals had some good times in their trip to Mexico. ❖ They even took photographs of each other just like ordinary tourists.

"Asesinato!"

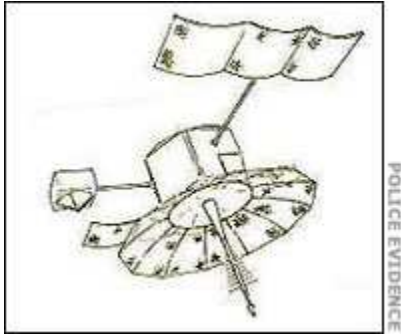
Since the 1960s, the CIA had used military satellites to communicate with its agents. ❖ However, the technology was dated. ❖ Agents could only use the system if they were within range of the satellites and the intelligence agencies of other nations could eavesdrop.



Sketch of proposed Pyramider Satellite

In the 1970s, the CIA proposed to develop a satellite that would facilitate worldwide communication between its agents. ❖ Several top aerospace companies were sent a letter outlining the CIA's plan and asking the companies to outline how they would approach the project. ❖ The CIA designated the project top secret and called the proposed satellite a "Pyramider."

TRW won the ❖ Pyramider design contract in 1973. ❖ The design that TRW researchers eventually unveiled was a huge satellite that resembled a flying umbrella.



Sketch of proposed Pyramider Sattelite

By the time Boyce began photographing the Pyramider documents, he had already tendered his resignation to TRW. ♦ There was no acrimony between Boyce and the company. ♦ He was leaving to attend college full-time.

But he was still working and still engaged in espionage. In fact, Boyce had thoughts of working for the Soviets again. He would earn degrees in history and political science, become fluent in Russian, and with that background, land a sensitive government position. ♦ Boyce would send secrets to the Soviets once again.



Hutton and Penn as Boyce and Lee

In the meantime, Lee could take the extremely valuable Pyramider photographs to Mexico City and collect from his generous Soviet handlers.

Lee sauntered by the Russian embassy and threw a message inside the gates. ♦ Suddenly he found himself surrounded by Mexican police officers. ♦ They wanted to know what he had tossed.

A startled Lee tried to shrug it off. ♦ "It was just a pack of cigarettes and a book jacket from an old dictionary," he explained.

That explanation did not wash. ♦ The police were ♦ concerned because a member of an anti-government terrorist group, the Twenty-third of September Communist League, had been arrested after throwing a message to an embassy in a similar fashion.

As Lee and the cops were having an agitated conversation, they were spotted by Eileen Heaphy, a Foreign Service officer posted at the U.S. embassy.

When Lee learned her identity, he hoped that the State Department official — a representative from the country he betrayed — would come to his rescue. ♦ The police told Heaphy that they wanted to question Lee. Heaphy phoned the American embassy to report the contretemps. ♦ The Mexicans told her that representatives from the U.S. embassy could go to the police station to ensure that Lee's rights were protected. A vice consul and a CIA agent went to the station.



Sean Penn as Lee arrested in Mexico in the movie *The Falcon and The Snowman*

At police headquarters, Lee met a dark-haired, middle-aged inspector with grape-like bags under his eyes. The inspector told him to empty ♦ his pockets and place everything on a desk. ♦ Lee complied. A postcard intrigued the official; a fake one the Russians had given Lee to show ♦ a designated meeting site.

The inspector also opened an envelope Lee was carrying. ♦ Inside was photographic film. The inspector held the film up to the light and squinted to see. Lee explained that he was a photographer and those were negatives for a commercial for an advertising agency. ♦ The U.S. vice consul also examined the film. ♦ He too noted the designation, "Top Secret."

The inspector said that he would have the film ♦ developed and that the American officials should return in about an hour.

When the officers told Lee what he was accused of, "*aesisinato*," the Spanish word for "murder," he felt as if an electrical cord had been whipped down his spine. Shocked, ♦ flustered, and panicked, Lee sputtered denials.

Lee was interrogated the next day and the day after that. ♦ He continued to insist that he was just a tourist and knew nothing of any murder. "We're not stupid Mexicans!" a questioner shouted.

At one point, Lee changed his story. ♦ He was not just a photographer and tourist. ♦ Rather, he and his friend, Christopher Boyce, were working for the CIA. ♦ They had been feeding misinformation to the Soviets to confuse America's enemy. ♦ The police again ordered Lee to tell them why he had killed the policeman and again he denied ♦ it.

Apparently the Mexicans were convinced that Lee murdered a cop because the simulated postcard was a photograph of an intersection where a police officer had been slain.

At one point in the questioning, Lee was ordered to strip naked and an officer threatened to cut off his genitals. ♦ At another, his head was held over a toilet. ♦ The bowl did not contain waste, ♦ but nor had it been cleaned recently. ♦ His head was dunked three times. Lying blindfolded and handcuffed between bouts of questioning and threats, Lee was overpowered by thirst. ♦ His guards brought him some water but Lee told them he had to have bottled water or he would fall ill. ♦ The guard laughed and, crazed by thirst, Lee drank tap water. ♦ Later, he had an attack of diarrhea. The guard would not take him to the bathroom and he soiled his clothing.

Eventually, FBI agents were allowed to talk to the prisoner. ♦ Lee told them the story he had most recently told the Mexicans: that he was working for the CIA and giving the Russians false data.

The FBI contacted the CIA, the Pentagon, and the White House. ♦ It soon became clear that the only thing genuine about Lee was his treason. They ♦ wanted Lee back in the U.S. to stand trial.

The Mexicans, however, gave Lee a choice: he could be deported to either the Soviet Union or the U.S. He chose the United States.

Christopher Boyce was arrested in January 1977. He held off for a few days, then agreed to confess. ♦ He revealed everything about his spying and his selling of secrets to the Soviets. ♦ He adamantly denied that he had ever led Lee to believe that they were working for the CIA. ♦ He described his pal as a "hoodlum" and himself as an "adventurer."

Gloria

Born in 1940, White never knew her parents well. ♦ Her mother deserted her when she was a baby. Her father was not around much. ♦ She was raised in a large family by grandparents. ♦ Having little use for school, she dropped out at age 14. ♦ She then worked at a lumber mill and lived on her own.

Attractive with her blue eyes and soft dark hair, White had many suitors despite her tender age. ♦ White grew up fast. ♦ She was 14 when she married, was pregnant the following year, and was divorced shortly thereafter. ♦ She married and divorced a second time, then decided her marrying days were over. But her romances continued. When she met Jim Namcheck, she was the mother of six.

White had a frontier mentality and sometimes told friends that she would have been more comfortable in the 19th century rather than the 20th. ♦ She drove a pickup truck, raised livestock and vegetables, hunted, and homeschooled her kids. ♦ White was extroverted, friendly, ruggedly and proudly independent, and generous to a fault. Societal norms, legal or moral, did not get much consideration.

Attracted to those she perceived as renegades such as herself, White rescued homeless children, the unemployed, and fugitives. Its hardly surprising that White got along quite well with the young and charming Jim Namcheck. He also shared ♦ her love of hunting and the Idaho wilderness.

Boyce had a few close calls with the law. ♦ Once, his car was pulled over by a group of six police officers. They asked to see his drivers license.

He did not have one with him.

Where are you going? an officer asked.

Im going to see -----, he coolly replied. ♦ The name he mentioned was a close friend of the Bonners Ferrys sheriff.

Impressed by the young mans calm and easygoing demeanor, the cop said, OK. He waved on the most wanted fugitive in the U.S.

On another occasion, the fugitive spy was sitting in a restaurant called Connies enjoying an ordinary but nutritious breakfast of ham and an omelet. ♦ A campaigning senator, Frank Church, walked into Connies. ♦ Making his glad-handing way through the morning diners, Church came to Boyces table. ♦ He held his hand out to the wanted man who shook it as the senator earnestly told the fugitive, I need your vote.

Boyce claimed later that the friendly, smiling senator ruined my breakfast.

Since Gloria White held little regard for the law, she did not blanch when Boyce told her he wanted to rob banks for some easy money. Boyce was not intimidated by bank robbery. After all, he had committed espionage.

White aided Boyce in this new pursuit by supplying him with theatrical make-up and sometimes applying it.

A female teller in 1980 looked up to see a bearded young man with a baseball cap atop his head.

Give me all your money, the stranger told her, or Ill blow your head off.

Stunned, she just stared at the man.

He showed her a gun and said, I have to get serious. ♦ This is a robbery. ♦ I have to get out of here. Frightened, the teller handed him many bills.

Thank you, he said politely as he exited.

Together with accomplices he met through White, Boyce perpetrated at least sixteen bank robberies. ❖ He swore to one of the men who drove a getaway car that he would not be captured. ❖ Either theyll kill me or Ill kill myself, he replied when asked what he would do if cornered by authorities. ❖

The Falcon Caged

Boyce thought the same of the robberies as he did about his espionage: he expected his luck to run out eventually. ❖ He wanted to learn how to fly a private plane. He signed up for pilot lessons in Washington state.

The plan was that Boyce would flee to Alaska and, from there, fly to an island of the Soviet Union. ❖ While Boyce felt no regard for that country or its system, he believed he would receive a heroes welcome and all the attendant honors and accolades. He would then lead a comfortable life. ❖

Because of his longstanding fascination with the flight of birds, Boyce learned aviation easily and enjoyed flying. ❖

One day, the man known as Jim Namcheck to his many friends and Tony Lester to his flight instructor, was eating in a drive-through restaurant called The Pit Stop. ❖ He had a book about flying open on his lap. Boyce was chewing on a hamburger when he looked up and saw guns pointing at him through his car window.



Federal Marshals and Boyce, 1981

U.S. marshals, he was told. ❖ Youre under arrest. Drop the hamburger, another officer commanded. ❖ His gun was pointed straight at the spys head.

Christopher Boyce did not fight. ❖ He did not force them to kill him as he had so often vowed. ❖ The Falcon was meek as a mouse as he surrendered. Dropping his food and book, he got out of the car and was handcuffed. ❖ Another marshal walked over ❖ and said, Hi, Chris.

Its been a long time since anybody called me that, a dispirited Boyce said.

The next morning, while in a Seattle prison cell, Boyce was reunited with Larry Homenick, a guard who had become his friend during the early days of his espionage arrest. Later, Homenick was one of Boyce's hunters during his flight from justice.



Christopher Boyce

You know, Larry, Boyce told him. ♦ I had a dream every night that I was going to get caught.

Homenick confided, Chris, I had a dream every night that I wouldn't catch you. ♦ The U.S. marshal had a copy of *The Falcon and the Snowman*.

Boyce autographed the book. ♦ The salutation began, To my friend Larry.

Boyce was convicted of escaping from prison and three years were added to his forty-year stretch for espionage. ♦ He also had new convictions for bank robbery and illegal weapons possession.

Gloria Ann White paid dearly for her friendship with Boyce. ♦ As recorded in *Flight of the Falcon*, she was found...guilty of harboring an escaped prisoner, conspiring to rob banks, and two counts of bank robbery. The men who had driven the getaway cars for the Falcon during the bank heists were not prosecuted due to their cooperation with authorities. ♦ One of them even received ♦ a \$15,000 reward.

Since his return to prison, Boyce has said he does not regret the spying that landed him there. After refusing all interview requests for several years, Boyce granted one in 1982 to the Australian version of *60 Minutes*. ♦ It took place at Leavenworth. ♦ He agreed to talk because you are Australian journalists and because what kicked this all off was deception by my government against yours. ♦

Unlike many convicted spies, Boyce does not shirk from the word traitor. ♦ He told Ray Martin, the interviewer from Australia's *60 Minutes*, I have no problems with the label traitor, if you qualify what it's to, and I think that eventually the United States Government is going to involve the world in the next world war. ♦ And being a traitor to that, I have absolutely no problems with that whatsoever.

Boyce acknowledged he wanted to be free. ♦ When asked what he would do if the doors of the prison were opened, he replied, Id take off like a jack rabbit. ♦ Martin also challenged Boyce, Could it be said that, in getting those secrets for the Russians, that in fact you had thrown into jeopardy the lives of every American man, woman and child?

They are already in jeopardy, Boyce replied. ♦ A Third World War is inevitable.

So you dont think you added to that at all? Martin continued.

Its a hard one, Boyce allowed.

The night of the interview, two inmates assaulted Boyce. The federal Bureau of Prisons transferred him to the facility in Marion, Ill., the nations highest security prison. Boyce was placed in solitary confinement. Special guards were stationed to protect him because of the many threats to his life. Boyces food was tested for poison before serving. Like other Marion inmates, Boyce was locked in his cell at least 23 out of every 24 hours.

He decided to try his hand at writing. ♦ Since he was a history buff, he would attempt an historical novel set in 16th century Europe. ♦ Perhaps fantasizing about the distant past permitted a mental escape from his drab and ugly present.

During his Marion stay, Boyce consented to a second television interview, this time from *60 Minutes*. ♦ As in the previous interview, Boyce was recalcitrant, defiant, and utterly remorseless. ♦ He would do it all again, he said, only better.

As of this writing, Andrew Daulton Lee was released on parole in 1998.



Smithfield Oregon Federal Penitentiary

As of this writing, Christopher Boyce is now at the Federal Correctional Institution at Sheridan, Ore. ♦ His projected release date is March 15, 2003. ♦ His release destination is central California, but Boyce has applied to have it moved to northern California.



The Toilet Escape

On February 19, 2010, Michael Rigby (pictured), the leader of the Bloods criminal gang in Kissimmee, Fla., pried the toilet and sink away from his cell in the Osceola County Jail, where he was awaiting trial for attempted murder and a host of related charges, wormed his way through the adjoining crawl space out of the building, scaled two barbed wire fences and escaped. After stopping at his grandmother's house, several miles away, where he obtained clothing, money and a car, Rigby was next spotted in North Carolina. His car was later recovered in Elizabeth, N.J., but Rigby remained at large until April 28, 2010, when he was apprehended in Patterson, N.J.



Squeezing Through Ventilation System

On April 6, 2010 convicted kidnapper Octavio Ramos Lopez (right) and murderer Jose Bustos-Diaz (left) jammed a ventilation fan, crawled through the ventilation ducts of the Dolph Briscoe Unit in Dilley, Texas, and cut their way through the perimeter fence to freedom. The two, both Mexican nationals, remain at large and the search continues, although the location of the prison, only 80 miles from the U.S.-Mexican border makes it possible that the two have already crossed back into Mexico.



Climbed Up and Out the Pipes

On August 24, 2008, eight inmates at the Curry County Adult Detention Center in Clovis, N.M., accessed the plumbing corridor separating their cells by using a key guards left while making repairs and returning it before the guards noticed. The inmates scaled the pipes to the roof of the jail and escaped through a hole they cut with a makeshift tool fashioned from metal they found in the corridor.

The escape was noticed almost immediately; two escapees were spotted immediately walking by a policeman a few blocks from the jail, still wearing prison trousers. One of the two was captured in the ensuing chase. Two more were recaptured the next day following tips from the public, one in Lubbock, Texas, and the other in Cactus, Texas. A fourth escapee was recaptured still in Clovis on August 28, but the other four remained elusive. The escapees were featured on the September 6 episode of America's Most Wanted, but no leads were immediately forthcoming. The manhunt focused on the area cities known to be haunts of some of the escapees. The fifth escapee was captured on October 3 after attempting to negotiate his surrender in exchange for police dropping charges against his mother, who had been charged with aiding a fugitive, and a tip was received which led to the apprehension of the sixth escapee in Amarillo, Texas a day later. The seventh escapee was identified by a customer at a hardware store in Clovis and

arrested in the parking lot in December. The eighth escapee, though, convicted murderer Edward Salas (pictured), who was in jail pending transfer to the New Mexico Department of Corrections following a conviction for his role in the murder of a 10-year-old boy, is still at large.



Atlanta Courthouse Rampage

On March 11, 2005, Brian Nichols (pictured), on trial for the rape and assault on an ex-girlfriend in Atlanta, Ga., overpowered the guard in the courthouse leading him to the changing room to dress for trial, took her gunbelt and weapon and went on a rampage, fatally shooting the judge presiding over his trial as he was hearing a different case, a court reporter and a policeman responding to the alarm. Escaping from the courthouse, Nichols carjacked at least five cars that day, eluding the police manhunt that paralyzed downtown Atlanta. Hundreds of police scoured the city, but Nichols was able to reach a commuter train station and leave Atlanta for the suburbs where he shot another man and stole his truck, driving on to Dublin, Ga., about 30 miles north of Atlanta.

That night, Nichols confronted a woman, Ashley Smith, in the parking lot of her apartment building and forced her to let him into her apartment. Inside, he showered and asked her for marijuana; Smith, a methamphetamine addict, had only meth, and gave him some. He asked her to take some as well, but she instead read to him from the Bible and other inspirational literature, talking about her own struggles with addiction and the consequences of violence in her own life. The next morning, Smith made Nichols breakfast and asked if she could leave to see her daughter, custody of whom she had lost because of her addiction. Nichols agreed and Smith called police immediately after leaving the apartment building. When police arrived on the scene, Nichols surrendered peacefully; in December 2008 he was sentenced to life in prison for the crimes committed during his escape.



Escape from Death Row

>On May 31, 1984, six death row inmates succeeded in overpowering the guards in their cellblock in Virginia's Mecklenburg Correctional Center (pictured) and, stealing their uniforms, bluffed their way out of their unit by claiming to be guards removing a possible bomb. Wearing riot helmets along with the stolen uniforms to disguise their identities further, they hustled out of the building and into a van they had requested to dispose of the potential bomb. Once in the van, they browbeat a real guard into opening the gates, and drove off to freedom.

Sloppy procedures within the prison initially slowed down the manhunt; the six made it across the nearby border into North Carolina and split up before any roadblocks were in place. Two of the escapees were captured the next day, though, enjoying some wine and cheese in a laundromat still wearing their stolen guard uniforms. Two were recaptured a week later, on June 8, in Vermont, one after robbing a gift store, the other only five miles from the Canadian border after being talked into surrendering in a phone conversation with his mother. The last two, brothers and ringleaders in the escape, were not located for another 10 days, when a phone call they placed to a known associate in New York was traced back to their uncle's auto-repair garage in Philadelphia. By June 21, all the escapees were returned to Virginia, and, over the next 12 years, all were executed for the crimes for which they had previously been convicted.

[share](#)

[Comments](#)

[previous](#)

[next](#)



Ted Bundy's Great Escape

Serial killer Ted Bundy (inset) was being tried for the murders of several Colorado women in 1977 when he decided to take up his own defense. Though incarcerated at the time, he was granted permission to leave the jail to go to the library, and when he was acting as his own representative he was not required to wear leg irons or a prison uniform. On June 7, during one of his outings to the library in Aspen, he jumped out a window and escaped injuring only his ankle. Police immediately set up road blocks and launched a massive search using scent-tracking dogs and 150 land searchers in the hopes of catching him. Ted however, was not in irons so he was quickly able to blend in and elude police for days. About a week later he was spotted and recaptured. From then on he was put in leg irons to go to the library. He made his next escape on December 30, through the ceiling of the jail. Bundy was out and gone for 15 hours before police realized it. By then he was well on his way to Chicago and then south to Florida, where he could once again be anonymous. Not surprisingly, he settled in a collegiate environment in which he could comfortably blend and hunt: Tallahassee near Florida State University. By January 14, 1978, the monster was ready to rear his ugly head again. That night, Bundy assaulted 5 women, raping and biting some, sexually assaulting one and killing 2 in the Chi Omega sorority house (pictured). He was caught on February 15, by a police officer who ran the plates on the Volkswagen Beetle Bundy was driving and found they were stolen. Before Bundy could be cuffed and arrested he attacked the arresting officer twice. Bundy was tried, sentenced and, ultimately, executed in Florida for the lives he had taken.



England's Longest Prison Sentence Ever Ends Abruptly

George Blake (pictured) was a former British spy and Soviet double agent, who managed to escape from prison in England while serving a 42-year sentence. Blake had been stationed in Korea in the diplomatic corps after World War II to establish a network of spies. When the Korean war broke out, Seoul was overrun by North Koreans and Blake was captured and imprisoned for three years, during which time he became a Marxist. When Blake was released back to the British government his new job was to recruit Soviet spies as double agents, which made it easy for him to contact the KGB and pass information to them. He met with his KGB contact every three weeks for nine years to pass on information and is believed to have given his handlers the names of at least 42 British agents, all of whom disappeared and were believed to have been executed. Ironically, Blake was outed by a Russian intelligence agent who defected to England. Blake was caught and sentenced to 42 years in prison on three counts of treason, one year, it was said, for each agent he was believed to have betrayed. His sentence was and still is the longest ever handed down by a British court, excluding the death sentence. He was incarcerated in Wormwood Scrubs prison (pictured), and five years later, on October 22, 1966, he escaped, seemingly vanishing, leaving behind only a rope ladder used to scale the outer wall. He was never caught, but resurfaced later in the Soviet Union. Popular belief held that his escape was a professional job masterminded by the KGB, the IRA or even the British security services. In 1988 two radical peace activists claimed that they had rescued Blake from prison without outside help and smuggled him to Eastern Europe because they liked him and felt his sentence was too long. Their claims have not been substantiated.



World's First Helicopter Escape

Convicted in 1962 of the murder of a business associate in Mexico City, Joel David Kaplan, the nephew of molasses and Welch's fruit juice tycoon Jacob M. Kaplan, had spent nine years in the Santa Martha Acatitla, a Mexican prison (pictured), when, on August 18, 1971, while the prisoners and guards were mostly gathered for a movie, a single helicopter clattered over the prison courtyard and touched down. Some guards, mistaking the helicopter for one occasionally used by the Mexican attorney general, presented arms expecting a surprise visit by some dignitary, were instead the surprise victims of the first recorded prison escape by helicopter. Kaplan and another prisoner dashed to the helicopter and, before the guards could react, flew to freedom and into history.

Almost as soon as the escape was accomplished, the conspiracy theorists began spinning stories. Kaplan's initial conviction had involved allegations of arms dealing and shady connections, and his uncle's charitable trust had been named in a 1964 investigation as a CIA conduit for funds to anti-communist groups in Latin America. Kaplan and his associate had been flown to a nearby airstrip and from there into the U.S.—once this became clear the Mexican authorities ended their manhunt, but the story did not end there. The Kaplan family took full responsibility for the escape, which was the basis for the 1973 motion picture *Breakout*, but the Mexican government mysteriously never pursued extradition against Kaplan, further fueling speculation that the full tale remains to be told.



Escape From Alcatraz

On June 11, 1962, Frank Morris (left), Clarence Anglin (center) and his brother John Anglin (right) accomplished perhaps the most notorious escape in U.S. penal history when they escaped from Alcatraz Prison (pictured). Using sharpened spoons and other makeshift tools, the conspirators dug away the crumbling concrete around ventilation grates in their cells, enlarging the openings enough to permit access to a cramped plumbing service area between the cells. While engaged in this project they also persuaded guards to permit them to repaint the landing area above the cells, to which the plumbing corridor, without a ceiling, connected. While supposedly painting, they were in fact constructing a makeshift pontoon raft from scraps of lumber and waterproof raincoats they had obtained from prison supplies and working to create an opening in the roof of the cellblock. When the opening was completed, the three made their break. Climbing into the plumbing corridor, the three climbed pipes to reach the landing, exited on to the roof, took the raft, climbed down a drainpipe to the prison yard, crossed the yard to the outer fence, went over the fence and finally reached the chilly waters of San Francisco Bay...and were never seen again.

Over 300 FBI agents were dedicated to the ensuing manhunt, with the involvement of thousands of police officers and Coast Guardsmen through California and the surrounding states. The search continued in earnest for over 3 months, with only scraps of what was believed to be the escapees' raft and a plastic bag of personal effects recovered. The FBI kept its investigation of the case open until 1979, transferring it then to the U.S. Marshals Service with the conclusion that the three had likely capsized and drowned and been swept out to the Pacific Ocean by the strong currents of the bay. No evidence connecting any of the three—all career criminals—to any criminal activity has surfaced in the intervening five decades, which many consider to be the strongest evidence that they did meet their deaths in the bay, but the U.S. Marshal's Service maintains active warrants for all three.



Escape From Sobibor

Sobibor (pictured) was an extermination camp built by the Germans in 1942 and situated along a railway line along in a wooded, swampy, and thinly populated region not far from the present-day border of Poland. The camp, surrounded by a 50-foot-wide minefield, was hidden by branches woven into the encircling barbed wire and trees planted around the perimeter. The prisoners were mostly Jewish civilians, brought in by railway car for extermination. All were killed except those used to assist with termination of prisoners and to bury the dead and even those were killed regularly and exchanged with fresh workers from the incoming trainloads of prisoners. Exterminations began at Sobibor in May and continued into the fall of 1943. By then the killing had wound down and the staff was reduced to the point that the 550 remaining prisoners decided to kill their captors and escape while they still could. On October 14, 1943, the prisoners revolted, took the armory, and engaged the camp garrison in a shootout killing a dozen Germans. 320 prisoners made it past the fence that day, though 80 were immediately killed in the camp's minefield. Searchers were quickly organized: 100 regular soldiers, 100 mounted police and 150 Ukrainians and SS soldiers at first, then several more squadrons of SS and police arrived bringing the total number of searchers to over 500. 170 prisoners were recaptured in the dragnet and executed. 150 escaped successfully, though many would die in hiding or in combat before the end of the war, reducing the final number of surviving escapees at the end of the war to 53. In November, after the revolt, the Germans dismantled the camp and, per the new German policy, killed all of Sobibor's remaining prisoners. In February 2010, a guard from Sobibor was tried in Munich for his crimes at the camp. John Demjanjuk (pictured left top and bottom), 89, is charged with 27,900 counts of accessory to murder for his part in gassing prisoners of Sobibor.



The Wiley Front-Door Escape

It may not be the greatest escape, though it was followed by a manhunt, two inmates of the Hardin County Detention Center in Louisville, Ky., escaped Saturday night while guards were making their rounds. They were reported missing around 2 a.m. on November 19, 2011. On investigation, it seems that Lonnie Ray Coy, 43, of Shepherdsville, Ky., (left) and Joshua Nunn, 19, of Edmonton, Ky., dug



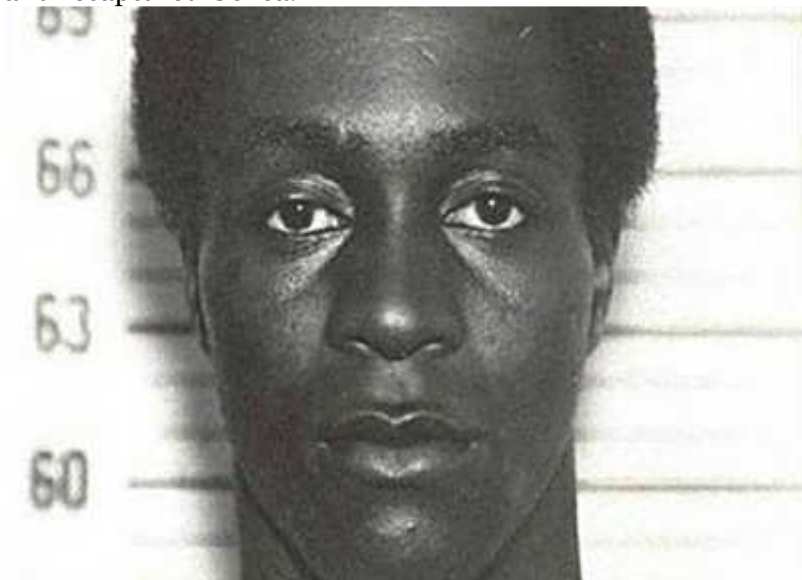
Gone in 60 Seconds

William Francis Blankenship, 22, was arrested on the evening of January 10, 2012, in Kouts, Ind., on drug charges. Handcuffed, he was put in the back of the arresting officer's patrol car, so that the officer could search Blankenship's vehicle. As the officer searched the car, his police cruiser drove off with Blankenship at the wheel. Not long after, the Porter County Sheriff's dispatcher received a radio call from Blankenship asking how to remove the handcuffs, and how to locate car's cigarette lighter. The [AP](#) reported that the dispatcher did not answer either question, but instead, tried to get Blankenship to turn himself in. Blankenship declined the invitation to go to jail, and instead ditched the vehicle and remained at large. Porter County Sheriff's Sgt. Larry LaFlower announced that they found the cruiser, "wrecked and submerged in water," and that none of the weapons had been taken. Police continued the search for Blankenship, and tried to figure out how he got out of the back seat of the locked cruiser.



The Handy Escapee

A man admitted to a Denver, Colo., Hospital last week for treatment of a gunshot wound came to the attention of police when they learned that the patient, Lee "Diablo" Govea, 22, was wanted for felony burglary, assault, menacing, criminal mischief, violation of a protection order and failure to register as a sex offender. On February 19, 2012, deputies, acting quickly, confronted Govea in his room and cuffed him to the bed before leaving to obtain permission to move him to a more secure jail ward. They returned to find an empty, dismantled bed and no prisoner. According to Capt. Frank Gale, of the Denver Sheriff's Department, "he pulled out his IVs, dismantled the bed and escaped." Gale added that he didn't have enough staff at the hospital to have posted a man at the door. Luckily, police received a tip from Crime Stoppers the next day and recaptured Govea.



GEORGE WRIGHT

George Wright, now 68, was captured after 41 years on the lam after his part in the infamous July 31, 1972, hijacking of Delta Flight 841 headed for Miami, Fla. Wright, dressed as a priest and armed with a handgun he had in a hollowed-out Bible, along with two men and two women (and three children), seized the plane as it reached Miami. On the ground, they demanded a \$1 million ransom, to be delivered by F.B. I. agents dressed only in bathing suits. Once the money was on board, the 88 passengers were allowed to deplane, but hijackers held on to the flight crew and demanded that the plane be flown to Boston, where it was refueled and continued on to Algiers.

The hard-line socialist Algerian government had granted sanctuary to Black Panther Eldridge Cleaver in 1968, and in this case returned the money to U.S. authorities, but not the hijackers. Some of the hijackers were arrested in Paris, France, in 1976, but there were never any leads on Wright, who was also wanted by police for escaping from the Bayside State Prison in Leesburg, New Jersey, where he was serving a 15-30 year sentence for murder. In 2002 a fugitive investigator with the New Jersey Department of Corrections working with the U.S. Marshals Service got a lead that ultimately led to Wright's September 26, 2011 capture. Wright had been living a quiet life in a seaside resort near Lisbon, Portugal.

Wright plans on fighting extradition to the U.S.

[@crimelibrary](#)

[share](#)

[Comments](#)

Master Criminal

Despite his childhood injury and his diminutive size (he was just 5-foot-4), Peace was remarkably fit and used his gymnast's skills in his work. Once, legend has it, he was surprised in the act of burglary by a homeowner. "He wound himself clear of the ground round the leg of a single-leg dining table, hidden from view by an overhanging table cloth," Angus Hall wrote. "The man looked around, shrugged his shoulders and went back to bed."

While serving his final term for burglary in Wakefield Prison, Peace managed to fashion a saw out of scrap tin and cut a hole in the ceiling of his cell. He was just crawling through the hole when he was spotted by a screw and the alarm went out. For an hour-and-a-half Peace managed to remain on the loose, but was finally caught in the bedroom of the warden's apartment where he had taken a bath and changed his clothes.

Another time he was found by police in bed with his mistress and when questioned, insisted that he was an eyeglass salesman. "He refused to get up and dress in the presence of the detectives who were obliging enough to go downstairs and wait his convenience," Irving reports, but Peace used the opportunity to slip through a six-inch gap in a grated window and escape. On two other occasions when constables came looking for him, he simply pulled himself up on the roof of his house and hid behind a chimney until they left.



Charles Peace

On one occasion, to avoid a manhunt, Peace ducked into a boys' boarding school where he passed himself off as a wandering actor. He spent the better part of a day entertaining the schoolboys with Shakespearean soliloquies until the coast was clear.

Daring escapes were not Charlie's only skills. He was a master of disguise and was able to contort his features to such a degree that the wanted posters issued by Scotland Yard variously listed his age as anywhere from 40 to 70. "He had learned to alter his features at will, so that every identification photograph seemed to show a different man," Hall wrote. Peace also used walnut juice to darken his skin tone. Having accidentally blown off one of his fingers loading cartridges in his pistol, thereby giving police a distinguishing mark to look for, Charlie fashioned a fake arm out of plaster of Paris and replaced his "lost" hand with a hook.

Watchdogs were no match for Charles Peace, whose boyhood around wild animals had made him fearless, and in his kit of burglary tools Peace carried them in a violin case he always had drugged meat for any dogs he encountered.

Although he had a well-known love of animals, there is one verified account of Peace being attacked by a mastiff set on him by his brother-in-law, but killing the dog with his bare hands.

The Fugitive

Almost immediately, Charles Peace became the most wanted man in England. The arch-criminal, however, put his mastery of disguise to work and incredibly began to enjoy the acme of his nefarious career. After bidding adieu to his wife, who was still working in their restaurant in Hull, Peace headed for the anonymity of London.

The authorities put a price of ♦100 on his head, offering the following description of the wanted man: "Charles Peace wanted for murder on the night of the 29th inst. He is thin and slightly built, from fifty-five to sixty years of age. ♦ Five feet four inches or five feet high; grey (nearly white) hair, beard and whiskers. ♦ He lacks use of three fingers of left hand, walks with his legs rather wide apart, speaks some-what peculiarly as though his tongue were too large for his mouth, and is a great boaster. ♦ He is a picture-frame maker. ♦ He occasionally cleans and repairs clocks and watches and sometimes deals in oleographs, engravings and pictures. ♦ He

has been in penal servitude for burglary in Manchester. ♦ He has lived in Manchester, Salford, and Liverpool and Hull."

Although the police later revised his age to 46, Peace was, in fact, 44 years old. He had shaved his beard, dyed his hair, darkened his complexion with walnut oil, started wearing spectacles, and made extensive use of his unique ability to distort his facial features. "At an instant's warning, his loose, plastic features would assume another shape; out shot his lower jaw, and, as if by magic, the blood flew into his face until you might take him for a mulatto," Whibley wrote.

For the rest of 1876 and the early part of the next year, Peace was constantly on the run. "He left Hull for Doncaster, and from there travelled to London," Irving recounts. ♦ "On arriving at King's Cross he took the underground railway to Paddington, and from there a train to Bristol. ♦ At the beginning of January he left Bristol for Bath."

Even with a reward for his capture and wanted posters bearing his name and description (such as it was), Peace enjoyed taking risks, confident in his ability to escape detection. "From Bath, in the company of a sergeant of police, (Peace) travelled by way of Didcot to Oxford," Irving's account tells. ♦ During the train journey, Peace and the sergeant discussed the Dyson case. ♦ "He seemed a smart chap," said Peace later. "But not smart enough to know me."

Eventually, Katherine Dyson returned to the United States and it appeared that the murderer of Arthur Dyson would not be caught any time soon.

Peace finally landed in Nottingham, taking lodgings with a "Mrs. Adamson, a lady who received stolen goods and on occasion indicated or organised suitable opportunities for acquiring them."



Map of UK with Nottingham locator

Also living with Mrs. Adamson was an attractive, well-educated divorcee of about 35 years. Her name was Susan Gray Bailey, ♦ and Peace was instantly smitten.

In his cups due to an overindulgence of Irish whiskey, Peace declared his affection for Susan Bailey by promising to shoot her if she did not become his paramour. The next day, a contrite Peace when apologized to the woman, he "so melted the heart of Mrs. Bailey that she consented to become his mistress, and from that moment discarding the name of Bailey is known to history as Mrs. Thompson," Irving wrote.

For two months, "Mr. and Mrs. Thompson" stayed on holiday in Hull, renting lodgings with a local police sergeant-constable. "He was regarded as an ideal lodger, particularly as he seemed to show a genuine interest in the policeman's work," Angus Hall wrote about that period in Peace's life.

During his time as Mr. Thompson in Hull a town police had under scrutiny owing to the fact that Charlie's long-suffering wife, Hannah continued to operate a diner there Peace undertook a one-man burglary spree unprecedented in its audacity. In one night, he hit seven homes. Another time, he was surprised by the residents of the home who had returned early from dining out. He fired a shot into the ceiling, and dove out a window as the family scurried for cover.

When he was nearly collared by a passing constable, Peace decided it was time to give Hull the slip. He contacted his wife and stepson and, along with Sue Thompson, the odd quartet headed to London where Charles Peace would enjoy his greatest success as a burglar. Little did Charlie know that the greatest threat to his life and freedom would be living under the same roof with him

The good times for the Peace clan were not to last, for Charlie pushed his luck by continuing to target the same South London neighborhoods. He was so audacious in the Lambeth area that Scotland Yard attributed his burglaries to a gang of thieves. Later, moving on to Greenwich, the rash of break-ins was so expansive that the Metropolitan police assumed a second gang was at work there.



Sketch of Charles Peace

The beginning of the end for Charles Peace came in early October 1878. After a night of performing before his neighbors, Peace bade them all good night and shortly after 10:30 p.m., Peace and Tommy the pony slipped out toward St. James's Park in Blackheath where he had been casing the home of a gentleman. Unbeknownst to Charlie, it would be his last night of freedom.

A pair of police constables, William Girling and Edward Robinson, were on patrol in Blackheath when at around 2 a.m. they noticed a dim light moving about inside a home. P.C. Girling directed Robinson to cover the back end of the home while he rang the bell. As soon as Girling did so, the light inside was extinguished.

Around the side of the home, the sash of a ground floor window flew open and a small man, dressed all in black hopped out.

"Just a moment," cried Robinson, armed only with a truncheon.

Charles Peace turned and leveled his revolver at the approaching policeman. "Keep back, or by God, I'll shoot you!" he shouted, but the brave constable pressed on. Peace's first shot, as was his way, went high, but P.C. Robinson still came at him. His momentum carried him forward, tackling the much smaller burglar as two more shots rang out. The second shot tore into Robinson's arm and the last missed his ear by "a hairsbreadth." As the two men struggled, P.C. Girling came from around the front and smashed his truncheon down on Charlie's gun hand. "Let me up," he said meekly. "I'll come quietly. I only did it to frighten him so I could get away."

The day after his Little Falls arraignment, Evans was being transported back to Rensselaer County Jail from an Albany court. Unbeknownst to authorities, Evans had a handcuff key shoved deep into his [sinus cavity](#) and managed to free his hands while in the police van. When they reached the [Troy-Menands Bridge](#), Evans suddenly kicked out the side window of the vehicle, jumped out and started running. When police cornered him, Evans leaped off the bridge and plunged to his death into the shallows of the [Hudson River](#) over 80 feet below. When authorities retrieved his body, they found the handcuff key up his nose and a razor blade taped to his ankle.

Escape and death

Garrow escaped from the [Fishkill](#) prison on September 8, 1978. He was in possession of a .32 caliber pistol he had obtained from his son, who concealed the weapon inside a bucket of chicken he brought to his father during a visit.^[3] Garrow was spotted by guards three days later a few hundred yards away from the prison walls. Garrow shot at his pursuers, but was killed when they returned fire.

Fishkill Correctional Facility is a sprawling complex located in the rolling hills outside the village of Fishkill in Dutchess County. It was built in 1896 on 600 acres of farmland and became a medium-security prison during the 1960s. Fishkill also contained the notorious Matteawan State Hospital for the Criminally Insane where, until the 1970s, inmates were sometimes incarcerated for decades for minor infractions. But the prison was the target of a great deal of criticism during this time for its security procedures. From 1973 to 1978, an incredible 32 inmates had escaped from the prison. Due to his medical condition, Garrow was placed in a housing unit called the Elderly and Handicapped section, better known as the E & H building. On the night of September 8, 1978, Garrow placed a dummy that he had constructed from rags and wire onto his cell bed. He tucked a .32-caliber automatic handgun into his waistband and walked out the front door of his cell. An investigation later indicated the gun was smuggled into Fishkill prison in the bottom of a bucket of fried chicken. (Garrow's 18-year-old son, two inmates and an inmate's wife were ultimately arrested and charged for the incident.) Because he

was held in the E & H building, where, security was not as good as it should have been, Garrow was able to walk out of the ward unchallenged. He exited the building and carefully made his way to the chain link fence that surrounded the facility. He managed to climb the fence and drop down to the other side. Then he crawled to the edge of the woods several hundred yards away from the E & H building. Once he had reached an area where he felt safe hidden away in the underbrush, he secreted himself in a spot where he could observe the prison.

By morning, guards discovered Garrow missing. Retired Correction Lieutenant Larry Lisotta, 65, recalled the event well. "We couldn't believe it. The most notorious prisoner in the system had escaped right under the noses of the guards. It was hard to take," he said recently. "The entire staff went on alert. The Corrections Emergency Response Team (CERT.) was called out from Greenhaven," Lt. Lisotta said. The CERT was a special squad made up of specially trained personnel to handle prison emergencies, such as riots, hard to control inmates and escapes. Police also responded and surrounded the area. Officials believed that Garrow had already left the area and was on his way to the Adirondacks where he felt safe. "The feeling was that he was already in Syracuse," said Lt. Lisotta. "We searched every inch of the area around Fishkill Prison. But it was a big area and covered with forests. Also right next to the prison was a major interstate highway, route 84 where he could have hijacked a car somehow. But the truth was we didn't know where he was."

The public was outraged and scared, especially the communities near the prison facility. Garrow's crimes and his propensity for violence were well known. "I can't think of anybody more dangerous to have running around loose," a police representative told the press.

Search teams from nearby police departments flooded into western Dutchess County. Hundreds of cops, assisted by a wide variety of equipment, aircraft, police vehicles and dogs, descended upon the area around Fishkill Correctional Facility. All stolen car reports in nearby communities were meticulously investigated. Roadblocks were set up everywhere. But unknown to anyone at the time, Garrow was less than two hundred yards away from the prison. He had found a hole in the ground, crawled in and covered himself with brush and leaves. For three days, he lay there, not daring to make a sound, studying the activity around him. More than once, searchers came within a few feet of where he was hiding. Still, he did not flinch.



Fishkill prison tree line where Garrow hid.

On the third day of Garrow's escape, a CERT team member made a pivotal discovery. Not far from the prison walls, a correction officer located a portable transistor radio. Officials quickly traced the serial number of the radio and found it belonged to Garrow. "That radio convinced us that he was still near the prison," said Lt. Lisotta, "because we knew we had searched that area previously and no radio was found."

On September 11, at about 6 p.m., Greenhaven Correction Officer Dominic Arena, 25, performed another search through the fields on the western edge of the prison.. This area was just a few yards from a chain link fence that encompasses the grounds of Fishkill prison. It was also just a

stone's throw from Interstate 84, where thousands of cars passed by every day. "We had an idea that someone could pull over and pick up Garrow very easily without being caught. I think that whoever it was probably drove by several times but was afraid to stop because we had so many officers out searching the area," said Lt. Lisotta recently. As Officer Arena walked slowly through the bush that afternoon, he heard a quick movement a few feet away. At first he thought it might have been an animal. Suddenly, Robert Garrow emerged from his hiding place and began firing his automatic handgun. Arena was hit in the leg by the first blast and fell to the ground. The CERT. team opened up with shotguns, rifles and handguns. Garrow was hit with a barrage of gunfire. He was sent reeling backwards and was dead before he hit the ground. An autopsy later determined that three .38-caliber bullets had pierced his heart and lungs.

Gary was never charged for any of these crimes but was instead sent back to prison for [parole](#) violation and robbery after he was caught trying to sell coins stolen from the same apartment building as one of the surviving Syracuse victims. In August 1977 Gary escaped from his low-security prison by sawing through the bars of his cell and made it back to [Columbus, Georgia](#).

PROFILE: Dzhokhar Dudayev: Lone wolf of Grozny

[Andrew Higgins on the renegade Soviet general turned Chechen nationalist](#)

SHARE

Tweet

+MORE

Related Topics

- [Chechnya](#)
- [Kitchen \(room\)](#)
- [Russian Politics](#)
- [Estonia](#)

[Ads by Google](#)

- [British Expat In China?](#)
£100k+ Pension? Over 23,000 Expats Have Downloaded Our Free Guides!
[Your.QROPSchoices.com/HMRCapproved](#)
- [投1万块1小时赚8500的方法](#)
股市火的时候没赶上，期权火的时候你 一定别错过。马上交易，1小时收益85%
[Trader711.com](#)
- [Fastest VPN for Asia](#)
Unblock all sites. Try Risk Free. 100% Secure & Anonymous. Easy Setup
[ExpressVPN.com](#)

HE ALWAYS has freshly ironed clothes - camouflage fatigues, spiffy dark pinstripes or, when in a melodramatic mood, an all-white "death" suit. And, says the man now commanding a war from a bunker somewhere in Grozny, he adores fresh flowers, *reve res* Pushkin and Lermontov. A vain, meticulous and profoundly eccentric man of 50, Dzhokhar Dudayev, president of Chechnya, also takes great pride in his moustache, which, even when everything around is ablaze, he trims to approximate the aerodynamic lines of the nuclear bombers he used to pilot as a general in the Soviet Air Force.

Before the Russians shelled his presidential palace, his spotless office on the eighth floor revolved around a Chechen flag. It was attached to a metal stand, so small and tidy it looked like a sand-castle pennant, and stood on a polished wooden table. The fastidious order of the room was underscored by a sedate tick-tock from a mock-antique, Chinese-made grandfather clock. Yet, in the corridors outside, unkempt men roamed with guns.

It was concern for outward trappings that first brought the Dudayev regime notoriety in Britain. Nearly two years before gruesome television pictures brought Chechnya into every living-room, Dudayev's name had popped up at the Old Bailey in London. He had sent two Chechen brothers, Ruslan and Nazarbek Utsyev, to London to get currency and passports for his self-declared independent state. Both were murdered. The trial of their murderer, an Armenian immigrant, heard how the emissaries had got involved with shady arms deals and nights on the town with escort girls. Dudayev blamed the KGB.

The episode helped feed an image - part bigotry but also part truth - of Chechnya as a haven for criminals and mobsters. Two months later, Dmitri Krikoriants, a journalist with a Moscow weekly, was murdered in Grozny. He had been investigating the plunder of profits from Chechnya's oil reserves by officials who hovered around Dudayev. Then there was an ingenious Chechen scam to cheat the Russian Central Bank of 25 billion roubles. The Chechen "mafia" became an explanation for all Russia's ills.

But the Chechen president's meticulous single-mindedness makes a mockery of Russian stereotypes of the Caucasus as a land of ignorant braggadocio populated by wild, unthinking gun nuts.

A former head of his presidential guard, Ruslan Labazanov, a convicted murderer who escaped from jail in 1991, used to tell a story of a bodyguard called Issa, who stole the president's pistol. Dudayev summoned him for a "conversation". It ended with Issa crawling from the president's study like a dog. He spent the next two days recovering. "We thought that was the end of him: he would be fired, court-martialled or eliminated in another way. Two days later Dzhokhar telephoned Issa and yelled: 'Why don't you report for duty?'"

So Dudayev knows how to be brutal but also, in sharp contrast to President Yeltsin, how to calibrate his brutality. Labazanov, along with many of the president's other early allies, would later fall foul of Dudayev, too. The shoot-out became the main channel of political debate. The economy was in decline and discontent growing. As Dudayev's allies fell away, Russia armed Dudayev's foes and, last November, launched a "rebel" assault on Grozny, which was led by Russian troops. But instead of destroying Dudayev, Moscow made his survival synonymous with that of Chechnya. Old feuds faded; Labazanov and many others rallied to the cause.

The war gave Dudayev's rhetoric a new resonance. "For every Chechen ear we must take ten Russian ears," he announced at one of his last press conferences.

THE youngest of seven children, Dudayev was born in the Chechen village of Yalkhor in 1944, the year Stalin launched a holocaust against the Muslim peoples of the North Caucasus. He would spend the next 13 years of his life on a reservation in Kazakhstan, the terminus of a forced exodus. Accused of collaboration with the Nazis, the entire Chechen nation of half a million people was packed into cattle cars and scattered around Central Asia and Siberia. Some 200,000 died. Dudayev made the journey with his mother and four siblings. Two older brothers were at the front fighting with the Soviet Army against Hitler. Not until four years after Stalin's death in 1953 did the family return home.

Dudayev's military career began in 1962 at an air force training school in the central Russian city of Tambov. He got a place there after two years studying electronics in Vladikavkaz, near to home in the Caucasus. Overcoming the stigma carried by Chechens in Russia, he would later graduate from one of the Soviet Union's most prestigious institutions, the Yuri Gagarin Air Force Academy near Moscow. He also married a Russian poetess called Alla. They had three children. One of two sons is reported to have been killed in the war.

Even today, as Russian fighter-bombers reduce Grozny to ruins, former superiors find it hard to speak ill of Dudayev. "He was honest and trustworthy," said Major-General Pyotr Deinekin, commander of Russia's air force, last week, "I would say upright. His one outstanding quality was concern for people."

Until 1989 Dudayev played scrupulously by the rules, serving in bases across the empire. In Afghanistan, he won the attention of senior commanders with new bombing tactics against the Mujaheddin, the Islamic rebels he now hails as heroes and whose tactics he tries to copy.

His first public deviation came at the peak of his career: command of a force of strategic nuclear bombers in the Estonian town of Tartu. He allowed a procession of Estonians demonstrating for independence to cross his base and ordered a mobile military kitchen to serve hot tea. He turned a blind eye when, during a holiday air show, paratroopers unfurled an Estonian flag. At this point, he has said, he recognised the power of nationalism.

As Moscow lost control of the Baltic states, Dudayev was posted back home. In late 1990, he left the military - though he never seems formally to have left the Communist Party - to lead a new nationalist organisation, the National Congress of the Chechen People. Then came the August 1991 putsch which temporarily ousted Gorbachev in Moscow. He joined Chechen elders to discuss how the drama 1,000 miles away might affect what was still the Chechen-Ingush Republic, a nominally autonomous, but very much subservient part of the Russian Federation, then itself part of the Soviet Union. A speech on what would become his only theme - the deportation of 1944 and earlier tsarist attempts to crush Chechnya - earned tumultuous applause.

Less than two months later, through a single-candidate election, he was president. The ballot was deeply flawed. But perhaps the deepest flaw was one that Yeltsin would repeat in Moscow two years later - Dudayev unceremoniously disbanded the local Supreme Soviet, or parliament, and declared the old Communist order defunct.

Aside from issuing a decree giving every man the right to bear arms (his own pistol was first on the official register), Dudayev delivered on another election promise: on 1 November 1991, he declared Chechnya - or Ichkeria - independent from Russia. He promptly ordered a set of five postage stamps. Each bore a picture of what were to become icons of the new republic: Mr Dudayev himself (wearing full dress uniform and a peaked cap); Sheik Mansur, leader of an 18th-century revolt against Moscow; Imam Shamil, leader of another rebellion half a century later; the presidential palace; and the new national flag showing the silhouette of a lone wolf sitting under the moon.

No foreign leader, except Zviad Gamsakhurdia, ousted president of Georgia, recognised the new nation. "We must take our right and live like the wolf, proud and alone," said Dudayev. Radicals demanded the wolf stand not sit, but he calmed them by saying awatchful, sitting wolf was a better symbol of the peace and prosperity awaiting their land. Now, Chechnya is still alone but there is no prospect of peace.

Phillips was being held in [Erie County](#) jail for a parole violation, but escaped on April 2, 2006 and was on the run until September 8, 2006. He escaped by cutting through the corrugated metal roof of the facility's kitchen using a can opener. He is believed to have stolen numerous vehicles and broken into several cabins across Western New York and [McKean, Pennsylvania](#). Police believe that at some point, he walked on Oliver Road looking for people to pick him up. He also used a stolen vehicle to travel as far away as east Tennessee.^{[\[citation needed\]](#)}

Outrage: An Anarchist Memoir of the Penal Colony, translated by Michael Shreve,

Louis Dega (born 1890, [Marseilles, France](#) – died unknown, [French Guiana](#)) was a prisoner in the [French Guiana](#) penitentiary of [Devil's Island](#). He was convicted of [fraud](#) and [counterfeiting](#) and sentenced to fifteen years' imprisonment by France, where he became a companion of [Henri Charrière](#) (also known as [Papillon](#)) for thirteen years. The two were first sent to a prison in [Caen, France](#), until they embarked for [South America](#) in 1932. He had a younger brother named Joseph who tried to help Charrière escape from [Barranquilla](#) prison in [Colombia](#). Dega and Papillon had previously met before embarking to South America, and made a deal in which Dega paid Papillon for protection. The two became best friends during their sentence.

Jean Keraudy

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)

Jean Keraudy was the stage name of Roland Barbat. He was known for his multiple prison escapes, most notably from France's [La Santé Prison](#).

He served as the inspiration for the character of Roland Darban in [José Giovanni](#)'s 1957 novel The Hole ([French](#): *Le Trou*). The two met while cellmates.

In the 1960 film production of [The Hole](#), director [Jacques Becker](#) cast him to play Darban.

He died in 2001.

Pascal Payet (born 7 July 1963) is a [French](#) criminal who has gained notoriety for his daring prison escapes using helicopters. He was initially sentenced to a 30 year jail term for a murder committed during the robbery of a security van in 1997.

[] Criminal career and escape attempts

Born in [Montpellier](#), Payet spent his childhood in [Lyon](#) before settling in [Marseille](#). In 1988 he was convicted of [aggravated assault](#) and again in 1993 for [conspiracy](#). On November 20, 1997, he participated in an attack on a [Banque de France armored car](#) in [Salon-de-Provence](#) during which someone was killed. He was arrested along with [Éric Alboreo](#) in [Paris](#) in January 1999.

On October 12, 2001, he escaped from a prison in the village of [Luynes](#) in the French [department](#) of [Bouches-du-Rhône](#) on board a hijacked helicopter with Frédéric Impocco.^[3] On October 18, Impocco was captured and brought in for questioning in Paris. On April 14, 2003, Payet organized another helicopter escape from the Luynes prison, this time of Franck Perletto, Michel Valero, and [Éric Alboreo](#), who had been arrested with him in 1999.^[5] They were caught three weeks later.

In January 2005, Payet was sentenced to 30 years in prison for [murder](#) in connection with the 1997 armored car hijacking in Salon-de-Provence.^[6] This sentence was upheld in May 2006 following an appeal by the [cour d'assises](#) of [Var](#). In December 2005, he published an open letter on his [blog](#) entitled "The Saga of My Transfers" ([French](#): "L'épopée de mes transferts") in which he criticized the conditions of his imprisonment. Before the letter he had gone on a [hunger strike](#) at a prison in [Metz](#) in protest against having been transferred nine times in 30 months. In January 2007, he confessed to organizing the 2003 escape and was sentenced to an additional seven years in prison, while his co-conspirators were each sentenced to three. He was also sentenced to another six years for his own escape in 2001.

By July 2007, Payet was one of the most closely surveilled prisoners in France and was never kept at the same prison for more than six months. He had been officially classified as a "détenu particulièrement surveillé," or a prisoner under especially high surveillance, and placed in [solitary confinement](#). Despite these measures, on July 14, 2007, taking advantage of [Bastille Day](#) celebrations, four masked men hijacked a helicopter from [Cannes – Mandelieu Airport](#).^[3] They used it to free Payet from his solitary confinement in a prison in [Grasse](#).^[7] The helicopter landed some time later at [Brignoles](#), 38 kilometres north-east of [Toulon](#), France on the [Mediterranean](#) coast. Payet and his accomplices then fled the scene and the pilot was released unharmed. Two days after his escape, a European [arrest warrant](#) was issued against him.^[6]

Payet was captured on September 21, 2007 in the town of [Mataró](#), a suburb north of [Barcelona](#) in [Spain](#).^{[4][8]} He was transferred to French custody on October 4, 2007 along with two accomplices who had been captured with him, Alain Armato and Farid Ouassou. He was then imprisoned in a location which has been kept secret for "security reasons." On June 25, 2008, the cour d'assises of the [Alpes-Maritimes](#) department sentenced him to 15 years in prison with no chance of [early release](#) for a series of [armed robberies](#) and [assaults](#) against police officers while he evaded custody.

On April 8, 2011, the cour d'assises of Bouches-du-Rhône sentenced him to an additional five years of prison for his 2007 escape. His three accomplices were sentenced to nine, seven and six years. Some other prisoners judged complicit in the escape were given lesser sentences.

Payet is married and has two children.^[1]

[] References

1. ^ [a b](#) (French) "[Pascal Payet, l'éternel évadé](#)". [Europe 1](#). 2011-03-31. Retrieved October 23, 2012.
2. ^ "[Frenchman stages second helicopter escape from prison](#)". [sundaytelegraph](#). 2007. Retrieved July 14, 2007.
3. ^ [a b c](#) "[French inmate in second breakout](#)". BBC. 2007-07-14. Retrieved July 15, 2007.
4. ^ [a b](#) Heckle, Harold (September 21, 2007). "[Escaped killer from French prison caught](#)". *USA Today*.
5. ^ (French) "[Les évadés de la prison de Luynes arrêtés dans la Drôme](#)". [investigateur.info](#). 2003. Archived from [the original](#) on 2003-09-10. Retrieved 2003-05-10.
6. ^ [a b](#) (French) "[Mandat d'arrêt européen lancé contre Pascal Payet](#)", [Le Point](#), 16/07/2007
7. ^ (French) "[Pascal Payet s'est évadé en hélicoptère de la maison d'arrêt de Grasse](#)", [Nouvelobs.com](#), 15/07/2007
8. ^ (French) "[Payet, auteur d'une évasion en hélicoptère, arrêté en Espagne](#)", [Le Point](#), 22/09/2007
2. On 4 March 1946, Darcy Dugan escaped from a prison tram which was transporting him between [Darlinghurst Courthouse](#) and [Long Bay Gaol](#).^[4] As the tram passed the [Sydney Cricket Ground](#), Dugan used a kitchen knife to saw a hole through the roof, through which he escaped. The tram is still kept today at the [Sydney Tramway Museum](#).^[5]
3. On the 16th of December 1949, Darcy Dugan and William Mears both escaped from Central Police Station, Sydney, during a Court recess. Mears was in Court after being charged with possession of an unlicensed pistol and had subpoenaed Dugan as a witness, during an adjournment for lunch, Dugan and Mears hacksawed through an iron bar in their cell and escaped from the Police complex and onto the streets of Sydney, Police gave chase, but they were last seen as they jumped into a passing tram.^[6]
4. After another prison escape, Dugan reportedly left behind a note scrawled on the wall of his cell which read, "[Gone to Gowings](#)."^[7] Dugan served a total 35 years in prison, exactly half of his life. He served his final prison sentence at Long Bay Goal and was released on parole in 1984.

Prison escapes

Brenden James Abbott escaped from jail twice, and he also fled from police in 1986 during questioning at [Nollamara](#) Police Station. Unlike crimes Abbott was previously a party to, the escape from [Sir David Longland Prison](#) at Wacol in November 1997 utilized actual force rather than an implied threat of force. In that instance Brendon Berichon, a young former SDL inmate, fired warning shots overhead from the outside of the fence. The offenders alleged this occurred in panic, when the three escapees' intended surreptitious escape plan went awry. Sir David Longlands Prison was also known as "the Killing Fields," and was later decommissioned by the Queensland government.

On 24 November 1989, the [Fremantle Prison](#) escape occurred that earned Abbott his lifelong notoriety as a criminal genius, and ultimately led to his permanent and erroneous branding as "The Postcard Bandit." In the escape, Abbott and another inmate jumped from the roof over the high limestone prison walls, in uniforms similar to guards,' which Abbott had made in the prison tailorshop.

Fremantle Prison, built in the 1850s originally as an immigration holding centre, had a long history of escapes which feature in the heritage listed site's tours. Fremantle Prison, like Sir David Longland Prison, was also decommissioned by the government due to substandard conditions in the years following Abbott's escape. Both prisons were notorious for their severe and outdated conditions, and inmates' bloody and brutal existence. Nollamara police officers featured in the 2003 Western Australian [Kennedy Royal Commission](#) into Police Corruption, when former detainees detailed allegations of physical torture during questioning. (Kennedy Royal Commission Final Report, 2003, Chapter 3 - Operation Least Said, p. 153)

□ Fugitive

Abbott was on the run for six months in 1986/1987; as *Australia's Most Wanted Man* from 1989-1995 (five and a half years), and from 1997-1998 (six months). He was eventually caught in [Darwin, Northern Territory](#) in 1998 and is^[41] serving a 23 year sentence in [Queensland](#) for bank robberies and the 1997 prison escape. After serving two years of his current sentence in solitary confinement, he sued the Queensland Government for mistreatment.^[41] He was released from solitary confinement in May 2004 and returned there on a Maximum Security Order in April 2006, after he requested medical attention three times in 12 months, which the authorities deemed suspicious. After years in mainstream, Abbott was again returned to Supermax solitary confinement in August 2008 and then released back into mainstream detention in the days preceding a judicial review hearing into his back-to-back Maximum Security Orders, in October 2009.

Dubbed "The Postcard Bandit," media reports in the 1990s said Abbott sent postcards of his travels to the Western Australian Police. However, the postcards in the "Postcard Bandit" story were a WA Police Media Unit invention;^[41] The "postcards" were photos Abbott lost while running from police after the Fremantle Prison escape with Aaron Reynolds, and were intended for his friends and family. They included a picture of Reynolds outside the [Dwellingup](#) Police Station, in Western Australia. While Reynolds was arrested within weeks, the fugitive, Abbott, went on to establish himself as a "professional" bank robber, using self-taught skills in make-up to create convincing disguises, computers to create false IDs, and electronics to dodge alarms.

His five and a half years on the run came to an end when police tracked down a post office box on the [Gold Coast, Queensland](#) used by Abbott, which was found to contain a pager bill registered to the address where he was living. Confronted by police at a Darwin laundromat he surrendered without resistance and this is a typical facet of each of his arrests, historically.



Pyotr Patrushev

His escape had to be made under the cover of darkness, and Pyotr Patrushev knew he had only one night to make it across the more than 30km of cold waters to safety.

He admits that years later, knowing what he now knows, he may have been a little scared of what he was about to do, but as an 20-year-old with only one thing on his mind the marathon swim didn't seem that big a deal.

After all he knew that if he stayed in Russia he was going to be killed anyway.

On an early spring night from the border town of Batumi, Patrushev set off – in the dark, wearing swimming trunks and a pair of flippers, and plunged in to the waters of the Black Sea heading for Turkey.

It was 30 years before he returned to his native homeland of Siberia, but his escape was one of the most daring in Soviet history and resulted him being sentenced to death by the Soviet courts for high treason – a charge that was only downgraded in 1989.

Now in his mid 60s, Patrushev lives on the idyllic and peaceful coastline of Jervis Bay – a far cry from his boyhood in freezing Siberia, but the softly spoken gentleman says the South Coast reminds him very much of his homeland.

“I grew up with nature, which is probably what gave me the strength to do what I had to do,” he says.

“I would go hunting and fishing in the forests around our village. Sure we endured great privations, but those forests and streams were teeming with fish and animals. It was cold, but you dressed for it and were used to it.

“Looking back now I have memories of unspeakable beauty of the forests and sunshine glistening on the snow.

“It wasn't actually only the beach that drew me here, although I swim in it every day – it was the fact this place is also surrounded by forests and bush, like when I was growing up.”

Although Siberia holds fond memories for him, by the time he was a teenager, Patrushev, like all Soviet men of a certain age, was conscripted into the army – and it was there he was exposed to the brutality of a system which has only now been fully revealed.

“It was a system of hierarchical violence, and there is no way a ‘normal’ person could understand a culture that was so politically violent,” he says.

“This was a country that has killed up to 40 million of its own people through revolutions and purges. I was a young, idealistic person, I was a competitive swimmer, so I was already a little privileged. I got to travel and go to large libraries and read material that the general population never knew existed.

“I had a completely different mentality to the average Russian and so from that liberal background and the rebellious nature, I was thrust into this completely brutalized army culture.

“And I soon came to realise if I did not do something dramatic I would literally not survive there. I was hated by our Sargent for sticking up for a mate whom he kept on ‘hazing’. We know now that many people were maimed or even killed as a result of punishment in the army.”

His first job was to get out of the army and to do that Patrushev managed to convince the hierarchy he was a paranoid schizophrenic and transferred to a psychiatric facility for further “testing”.

But he knew that he only had a certain amount of time before he was either found to be faking or put through a “rehabilitation” process of electroshock therapy and injections.

He managed to escape from the hospital with the help of friends who were undergoing training there as young doctors and, in the dead of a winter and in the middle of night, he made his way to a railway station, stole a horse and sled, covered himself in rags to cover his hospital issue pyjamas and fled to the home of his swimming coach.

“He risked his life and that of his family to help me,” Patrushev says.

“I actually spoke to him the other day, he is an old man now, but he told me that after I left Russia he always felt that he was being watched.

“If it was still in Stalin’s time, he would have been shot for what he did.”

Patrushev managed to secure an ID and made his way to Batumi – the most heavily patrolled border town in Russia - where he was immediately recruited by the local swimming team that badly needed a backstroke swimmer for the forthcoming competition.

This meant he had a job and a place to stay – all important pieces of his plan to escape.

“I also was training every day, which was good,” he says.

“But I was a 100 and 200m backstroke swimmer and the coach was wondering why I was insisting on doing endurance training, swimming with lead weights on my arms.”

But he knew his time was limited and when he made the mistake of waving to the Turkish consul during a walk in the town – who just happened to train at the same gym – he was immediately put under surveillance.

“The atmosphere of surveillance and paranoia in a border town is just amazing and it is

even hard for me to imagine it now,” Patrushev says.

“I had done nothing wrong, but the attitude was ‘why would he know the Turkish consul?’ I was just being friendly but also careless and if I was much more mature I would have known exactly what was going to happen.”

What did happen was that Patrushev was notified that he needed to go and “have a friendly chat” with the KGB. And at that point the young man knew he had a limited time to get out of the country.

“From that point on they increased the surveillance on me, and I knew I had about two weeks before they got all the information they needed to get me,” he says.

“Now having travelled back to Russia I know they questioned all my relatives as well.”

With his flippers in hand, Patrushev chose a warmish night, with little or no moon to start his swim.

“You needed to have flippers – even Ian Thorpe could not have made it without flippers,” he says.

It wasn’t the strong currents or the freezing upsurges of water that were worrying to Patrushev. He had to dodge nets, search lights, surveillance planes, submarines, sonar radar, depth charges and patrol boats.

“If they saw a break in the waves, they didn’t risk that it may have been a dolphin, they just dropped a depth charge which killed everything in close proximity,” he recalls.

Swimming backstroke – “better for orientation” – Patrushev says he was accompanied by a dolphin for some of the way, but even after a night of swimming he knew he wasn’t going to make it to Turkish soil by daylight.

Instead he says it was a fluke which saved his life, when he pulled into a cove at the break of dawn, not knowing that it was a submarine base near the Turkish border that had its own security and that was not patrolled by guard dogs during the day.

After hiding out for the day he went back into the Black Sea the next night and by the next morning swam ashore to what he hoped was Turkish territory.

“But you can’t ever be sure. There’s no Turk that comes out and says you’re in Turkey,” he says.

He walked for a long time in the mountains – still not having eaten – until he came to a village with a mosque in view and knew he was safe. He broke into a barn, stole a couple of eggs and fell asleep.

But his journey was far from over. Suspicious of his tale of escape – there were no successful swims out of Russia although hundreds of people perished while attempting to cross the border -- the Turks locked him in a military facility for “debriefing” where he

stayed in solitary confinement for six months.

“That was when I started to get worried,” he admits.

But he was eventually cleared of any charges and entered Turkish society, fluent in the language which he learned in jail and with a mission to expose the Soviet system.

When you think about the fate that befell poisoned former Russian spy Litvinenko at the end of last year, what Patrushev was doing was pretty risky, but the young dissident published articles on the Russian military and its psychological brainwashing which were picked up around the world.

He didn't realise until nearly 30 years later that his expose had resulted in him being sentenced to death for high treason, a fate that usually only befell top Russian military or political figures.

“I later found out there were 12 volumes of information on me which I thought was an amazing waste of government resources,” he says.

“Because really I was just a boy who liked swimming and who just didn't like the crazy kind of system that the country had.”

When he first escaped from the psychiatric hospital, Patrushev knew he was also leaving behind his family, and it wasn't until nearly 25 years later that he had his first contact with them when his sister arrived in New Delhi for a trade union sponsored tour.

But even then he – and she – were under the scrutiny of the KGB and Patrushev says he knows that his family did what they had to do when he left to ensure they too survived the Soviet system.

“Survival is your first priority and all of the emotional links had to be sacrificed. When I first came to Russia after 25 years and fully cleared of any offences – in fact I was being treated as a bit of a hero -- my mother still wanted to know if I had a proper visa for entering the country.

“It was a difficult situation for them in the past and they had to think about the repercussions for themselves, but fortunately they were already in Siberia so there weren't many other places to send them really.”

Life now is certainly at a slower pace but, after becoming first a BBC correspondent and later Radio Liberty science broadcaster, where he started one of the first Russian-language science and environment shows on foreign radio; working as a mediator and a top level translator, as well as penning two books so far – his autobiography and a fiction novel in the vein of George Orwell's *1984*, called *Project Nirvana*, Patrushev is still passionate about the world and making people realise that there is a better way to do things.

“Coming from where I come from I don't see what is going on in the world as being as catastrophic as many. We were so close to annihilation during the Cold War and from that point of view we will always live in a world which is dangerous,” he says. “Just think of the

climate change and the nuclear proliferation issues right now.”

“But I also believe there is a balance between good and evil and that there are lessons to be learned from what is happening now.

“The technology of peacemaking is getting a lot more sophisticated and, although I have no illusions about what humanity is capable of, I am very appreciative of the steps that people take to achieve harmony.

“Every person has a lot of choices and each person can contribute something to the world. Now I try to do it through my writing, trying to tell the truth as I see it.

“We have to look at the world not as something that God or the evolution created with us as passive agents, but look beyond that and realise that however the world came about, it needs our conscious efforts to make it a better place.”

Silas Wheeler, called "Captain", was a soldier in the army of the [American Revolution](#), and the founder of the town of [Wheeler](#), [Steuben County](#), [New York](#).

He was born on March 7, 1752 or 1753 at [Concord, Massachusetts](#), and died on November 28, 1828, at Wheeler, New York.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Revolutionary War](#)
- [2 Family life](#)
- [3 References](#)
- [4 External links](#)

[] Revolutionary War

He was at the [Battle of Bunker Hill](#) and accompanied [Benedict Arnold](#) on his expedition from [Maine](#) to [Quebec](#). Many starved to death along the way, and others deserted. After several days with no food, a group of Indians brought Silas a [dog](#) - he said it was the sweetest food he had ever eaten. In Quebec, he was captured by the British and caught [smallpox](#) while in prison. Wheeler became bald from the illness and remained permanently so. After his exchange, he returned to Rhode Island, became a privateer, and was recaptured on the high seas by the British. He was sent to a prison camp at [Kinsale](#) in [Ireland](#). After a year he escaped and was helped by [Henry Grattan](#) to make his way to a ship bound for [Dunkirk](#), France, and thence to America.

After the war he moved to [Albany County, New York](#), then on to [Steuben County](#) where he founded the town of Wheeler.

Escape from Melbourne Remand Centre

Gibb had several prior convictions for manslaughter, armed robbery and other weapons offences dating back to his mid-teens. In February 1993, he was convicted for the armed holdup of a security van in [Sunshine](#) two years earlier. Prior to his conviction, Gibb was held in the Melbourne Remand Centre, where he met prison officer Heather Parker. Parker's marriage to a fellow prison officer was ending, and she began a relationship with Gibb. In May 1992, the two of them were seen entering a broom cupboard, and Parker's colleagues demanded she be transferred, first to [Pentridge](#) and then the secure wing of [St Vincent's Hospital](#).^[1]

On 7 March 1993, Gibb and a fellow prisoner, Archie Butterley, executed a meticulously planned escape with Parker's assistance. Using a small piece of explosive smuggled into the prison by Parker during a visit, Gibb and Butterley blew out part of a window and climbed down a string of knotted bedsheets to La Trobe Street below where a getaway car containing firearms and equipment was waiting. After several crashes, the escapees stole a motorcycle on the [Westgate Freeway](#) and continued on to Southbank Boulevard where they were intercepted by a police divisional van and engaged in a shootout with two officers. Gibb's arm was broken in the engagement, and one of the police officers was shot twice, then had his revolver and police van stolen by Gibb and Butterley.^[1]

Shortly after the shootout, Gibb and Butterley were seen climbing into a [Suzuki Vitara](#), which a police check revealed was registered to Parker although police believed that she may have been a hostage. An Australia-wide alert was issued, as Gibb, Butterley and Parker picked up a previously stored [Pajero](#) four-wheel drive in Frankston and escaped into regional Victoria. They sought treatment for their injuries at Latrobe Regional Hospital in Moe, before hiding out in bushland for several days.^[1]

[] Capture

On 11 March, the three fugitives turned up in the small town of [Gaffneys Creek](#), 175 kilometres north-east of Melbourne. Smuggling Butterley into their hotel room and claiming he was their sick child, Gibb and Parker dined at the hotel restaurant and interacted with other guests. They departed the next day, however a fire broke out in the room they had stayed in, burning the hotel to the ground. Police investigating the fire matched the description of the couple with Gibb and Parker, and a huge search operation began. On 13 March, police found the Pajero hidden in bushland near Picnic Point, and began combing the area with sniffer dogs. Gibb and Parker were arrested when police found them attempting to wade across the [Goulburn River](#). Butterley was found shot dead, and although he had engaged in a lengthy firefight with police, a forensic expert would later testify at the committal hearing that he had been shot with the police revolver the pair had taken in Southbank, and that he had not killed himself.^[1]

Parker served three-and-a-half years in prison for her role in assisting Gibb's escape. When she was released from [Deer Park Metropolitan Women's Correctional Centre](#) in September 1997, Gibb picked her up in a stretch limousine and they spent the night at the Crown Towers hotel. In 2005, Gibb was arrested for the alleged burglary of a car dealership in Balnarring.^[2] Parker also faced court in 2007 for assaulting a woman who had an affair with Gibb.^[3]

In 1956 Ryan appeared in court for passing bad cheques in [Dandenong](#). He was given a bond. His next appearance in court was after he issued a large number of forged cheques in [Warrnambool](#). His partner was caught with the goods purchased with the bad cheques and handed Ryan over to the police. He received another a good-behaviour bond. The arresting detective gave a favourable character reference on Ryan's behalf.^[8]

After being apprehended for robbery in April 1960, Ryan and his accomplices escaped from the Melbourne City Watch House but were recaptured several days later.^[9] On 17 June 1960, Ryan pleaded guilty in the Melbourne Court of General Sessions to eight charges of breaking and stealing and one of escaping from legal custody. He was sentenced to eight and a half years imprisonment.^[7]

Ryan first served prison time at [Bendigo Prison](#). Here, under Ian Grindlay (who would later become the Governor of [Pentridge Prison](#)), he appeared to want to rehabilitate himself. He was a model prisoner, his time in prison was productive and he exhibited a disciplined approach to study, completing his Leaving Certificate (the equivalent of 11 years of formal schooling).^[4] He was studying for his Matriculation (the successful completion of 12 years of formal schooling) when he was released on parole in August 1963. He was regarded by the authorities as a model prisoner.^[10]

After working as a clerk for a couple of months, Ryan went to lunch and never returned. He had started robbing butcher shops and used explosives to blow their safes.^[11]

Ryan and two accomplices were caught after another butcher shop robbery on 4 January 1964. He was charged with breaking and entering and theft offences on 6 January 1964. Bailed on 3 February 1964, Ryan skipped town and fled to New South Wales. He later admitted to nine robberies in New South Wales between 4 April and 11 July 1964. On a visit home on 14 July he was caught by Victorian Police in the early hours the next morning. On 13 November 1964 he received an eight-year prison sentence for breaking and entering. He was sent to [Pentridge Prison](#).^[12]

[] Escape

After Ryan was sentenced to [Pentridge Prison](#), he was placed in B Division where he met fellow prisoner Peter John Walker (who was serving a 12-year sentence for bank robbery). When Ryan was informed that his wife was seeking a divorce, he made a plan to escape from prison. Walker decided to go along with him. Ryan planned to take himself and his family and flee to Brazil where there was no extradition treaty with Australia.^{[4][12]}

At around 2:07 pm on Sunday, 19 December 1965, Ryan and Walker put the escape plan into effect. As prison officers were taking turns attending a staff Christmas party in the officers' mess hall, Ryan and Walker scaled a five-metre prison wall with the aid of two wooden benches, a hook and blankets. Running along the top of the wall to a prison watch tower, they overpowered prison warder Helmut Lange and took his M1 carbine rifle. Ryan threatened Lange to pull the lever which would open the prison tower gate to freedom. Lange, however, deliberately pulled the wrong lever. Ryan, Walker and Lange then proceeded down the steps to the tower gate, but it would not open. At the bottom of the stairs was the night officers' lodge. Warder Fred Brown was returning from lunch to relieve Lange when he was confronted by the escapees. Brown did not resist. When Ryan realised Lange had tricked him, Ryan jabbed the rifle into Lange's back and marched him back up the stairs so Lange could pull the correct lever to open the tower gate. The two escapees then exited the gate out into the prison car park.^[12] To the escapees' dismay there were only two cars in the car park and one had a flat tyre.^[13]

However, they did find a prison chaplain, Brigadier James Hewitt of [the Salvation Army](#), in the car park. The escapees grabbed Hewitt and used him as a shield. Ryan, armed with the rifle, pointed it at Hewitt and demanded his car. Prison Officer Bennett in Tower 2 saw the prisoners.

Ryan called to Bennett to throw down his rifle. Bennett ducked out of sight and then got his rifle.^[12]

When Hewitt told Ryan he did not have his car that day, Ryan rifle-butted him in the head causing serious injuries.^[14] Les Watt, a petrol attendant who watched the escape from a petrol station on Sydney Rd, witnessed Ryan hitting Hewitt with the rifle.^[15] The escapees then left the badly injured chaplain and Ryan ran out to Champ St, directly in front of the south-west corner of the prison.^[12]

Walker went south across Church St toward the adjacent Roman Catholic church in Sydney Rd. Prison officer Bennett had his rifle aimed at Walker and ordered Walker to halt or he would shoot. Walker took cover behind a small wall that bordered the church.^[13] The prison alarm was raised by Warder Lange, and it began to blow loudly, indicating a prison escape. Unarmed warders, Wallis, Mitchinson and Paterson, came running out of the prison main gate and onto the street.^{[12][16]}

George Hodson, who had been having lunch in the prison officers mess near the Number 1 post, responded to Lange's whistle. Bennett shouted to Hodson that he had a prisoner, Walker, pinned down behind the low church boundary wall. Hodson headed for Walker and picked up Walker's pipe. Hodson grappled with Walker but the escapee managed to break free so Hodson began hitting the fleeing Walker over his head with the piece of pipe. Walker was a faster runner than Hodson, but Hodson continued to chase after Walker with the pipe still in his hand. Both men ran towards the armed Ryan.^{[12][16]}

Meanwhile, confusion and noise were gaining strength around the busy intersection of Sydney Rd and O'Hea St and across to the nearby Champ St intersection, with the armed Ryan waving the rifle around trying to get cars to stop so he could commandeer them, and people ducking for cover between cars.^{[12] [16]}

Frank and Pauline Jeziorski were travelling south on Champ St and had slowed to give way to traffic on Sydney Rd when Ryan armed with the rifle appeared in front of their car. Ryan threatened the driver and his passenger wife to get out of their car. The driver, Frank Jeziorski, turned his car off, put it in neutral then got out of his vehicle. Ryan got in via the driver's door. Surprisingly, Pauline Jeziorski refused to get out of the car. She was persuaded by Ryan to get out, only to go back in the car to get her handbag.^[17] Paterson, realising Ryan was armed, returned inside the prison to get a rifle.^[18]

Warder William Mitchinson was first to reach the car and grabbed Ryan through the driver's window, he told Ryan "the game's up".^[19] Warder Thomas Wallis who was following, ran to Pauline Jeziorski's side of the car. He grabbed her and pulled her away from the car.^[18]

In frustration, Ryan forced Mitchinson to back off, then got out of the passenger's side door and noticed Walker running towards him, being chased by Hodson who was holding the pipe in his hand. Walker was shouting frantically to Ryan that prison guard William Bennett, standing on the Number 2 prison tower, had his rifle aimed at them. At this time, Hodson was chasing Walker,^[12] Ryan took a couple of steps forward and raised his rifle and aimed it at Hodson.^[19]

George Hodson fell to the ground. He had been struck by a single bullet, travelling from front to back. The bullet had exited through Hodson's back, about an inch lower than the point of entry in his right chest. Hodson died in the middle of Sydney Rd. Paterson, now with a rifle, ran back

outside and onto Champ St. He decided he could not get a clear shot, so he stood on a low wall in the prison's front garden. He aimed his rifle at Ryan, and claimed he fired a shot in the air when a woman came into his line of sight.^[12]

Ryan and Walker ran past the fallen warder and commandeered a blue Standard Vanguard sedan on Sydney Rd from its driver, Brian Mullins. With Walker then driving and Ryan a passenger, the car travelled through an adjacent service station and away, west along O'Hea St.^[13]

[] On the run

Ryan and Walker successfully eluded their pursuers outside [Pentridge Prison](#) and drove away before changing cars. They then made their way south following the [Moonee Ponds Creek](#) to change cars again before hiding in a safe house in [Kensington](#) provided by Norman Harold Murray. The following day the men moved into Christine Aitken's flat in Ormond Rd, [Elwood](#).

The prison escape dominated newspapers and other media. One newspaper reported that, "*Ronald Ryan, serving time for burglary, seized a prison officer and shot him three times, twice in the chest and once in the back.*"^[20] Reports of their activities caused widespread anxiety.

On 23 December, Ryan (armed with the warden's rifle) and Walker robbed an ANZ bank in North Rd, Ormond. Ryan herded 13 people into the bank's strongroom and stole £4500 (Australian). A witness, June Crawford, told reporters, "a bandit told me 'This gun shot a man a few days ago.'"^[21]

On 24 December 1965, the Victorian Government announced a £5,000 (A\$10,000) reward for information leading to the capture of Ryan and Walker. It was reported in *The Age* newspaper that the Chief Secretary and Attorney General, Arthur Rylah, had issued a warning to the escapees that the killing of Hodson during the prison escape was the worst Victoria had known and that the "Hanging Act was still in force."^[12]

On 24 December (Christmas Eve), there was a party at the flat.^[12] A petty criminal, John Fisher, who knew Ryan, and Arthur Henderson (Aitken's boyfriend) were there. After all their beer had been consumed, Walker and Henderson left to find [sly-grog](#) in [Albert Park](#) for more drinks. An hour later Walker returned alone to the flat. He had killed Henderson in a Middle Park toilet block. Henderson was shot in the back of his head by Walker. The escapees left the flat and returned to Kensington. On 26 December, Aitken and another woman were charged with harbouring the criminals. They came forward after Henderson was killed and the escapees had left. The charges were later dropped. The pair returned to hiding in the basement of the house in Kensington. Murray was given money to buy a car in Sydney and return with it. Murray returned with the car with [Queensland](#) plates on 31 December (New Year's Eve). Ryan and Walker left for Sydney on 1 January 1966 (New Year's Day) and arrived on 2 January.^[13]

[] Recapture

After arriving in Sydney, Ryan and Walker endeavoured to establish some safe houses, Ryan also wanted to made contact with a woman he knew when he was in Sydney years ago, she was not home but her daughter was.^[18] Ryan made an arrangement to meet the woman and daughter at [Concord Repatriation Hospital](#) on the evening of 6 January. Unknown to Ryan the daughter recognised Ryan and tipped off the police. Acting on the information, Detective Inspector [Ray](#)

"Gunner" Kelly was alerted about their presence. DI Kelly with a heavily-armed contingent of 50 police officers and detectives set a trap for them. When the escapee's car pulled up near the hospital, Ryan walked over to a nearby telephone box, but it had been deliberately put out of order, so he walked over to a neighbouring shop and asked to use the phone there. The owner had been instructed to tell Ryan that his phone was also out of order, and as Ryan walked out of the shop he was tackled by six detectives, dropping a loaded .32 revolver that he had been carrying. At the same moment Det. Sgt [Fred Krahe](#) thrust a shotgun through the car window and held it at Walker's head, and he was captured without a struggle.^[22] Ryan and Walker were

Capture and escapes

On 5 September 1940, von Werra's [Bf 109E-4](#) (*W.Nr. 1480*) "< + -" was shot down over [Kent](#). It is unclear which of his adversaries was responsible for this victory. It was originally credited entirely to [Pilot Officer Gerald "Stapme" Stapleton](#) of [No. 603 Squadron RAF](#). However, the Australian ace [Flight Lieutenant Pat Hughes](#) ([234 Sqn RAF](#)) was [posthumously](#) awarded half of the credit, in the Citation (*London Gazette*, 22 October 1940), awarding him a [Bar](#) to his [DFC](#). Some sources suggest that P/O [George Bennions](#) of [41 Sqn](#) may have initially damaged von Werra's fighter before Hughes and/or Stapleton also scored hits on it. Other sources suggest F/L John Terence Webster of No. 41 Squadron as the victor.^[4]

Von Werra crash-landed in a field and was captured by the unarmed cook of a nearby army unit. Initially, he was held in [Maidstone](#) barracks by the [Queen's Own Royal West Kent Regiment](#), from which von Werra attempted his first escape. He had been put to work digging and was guarded by [Military Police](#) Private Denis Rickwood, who had to face von Werra down with a small truncheon, while von Werra was armed with a pick axe. (There is no mention of this escape attempt in the book *The One that Got Away*.) He was interrogated for eighteen days at [Trent Park](#), a mansion in [Hertfordshire](#) which before the War had been the seat of [Sir Philip Sassoon](#). (After the war it became Trent Park teachers' training college.) Eventually von Werra was sent to the [London](#) District Prisoner of War "cage" and then on to POW Camp No.1, at [Grizedale Hall](#) in the [Furness Fells](#) area of [Lancashire](#), between [Windermere](#) and [Coniston Water](#).



von Werra's [Bf 109E-4](#), pictured at [Marden, Kent](#)

On 7 October he tried to escape for the second time, during a daytime walk outside the camp. At a regular stop, while a fruit cart provided a lucky diversion and other German prisoners covered for him, von Werra slipped over a [dry-stone wall](#) into a field. The guards alerted the local farmers and the [Home Guard](#). On the evening of 10 October, two Home Guard soldiers found

him sheltering from the rain in a hoggarth (a small stone hut used for storing sheep fodder, that are common in the area), but he quickly escaped and disappeared into the night. On 12 October, he was spotted climbing a fell. The area was surrounded, and von Werra was eventually found, almost totally immersed in a muddy depression in the ground. Werra was sentenced to 21 days of [solitary confinement](#) and was subsequently transferred on 3 November to Camp No. 10 in [Swanwick, Derbyshire](#).

In Camp No. 13, also known as the Hayes camp, von Werra joined a group calling themselves *Swanwick Tiefbau A.G.* (Swanwick Excavations, Inc.), who were digging an escape tunnel. On 17 December 1940, after a month's digging, [it was complete](#). The camp forgers equipped the group with money and fake identity papers. On 20 December, von Werra and four others slipped out of the tunnel under the cover of anti-aircraft fire and the singing of the camp choir. The others were recaptured quickly, leaving von Werra to go it alone. He had taken along his flying suit and decided to masquerade as Captain Van Lott, a Dutch [Royal Netherlands Air Force](#) pilot. He claimed to a friendly locomotive driver that he was a downed bomber pilot trying to reach his unit, and asked to be taken to the nearest RAF base. In Codnor Park Station, a local clerk became suspicious, but eventually agreed to arrange his transportation to the RAF aerodrome at [Hucknall](#), near [Nottingham](#). The police also questioned him, but von Werra convinced them he was harmless. At Hucknall, a Squadron Leader Boniface asked for his credentials, and von Werra claimed to be based at [Dyce](#) near [Aberdeen](#). While Boniface went to check this, von Werra excused himself and ran to the nearest hangar, trying to tell a mechanic that he was cleared for a test flight. Boniface arrived in time to arrest him at gunpoint, as he sat in the cockpit, trying to learn the controls. Von Werra was sent back to Hayes under armed guard.

In January 1941, von Werra was sent with many other German prisoners to [Canada](#). His group was to be taken to a camp on the north shore of [Lake Superior, Ontario](#), so von Werra began to plan his escape to the [United States](#), which was still neutral at the time. On 21 January, while on a prison train that had departed [Montreal](#), he jumped out of a window, again with the help of other prisoners, and ended up near [Smiths Falls, Ontario](#), 30 miles from the [St. Lawrence River](#). Seven other prisoners tried to escape from the same train, but were soon recaptured. Von Werra's absence was not noticed until the next afternoon.

After an agonizing crossing of the frozen [St. Lawrence River](#), von Werra made his way over the border to [Ogdensburg, New York, U.S.A.](#) and turned himself over to the police. The immigration authorities charged him with entering the country illegally, so von Werra contacted the local German consul, who paid his bail.^[5] Thus, he came to the attention of the press and told them a very embellished version of his story. While the U.S. and Canadian authorities were negotiating his extradition, the German vice-consul helped him over the border to [Mexico](#). Von Werra proceeded in stages to [Rio de Janeiro, Brazil](#), [Barcelona, Spain](#), and [Rome, Italy](#). He finally arrived back in Germany on 18 April 1941.

When war broke out in 1899, Duquesne returned to South Africa to join the [Boer](#) commandos. He was wounded at the [Siege of Ladysmith](#) and received the rank of [captain](#) in the [artillery](#). Duquesne was captured by the British at the [Battle of Colenso](#), but escaped in [Durban](#). He joined the Boers again for the [Battle of Bergendal](#) but they had to fall back to [Mozambique](#), where they were captured by the Portuguese and sent to an internment camp in [Caldas da Rainha](#), near [Lisbon](#).

At this camp, he charmed the daughter of one of the guards, who helped him escape to [Paris](#). From there, he made his way to [Aldershot](#) in England. He joined the British army and got posted to South Africa in 1901 as an officer.

As a British officer, he returned to [Cape Town](#) with plans to sabotage strategic British installations. He recruited 20 men, but was betrayed by the wife of one. He escaped the [death penalty](#) by volunteering to give (phony) Boer codes to the British, but was still [court-martialled](#) and sentenced to life in prison. The other 20 members of his team were executed by firing squad.^[2]

He was imprisoned in Cape Town in the [Castle of Good Hope](#). The walls of the castle were extremely thick, yet night after night, Duquesne dug away the cement around the stones with an iron spoon. He nearly escaped one night, but a large stone slipped and pinned him in his tunnel. The next morning, a guard found him unconscious but uninjured.^[2]

Duquesne was one of many Boer prisoners sent to [Bermuda](#). He was one of an estimated 360 prisoners interned on Burt's Island, the second smallest of the then-five self-governed internment islands.^[3] The 5' 10" "23-year-old" passed himself off as an American, and was noted for his "fresh" complexion and "well set up", "gentlemanly" appearance by the Burt's Island Commandant (spokesman and representative for the other Boers), Captain C.E.M. Pyne.^[4] On 25 June 1902, Duquesne and Nicolaas du Toit travelled by ferry (legally, as the war had ended) to Bailey's Bay, [Hamilton Parish, Bermuda](#) to meet [Anna Maria Outerbridge](#), a leader of a Boer Relief Committee.

She was so well known for trying to assist Boers in escaping that the military searched her house whenever there was an escape, the Colonial Assembly outlawed assisting and harbouring escaped prisoners of war, and on [Guy Fawkes Night](#), an [effigy](#) of her, not [Guy Fawkes](#), was burnt.^[5] Outerbridge arranged for one of the men to escape while turning the other over to the military, and Duquesne was sent to the port of [St. George's](#) where another Boer Relief Committee member, Captain W. E. Meyer, arranged transportation out of the colony.^[6]

1919 to 1939



FBI file photo

After his arrest in New York, and while awaiting extradition to Britain, Duquesne pretended to be paralysed. He was sent to the prison ward at [Bellevue Hospital](#). On 25 May 1919, after nearly two years of feigning paralysis, he disguised himself as a woman and escaped by cutting the bars of his cell and climbing over the barrier walls to freedom.^[12] Police Commissioner Richard E. Enright sent out the following bulletin:

"This man is partly paralysed in the right leg and always carries a cane. May apply for treatment at a hospital or private physician. He also has a skin disease which is a form of eczema. If

located, arrest, hold and wire, Detective Division, Police Headquarters, New York City, and an officer will be sent for him with necessary papers."

About a year later, Duquesne appeared in [Boston](#), using the pseudonym "retired British Major Frederick Craven". He is known to have used several more names, among them "Colonel Beza", "Piet Niacud," and "Captain Fritz du Quesne" (his real name and rank).

Of this period in his life, little is known, only that he worked as a freelance journalist and an agent for [Joseph P. Kennedy's](#) film production company. It is also during this time that he worked with [Clement Wood](#) to write his "biography", *The Man who Killed Kitchener*, with rights sold to a film production company.

In 1932, Duquesne was betrayed by a woman who revealed his true identity to the [FBI](#), who arrested him. British authorities requested he be extradited, but he fought this charge in court. The judge ruled that although the charges had merit, the statute of limitations had expired

Gunther Pluschow was the only German Prisoner of War to escape from mainland Britain. (Franz von Werra in World War II escaped from Canada, having failed repeatedly to escape mainland Britain.) Pluschow's achievement is therefore unrivalled and incomparable. How did he escape from Britain?

Pluschow's exploits started in 1914 in Northern China, in the German colony of Tsingtao. Here he repeatedly flew his aircraft singled handed and outnumbered against the Japanese Farman Float Planes, whilst artillery spotting over enemy lines.

Tsingtao soon became blockaded and surrounded by Japanese and British forces. In late November, as the German situation military situation deteriorated, Pluschow was given orders by the Governor of Tsingtao to escape capture and return to Germany.

Pluschow flew out of Tsingtao on a cold morning, amidst heavy anti-aircraft fire from the surrounding hills, that now swarmed with Japanese soldiers. He flew as far as his Rumpler 'Taube' (Pigeon/Dove) would carry him, landing in mainland China, a neutral country.

After crash landing in China, the peasants who found him, thought he was a blonde haired god, and ran away, until he bribed them with some gold coins. Luckily he was quickly found and helped by American Missionaries, and eventually found himself in the presence of the local Chinese Mandarin. He gave the Mandarin his service revolver as a present, and the Mandarin treated him to a feast of delicacies. The Mandarin posted General Lin to his side and sent him to Shanghai, where he was told he would be free to travel home. Before he left the daughter of the Missionary gave him a cap as a present.

In Shanghai, because of its connections with Great Britain, the Chinese authorities interned Pluschow. A single guard was assigned to watch Pluschow. Pluschow was housed with some German sailors who were quite happy to spend the rest of the war playing cards and having dinner. Pluschow was disappointed with their attitude, but persuaded them to enlist the help of a local German lady, to help him escape.

One night the lady invited the German internees to dinner. The Chinese Guard carefully counted the number of Germans entering her house for dinner. When they left he noticed that one was missing. Confused, the Guard asked the Lady about the missing man. She told him he must have

made a mistake, and unless he ran after them, he would be in trouble. He ran off into the darkness. Meanwhile a carriage was waiting outside the rear of the house, which sped Pluschow to the Wusung Roadstead, and freedom. Waiting for him were German helpers.

Pluschow was taken to a safe house. Day and night he pretended to be a mad man in order to fool a Frenchman who lived above him.

Finally after a few weeks Pluschow was given false papers, and under the disguise of a Swiss Sewing Machine Salesman, he boarded a steamship bound for San Francisco via Nagasaki.

Pluschow had to travel to San Francisco via Nagasaki, where the ship would dock to take on coal. Here the ship would be thoroughly searched, because Pluschow was a wanted man, well-known to the Japanese military who had fought him over the cold skies of Kiaochow Bay and Tsingtao.

In 1914 aviators were like pop-stars. Gunther Pluschow's exploits over the skies of Tsingtao were a useful propaganda tool to the German war effort. The 'Dragon Pilot', as the Chinese had called him, had already achieved a hero status, and his whereabouts was of interest to everyone. His capture would be a great prize to any of the Entente nations. America at this point was still neutral, and if Pluschow could make it to the United States, he would in a position to escape to Germany.

Pluschow's steamship arrived at Nagasaki to coal. During the docking, the ship was searched by the Japanese Authorities, specifically looking for one 'Gunther Pluschow, escaped German Aviator of Tsingtao'. Kempei Tai (Japanese Secret Service) Agents entered the ship with a Medical Examiner.

The other Germans who had been captured by the Japanese at Tsingtao had been given the freedom of Nagasaki, and unlike World War II, were treated as guests able to roam freely in the day, before retiring to their pleasant hotels and quarters at night. Pluschow had only *capture* to fear, but that was still enough. Pluschow's plan was to play sick.

Pluschow quickly developed a high and very contagious fever. An American Doctor aboard was called to his bedside. The Doctor was informed by Pluschow of his predicament. Thus during the search, the American Doctor was only too willing to inform the Japanese Medical Examiner that this was *not* the man they were looking for and it was better not to examine him too closely. Fearful of catching this horrible and very contagious fever, the Japanese authorities left without questioning the Swiss Salesman.

On arrival in San Francisco, New Year's Eve, 1915, Gunther Pluschow was greeted by a frantic American press, and a Consulate official from Japan, who congratulated him on avoiding capture. Pluschow had the Jap Official kicked off the boat!

Pluschow celebrated New Years Eve surrounded by the fairest and tallest American lady's he had ever seen. He danced through the night and forgot all about his troubles.

With funds supplied from the German Consulate he made his way across America. He visited old friends near the Grand Canyon, and went riding there. His other, new-found, American friends invited him to stay in America, but he refused, stating that he could not stay because of his oaths as a German Officer.

On arrival in New York, Pluschow found a newspaper lying in a gutter, and was disgusted by the obviously English controlled press that portrayed the Entente as winning every battle. His determination to return home was strengthened.

Pluschow went to a German steamship company who provided him with Swiss paperwork and a cover story, plus a ticket on board a grubby Italian steamer, bound for Naples. He was disguised as a common workman.

There was only one problem with this plan. The ship would have to dock at Gibraltar for coal, the British Fortress guarding Britain's pond: the Mediterranean. No doubt the British would search the ship. The risk though, had to be taken, if Pluschow was to make it home to Germany.

On arrival in Gibraltar, the ship was boarded by Royal Navy Officers and Marines, hunting for German's who were looked on as potential spies. Everything was searched, and the men were lined up on deck in order to determine which ones were nationals from the Central Powers (Imperial Germany or the Austro-Hungarian Empire.)

The Officer in charge questioned a group of men, lined up on the deck, one-by-one. At first he was convinced by Pluschow's story that he was an Swiss Italian born in Austria, who had been living in America. (Pluschow spoke fluent Italian.) However, a British official who had also boarded the vessel, noted that Pluschow had no labels in his clothing, and told the officer that it was a sure sign he was a German. The Officer decided to arrest Pluschow purely on this suspicion, along with a number of other Swiss. Despite Pluschow's protests, he was taken ashore and interned as a civilian.

Pluschow was used as a common workman on Gibraltar, carrying coal, before being transferred to a horrid prison ship moored in Southampton harbour. He was placed amongst common men in the worst conditions imaginable. In order to facilitate his escape he decided to admit his true identity. Only after several months of writing letters to various British officials did he secure a place in a normal POW camp at Dorchester.

In 1915 Pluschow was finally transferred to Donington Hall POW Camp for officers near Derby. This was a maximum security camp - the British version of the World War II Colditz - a place noted by its commander Lt. Col. Picot, as impossible to escape from.

On arrival in Donington Hall, Pluschow wondered if he would ever escape Great Britain. The camp was for officers only, and therefore it was very well guarded. It had two 6ft high barbed wire fences. These also had an electrified wire running around the inner fence, deep and complicated wire entanglements in between the fences. There was an outer Guardhouse overlooking the main road, and the nearest town and railway station was a few miles away.

The camp itself had a low height watch tower, a few searchlights, and open country, except for the trees surrounding the estate. Donington Hall was formerly a stately home. (It is now the HQ of British Midland Airways.) The officers were housed in the main building, and their servants had quarters in the wooden huts.

Pluschow at first enjoyed the comradeship of his fellow officers. He met old acquaintances from Tsingtao, and enjoyed playing hockey in the stately grounds. Already a very muscular and fit man, he became even fitter. However, one afternoon Pluschow was lying on the grass dreaming

of home, when suddenly he heard and saw a plane flying over head. He soon became resolved to try to escape.

Previously, he had spotted a deer that had managed to penetrate the camps defences by struggling through both sets of wires at a particular point. This weak spot he also noted was not easily observed by the watchtower, especially during heavy rain. Its internal wire entanglements were also weaker, perhaps due to an oversight by the builders. With some good protective clothing it might be possible to scale these fences.

Over the next few weeks Pluschow pumped a Guard about the distance and direction of the local railway station (Derby) and managed to obtain some civilian clothing.

On a stormy night in May 1915, Pluschow and his accomplice, Trefftz - a fellow Naval officer who spoke English - took a slow walk around the garden outside Donington Hall. They were carrying umbrellas, and were accompanied by several other officers. Just before it was time to go inside, they hid inside the grotto, near the edge of the fence. The rain was very heavy, a typically heavy summer rainstorm, and the guards did not spot them.

At 11.00pm they heard a loud cheer from the main hall where they slept. This meant that the plan to deceive the night roll call had worked. At 12.30pm just after the Guards had been changed, Pluschow crept out of cover and approached the electrified fence. Using a ladder, and carrying some wooden planks, he carefully climbed the electrified wire fence, entanglements and outer fence, followed by Trefftz. Despite being badly cut and scratched by the barbs, Pluschow and Trefftz were soon outside. They quickly made it past the Gatehouse, crossing streams, jumping short stone walls, and walking blind through dense woods to the unlit open road. Getting his bearings by feeling a signpost with his hands, Trefftz determined the direction of Derby.

Shortly after they began they noticed a Sergeant from the camp walking towards them. They dodged into a ditch and pretended to be lovers as the unsuspecting Sergeant walked by. A few miles later Two pedestrians passed them while they hid in another ditch. Each time a headlight appeared they ducked into the ditch or over a wall to avoid being spotted.

By early morning they had reached Derby. They used a Garden shed to clean themselves up, have a shave, and prepare to walk to the Railway station, where they split up and travelled separately to London, planning to meet on the steps of St. Paul's Cathedral.

On arrival in London, Pluschow made it to St. Paul's Cathedral, and sat on the steps reading a newspaper, waiting for Trefftz. The hours went by, but Trefftz didn't show up. Discouraged, Pluschow concluded that Trefftz had got lost or been captured. He walked for hours in the dark. Cold, tired and hungry he eventually found a dry spot in a garden of a rich gentleman's home, and lay down under a bush to sleep. As he dozed off he listened to Brahms and Beethoven being played on the piano, and he dreamt of home.

Suddenly he was awakened by a loud knocking on a rear door. Pluschow opened his eyes and was startled by the appearance of a Policeman. He stayed absolutely still, hardly breathing. A pretty Lady's maid answered the door, and started to speak to the Policeman. While the Policeman was distracted, Pluschow jumped up, vaulted over a low garden fence, and walked off.

Pluschow went to the Railway station buffet, bought a newspaper and a bite to eat. He had limited funds and had to keep an eye on how much he spent, but because he was a gentleman, he tipped the waitress, who turned to her other 'regulars' and commented: 'Now he's a real English gent!' As Pluschow turned the newspaper over he noticed a column dedicated to himself and Trefftz. Trefftz had been captured, and now they were looking for him. His description convinced Pluschow to shed his raincoat and change his appearance at the earliest opportunity. He was now paranoid that the whole British population was after him.

Pluschow took his coat to the Waiting room where the clerk asked him his name. Surprised by the question he replied: "Meinen name?" The Clerk didn't notice and simply handed him a ticket for his coat, and said: "Thank you Mr Miner." As Pluschow left he noticed Two Policemen watching him. He walked away calmly.

Pluschow now needed a credible disguise. Since he planned to escape by ship, it seemed logical to become an American sailor.



Pluschow in disguise from a photo taken by the German's after his return home.

He went down to the Thames Estuary River bank. Here he blackened his blonde hair by mixing haircream with coal dust. He put a cap on his head that he had been given by the Missionaries daughter in China, and proceeded to pretend to be an American sailor, adopting their behaviour by copying local seamen.

Over the next few days he was nearly discovered whilst purchasing food from a local Sailors Working Men's club, and ended up joining their Union to avoid suspicion. Later whilst accidentally attending an Army Recruitment rally in a Square in Gravesend, he was nearly recruited by a Sergeant. He had noticed Pluschow's large frame and big muscles which were very unusual to see amongst the half starved local working folk. "Now here's real Army material!" said the Sergeant, praising himself for his recruitment skills in picking the best material. Pluschow explained that he was an American from a 3 masted ship: the Mississippi, docked in London at the time, and he couldn't join up without his Captain's permission. After this close encounter, Pluschow avoided crowds. In the day he planned his escape, and at night he tried them out.

Pluschow was running out of time and money. He needed a quick way out of Britain or he would have to give himself up. Luckily, whilst travelling on a bus he overheard Two gentlemen talking

about the departure times and location of the Ferries running between Tilbury/Gravesend and Flushing, in neutral Holland.

Pluschow quickly made a trip by train to Gravesend where he was able to see for himself the SS Mecklenberg, and the SS Princess Juliana, docking out in the harbour. Pluschow had one problem. In order to board the ferry and make his escape he couldn't simply walk up the gangplank or board the boat that took the passengers to the ferry. Each pier had a British soldier guarding it day and night. Everyone's papers were checked, particularly since they were looking for an escaped POW. Pluschow would have to board secretly.

Pluschow looked around, and noticed that a few rowing boats were available and might be borrowed to take him to the mooring buoy. Each night he decided he would make an attempt to steal the boat and row to the mooring buoy.

On his first attempt he was dragged downstream when the rowing boat broke on the rip tide, and only just managed to struggle to shore. He made a den amongst the rubbish piles on the side of the Thames and dried his clothes.

His second attempt nearly ended up being captured. His rowing boat became grounded and cut off not far from a bridge containing a soldier. Luckily the guard wasn't very observant in the darkness, and using his oars and pieces of wood, Pluschow managed to struggle across the wet boggy sands back to shore. Covered in mud and slime he cleaned himself down back at his den.

Pluschow by now was thoroughly discouraged. He spent his final pennies on a Music Hall show thinking it might cheer him up. Instead the show turned out to be British propaganda, showing how the German 'Hun' killed nurses, women and children as they marched through Belgium, and how the glorious British Army would defeat these Hunnish bullies. Pluschow left the Music Hall filled with even greater determination to escape Britain.

He went to Gravesend, where he spotted a rowing boat in a deserted area, up river from some fishing folk. Pluschow stole the boat, and carefully drifted by the fishing folk, heading for the mooring buoy where he knew that the Princess Juliana would moor next evening. The rip tide was very strong, and he nearly became exhausted trying not to get caught by the strong current. He sailed under a pontoon bridge, was challenged as 'friend or foe' and was shot at by a Guard, as he rowed vigorously downstream.

Eventually he made it to the shoreline, mooring his boat under a bridge, and taking cover in the tall grass. Here he would spend nearly 24 hours waiting for nightfall, and the ferry.

As night fell, the Princess Juliana could be seen clearly at the mooring buoy. Pluschow rowed out to her, vigorously paddling with one oar before climbing onto the buoy and kicking away the rowing boat. Nearly exhausted he climbed the huge steel chain until he dropped gently onto the ship's deck. Then, avoiding two guards, he took refuge under the cover of a lifeboat.

Next morning he awoke to find himself in Flushing, Holland, a free man.

Upon arrival in Holland, Pluschow carefully blended himself in with the crew who were unloading the boat. Once ashore, he avoided Customs by using a door marked 'No Exit' and found himself on a street.

Pluschow quickly made it to the local German Consulate, who gave him some money for a bath, and a train ticket to Germany. However, the office clerk didn't believe his story, and the Consul phoned ahead: "He's pretending to be Gunther Pluschow! Whatever will they think of next!"

On arrival in Germany, Pluschow was arrested by 2 very large Bavarian Corporals, and held at a Railway station military police post. The Officers Orderly threatened that his commander didn't waste time with spies. They were to be shot.

Luckily the commander turned out to be a fellow student of Johannistal Aerodrome, where Pluschow had trained to become a pilot. The commander heartily congratulated Pluschow on his escape, whilst the Orderly prepared Pluschow a full breakfast.

In a few weeks Pluschow was receiving an Iron Cross from Kaiser Wilhelm II and was married in the hangar of a seaplane, a hero of Imperial Germany.

No other German POW ever escaped from mainland Britain, and it is with this in mind that we in Great Britain honour the memory of Gunther Pluschow, a valiant, heroic enemy, who through determination and physical ability succeeded where all others had failed.

Story of sole German PoW to escape captivity in Britain disclosed after 94 years

The dramatic story of the only German PoW to escape from captivity in Britain and make it home during either world war has emerged after 94 years.



Pluschow disguised as Mr McGarvin reaches America from China. Photo: BNPS

10:00AM GMT 11 Feb 2011

Oberleutnant Gunther Pluschow was the sole enemy servicemen to make it off the British mainland after breaking out of a PoW camp in Derbyshire, it can be revealed.

The airman displayed incredible effort and determination and enjoyed amazing good fortune during his daring escape in the summer of 1915.

After hoodwinking the authorities, changing his appearance and swimming across the Thames Estuary, Pluschow stowed away on a Dutch steamer ship at Tilbury docks.

He talked his way past a Dutch policeman before travelling to Germany by train. Upon his return home he received a hero's welcome and was presented with the Iron Cross First Class.

His astonishing story has now fully emerged after a British author spent seven years researching German archives to uncover details of the escape before publishing Pluschow's biography.

Related Articles

- [Fake Australian prisoner of war claimed £442,000 in pension payments](#)

21 Dec 2010

Common belief has it that airman Franz Von Werra was the only German to make it back to the Fatherland after escaping from a British PoW camp.

His story was immortalised in the 1957 film *The One That Got Away* starring Hardy Kruger.

But, although Von Werra escaped, he was recaptured in Britain and flown to a PoW camp in Canada from where he fled and travelled back to Germany.

Author Anton Rippon said: "Pluschow was an astonishing character, not least because he was the only German PoW ever to successfully escape from the UK during both world wars.

"The Germans kept him out of the war after his escape. They didn't want him to run the risk of him being re-captured or even killed, he was more use to them to be around from a propaganda point of view.

"But when the war ended he was a lost soul. He went from being a hero to yesterday's man as the rest of Germany was too busy trying to survive after being defeated.

"His escape was hardly known of in Britain. The authorities didn't exactly make big news of it at the time and there is no point of reference of him in this country ever since."

Pluschow was 28 when the First World War broke out. At the time he was part of the German flying corps stationed in a German colony in China.

Japan declared war on Germany and Pluschow flew in a single-seat Rumpler Taube plane to neutral China while under heavy fire from the Royal Navy.

He obtained a false passport in the name of E.F McGarvin and boarded the SS Mongolia which left Shanghai to San Francisco on December 5, 1914.

He travelled across neutral America and obtained another false passport that proclaimed him to be Swiss national Ernst Smith.

In February 1915 he sailed from New York to British controlled Gibraltar on an Italian passenger steamer.

He talked his way past a Royal Naval officer but was caught out by the suspicious interpreter.

Along with other captured Germans, Pluschow was shipped to Plymouth and then on to the PoW camp at Donington Hall, where he arrived in May 1915.

On July 4 he and fellow prisoner Oskar Trefftz broke out by climbing over two 9ft barbed wire fences and walked 15 miles to Derby where they caught a train to London.

By the next morning the men's escape was featured in the Daily Sketch newspaper with both names and descriptions of the smartly-dressed pair.

They went their separate ways but Trefftz was recaptured at Millwall Docks.

Realising he had to alter his appearance, Pluschow removed his smart tie and handed his coat in at the cloakroom at Blackfriars station.

As he handed the garment over the attendant asked him 'What name is it?'

Without thinking Pluschow replied in German 'meinen' (mine). Luckily, the attendant wasn't paying attention and wrote 'Mr Mine' on the receipt.

The German then used scraped-up coal dust, boot polish and Vaseline to change his fair hair to greasy black and covered himself in soot to make him appear as a dock worker.

He wandered around the docks and on July 7 he overheard a conversation about a Dutch ship due in at Tilbury.

He caught a train to the Essex port and, while he waited for the ship, he visited a local eatery which is where he enjoyed another slice of luck.

Without realising, Pluschow had entered a private members club and the proprietor asked for his identity papers. He called himself Mr Mine and paid three shillings to join.

He later swam into the Thames in a bid to reach a rowing boat to take him out to the moored ship but the current was too strong and he was washed ashore exhausted.

He then spent four more days and nights making several attempts to row to the vessel before he was able to climb up a thick mooring rope and stow away in a lifeboat.

When the vessel, the Prinses Juliana, docked at Flushing in Holland, he melted into the crowd of passengers before sneaking out through a door marked private.

He was challenged by a Dutch policeman on the train from Flushing to Germany and, fortuitously, was allowed to carry on his journey despite having no identity papers.

Mr Rippon, 66, from Derby, said: "Pluschow's escape was a real Boys Own adventure.

"The escape wasn't that sophisticated. He was lying on his back one day at the PoW camp and a young deer got through the wire fence. He thought 'if that has got in here then I can get out.'

"The men had no false identity papers or ration books on them. Just civilian clothing, some toileteries and some money.

"He lived like a vagrant in London for three weeks while waiting to stow away on a ship.

"He showed incredible determination and perseverance but he was also exceptionally lucky."

Terry Charman, of the Imperial War Museum, said the reason why so few German PoWs succeeded in escaping was due to their relatively low numbers in Britain.

He said: "Most German PoWs in World War One were kept in France and used for hard labour.

"In World War Two most of them were sent to Canada because Churchill didn't want them here as they would have been a ready-made army in the event of Germany invading England.

"Also, the fact that Britain is an island made it extremely difficult for them to escape.

"The Germans were highly-efficient but lacked in improvisation skills unlike the British PoWs."

After the war Pluschow married and worked for the German air postal service before he became an aerial explorer and wrote books on his expeditions in South America.

He died aged 44 in 1931 in a plane crash while exploring a glacier over southern Chile.

The book 'Gunther Pluschow - Airman, Escaper and Explorer' by Anton Rippon is available from Pen & Sword at £19.99

Joe Doherty (b. 20 January 1955 in [Belfast, Northern Ireland](#)) is a former [volunteer](#) in the [Belfast Brigade](#) of the [Provisional Irish Republican Army](#) (IRA) who escaped during his 1981 trial for killing a member of the [Special Air Service](#) (SAS) in 1980. He was arrested in the [United States](#) in 1983, and became a *cause célèbre* while fighting an ultimately unsuccessful nine-year legal battle against [extradition](#) and [deportation](#), with a street corner in [New York City](#) being named after him.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Background and IRA activity](#)
- [2 Trial and escape](#)
- [3 Extradition and deportation battle](#)
- [4 References](#)

[] Background and IRA activity

The son of a [docker](#), Doherty was born on 20 January 1955 in [New Lodge, Belfast](#).^{[1][2]} Doherty left school aged 14 and began work on the docks and as an apprentice plumber, before being arrested in 1972 on his seventeenth birthday under the [Special Powers Act](#).^{[1][2]} Doherty was [interned](#) on the prison ship [HMS Maidstone](#) and [Long Kesh Detention Centre](#), and while interned heard of the events of [Bloody Sunday](#) in [Derry](#), where 14 civil rights protesters were shot dead by the [British Army](#). This led to him joining the IRA after he was released in June 1972.^{[1][2]} In the mid-1970s Doherty was convicted of possession of explosives and sentenced to six years imprisonment in Long Kesh. He was released in December 1979.^[3]

After his release Doherty became part of a four-man [active service unit](#) nicknamed the "M60 gang" due to their use of an [M60 heavy machine gun](#), along with [Angelo Fusco](#) and [Paul Magee](#).^{[4][5]} On 9 April 1980 the unit lured the [Royal Ulster Constabulary](#) (RUC) into an ambush on Stewartstown Road, killing one constable and wounding two others.^[5] On 2 May the unit were planning another attack and had taken over a house on [Antrim Road](#), when an eight-man patrol from the SAS arrived in plain clothes, after being alerted by the RUC.^[5] A car carrying three SAS members went to the rear of the house, and another car carrying five SAS members arrived at the front of the house.^[6] As the SAS members at the front of the house exited the car the IRA unit opened fire with the M60 machine gun from an upstairs window, hitting Captain [Herbert Westmacott](#) in the head and shoulder. Westmacott, who was killed instantly, was the highest-ranking member of the SAS killed in Northern Ireland.^{[6][7]} The remaining SAS members, armed with [Colt Commando](#) automatic rifles, [submachine guns](#) and [Browning](#) pistols, returned fire but were forced to withdraw.^{[5][6]} Magee was apprehended by the SAS members at the rear of the house while attempting to prepare the IRA unit's escape in a [transit van](#), while the other three IRA members remained inside the house.^[8] More members of the security forces were deployed to the scene, and after a brief siege the remaining members of the IRA unit surrendered.^[5]

[] Trial and escape

The trial of Doherty and the other members of the M60 gang began in early May 1981, on charges including three counts of murder.^{[9][10]} On 10 June Doherty and seven other prisoners, including Angelo Fusco and the other members of the IRA unit, took a prison officer hostage at gunpoint in [Crumlin Road Jail](#). After locking the officer in a cell, the eight took other officers and visiting solicitors hostage, also locking them in cells after taking their clothing.^{[9][10]} Two of the eight wore officers' uniforms while a third wore clothing taken from a solicitor, and the group moved towards the first of three gates separating them from the outside world.^[10] They took the officer on duty at the gate hostage at gunpoint, and forced him to open the inner gate.^[10] An officer at the second gate recognised one of the prisoners and ran into an office and pressed an alarm button, and the prisoners ran through the second gate towards the outer gate.^{[9][10]} An officer at the outer gate tried to prevent the escape but was attacked by the prisoners, who escaped onto [Crumlin Road](#).^[9] As the prisoners were moving towards the car park where two cars were waiting, an unmarked RUC car pulled up across the street outside

[Crumlin Road Courthouse](#). The RUC officers opened fire, and the prisoners returned fire before escaping in the waiting cars.^[9] Two days after the escape, Doherty was convicted *in absentia* and sentenced to life imprisonment with a minimum recommended term of thirty years.^[11]

[] Extradition and deportation battle

Doherty escaped across the border into the [Republic of Ireland](#), and then travelled to the [United States](#) on a false passport.^[1] He lived with an American girlfriend in [Brooklyn](#) and [New Jersey](#), working on construction sites and as a bartender at Clancy's Bar in [Manhattan](#), where he was arrested by the [FBI](#) on 28 June 1983.^[1] Doherty was imprisoned in the [Metropolitan Correctional Center](#) in Manhattan, and a legal battle ensued with the British government seeking to extradite him back to Northern Ireland.^[12] Doherty claimed he was immune from extradition as the killing of Westmacott was a political act, saying "It was an operation that was typical of all operations where we set up an ambush of a British military convoy... It is a war, and this was a military action",^[1] and in 1985 federal judge [John E. Sprizzo](#) ruled Doherty could not be extradited as the killing was a "political offense".^[12] Doherty's legal battle continued as the [United States Department of Justice](#) then attempted to deport him for entering the country illegally.^[13]

Doherty remained in custody at the Metropolitan Correctional Center and attempted to claim [political asylum](#), and on 15 June 1988 the [Attorney General Edwin Meese](#) overturned an earlier ruling by the Federal Board of Immigration Appeals that Doherty could be deported to the Republic of Ireland, and ordered his deportation to Northern Ireland.^[12] In February 1989 new Attorney General [Dick Thornburgh](#) chose not to support the decision made by his predecessor, and asked lawyers for Doherty and the [Immigration and Naturalization Service](#) to submit arguments for a review of the decision and Doherty's claim for asylum.^[14] By this time Doherty's case was a *cause célèbre* with his sympathisers including over 130 [Congressmen](#) and a son of then [President of the United States George H. W. Bush](#), and in 1990 a street corner near the Metropolitan Correctional Center was named after him.^{[12][15][16]}

In August 1991, Doherty was transferred to a federal prison in [Lewisburg, Pennsylvania](#), and on 16 January 1992 the [Supreme Court of the United States](#) overturned a 1990 [Federal Appeals Court](#) ruling by a 5-to-3 decision, paving the way for his deportation.^[15] On 19 February 1992 Doherty was deported to Northern Ireland, despite pleas to delay the deportation from members of Congress, [Mayor of New York City David Dinkins](#), and the [Cardinal Archbishop of New York, John Joseph O'Connor](#).^{[17][18]} Doherty was returned to Crumlin Road Jail before being transferred to [HM Prison Maze](#), and was released from prison on 6 November 1998 under the terms of the [Good Friday Agreement](#).^{[11][19]} After his release Doherty became a community worker specialising in helping disadvantaged young people.^[20] In 2006, he appeared in the [BBC](#) television show *Facing the Truth* opposite the relatives of a soldier killed in the [Warrenpoint ambush](#).^[21]

John Francis Green (18 December 1946^[2]- 10 January 1975), was a leading member of the North Armagh Brigade of the [Provisional IRA](#), holding the rank of Staff Captain and Intelligence Officer.^[3] He was killed in a farmhouse outside [Castleblayney, County Monaghan](#), by members of the Mid-Ulster Brigade of the [Ulster Volunteer Force](#) (UVF).^{[4][5]} According to [MI6](#) operative [Captain Fred Holroyd](#), [British Army](#) Captain [Robert Nairac](#) was involved in Green's killing.^{[6][7]} Green's was one of the 87 killings attributed by the [Pat Finucane Centre](#) to the group of [Loyalist](#) extremists known as the [Glenanne gang](#).^[8] No one was ever prosecuted for the killing.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Provisional IRA](#)
- [2 Killing](#)
 - [2.1 Allegations](#)
- [3 Aftermath](#)
- [4 See also](#)
- [5 References](#)

[] Provisional IRA

Green was born in [Lurgan, County Armagh, Northern Ireland](#) and grew up in a [Roman Catholic](#) family. He was an active member of the civil rights campaign, and later joined the Provisional IRA.^[4] He held the rank of Staff Captain and Intelligence Officer in the North Armagh Brigade. Green was forced to "go on the run" following the introduction of [internment](#) in August 1971, but was arrested and interned on the [Maidstone](#) prison ship. Green was afterwards transferred to [Long Kesh](#) internment camp.^[9] On 9 September 1973, Green escaped from Long Kesh disguised as a priest.^[5] During a visit with his brother, Fr. Gerrard Green, a Catholic priest, the two men exchanged clothing, and Green made his escape undetected by the guards. Fr. Gerrard was later discovered tied up in one of the prison's compounds.^[10]

Gerard "Gerry" Kelly (*Irish*: *Gearóid Ó Ceallaigh*, born 5 April 1953) is an [Irish republican politician](#) and former [Provisional Irish Republican Army](#) (IRA) [volunteer](#) who played a leading role in the negotiations that led to the [Good Friday Agreement](#) on 10 April 1998.^[1] He is currently a member of [Sinn Féin](#)'s Ard Chomhairle (National Executive) and an [MLA](#) for [North Belfast](#).^{[2][3][4]}

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Early life](#)
- [2 Old Bailey attack](#)
- [3 Imprisonment and hunger strike](#)
- [4 Political career](#)
- [5 References](#)
- [6 External links](#)

[] Early life

Kelly was born in the lower [Falls Road, Belfast](#) in 1953 into a family of 11 siblings. He was educated at [primary school](#) level by the [De La Salle Christian Brothers](#) at St. Finian's [Roman Catholic](#) Primary School, located in the Falls Road area of west Belfast which was also [Gerry Adams'](#) primary school. Kelly was educated to a secondary level at St Peter's Secondary School in Britton's Parade, Belfast.

Kelly became involved in [physical force republicanism](#) in 1972.

Old Bailey attack

The IRA planted four [car bombs](#) in London on 8 March 1973. Two of the car bombs were defused but the other two exploded, one near the [Old Bailey](#) and the other at [Scotland Yard](#). As a result of the explosions one person was killed and almost 200 people were injured.^[5]^[dead link]

Kelly, then aged 19, and eight others, including [Hugh Feeney](#) and sisters [Marian](#) and [Dolours Price](#), were found guilty of various charges relating to the bombings on 14 November 1973. Kelly was convicted of causing explosions and conspiracy to cause explosions and received two life sentences plus twenty years.^[6]^[7]

[] Imprisonment and hunger strike

Upon imprisonment in England, Kelly, and the other prisoners went on [hunger strike](#) demanding political prisoner status and to be transferred to prisons in Northern Ireland. After 60 days on hunger strike, during which he subsequently alleged he was force fed by prison officers, Kelly was transferred to [Long Kesh](#) prison in Northern Ireland in April 1975.^[8]

Whilst imprisoned in the Maze, Kelly again went on protest and made a number of escape attempts in 1977, 1982 and 1983. On 25 September 1983, Kelly was involved in the [Maze Prison escape](#), the largest break-out of prisoners in Europe since [World War II](#) and in British prison history.^[9]^[10] Kelly, along with 37 other republican prisoners, armed with six hand-guns, hijacked a prison meals lorry and smashed their way out of [HMP Maze](#) past 40 prison wardens and 28 alarm systems. During the escape Kelly shot and injured a prison warden in the head as the officer attempted to foil the escape.^[11]

After the mass break-out Kelly was on the run for three years and again became involved in an [active service unit](#) in Europe. Whilst on the run Kelly claimed that he was aided in his escape by "all kinds of people," including prominent [Fianna Fáil](#) and [Fine Gael](#) supporters in the [Republic of Ireland](#).^[12]

On 16 January 1986, Kelly was recaptured in the Netherlands along with [Brendan "Bik" McFarlane](#) at their flat in [Amsterdam](#). At the time of their arrest, cash in several currencies, maps and fake passports and the keys to a storage container holding 14 rifles, 100,000 rounds of ammunition and [nitrobenzene](#) were recovered by the Dutch Police.^[13]^[14] On 4 December 1986, the pair were extradited from the Netherlands to the [UK](#) by RAF [helicopter](#) and returned to the Maze prison.^[15] On 2 June 1989 Kelly was released in line with the [extradition](#) conditions agreed with the Dutch authorities.^[16]

Meehan was born in 1945 in the [Ardoyne](#) area of [Belfast](#) in [Northern Ireland](#).^[17]^[2] His father had been imprisoned for republican activities in the 1940s, and his grandfather was killed in the [Battle of the Somme](#).^[2]^[3] Meehan left school aged 15 and began working at Belfast's docks, and in 1966 he became a member of the [Irish Republican Army](#).^[2]^[4] He was sworn in by [Billy McMillen](#), and described joining as "a big occasion, like joining the priesthood".^[2]^[4] In 1968 he was arrested for the first time, after he assaulted a member of the [Royal Ulster Constabulary](#) (RUC) during a [civil rights](#) march in [Derry](#).^[2] During the [August 1969 riots](#) in Belfast he was one of a handful of IRA members who tried to defend Catholic areas from attack,^[5] and resigned as a result of the organisation's failure to adequately protect Catholic areas.^[6] Meehan was arrested

on 22 August 1969 for riotous behaviour, and was badly beaten before being imprisoned.^{[2][6]} The beating was so severe Meehan was given the [last rites](#), the first of four occasions he received them.^[2] He was released after spending two months in prison.^[6] After his release [Billy McKee](#) convinced Meehan to rejoin the IRA.^[7] Meehan sided with the Provisional IRA following the split in January 1970, and by mid-1970 was a senior IRA leader in the Ardoyne area.^[8] On 27 June 1970 rioting broke out across Belfast following a parade by the [Orange Order](#), and a gun battle started in the Ardoyne area.^[8] Meehan stated:

“ *Three loyalists were shot dead and fifteen wounded. There were three or four nationalists wounded. No one was killed. [After the shooting] every door in Ardoyne was opened. The IRA had proved beyond a shadow of a doubt what they said they were going to do, they had done. The date—27th of June 1970—is more significant for that than anything else. As a result, the whole broad spectrum of the nationalist people actually supported what the IRA was doing. Everybody, man, woman and child came out and supported us in any way possible. I never saw support like it in my life. It was unbelievable.*^[8] ”

In the six weeks following the introduction of [internment](#) in August 1971, six soldiers from the [Green Howards](#) regiment were killed by the IRA in north Belfast.^[2] Meehan became one of the most wanted IRA members in the area, and when arrested he was badly beaten by soldiers and needed 47 [stitches](#) to the back of his head.^{[2][9]} Meehan was imprisoned without charge under the [Special Powers Act](#) in [Crumlin Road Jail](#).^[9] Meehan and two other IRA members escaped from prison on 2 December 1971.^[10] The men covered themselves in butter in order to keep warm, then hid inside a [manhole](#) for six-and-a-half hours before scaling the prison walls using ropes made from knotted blankets and sheets.^{[10][11]}

Meehan escaped across the border to [Dundalk](#) in the [Republic of Ireland](#), and on 27 January 1972 he was arrested by the [Garda](#) along with seven other IRA members following a four-hour cross-border gun battle between the IRA and soldiers from the [Royal Scots Dragoon Guards](#).^[12] Meehan told reporters "We pasted them. You could have heard them squealing for miles",^[10] but despite over 4,500 rounds of ammunition being fired the only casualty was a farmer's prize winning pig.^[12] The IRA members were arrested in possession of an [anti-tank gun](#), a [carbine](#) and seven rifles, but were acquitted at their trial the following month due to lack of evidence.^[12]

Meehan returned to Northern Ireland, where he was arrested on 9 August 1972.^[13] He was charged with escaping from lawful custody, and at his trial successfully argued that under the Special Powers Act a British soldier had no power of arrest and as such he had the legal right to escape. He was awarded £800 in compensation for being illegally detained for twenty-three days, and the government were forced to amend the Special Powers Act to legalise the detention of others held under the Act.^[14] He was also charged with membership of the Provisional IRA, and received a three-year sentence when he became the first person to be convicted of the offence.^{[13][15]} He was imprisoned in [Long Kesh](#), and was released on 4 October 1974.^[15] At the end of his sentence he was immediately interned without trial,^[16] and on 5 December 1975 he was the last internee to be released after internment had been abolished.^{[2][3]}

On 11 July 1979 the IRA kidnapped a seventeen-year-old man suspected of being an [informer](#) from a club in the [New Lodge](#) area of Belfast.^[17] Over a four-day period he was moved between a number of [safe houses](#) where he was beaten and interrogated, and he confessed to working as an

informer for the British Army.^[17] The victim was rescued by an army patrol which raided the house where he was being held, and one kidnapper was arrested.^[17] Meehan and four other men were arrested soon after, and in March 1980 Meehan was sentenced to twelve years imprisonment, after he was found guilty of conspiracy to kidnap and [false imprisonment](#).^{[17][18]} Meehan was convicted based largely on the uncorroborated evidence of the informer whose evidence was described by the judge as "poor quality".^{[17][19]} Meehan protested his innocence, and began a [hunger strike](#) which lasted sixty-six days culminating in a "thirst strike" where he also refused water.^[19] His protest ended following the intervention of [Cardinal Ó Fiaich](#), who persuaded Meehan to end his strike.^[19] In September 1985 Meehan was released from prison.^[20]

In March 1988 Meehan was sentenced to a further fifteen years imprisonment after being convicted of the kidnapping and false imprisonment of a member of the [Territorial Army](#).^{[20][21]} The soldier had been kidnapped on 12 July 1986 and imprisoned in a house in the Ardoyne area, before being freed in a rescue operation by the British Army.^[18] The court heard the soldier had suffered a broken jaw and had been bound and blindfolded in preparation for being shot dead, although Meehan claims he was arrested while attempting to arrange to hand the soldier over to a priest.^{[21][21]} While in prison Meehan was assaulted by prison officers, for which he later received £14,000 in compensation.^{[22][23]} He was released from prison on 20 January 1994.^[18]

Timothy Deasy

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)

Timothy Deasy was a [Captain](#) in the [Irish Republican Brotherhood](#).

He was captured during their abortive uprising in 1867. He was released with a fellow IRB prisoner Colonel [Thomas J. Kelly](#) by an attack on a prison van in [Manchester](#). He escaped, but [three of his rescuers](#) were executed for their part in the rescue, during which a policeman was killed.

At the succession of King Henry I, the new king imprisoned Ranulf in the Tower of London^[46] on 15 August 1100^[47] on charges of embezzlement.^[48] His custodian, William de Mandeville, allowed the bishop to escape^[49] on 3 February 1101.^[50] Flambard was not only the first inmate of the prison, but also the first person to escape from it.^{[51][52]} A popular legend represents the bishop as descending from the window of his cell by a rope which friends had smuggled to him in a flagon of wine. Ranulf gave the wine to his guards, and after they were drunk and asleep, climbed down the rope to escape. His friends had arranged a ship to transport Ranulf, some of the bishop's treasure, and the bishop's elderly mother to Normandy.^[53] He took refuge across the [English Channel](#) with Henry's brother Robert Curthose, where he became one of the duke's principal advisors.^{[54][55]} King Henry dispossessed Ranulf of his lands at [Whitsun](#) in 1101,^[48] and the new Archbishop of York [Gerard](#) deposed him from his bishopric.^[56] The Archbishop of Canterbury, Anselm arranged for Flambard's trial in a papal court for [simony](#), and a papal decree was issued against Ranulf.^[57]

James Francis Hurley (born c. 1966) is an [English](#) convicted murderer and long-term fugitive from justice.

Hurley was involved in an [armed robbery](#) in the town of [Hemel Hempstead](#) on 14 April 1988. During the robbery, he shot and killed [police constable Frank Mason](#) of the [Hertfordshire Police](#). He was convicted of [murder](#) in 1989, and sentenced to [life imprisonment](#).^{[1][2]}

On 16 February 1994, whilst being transferred to [Wandsworth Prison](#) by bus, Hurley and another prisoner threatened a prison officer with a knife and Hurley managed to escape. He fled the country, and managed to remain at liberty for 13 years. On 9 November 2007, Hurley was apprehended by police during a raid on a suspected [drug dealer](#) at an address in [The Hague, Netherlands](#).^{[1][2]}

He was sentenced to 6 years imprisonment in Holland and paroled after 4 years. In November 2011 officer from the tactical team of Hertfordshire Constabulary extradicted Hurley from Holland and returned him to a London prison to serve his sentence for the murder of PC Mason

essan Quinlivan (born c. 1965), is a former [Provisional IRA](#) member who escaped from [Brixton Prison](#) in London on 7 July 1991 along with his cellmate [Pearse McAuley](#), while awaiting trial on charges relating to a suspected [IRA](#) plot to assassinate a former brewery company chairman, Sir Charles Tidbury.

In April 1993, he was arrested in Ireland, on firearms charges, and was sentenced to four years in prison. In November 1996, he was released from [Portlaoise Prison](#) as part of the Irish Government's early release programme for Republican prisoners.^[2]

In April 2000, the [High Court](#) stated that he should be [extradited](#) to Britain, to face charges of conspiracy to murder and to cause explosions as well as escaping from prison and wounding with intent. Quinlivan claimed that it would be pointless to extradite him, because under the terms of the [Belfast Agreement](#), he would have had to be freed by July 2001.^[2]

In August 2009, the [Crown Prosecution Service](#) in Britain, announced it was no longer seeking the extradition of Quinlivan and McAuley.^[3]

His brother, [Maurice](#), is a [Sinn Féin Limerick City Councillor](#).^[4] In early 2009 the arrest of three women, who were running a brothel in an apartment he owned and was renting to them unknowingly, triggered a [series of events](#) that would lead to the resignation of the Minister of Defence [Willie O'Dea](#).

The trial of Magee and the other members of the M60 gang began in early May 1981, with them facing charges including three counts of murder.^{[10][11]} On 10 June Magee and seven other prisoners, including Joe Doherty, Angelo Fusco and the other member of the IRA unit, took a prison officer hostage at gunpoint in [Crumlin Road Jail](#). After locking the officer in a cell, the eight took other officers and visiting solicitors hostage, also locking them in cells after taking their clothing.^{[10][11]} Two of the eight wore officer's uniforms while a third wore clothing taken from a solicitor, and the group moved towards the first of three gates separating them from the outside world.^[11] They took the officer on duty at the gate hostage at gunpoint, and forced him to open the inner gate.^[11] An officer at the second gate recognised one of the prisoners and ran into an office and pressed an alarm button, and the prisoners ran through the second gate towards the outer gate.^{[10][11]} An officer at the outer gate tried to prevent the escape but was attacked by

the prisoners, who escaped onto [Crumlin Road](#).^[10] As the prisoners were moving towards the car park where two cars were waiting, an unmarked RUC car pulled up across the street outside [Crumlin Road Courthouse](#). The RUC officers opened fire, and the prisoners returned fire before escaping in the waiting cars.^[10] Two days after the escape, Magee was convicted *in absentia* and sentenced to life imprisonment with a minimum recommended term of thirty years.^[12]

[] Imprisonment in the Republic of Ireland

Magee escaped across the border into the Republic of Ireland. Eleven days after the escape he appeared in public at the [Wolfe Tone](#) commemoration in [Bodenstown](#), [County Kildare](#), where troops from the [Irish Army](#) and the [Garda's Special Branch](#) attempted to arrest him, but failed after the crowd threw missiles and lay down in the road blocking access.^[10] He was arrested in January 1982 along with Angelo Fusco, and sentenced to ten years imprisonment for the escape under extra-jurisdictional legislation.^[2] Shortly before his release from prison in 1989 Magee was served with an extradition warrant, and he started a legal battle to avoid being returned to Northern Ireland.^{[2][13]} In October 1991 the [Supreme Court](#) in [Dublin](#) ordered his return to Northern Ireland to serve his sentence for the murder of Captain Westmacott, but Magee had jumped [bail](#) and a warrant was issued for his arrest.^[12]

[] IRA activity in England

Magee fled to England, where he was part of an IRA active service unit.^[12] On 7 June 1992 Magee and another IRA member, Michael O'Brien, were travelling in a car on the [A64 road](#) between [York](#) and [Tadcaster](#), when they were stopped by the police.^{[14][15]} Magee and O'Brien were questioned by the police officers, who became suspicious and called for back-up.^[14] Magee shot [Special Constable](#) Glenn Goodman, who died later in hospital, and then shot the other officer, PC Kelly, four times.^[14] PC Kelly escaped death when a fifth bullet ricocheted off the radio he was holding to his ear, and the IRA members drove away.^[14] Another police car began to follow the pair, and came under fire near [Burton Salmon](#).^[14] The lives of the officers in the car were in danger, but Magee and O'Brien fled the scene after a member of the public arrived.^[14] A [manhunt](#) was launched, and hundreds of police officers, many of them armed, searched woods and farmland.^[14] Magee and O'Brien evaded capture for four days by hiding in a [culvert](#), before they were both arrested in separate police operations in the town of [Pontefract](#).^[14]

[] Imprisonment in England

On 31 March 1993 Magee was found guilty of the murder of Special Constable Goodman and the attempted murder of three other police officers, and sentenced to life imprisonment.^[16] O'Brien was found guilty of attempted murder and received an eighteen-year sentence.^[14] On 9 September 1994 Magee and five other prisoners, including [Danny McNamee](#), escaped from [HM Prison Whitemoor](#).^{[17][18]} The prisoners, in possession of two guns that had been smuggled into the prison, scaled the prison walls using knotted sheets.^{[17][19]} A guard was shot and wounded during the escape, and the prisoners were captured after being chased across fields by guards and the police.^[19] In 1996 Magee staged a [dirty protest](#) in [HM Prison Belmarsh](#), in protest at glass screens separating prisoners from their relatives during visits.^[20] Magee had refused to accept visits from his wife and five children for two years, prompting [Sinn Féin](#) to accuse the British government of maintaining "a worsening regime that is damaging physically and psychologically".^[20] In January 1997 Magee and the other five escapees from Whitemoor were on trial on charges relating to the escape for a second time, four months earlier the first trial had been stopped because of prejudicial publicity.^[21] Lawyers for the defendants successfully argued that an article in the [Evening Standard](#) prejudiced the trial as it contained photographs of

Magee and two other defendants and described them as "terrorists", as an order had been made at the start of the trial preventing any reference to the background and previous convictions of the defendants.^[21] Despite the judge saying the evidence against the defendants was "very strong", he dismissed the case stating "What I have done is the only thing I can do in the circumstances. The law for these defendants is the same law for everyone else. They are entitled to that, whatever they have done".^[21]

Pearse McAuley (born circa 1965 in [Strabane](#)) is a former [Provisional IRA](#) Volunteer, who escaped from Brixton Prison in London on 7 July 1991 along with his cellmate [Nessan Quinlivan](#), while awaiting trial on charges relating to a suspected IRA plot to assassinate a former brewery company chairman, Sir Charles Tidbury.^[1]

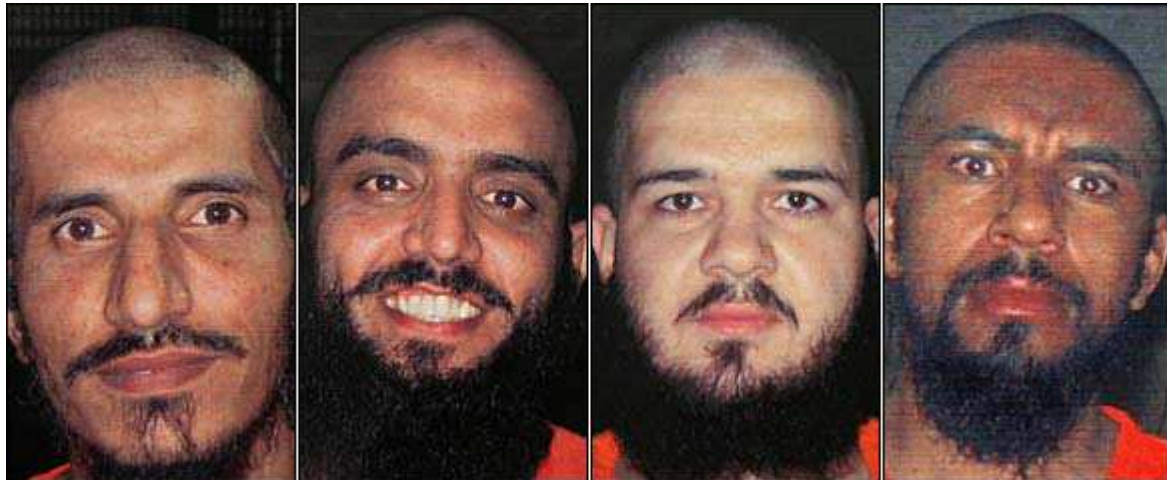
McAuley fled to the Republic of Ireland, where he was granted bail while contesting extradition to Britain.

In 1999 McAuley was convicted of manslaughter in Dublin's [Special Criminal Court](#) for his role in the killing of Detective Garda [Jerry McCabe](#) in the course of an armed robbery and sentenced to 14 years in prison.^[2]

He was released from prison in August 2009, having served ten-and-a-half years of his sentence,^[3] at which time the [Crown Prosecution Service](#) announced it would not seek his extradition on charges related to the Brixton escape.^[4]

He is married to Pauline Tully McAuley, a [Sinn Féin](#) councillor on [Cavan County Council](#).

Details Emerge on a Brazen Escape in Afghanistan



Ahmad Masood/Reuters

Photographs taken from a leaflet provided by Afghan officials showed those who escaped. They were not individually identified.

- [Sign In to E-Mail This](#)
- [Printer-Friendly](#)
- [Reprints](#)

- [Save Article](#)

A New Comedy

By [ERIC SCHMITT](#) and [TIM GOLDEN](#)

Published: December 4, 2005

WASHINGTON, Dec. 3 - The prisoners were considered some of the most dangerous men among the hundreds of terror suspects locked behind the walls of a secretive and secure American military detention center in Bagram, [Afghanistan](#).

Their escape, however, might as well have been a breakout from the county jail.

According to military officials familiar with the episode, the suspects are believed to have picked the lock on their cell, changed out of their bright orange uniforms and made their way through a heavily guarded military base under the cover of night. They then crawled over a faulty wall where a getaway vehicle was apparently waiting for them, the officials said.

THREATS AND RESPONSES

[▶ GO TO COMPLETE COVERAGE](#)

Multimedia

[▶ GRAPHIC](#)



[Escape From Bagram Air Base](#)

[Enlarge This Image](#)



Scott Eells for The New York Times

Workers erecting a fence at the Bagram base where in July, four detainees escaped.

"It is embarrassing and amazing at the same time," an American defense official said. "It was a disaster."

The fact of the escape was disclosed by the American authorities shortly after it set off an intense manhunt at Bagram, 40 miles north of Kabul, on the morning of July 11. But internal military documents and interviews with military and intelligence officials indicate it was a far more serious breach than the Defense Department has acknowledged.

One of the four suspects was identified as Al Qaeda's highest-ranking operative in Southeast Asia when he was captured in 2002, a fact that emerged only during an unrelated military trial last month. Another, a Saudi, was also described by intelligence officials as an important Qaeda operative in Afghanistan.

The detainees planned their breakout meticulously, United States officials said, apparently studying the guards' routines, getting themselves moved into a cell that was less visible to the guards and taking advantage of construction work that was intended to expand and improve security at the prison.

"Based upon the findings of the investigation, it appears that the detainees had a clear understanding of the operating procedures of the guards inside the facility," said the chief spokesman for United States military forces in Afghanistan, Col. James R. Yonts.

One American intelligence official said the prisoners also took advantage of "a perfect storm" of mistakes by the military guards. The escape is believed to have been the first from one of the detention centers established by the United States for people suspected of being terrorists after 9/11. Military officials, many of whom spoke on condition of anonymity because details of the incident are classified, said there was still much they did not know about how the men escaped.

Although an American military police guard was initially suspected of having helped the prisoners, he was eventually cleared. Half a dozen other soldiers, including officers and sergeants, have received administrative punishments, a senior military official in Afghanistan said.

"It was bizarre to me," said Maj. Gen. Peter Gilchrist of Britain, who served at the time as the deputy commander of coalition forces in Afghanistan in Kabul. "I don't understand how it could happen."

Military officials have often cited the danger posed by the prisoners at Bagram and Guantánamo Bay, Cuba, as a reason for the extreme security measures and harsh conditions there. Prisoners

are typically shackled by their hands and feet when outside their cells and rarely move without an escort of at least two guards. During interrogations, they have often been forced into uncomfortable "safety positions" or chained to a bolt on the floor.

The two prisoners believed to have led the escape, Omar al-Faruq, a Kuwaiti who was the former Qaeda operative in Southeast Asia, and Muhammad Jafar Jamal al-Kahtani, the Saudi, had for months been awaiting transfer to Guantánamo Bay, officials said. For reasons they have not explained, the military authorities gave different names for both men in announcing the escape last summer.

At the time of Mr. Faruq's arrest in Jakarta, Indonesia, in early June 2002, he was considered one of the most important Qaeda figures ever captured by the United States. Three months later, he told C.I.A. interrogators at Bagram that he had been sent to the region to plan large-scale attacks against American Embassies and other targets there.

Intelligence officials gave differing views on the importance of Mr. Kahtani. One official described him as having been responsible at one point for maintaining Al Qaeda's operational support structure in Afghanistan; another said he was an important Qaeda fighter, but not a senior-level operative.

According to a classified, one-page military report on the escape that was reviewed by The New York Times, those two detainees - along with a Syrian prisoner identified as [Abdullah](#) Hashimi and a Kuwaiti named Mahmoud Ahmad Muhammad - were being held with four other men in Cell 119, on the ground floor of the Bagram prison.

A senior military official said each of the prisoners who escaped was moved into the cell in the days before his escape after causing problems with other detainees. The main cells at Bagram are large wire cages that can be easily surveyed by guards patrolling the catwalks above them. Cell 119, by contrast, was somewhat apart and out of the way, officials said. Asked whether the prisoners might have fabricated the disturbances to be moved together into Cell 119, the senior official said, "The investigation revealed credible factors that support this theory."

After a head count of prisoners at 1:50 a.m. on July 11, the military report states, the sergeant of the guard on duty at the detention center, now called the Bagram Theater Internment Facility, reported all of them accounted for, the report states.

About two hours later, at 3:45 a.m., as the detainees were being roused for the morning prayer, the four detainees were discovered missing from their cell. The military police battalion on duty at the prison, Task Force Cerberus, immediately locked down the prison and began a search, the report said.

How the men got out of their cell remains a mystery, officials said. Two senior military officials said some equipment was temporarily moved beside the cell, partly obstructing the guards' view. One senior military official said investigators believe the prisoners managed to pick the lock with implements they had fashioned while detained.

There were also suspicions that one of the American military guards, who had had disciplinary problems, might have deliberately left the door open, two senior officials said. But those suspicions were eventually discounted and the guard was never charged, they said.

The four men escaped out the southeast door of the main prison building, the report said. Military and intelligence officials said the detainees left behind their bright orange prison uniforms, apparently changing into less conspicuous blue prison garb that they might have somehow hidden in their cells or knew where to find elsewhere.

At the time, several officials said, construction crews had been working to expand and reinforce the prison, a cavernous aircraft machine-shop built by the Soviet military during its occupation of Afghanistan and converted by the American military into its primary screening center for terror suspects captured overseas. The breakout took place only days before a series of tougher security measures, including surveillance cameras and brighter lighting, were to be put in place.

The American forces have released more than 250 Taliban and other prisoners from Bagram this year as part of an Afghan national reconciliation program. Still, they have had to refurbish the prison to hold the roughly 500 detainees who remain.

The escapees also appear to have taken advantage of the construction work to move through an exercise yard and out of the prison compound. Another indication that the four men might have received help in their escape, officials said, was the apparent speed with which they found their way through a maze of buildings and roads to a small, damaged section of the perimeter wall surrounding the vast Bagram Air Base.

Once they found the faulty section of the packed-dirt wall, officials said, the detainees were able to crawl beneath the concertina wire that topped the barrier and drop down on the other side in an area of agricultural fields and abandoned homes.

"There were three or four points where they could have been caught," one American intelligence official said. "The escapees got very lucky." Within minutes of the escape, American forces began fanning out across and outside the prison, concentrating on the area near the faulty section of the wall. As the base sirens blared an alert and Cobra and Black Hawk helicopters hovered overhead, American soldiers and Afghan policemen scoured fields and homes in the area.

The district police chief, Colonel Assadullah, said in an interview in Bagram that he was asked to have his men search for a yellow pickup truck, which was apparently seen leaving the area. The

district governor, Kabir Ahmad, said the Afghan authorities set up checkpoints on the highway leading to Kabul and other roads in the area, but turned up nothing suspicious.

Military officials said American soldiers questioned laborers who had been working at the prison, as well as local Afghan officials. But no arrests were made, and neither Afghans working at the base nor American officials said they knew of any laborers fired as a result of the inquiry.

In a recent interview, a former Bagram prisoner, Moazzam Begg, said he had heard during his detention there that American intelligence officers had once proposed staging an escape to release a detainee whom they wanted to act as a double agent against Al Qaeda. He said he had no knowledge that any such scheme had been carried out, and several American officials strongly dismissed the idea that that had happened with Mr. Faruq and the others.

In a videotape delivered to the Pakistan bureau of the Arab-language satellite television station Al Arabiya, Mr. Kahtani boasted about the preparations for the escape, suggesting that they had been painstaking.

"We decided to escape on Sunday because that is the day off for the nonbelievers," he said on the tape, which was broadcast Oct. 18. "To escape we studied the plan very carefully."

Sultan M. Munadi and Abdul Waheed Wafa contributed reporting from Bagram, Afghanistan for this article.

Outrage: An Anarchist Memoir of the Penal Colony by Clément Duval

Submitted by Anonymous on Thu, 09/27/2012 - 07:59.

- [Anarchism](#)
- [Anarchist History](#)
- [Book](#)
- [English](#)
- [Insurrectionary Anarchism](#)
- [Prisons and Police](#)

“Theft exists only through the exploitation of man by man...when Society refuses you the right to exist, you must take it...the policeman arrested me in the name of the Law, I struck him in the name of Liberty.”

In 1887, Clément Duval joined the tens of thousands of convicts sent to the “dry guillotine” of the French penal colonies. Few survived and fewer were able to tell the stories of their life in that hell. Duval spent fourteen years doing hard labor—espousing the values of anarchism and

demonstrating the ideals by being a living example the entire time—before making his daring escape and arriving in New York City, welcomed by the Italian and French anarchists there.

This is much more than an historical document about the anarchist movement and the penal colony. It is a remarkable story of survival by one man's self-determination, energy, courage, loyalty, and hope. It was thanks to being true and faithful to his ideals that Duval survived life in this hell. Unlike the well-known prisoner Papillon, who arrived and dramatically escaped soon after Duval, he encouraged his fellow prisoners to practice mutual aid, through their deeds and not just their words. It is a call to action for mindful, conscious people to fight for their rights to the very end, to never give up or give in.

More than just a story of a life or a testament of ideals, here is a monument to the human spirit and a war cry for freedom and justice.

About Clément Duval:

Clément Duval (1850–1935) was an infamous French illegalist, propagandist, and anarchist who was found guilty in 1886 of theft and attempted murder of a police officer. Originally sentenced to death, his sentence was commuted to deportation and hard labor in the French Guiana prison camps. After fourteen years and twenty escape attempts, Duval and fellow inmates set out on a rickety boat. He eventually reached New York City in 1901 and was welcomed by French and Italian anarchists. In 1929 Italian anarchist Luigi Galleani translated and published his full memoirs as *Memorie autobiografiche*.



Attachment

Size

[Clement Duval Outrage.pdf](#) 7.69 MB

Henri Theodore Young (born 1918) was a prisoner at [Alcatraz](#) who attempted to escape with four other inmates, [Arthur Barker](#), Dale Stamphill, William Martin, and [Rufus McCain](#) and is best known for being the main character in the movie [Murder in the First](#).

Young became a bank robber and was known for aggressively taking hostages.^[1] In 1933, he committed murder.^{[1][2]} After spending time in prisons in [Washington state](#) and [Montana](#),^[1] he was sent to the federal prison on [Alcatraz Island](#). On the night of January 13, 1939,^[3] Young,

with prisoners [Rufus McCain](#), [Arthur Barker](#), Dale Stamphill, and William Martin, attempted to escape.^[3] Martin, Young, and McCain surrendered, while Barker and Stamphill refused to surrender and were subsequently shot.^[3] Barker eventually died from his injuries.^{[3][2]}

Allegedly, Young and McCain were sentenced to long terms each in solitary confinement, but they were back in the prison's general population within months. A year later, Young killed Rufus McCain by plunging a spoon into his neck; he never revealed his motive.^[2]

"Its size was approximately that of a regular cell-9 feet by 5 feet by about 7 feet high. I could just touch the ceiling by stretching out my arm... You are stripped nude and pushed into the cell. Guards take your clothes and go over them minutely or what few grains of tobacco may have fallen into the cuffs or pockets. There is no soap. No tobacco. No toothbrush, The smell - well you can describe it only by the word 'stink.' It is like stepping into a sewer. It is nauseating. After they have searched your clothing, they throw it at you. For bedding, you get two blankets, around 5 in the evening. You have no shoes, no bed, no mattress-nothing but the four damp walls and two blankets. The walls are painted black. Once a day I got three slices of bread-no-that is an error. Some days I got four slices. I got one meal in five days, and nothing but bread in between. In the entire thirteen days I was there, I got two meals... I have seen but one man get a bath in solitary confinement, in all the time that I have been there. That man had a bucket of cold water thrown over him." - Young testifying his experiences in "The Hole" at Alcatraz during his 1941 trial.^[4]

Young was paroled in 1972.

[] Film adaptation

Murder in the First alleges that Young was arrested for stealing only \$5, that he was tortured after his escape attempt, that he killed McCain in the cafeteria immediately after his return to the general population, and that he was found dead in his prison cell in 1942 just before his appeal with the word "victory" on the wall.^[1] Many of the events depicted in the film, however, are historically inaccurate; in reality, Young was released from segregation after only a few months^[1] and killed McCain more than a year later.^[1]

5. **According to San Francisco Examiner. 16 April 1941. 20.** The Defense stated in court that Henri Young was locked up in Solitary Confinement for over 3 years. This is taken directly from the paper, "Emphasis which they repeatedly laid on the fact that Young was in isolation or solitary confinement for more than three years—and that he drove his knife into McCain's abdomen just eleven days after release from such confinement, made it clear that the defense hopes to show not only that Young was "punch drunk" but that the punches were administered by the Alcatraz "system."

\$1500**REWARD****\$1500****WANTED****GEORGE (DUTCH) ANDERSON**

For escape from United States Penitentiary, Atlanta, Georgia, and for
MURDER in Delaware County, Indiana.

**DESCRIPTION.**

The above photographs are excellent likenesses of Anderson. White; age, 45; height 5 feet 7 $\frac{1}{4}$ inches in bare feet; weight, about 165 pounds; build, medium; hair, light chestnut, may dye it; eyes, pale blue; complexion, medium fair; native of Sweden.

BERTILLON MEASUREMENTS.

71.0: 70.0: 93.2: 20.4: 16.0: 14.4: 6.9: 26.6: 11.8: 9.3: 45.7:

FINGER-PRINT CLASSIFICATION:

$\frac{9}{3}$ — $\frac{A}{1}$ — $\frac{15}{7}$

Reference:

$\frac{9}{3}$ — $\frac{Aa}{1}$ — $\frac{15}{7}$

MARKS AND SCARS: Two vaccination scars below left shoulder, rear. Incomplete tattoo between left elbow and wrist, front and outer. Tattoo, dot between first joints of left thumb and index finger, rear. Scar, oblique to rear of one one-quarter inches, on first phalanx of left thumb, front and inner. Vertical scar of three eighths inches on top of right index finger. Irregular scar of three-eighths by three-fourth inches in outer right brow. Four lower right teeth and three lefts, crowned and bridged. Three upper rights and three lefts, crowned and bridged.

GEORGE ANDERSON, Number 14662, U. S. Penitentiary, Atlanta, Georgia, alias Dutch Anderson, alias William A. Anderson, alias Edward Bauer, alias Ed Brown, alias Henry Schultz, alias Fred Maranda, alias R. Keller, alias Iver Dale Teller, alias Wm. Black, alias Geo. Brown, alias Geo. Patterson, alias Peters, alias "Dutch," alias "The Swede." Escaped from U. S. Penitentiary, Atlanta, Georgia, December 30, 1923, while serving 25 years sentence for holdup of mail truck in New York, N. Y., with Gerald Chapman (latter now under sentence of death for murder in Connecticut). On August 14, 1925, Anderson, in company with one Charles Wolfe (Wolfe now in custody) in Delaware County, near Muncie, Indiana, killed Ben Hance and the latter's wife. \$1000 reward is offered by Delaware County Commissioners for arrest and conviction of Anderson. The Warden of the U. S. Penitentiary also offers a \$500 reward for Anderson's delivery to an authorized officer of the Penitentiary.

This man is well educated, speaks several languages, can enter any society, is fond of music, good literature and good living, often frequenting good hotels and high class furnished apartments. Lately, however, he has been dressing roughly and living in small towns and rural districts, and at times at lake resorts where, with pals, he rents a furnished cottage. He speaks with Swedish accent. He is a murderer, safe-blower, all around bandit, pickpocket, forger, bank-burglar and general thief.

If this man is located, the nearest peace officers, police or sheriff should be notified, and the local postmaster consulted, who should wire his Post Office Inspector in Charge, Government rate, "Collect."

Extreme caution should be exercised as this man is a killer and will likely resist arrest.

John Allen Kendrick (1897-?) was an American criminal, escape artist, bank robber and member of the [Tri-State Gang](#) whose career spanned four decades. He was listed on the [FBI's Top Ten Most Wanted](#) in late-1955, and was apprehended by the [Federal Bureau of Investigation](#) that same year.^{[1][2]}

Biography

A longtime career criminal, John Allen Kendrick was first arrested by the [Baltimore Police Department](#) and charged with [larceny](#) and [murder](#) in May 1923. He was convicted of larceny and a reduced assault charge, sentenced to five years imprisonment, and released on December 24, 1928. Two years later, he was convicted on a concealed weapons charge and sentenced two and a half years in February 1930. He escaped from prison on September 2, 1931, but was indicted six months later for shooting a police officer in [Washington, DC](#) and sentenced to ten years at the federal penitentiary in [Lorton, Virginia](#).

On July 3, 1933, Kendrick escaped from the correctional facility and eventually joined up with the [Tri-State Gang](#), a group of Depression-era bank robbers and stick up men active in the Mid-Atlantic United States during the early to mid-1930s. The gang were responsible for countless robberies in [Pennsylvania](#), [Maryland](#), [Virginia](#), [North Carolina](#) and Washington, DC.^[1]

In June 1934, Kendrick was arrested in [Johnson City, Tennessee](#) and returned to Lorton. He remained there for a brief time and transferred to [Alcatraz](#), then to Leavenworth federal penitentiary in July 1941. He remained in Leavenworth for the rest of his sentence but, instead of being released, he was instead extradited to New Jersey to finish his original prison sentence for the 1930 weapons charge. He was finally released after being granted parole in June 1943.^[1]

Four years after his release, Kendrick was arrested for the murder of an underworld figure in Washington, DC in June 1947. Tried and convicted on December 10 of that year, he was sentenced to between 3 and 10 years in Leavenworth. He was paroled in March 1954 but arrested nine months later after being identified as the assailant of the man who had seriously wounded a Washington, DC resident after shooting the man in the throat. Indicted for the shooting in August 1955, he was charged with "unlawful flight to avoid prosecution" a month later and officially added to the [FBI's Top Ten Most Wanted](#) on November 2.^[1]

Kendrick was tracked down by the [Federal Bureau of Investigation](#) within a month and was arrested by federal agents in Chicago on December 5, 1955. He was apprehended without incident and extradited back to Washington, DC where he convicted and given a long jail sentence.^[1] Kendrick testified that he had been offered \$2,500 to murder Michael Lee but declined the job because *"when I got done paying taxes out of that, what would I have left?"*^[3]

Christopher Lawrence Jeburk, born 1975, is a convicted [felon](#), known for the string of bank robberies he successfully pulled off along the [East Coast of the United States](#). He escaped four times from prison, twice from a regional detention center and twice while in federal custody, to commit more crimes, including a jewel heist in Indonesia. He is currently incarcerated in a maximum security penitentiary.^[1]

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Early life](#)
- [2 Crime](#)
- [3 Media](#)
- [4 References](#)
- [5 External links](#)

[] Early life

Christopher Jeburk was born to a prominent southern African-American family. He was raised a [Christian](#).^[2]

[] Crime

Beginning in 1995, at the age of 19, Jeburk started robbing banks. On October 13, 1995, Jeburk held teller Amy Shaw hostage at gunpoint, with the help of two individuals named Daniel Evans and Lamarko Rosco, while stealing \$86,000. This money has not been recovered.^[citation needed] After conviction, but awaiting sentencing, Jeburk escaped the Columbia County Detention Center on March 27. Jeburk embarked on a string of bank robberies from Florida to New England, with the help of Kimberly Williams, Jameela McCullen, and a fellow escapee, Jerome Frierson-Bey.^[3] He was recaptured on May 9, he then re-escaped.^[4] After this recapture, Jeburk was sentenced to life in prison for the robberies, the kidnapping, various theft charges, gun charges and drug charges.

[] Media

The television show [The FBI Files](#) showed how the Jeburk case happened in the episode "Held Hostage".

[] References

1. [^] <http://www.bop.gov/iloc2/InmateFinderServlet?Transaction=NameSearch&needingMoreList=false&FirstName=christopher&Middle=&LastName=jeburk&Race=U&Sex=U&Age=&x=97&y=13>
 2. [^] <http://chronicle.augusta.com/headlines/100496/jeburk.html>
 3. [^] http://www.nydailynews.com/archives/news/1996/05/08/1996-05-08_a_fugitive_s_on_the_loose.html
 4. [^] http://chronicle.augusta.com/stories/1996/10/05/met_199841.shtml
- **John Knight Giles** (February 16, 1895 – February 1979^[citation needed]). He was sentenced to the United States Penitentiary on May 11, 1935 for attempted robbery of the [Denver and Rio Grande Western](#) mail train. previously been serving a life sentence in [Oregon](#) for [murder](#) before escaping. Giles had escaped from the jail in Oregon as a WANTED MAN. Giles began serving his sentence for the attempted train robbery at [McNeil Island](#) on June 17, 1935, but due to his escape record and the length of his sentence, was transferred to [Alcatraz Island](#) on August 28, 1935.^[1]
 - **Escape attempt**

- On July 31, 1945, at 10:40 a.m., the Army launch [General Frank M. Coxe](#) pulled into the [Alcatraz Wharf](#). Giles, wearing an Army Technical Sergeant's uniform that he had been able to steal while working in the laundry that was contracted to clean army uniforms,^[2] jumped aboard the boat through a freight hatchway below deck. As the boat pulled away, a count of the soldiers on board indicated one extra, and at the same time, a count of the Alcatraz dock workers indicated one missing convict. Assistant Warden E.J. Miller was notified, and he followed the Army boat in a small speedboat until it reached [Fort McDowell](#) on Angel Island. Alcatraz officials called ahead to Fort McDowell, instructing them to keep everyone on the boat. The boat Captain took this to mean nobody was to disembark without a pass. Giles showed his pass. It worked. He got off. According to Warden Johnston, it should have been called a successful escape, but the Bureau of Prisons and the Attorney General decided to call it attempted escape.
- While on board, Giles was unaware that he was being followed. He talked to fellow passengers and told them he was a "lineman working on the cable".
- After Giles disembarked the boat, he was questioned by Lieutenant Gordon L. Kilgore, officer of the day. Kilgore had noticed that Giles' uniform appeared incorrect. After inspecting the passes and realizing they were bad forgeries, he was detained and eventually turned over to Assistant Warden Miller. By 11 a.m., he was headed back to Alcatraz.^[3]
- The story of Giles' capture and his attempted escape were profiled on the radio program [Gang Busters](#) in 1945.

ESCAPE ATTEMPTS

#9. July 31, 1945 - In one of the most ingenious attempts, John Giles was able to take advantage of his job working at the loading dock, where he unloaded army laundry sent to the island to be cleaned - over time, he stole an entire army uniform. Dressed in the uniform, Giles calmly walked aboard an army launch to what he thought was freedom. He was discovered missing almost immediately. Unfortunately for Giles, the launch was headed for Angel Island, not San Francisco as Giles hoped. As Giles set foot on Angel Island, he was met by correctional officers who returned him to Alcatraz.

#10. May 2-4, 1946 - Known as the "Battle of Alcatraz" and the "Alcatraz Blastout," six prisoners were able to overpower cellhouse officers and gain access to weapons and cellhouse keys - in effect, taking control of the cellhouse. Their plan began to fall apart when the inmates found they did not have the key to unlock the recreation yard door. Shortly thereafter, prison officials discovered the escape attempt. Instead of giving up, Bernard Coy, Joe Cretzer, Marvin Hubbard, Sam Shockley, Miran Thompson, and Clarence Carnes decided to fight it out. Eventually Shockley, Thompson, and Carnes returned to their cells, but not before the officers taken hostage were shot at point-blank range by Cretzer (encouraged by Shockley and Thompson). One officer, William Miller, died from his injuries. A second officer, Harold Stites (who stopped the third escape attempt), was shot and killed attempting to regain control of the cellhouse. About 18 officers were injured during the escape attempt. The U.S. Marines were eventually called out to assist, and on May 4, the escape attempt ended with the discovery of the bodies of Coy, Cretzer, and Hubbard. Shockley, Thompson, and Carnes stood trial for the death of the

officers; Shockley and Thompson received the death penalty and were executed in the gas chamber at San Quentin in December 1948. Carnes, age 19, received a second life sentence.

FOLLOW LINK ON BOTTOM OF PAGE TO READ A SHORT ARTICLE ON THIS ESCAPE ATTEMPT.

John Giles

Alcatraz Inmate #250

Joseph Paul Cretzer

Battle of Alcatraz May 1946 A San Francisco Police Patrol Boat monitors activities and provides support during the Battle of Alcatraz.

Marvin Hubbard

#11. July 23, 1956 - Floyd Wilson disappeared from his job at the dock. After hiding for several hours among large rocks along the shoreline, he was discovered and surrendered.

#12. September 29, 1958 - While working on the garbage detail, Aaron Burgett and Clyde Johnson overpowered a correctional officer and attempted to swim from the island. Johnson was caught in the water, but Burgett disappeared. An intensive search turned up nothing. Burgett's body was found floating in the Bay two weeks later.

#13. June 11, 1962 - Made famous by Clint Eastwood in the movie *Escape from Alcatraz*, Frank Morris and brothers John and Clarence Anglin vanished from their cells and were never seen again. A fourth man, Allen West, believed by some people to have been the mastermind, was also involved; however, he was still in his cell the next morning when the escape was discovered.

An investigation revealed an intricate escape plot that involved homemade drills to enlarge vent holes, false wall segments, and realistic dummy heads (complete with human hair) placed in the beds so the inmates would not be missed during nighttime counts. The three men exited through vent holes located in the rear wall of their cell - they had enlarged the vent holes and made false vent/wall segments to conceal their work. Behind the rear wall of the cells is a utility corridor that had locked steel doors at either end. The three men climbed the utility pipes to the top of the cellblock, and gained access to the roof through an air vent (the men had previously bent the iron bars that blocked the air vent). They then climbed down a drainpipe on the northern end of the cellhouse and made their way to the water. It is believed they left from the northeast side of the island near the powerhouse/quartermaster building.

They used prison-issued raincoats to make crude life vests and a pontoon-type raft to assist in their swim. A cellhouse search turned up the drills, heads, wall segments, and other tools, while the water search found two life vests (one in the bay, the other outside the Golden Gate), oars, and letters and photographs belonging to the Anglins that had been carefully wrapped to be watertight. But no sign of the men was found. Several weeks later a man's body dressed in blue clothing similar to the prison uniform was found a short distance up the coast from San Francisco, but the body was too badly deteriorated to be identified.

Morris and the Anglins are officially listed as missing and presumed drowned. [CLICK ON THE LINK BELOW TO READ MORE ABOUT "THE GREAT ESCAPE FROM ALCATRAZ."](#)

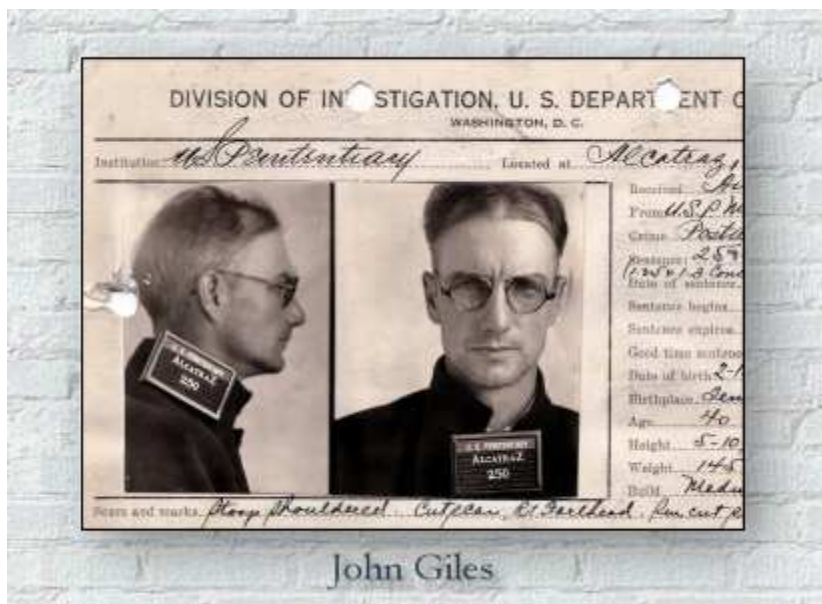
Fake ventilation grills and wall segments were used to conceal the passages tunneled by the inmates using makeshift tools and other decoys.

#14. December 16, 1962 - John Paul Scott and Darl Parker bent the bars of a kitchen window in the cellhouse basement, climbed out, and made their way down to the water. Parker was discovered on a small outcropping of rock a short distance from the island. Scott attempted to swim towards San Francisco, but the currents began pulling him out to sea. He was found by

several teenagers on the rocks near Fort Point (beneath the Golden Gate Bridge) and was taken to the military hospital at the Presidio Army base suffering from shock and hypothermia before being returned to Alcatraz.

One of the many myths about Alcatraz is that it was impossible to survive a swim from the island to the mainland because of sharks. In fact, there are no "man-eating" sharks in San Francisco Bay, only small bottom-feeding sharks. The main obstacles were the cold temperature (averaging 50-55 degrees Fahrenheit), the strong currents, and the distance to shore (at least 1-1/4 miles). Prior to the Federal institution opening in 1934, a teenage girl swam to the island to prove it was possible. The fitness guru Jack LaLanne once swam to the island pulling a rowboat, and several years ago two 10-year-old children also made the swim.

If a person is well-trained and -conditioned, it is possible to survive the cold waters and fast currents. However, for prisoners - who had no control over their diet, no weightlifting or physical training (other than situps and pushups), and no knowledge of high and low tides - the odds for success were slim.



Lynette Alice "Squeaky" Fromme (born October 22, 1948) is an American member of the [Manson Family](#). She was sentenced to [life imprisonment](#) for attempting to assassinate [U.S. President Gerald Ford](#) in 1975. After serving 34 years in custody, she was released from prison on August 14, 2009.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Early life](#)
- [2 Charles Manson and Manson Family involvement](#)
- [3 Murder in Stockton, California](#)
- [4 Attempt to contact Jimmy Page](#)
- [5 Assassination attempt on President Ford](#)
 - [5.1 Aftermath](#)
- [6 In media](#)
- [7 References](#)
- [8 Bibliography](#)
- [9 External links](#)

[] Early life

Fromme was born in [Santa Monica, California](#), the daughter of Helen (née Benzinger), a homemaker, and William Millar Fromme, an aeronautical engineer.^[1]

As a child, Fromme was a performer for a popular local dance group called the [Westchester Lariats](#), which in the late 1950s began touring the U.S. and Europe, appearing on [The Lawrence Welk Show](#) and at the [White House](#). Fromme was in the 1959 tour.^[2]



A section from a wall of Fromme's Redondo Beach apartment

In 1963, the family moved to [Redondo Beach](#), a suburb of [Los Angeles](#), in the [South Bay](#), and Fromme began drinking and taking drugs. Her grades at [Redondo Union High School](#) dropped, but she managed to graduate in 1966. She moved out of her parents' house for a few months before her father convinced her to consider [El Camino Junior College](#). Her attendance there lasted only about two months before an argument with her father rendered her [homeless](#).^[3]

[] Charles Manson and Manson Family involvement

In 1967, Fromme went to [Venice Beach](#), suffering from [depression](#).^[3] [Charles Manson](#), who had been recently released from federal prison at [Terminal Island](#), between [San Pedro](#) and [Long Beach](#), saw her and struck up a conversation. Fromme found Manson's philosophies and attitudes appealing, and the two became friends, traveling together and with other young people such as [Mary Brunner](#) and [Susan Atkins](#). She lived in Southern California at [Spahn Ranch](#), and

in the desert near [Death Valley](#).^[3] [George Spahn](#) gave her the nickname "Squeaky", because of the sound she made when he touched her.^[4]

After Manson and some of his followers were arrested for the [Tate/La Bianca](#) murders in 1969, Fromme and the remaining "Manson family" camped outside of the trial. When Manson and his fellow defendants, [Patricia Krenwinkel](#), [Leslie Van Houten](#) and Atkins carved Xs into their foreheads, so did Fromme and her compatriots. They proclaimed Manson's innocence and preached his [apocalyptic](#) philosophy to the news media and to anyone else who would listen. She was never charged with involvement in the murders, but was convicted of attempting to prevent Manson's imprisoned followers from testifying, as well as [contempt of court](#), when she herself refused to testify. She was given short jail sentences for both offenses.^[3]

Fromme, together with Sandra Good, moved into a dilapidated attic apartment, in downtown [Sacramento](#); They wanted to be near Charles Manson, who at the time had been moved to [Folsom prison](#). Around 1973, Fromme started work on an extensive 600 page book about The Family, including intricate drawings and photos; other Family members had contributed to it as well. Fromme sent it to every publisher she knew, but after discussing the matter with Steve Grogan, she decided the project was too incriminating, and the project was dropped. It is not known where the book ended up.^[5]

[] Murder in Stockton, California

To follow through with Manson's deal with the [Aryan Brotherhood](#), Fromme moved to [Stockton, California](#), with Family member Nancy Pitman and a friend named Priscilla Cooper, and a pair of ex-convict Aryan Brotherhood members named Michael Monfort and [James Craig](#). This group happened to meet up with a couple, James and Lauren Willett, at a cabin. The ex-convicts forced James Willett to dig his own grave and gunned him down because he was going to tell the authorities about a series of robberies that the ex-convicts had committed after they were released from prison.^[6] After the body of James Willett was found, with his hand still sticking out of the ground,^[6] the housemates were taken into custody on suspicion of murder. After their arrest, the body of Lauren Willett was discovered as well.^[6] An infant girl believed to be the Willetts' daughter was also found in the house in Stockton, and placed with Mary Graham Hall.^[6] Fromme was released due to a lack of [evidence](#).^[3]

The [Sonoma County](#) coroner's office concluded that James Willett was killed sometime in September 1972 although his body was not found until the beginning of November 1972. He had been buried near Guerneville in Sonoma County.^[6] On the night of Saturday November 11, 1972 the Stockton Police responded to information that a station wagon owned by the Willetts was in the area. It was discovered parked in front of 720 W. Flora Street. "Police Sgt. Richard Whiteman went to the house and, when he was refused entry, forced his way in. All the persons subsequently arrested were in the house except for Miss Fromme. She telephoned the house while police were there, asking to be picked up, and officers obliged, taking her into custody nearby. Police found a quantity of guns and ammunition in the house along with amounts of [marijuana](#), and noticed freshly dug earth beneath the building."^[6]

The Stockton Police obtained a warrant and dug up the body of Lauren Willett around 5 a.m. the following day. Cooper told investigators that Lauren had been shot accidentally and had been buried when they realized she was dead.^[6] Cooper contended that Monfort was "demonstrating the dangers of firearms, playing a form of Russian roulette with a .38 caliber pistol" and had first spun the gun cylinder and shot at his own head, and when the gun didn't fire, pointed it at the

victim, whereupon it fired.^[6] The Stockton Police indicated that Lauren Willett "was with the others of her own volition prior to the shooting, and was not being held prisoner."^[6]

Fromme was held in custody for two and a half months but never charged. The other four people involved were convicted. In an interview from the [San Joaquin County Jail](#), she told reporters that she had been traveling in California trying to visit "brothers" in jail and to visit Manson.^[7] Fromme said that she came to Stockton to visit William Goucher, who was already in jail on a robbery charge when Mrs. Willett died.^[8] She claimed to be innocent of any wrongdoing. "They told me I was being put in here for murder because I didn't have anything to say." She also said from jail, "I know there's lots of people who've spent time for being quiet. That's why Charlie is in jail."^[8]

Fromme stated that she took a bus from [Los Angeles](#) to [Stockton](#) on Friday November 10, 1972, to visit Goucher whom she described as "a brother". She called Pitman, she said, and spent Friday night at the Flora Street house. When she left the jail after visiting Gaucher Saturday, she called the house "to ask someone to pick me up". Stockton Police traced the call and arrested her at a phone booth.^[8]

After leaving Stockton, Fromme moved into a [Sacramento](#) apartment with fellow Manson family member [Sandra Good](#). The two wore robes on occasion and changed their names to symbolize their devotion to Manson's new religion, Fromme becoming "Red" in honor of her red hair and the redwoods, and Good, "Blue", for her blue eyes and the ocean; both nicknames were originally given to them by Manson.^[3]

[] Attempt to contact Jimmy Page

During [Led Zeppelin's North American concert tour](#) in 1975, Fromme spoke with [Danny Goldberg](#), the vice president of the band's record company at the hotel the band was staying at in L.A. She asked to meet with guitarist [Jimmy Page](#) to warn him of "bad energy." Fromme claimed to have foreseen the future and wished to forewarn Page of the imminent danger. Goldberg stated that even he couldn't see Page until the following night, to which Fromme responded "tomorrow night will probably be too late." After a long discussion, Goldberg agreed to deliver a message to Page if she were to commit it to writing. Allegedly, the note was burned.^[9]

[] Assassination attempt on President Ford

Main article: [Ford assassination attempt in Sacramento](#)



The Colt M1911 .45-caliber pistol used by Fromme in her assassination attempt on Gerald Ford

On the morning of September 5, 1975, Fromme went to [Sacramento's Capitol Park](#) (reportedly to plead with President [Gerald Ford](#) about the plight of the [California redwoods](#)) dressed in a [nun-like red robe](#) and armed with a [Colt M1911 .45 semi-automatic pistol](#) that she pointed at Ford. The pistol's magazine was loaded with four rounds, but there was no bullet in the [firing chamber](#). She was immediately restrained by [Larry Buendorf](#), a [Secret Service](#) agent. While being further restrained and handcuffed, Fromme managed to say a few sentences to the on-scene cameras, emphasizing that the gun "didn't go off".^[10] Her 1975 arrest as shown by her sitting in a [U.S. Marshal's](#) vehicle as she waits to be brought to jail in 1975 is an image that continues to get frequent use.^[11] In 1980, Fromme told [The Sacramento Bee](#) that she had deliberately ejected the cartridge in her weapon's chamber before leaving home that morning.^[12]

After a lengthy trial in which she refused to cooperate with her own defense, she was convicted of the attempted [assassination](#) of the president and received a [life sentence](#) under a 1965 law which made attempted presidential assassinations a federal crime punishable by a maximum sentence of life in prison. When US Attorney Duane Keyes recommended severe punishment because she was "full of hate and violence," Fromme threw an apple at him, hitting him in the face and knocking off his glasses.^[13]

"I stood up and waved a gun (at Ford) for a reason," said Fromme. "I was so relieved not to have to shoot it, but, in truth, I came to get life. Not just my life but clean air, healthy water and respect for creatures and creation."^[14]

[] Aftermath

Seventeen days after Fromme's arrest, [Sara Jane Moore](#) attempted to assassinate Ford outside the [St. Francis Hotel](#) in [San Francisco](#).^[15] Moore was restrained by bystander [Oliver Sipple](#), a decorated [veteran](#), and the single shot fired from her gun slightly injured taxi driver John Ludwig, who was standing inside the hotel.^[15]

In 1979, Fromme was transferred out of [Federal Correctional Institution, Dublin](#) in [Dublin, California](#), for attacking a fellow inmate, [Juliennie Bušić](#), with the claw-end of a [hammer](#). On December 23, 1987, she escaped from the [Federal Prison Camp, Alderson](#) in [Alderson, West Virginia](#), attempting to meet Manson, whom she had heard had [testicular cancer](#). She was captured again two days later and incarcerated at the [Federal Medical Center, Carswell](#) in [Fort Worth, Texas](#).^[3]



Fromme in a [U.S. Marshal's](#) car just after her [attempt to kill U.S. President Gerald Ford](#) in [California](#). *Walt Zeboski / The Associated Press*

Fromme first became eligible for parole in 1985, and was entitled by federal law to a mandatory hearing after 30 years but could waive that hearing and apply for release at a later date.^[16] Fromme steadfastly waived her right to request a hearing^{[16][17]} and was required by federal law to complete a parole application before one could be considered and granted.^{[16][18]} Fromme was granted parole in July 2008, but was not released due to the extra time added to her sentence for the 1987 prison escape.^[18]

Fromme, [Federal Bureau of Prisons](#) #06075-180,^[19] was released on parole from [Federal Medical Center, Carswell](#) on August 14, 2009.^{[20][21]} She then reportedly moved to [Marcy, New York](#).^[22]

Bernard Paul Coy (February 13, 1901 – May 4, 1946) was a bank robber and federal prisoner best known as the planner of a failed escape attempt from [Alcatraz prison](#), on May 2, 1946 which turned into a bloody two day [armed confrontation](#) leaving Coy, two fellow would-be escapees and two prison guards dead.

Coy was a native of Kentucky who turned to crime during the Depression and in 1937 was sentenced to 25 years imprisonment. He was transferred to Alcatraz from Atlanta in 1938 and was later given the position of cell-house orderly which allowed him access through most of the main cell-block on Alcatraz. This relative freedom allowed him to spot a tiny flaw in one of the prison's security features, the bars of the gun-gallery overlooking the cell house. Coy along with [Joe Cretzer](#), Marvin Hubbard, [Sam Shockley](#), [Miran Thompson](#), and [Clarence Carnes](#) planned to break into the gun galleries to steal weapons, take hostages and then flee to the dock. He was successful in creating a makeshift bar-spreader that enabled him to get through the relatively weak bars that protected the gun galleries and overpower the unsuspecting guard on his return from investigating a fabricated incident caused by Shockley in the prison's secure unit, D-Block.

The prisoners now had one [Springfield rifle](#), one [.45 automatic handgun](#) but the most important item supposed to be held in the cage was the key to the yard door of the prison from which the convicts expected to make their way to the island's dock to seize the prison's boat. However, Bill Miller, one of the nine guards held hostage in two cells had, contrary to regulations, held on to the yard door key to let out kitchen staff without having to disturb the gallery guard at lunch instead of returning it to the gun gallery. The escape attempt was thus foiled inadvertently as although the prisoners eventually found the key following a search of the captive guards and cells, the door would not open because it had been jammed by trying the lock with different keys.

The escapees held several guards hostage and as there was no hope of negotiating, the struggle between the prison authorities and the group of prisoners turned into a violent stand-off, that became known as the [Battle of Alcatraz](#) or "Alcatraz Blastout". After two days, the guards regained control of the prison and the body of Coy was found in a utility corridor along with those of Cretzer and Hubbard.

Gerald Chapman was born George Chartres in August 1887 to parents of [Irish](#) heritage.^[2] Arrested for the first time in 1902 at age fourteen, Chapman was incarcerated for the majority of his early adult life.^[3] After being convicted on a [bank robbery](#) charge and transferred from [Sing Sing](#), he first became acquainted with Anderson while imprisoned in [Auburn State Prison](#) in

1908.^[4] Following both men's [paroles](#) in 1919, they began [bootlegging](#) operations in [Toledo, Miami](#) and [New York City](#) over the next two years.

In late 1921, along with former Auburn inmate Charles Loeber, Chapman and Anderson began committing armed robberies. On October 24,^[5] the three men forced a [U.S. Mail](#) truck to stop at gunpoint on Leonard Street, successfully taking \$2.4 million in cash, bonds and jewelry. Eluding capture for more than eight months, the three were eventually arrested by United States Postal Inspectors William Doran, Jim Doyle and William Cochrane on July 3, 1922, after Chapman attempted to sell Argentine gold notes (stolen during the Leonard Street mail robbery) to an undercover Postal Inspector posing as a stock broker. ^[6] Chapman and Anderson were both sentenced to 25 years' imprisonment and ordered to serve their time at the [Atlanta Federal Prison](#). Chapman escaped from prison on March 27, 1923,^[7] and Anderson escaped on December 30, 1923. They reunited, and were suspected by authorities to have committed several hold-ups.

Roy G. Gardner (January 5, 1884 - January 10, 1940) was once America's most infamous prison escapee and the most celebrated outlaw and escaped convict during the [Roaring Twenties](#).

During his criminal career, he stole over \$350,000 in cash and securities. He also had a \$5,000 reward for his head three times in less than a year during his sensational career. He was the most dangerous inmate in the history of Atlanta Prison and he was dubbed by the newspapers across the West Coast as the "Smiling Bandit", the "Mail Train Bandit", and the "King of the Escape Artists". He was one of the most notorious offenders of the [Federal Bureau of Prisons](#), one of the most notorious inmates at Alcatraz and one of the most ruthless criminals in American history.

Gardner is said to be the most hunted man in Pacific Coast history. While legend has it that he was the first to escape the McNeil Island Federal Penitentiary, this has been confirmed to be not true. The first escapes occurred before Gardner was even born, and, by the time of his imprisonment, several dozen inmates had made their escapes. McNeil Island, in fact, was the only Federal Penitentiary never to have a wall and was never considered a maximum security facility. Gardner was the "Most Wanted" gangster of 1921.

He is now largely forgotten for his daring acts. No longer the household name that he was in 1921, he never lived as an outlaw on the Western frontier, was never a Depression Era gangster, and was never in a gang, all things that may contribute to him being largely forgotten in modern times. He was a lone bandit and his reputation and notoriety made him a touchstone of his time.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Early life](#)
- [2 Robbery career](#)
- [3 Escape from McNeil Island](#)
- [4 Recapture and Alcatraz](#)
- [5 Final years](#)
- [6 Notes and references](#)

[] Early life

Roy Gardner was born on January 5, 1884 in [Trenton, Missouri](#) and was raised in [Colorado Springs](#). He was said to be attractive and charming, standing just under six feet tall, with short, curly auburn hair and blue eyes. He spent his early manhood as a drifter in the Southwest, learning the trades of farrier and miner. Supposedly, he joined the U.S. Army to escape the dangerous world of petty crime, reform school escapes, and the mining business, but he deserted in 1906 and drifted to Mexico.

Gardner began his criminal profession as a gunrunner around the time of the [Mexican Revolution](#). He smuggled and traded arms and ammunition to the [Venustiano Carranza](#) forces until he was captured by soldiers from [Victoriano Huerta's](#) army and was sentenced to death by firing squad, but, on March 29, 1909, he broke out of the [Mexico City](#) jail along with three other American prisoners after attacking the soldier guards. Gardner arrived back in the United States, where he was a [prizefighter](#) in the Southwest. He was good enough that he became a sparring partner for Heavyweight Champion [J. J. Jeffries](#) at Ben Lemond Training Camp in [Reno, Nevada](#) during the summer of 1910.

Eventually, Gardner ended up in San Francisco, where he gambled all of his boxing money away, and robbed a jewelry store on [Market Street](#). He was arrested, and spent some time in San Quentin, but he was paroled after he saved a prison guard's life during a violent riot. Gardner landed a job as an acetylene welder at the [Mare Island Navy Yard](#), married, fathered a daughter, left the Schwa - Batcher Company in 1918 on [Armistice Day](#) and began his own welding company.

[] Robbery career

Gardner had gambled all of his money away on a business trip in Tijuana at the racetracks. On the night of April 16, 1920, outside of San Diego, Gardner robbed a U. S. Mail truck of about \$80,000 in cash and securities. The job went smoothly, but the outlaw was arrested three days later burying his loot. His name would become just as familiar to the lawmen of California as [Jesse James](#).

Roy Gardner was sentenced to 25 years at McNeil Island Federal Penitentiary for armed robbery of the U. S. Mails, and he vowed he would never serve the sentence. On June 5, 1920, he was transported on a train with Deputy U. S. Marshals Cavanaugh and Haig. Some way outside [Portland, Oregon](#), Gardner peered out of the window of the train and yelled, "Look at that deer!". The lawmen looked, and Gardner grabbed Marshal Haig's gun from his holster. He then disarmed Marshal Cavanaugh at gunpoint. The daring outlaw then handcuffed the two humiliated lawmen together and stole \$200. He jumped off the train, and made his way to Canada.

He slipped back into the United States the next year, and started robbing banks and mail trains across the country as a lone bandit. Gardner came back to California, where he tied up the mail clerk to Train No. 10 eastbound from Sacramento and robbed the express car of \$187,000 on May 19, 1921. The next morning, Gardner told the mail clerk of Train No. 20 to throw up his hands or he would blow his head off. When the train reached the Overland Limited, the elusive bandit darted down the tracks with an armful of mail. The home office recognized the gunman as Roy Gardner, the notorious train robber with a \$5,000 reward on his head.

Gardner was recognized at the Porter House Hotel and a convoy of police arrived in Roseville while Gardner was playing a game of cards in a pool hall. Three federal agents came up behind Gardner and captured him. The bandit was arrested, and was sentenced to another 25 years at McNeil Island for armed robbery of the mail trains.

Trying to reduce his sentence he told [Southern Pacific Railroad](#) detectives that he would lead them to the spot where he buried his loot. The officers found nothing, and Gardner announced, "I guess I have forgotten where I buried that money". He was heavily shackled, with the addition of an "Oregon Boot", and was once again transported on a train to McNeil Island, this time by U. S. Marshals Mulhall and Rinkell, both fast shooting veterans. During the journey, Gardner asked to use the bathroom, in which an associate had earlier hid a .32 caliber pistol. Gardner came out of the bathroom, pointed the gun at Mulhall's protruding pouch, and ordered another prisoner to handcuff the two humiliated lawmen to the seat. He relieved the officers of their weapons and cash before hopping onto another moving train outside [Castle Rock, Washington](#).

The largest manhunt in Pacific Coast history began after this. He was known all over the country as the boldest hold up man, the cleverest and most slippery prisoner to ever be placed under arrest. Gardner was described as a dangerous man who would shoot on sight, and must be captured at all costs. He once again had a \$5,000 reward on his head.

He arrived in [Centralia, Washington](#), where he was almost recognized by Jack Scuitto at the Olympic Club. Roy plastered his face with bandages to hide his identity, leaving one eye slit. Gardner told the Oxford Hotel staff that he had been severely burned in an industrial accident near Tacoma. Proprietor Gertrude Howell and Officer [Louis Sonney](#)^[1] became suspicious of the bandaged man, and when he saw a firearm in Gardner's hotel room, he accused him of being the "Smiling Bandit". Gardner fought back, but was arrested and a doctor removed the bandages to show that he was indeed the notorious train robber. This time Gardner, who was sentenced to another 25 years, was heavily ironed, and finally brought to McNeil Island. [Dan Sonney](#),^[2] son of Louis, tells the story of the arrest in the 2001 documentary [Mau Mau Sex Sex](#), and Louis's subsequent career change to the entertainment industry. The documentary also features a clip of an interview with an aging Gardner promising his reform, and showing his release from prison.^[3]

[] Escape from McNeil Island

After six weeks at the penitentiary, Gardner had convinced two unlikeable prisoners, Lawardus Bogart and Everett Impyn, that he had "paid off" the guards in the towers. On Labor Day, September 5, 1921, at a prison baseball game, Gardner said, "Now" during the fifth inning when someone hit a fly ball into center field, as the guards in the towers had their eyes on the ball and the runners. Gardner, Bogart, and Impyn ran 300 yards to the high barbed wire fence where Gardner cut a hole, and the three men made it to the pasture as bullets whirled about their heads. Gardner was wounded in his left leg, but made it behind a herd of cattle near timber.^[4] About the same time, he saw Bogart fall, badly wounded. Impyn was shot dead; his dying words were, "Gardner told us those fellows in the towers couldn't hit the broad side of a barn". Bogart later stated that Gardner had deceived them and used his companions as decoys, to better his chances of escape.

Guards scoured the beaches and confiscated every boat on the shoreline, but no trace of the dangerous outlaw could be found. Gardner lived in the prison barn, getting nutrition from cow's milk, and then swam the choppy waters to Fox Island where he lived off fruit in the orchards. Warden Maloney claimed Gardner was still on McNeil Island, but the same day the statement

was made, Gardner was already on the route to Oregon. Gardner taunted marshals and detectives on McNeil Island when he sent a letter to the Seattle newspaper stating, "Come and get me, you sleepy dicks." Two weeks later, the warden had to admit that Mr. Gardner, the notorious bloodless bandit and badman, had probably gotten off the island.^{[[citation needed](#)]}

[] Recapture and Alcatraz



Alcatraz Island in 2005

Roy Gardner was now the "Most Wanted" criminal, and committed several crimes in [Arizona](#) before he was captured by a mail clerk during a train robbery in [Phoenix](#) in the fall of 1921. Gardner was sentenced to an additional 25 years, this time at [Leavenworth Federal Penitentiary](#). Headlines screamed, "Gangster Gardner brags, 'Leavenworth will never hold me'".

Gardner, now known as the "King of the Escape Artists", raised more hell when he was transferred to Atlanta Federal Prison, the toughest prison in the country in 1925. In 1926, he tried to tunnel under the wall and saw through the bars in the shoe shop. The following year, he led a prison break and attempted an armed escape with two revolvers holding the Captain and two guards hostage, but the escape failed and he was placed in solitary confinement for twenty months for shooting at officers. When he came out of solitary confinement, he was placed in a Mental Hospital in Washington, D. C.

In 1929, the warden described Gardner as the "most dangerous inmate in the history of Atlanta Prison",^[4] and that year he began a hunger strike, protesting [prison food](#) and threatened suicide. He was then transferred to Leavenworth Annex Prison in 1930, and in 1934 he was transferred to the infamous Alcatraz prison. Gardner was one of the first hardened criminals at Alcatraz during the hardest years.^[4]

Roy Gardner was a prisoner at the same time Al Capone was. Al Capone was a very unpopular man in prison. Supposedly, an unidentified inmate threw a lead sash at Capone shortly after work; but Capone only suffered a deep wound to the arm because Roy Gardner pushed him out of the way.

While at Alcatraz, his wife divorced him. He worked and supervised at the Mat Shop with Ralph Roe and they planned an escape, but Gardner was paroled and released in 1938 after his appeal for clemency was approved.

[] Final years

Gardner published his autobiography, "Hellcatraz",^[4] a sensational book that contains not only descriptions of his interesting life but also such familiar names as [Al Capone](#). He attended crime lectures, and he and Louis Sonney made one of the first re-enactments on a short film called, "You Can't Beat the Rap". The ex-convict landed a job as a film salesman and an exposition barker. A 1939 movie called "I Stole A Billion" was based on his life. The movie was a failure.

On the evening of January 10, 1940, Gardner wrote four notes at his hotel room in San Francisco, one of which was attached to the door warning: "Do not open door. Poison gas. Call police."^[5] He sealed the door from the inside, then killed himself by dropping cyanide into a glass of acid and inhaling the poison fumes.^[5]

Joseph Paul Cretzer (April 17, 1911 – May 4, 1946) was an [American](#) bank robber and prisoner at [Alcatraz](#) who participated in and was slain in the bloody "[Battle of Alcatraz](#)" which took place following a failed escape attempt between May 2 and May 4, 1946.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Criminal career](#)
- [2 Prison](#)
- [3 Battle of Alcatraz](#)
- [4 Film depictions](#)
- [5 Notes and references](#)

[] Criminal career

Cretzer started his criminal career at an early age and had been in and out of prison since 1927. He was married to Edna May Kyle, the sister of Arnold Kyle. Cretzer and Kyle formed the backbone of a gang, the [Cretzer-Kyle Gang](#), which robbed banks along the west coast. Cretzer's prowess led to him reaching no. 4 on the [Federal Bureau of Investigation](#)'s most wanted list by September 1939 ^[3].^[1] By then, Cretzer had relocated to [Chicago](#) where he was soon arrested and sentenced to 25 years imprisonment.



Cretzer arrested

[] Prison

He began serving his sentence at [McNeil Island](#) in February 1940 but in April 1940, he and Arnold Kyle broke out in a commandeered truck. Recaptured after three days,^[2] he was sentenced to an extra five years imprisonment for this escape attempt but, after the sentencing in the courthouse in [Tacoma, Washington](#) a [US Marshal](#) died in a struggle with Cretzer following another failed attempt to escape.

Cretzer was sentenced to life for murder and sent to Alcatraz in August 1940. In May 1941 he again attempted escape from one of the island's workshops along with [Sam Shockley](#), Arnold Kyle and Lloyd Barkdoll. During the escape attempt the men held a number of guards hostage, but gave up when they failed to cut through the tool-proof bars. For this escape attempt he was sentenced by an internal tribunal to serve five years in the prison's high security unit, called D Block, which was isolated from the rest of the prison and where prisoners were confined to their cells almost all of the time.

[] Battle of Alcatraz

Main article: [Battle of Alcatraz](#)

Cretzer had only recently been let out of D Block when he became an accomplice in yet another escape plan. This plan had been hatched by the cell-house orderly [Bernard Coy](#) who offered Cretzer a place on the break in return for use of his onshore contacts. The failure of the plan led to the bloody and hopeless standoff known as the "battle of Alcatraz" during which Cretzer, armed with a [.45 automatic handgun](#), opened fire on a number of hostage guards held in two cells in an apparent attempt to prevent any of them giving evidence against the would-be

escapees. Cretzer made no attempt to surrender and was slain by guard fire or committed suicide early on May 4 when trapped in a utility corridor.

When his "wife" came to claim Cretzer's body she identified herself as his sister and was arrested for her outstanding warrants and jumping her \$10,000 bail bond on the white slavery charge.^{[[citation needed](#)]} He is buried in [Cypress Lawn Memorial Park](#).

[] Film depictions

Cretzer was portrayed by [Telly Savalas](#) in *Alcatraz — The Whole Shocking Story* (1980) and by [Howard Hesseman](#) in *Six Against the Rock* (1987).

[] Notes and references

- [^] Time Magazine, September 11, 1939 ^[1]([Theodore Cole](#) and [Ralph Roe](#), who disappeared from Alcatraz in 1937 were nos. 1 and 2.)
- [^] *Special Progress Report on Joseph Paul Cretzer McNeil Island Register # 14584-M 4-18-40*^[2]
- Thomas Limerick was born on January 7, 1903 in [Council Bluffs, Iowa](#). He grew up in a middle-class family until his father died when he was 15. His family was soon thrown into poverty and left Thomas, the oldest of 5 children, to get a job. Originally a boxcar bandit, he joined a gang of bank robbers headed by Maurice Denning based in [Gage County, Nebraska](#) in 1934. On August 23, 1934 the gang robbed a National Guard Armory, and between October and November of that year, robbed large banks in [Hawarden, Iowa](#), [Dell Rapids, South Dakota](#) and [Superior, Nebraska](#). Limerick was arrested in a nightclub in [St. Joseph, Missouri](#) on May 25, 1935. Limerick was sentenced to life imprisonment at [Leavenworth Penitentiary](#), but later transferred to Alcatraz.
- [] Alcatraz escape attempt**
- In the spring of 1938, Limerick, [James Lucas](#), and [Rufus Franklin](#) planned an escape from Alcatraz. Their escape plan began by incapacitating an unarmed guard supervising a work detail on the top floor. Once the supervisor was rendered unconscious, the convicts would escape through a window to the rooftop, where they would incapacitate an armed guard and leave the island via a seized police boat. They enacted their escape plan on May 23, 1938 in the prison's mat shop, where they assaulted Custodial Officer Royal Cline with hammer blows to his head. They proceeded to the roof, where an armed guard shot both Franklin and Limerick, although Lucas wasn't shot. Other guards arrived at the scene. Franklin, Limerick, and Lucas were cornered and surrendered to the guards.^[4]
- Cline died of his injuries the next day, as did Limerick.^[2] Lucas and the other surviving convict, [Rufus Franklin](#), were tried for [murder](#)^{[3][4][5]} and sentenced to life imprisonment.^{[6][7]}
- Rufus Roy McCain** (died 1940) was a prisoner at [Alcatraz](#) who attempted escape with [Henri Young](#) and [Arthur Barker](#). On the night of January 13, 1939, McCain, with Young and Barker, attempted escape from [the Rock](#). The guards started to fire shots at Arthur Barker. Barker eventually died and McCain and Young were recaptured. McCain and Young were sentenced to almost 22 months each in solitary confinement.
- After Young and McCain returned to the normal prison population, McCain was assigned to the tailoring shop and Young to the furniture shop located directly upstairs. On December 3, 1940, Young waited until just after the 10 a.m. count to run downstairs and plunge a spoon into McCain. McCain fell quickly into shock and died five hours later. Young refused to disclose his motive for the murder.

9. [] External links

10. **Leslie Isben Rogge**^[1] (born March 8, 1940) is an American [criminal](#). Rogge was imprisoned at the [United States Penitentiary](#) in [Leavenworth, Kansas](#) in the 1970s for car theft and grand larceny.^[2] He was later convicted and sentenced to 25 years for a 1984 bank robbery in [Key Largo, Florida](#). In September 1985, he bribed a corrections officer and escaped from [prison](#) in [Moscow, Idaho](#).
11. He was born in [Seattle, Washington](#).^[3]
12. Following his escape, he went on to commit additional bank robberies, including one at an [Exchange Bank](#) branch in [El Dorado, Arkansas](#) and at a bank in [High Point, North Carolina](#) in 1986.^[4] On January 24, 1990, Rogge became the [430th Fugitive to be added](#) to the [FBI Ten Most Wanted Fugitives](#) list, where he remained for the next six years.^{[2][5][6]} He was featured on the television program, *[Unsolved Mysteries](#)* and on *[America's Most Wanted](#)* five times.^[2] In 1991, he also robbed a bank in [Webb City, Missouri](#).^[4]
13. Taylor fled to the United States but was arrested on 21 May 1984 by two [US Deputy Marshals](#) in [Somerville, Massachusetts](#), on a warrant for extradition to face charges of embezzling \$1 million of government funds while the GSA boss.^[13] Citing a fear of assassination by Liberian agents,^[citation needed] Taylor fought extradition from the safety of jail with the help of a legal team led by former [US Attorney General Ramsey Clark](#). His lawyers' primary arguments before US District Magistrate [Robert J. DeGiacomo](#) stated that his alleged acts of lawbreaking in Liberia were political rather than criminal in nature and that the extradition treaty between the two republics had lapsed; in response, Assistant United States Attorney [Richard G. Stearns](#) argued that Liberia wished to charge Taylor with theft in office, rather than with political crimes, and that any international political decisions that could hold up the trial should only be made by the US State Department. Stearns' arguments were reinforced by Liberian Justice Minister [Jenkins Scott](#), who flew to the United States to be present at the proceedings.^[14] While awaiting the conclusion of the extradition hearing, Taylor was detained in the [Plymouth County](#) House of Corrections.^[13]
14. On 15 September 1985, Taylor and four other inmates escaped from the jail. Two days later, the *[Boston Globe](#)* reported that they sawed through a bar covering a window in a dormitory room, after which they lowered themselves 20 feet (6.1 m) on knotted sheets and escaped into nearby woods by climbing a fence.^[13] Shortly thereafter, Taylor and two other escapees were met at nearby Jordan Hospital by Taylor's wife, Enid, and Taylor's sister-in-law, Lucia Holmes Toweh. A getaway car was driven to [Staten Island](#), where Taylor then disappeared. All four of Taylor's fellow escapees, as well as Enid and Toweh, were later apprehended.^[citation needed]
15. In July 2009, Mr Taylor himself told at his trial, at the UN-backed Special Court for Sierra Leone in the Hague, that US CIA agents had helped him escape from the maximum security prison in Boston in 1985. The US Defence Intelligence Agency did confirm that Mr Taylor first started working with US intelligence in the 1980s but refused to give details on exactly what role Mr Taylor played, citing national security.^[15]

Before the Prison

The name Alcatraz is derived from the Spanish "Alcatrazes." In 1775, the Spanish explorer Juan Manuel de Ayala was the first to sail into what is now known as San Francisco



Bay - his expedition mapped the bay and named one of the three islands *Alcatrazes*. Over time, the name was Anglicized to Alcatraz. While the exact meaning is still debated, Alcatraz is usually defined as meaning "pelican" or "strange bird."

In 1850, a presidential order set aside the island for possible use as a United States military reservation. The California Gold Rush, the resulting boom in the growth of San Francisco, and the need to protect San Francisco Bay led the U.S. Army to build a Citadel, or fortress, at the top of the island in the early 1850s. The Army also made plans to install more than 100 cannons on the island, making Alcatraz the most heavily fortified military site on the West Coast. Together with Fort Point and Lime Point, Alcatraz formed a "triangle of defense" designed to protect the entrance to the bay. The island was also the site of the first operational lighthouse on the West Coast of the United States.

By the late 1850s, the first military prisoners were being housed on the island. While the defensive necessity of Alcatraz diminished over time (the island never fired its guns in battle), its role as a prison would continue for more than 100 years. In 1909, the Army tore down the Citadel, leaving its basement level to serve as the foundation for a new military prison. From 1909 through 1911, the military prisoners on Alcatraz built the new prison, which was designated the Pacific Branch, U.S. Disciplinary Barracks for the U.S. Army. It was this prison building that later became famous as "The Rock."

The Rock

The U.S. Army used the island for more than 80 years--from 1850 until 1933, when the island was transferred to the U.S. Department of Justice for use by the Federal Bureau of Prisons. The Federal Government had decided to open a maximum-security, minimum-privilege penitentiary to deal with the most incorrigible inmates in Federal prisons, and to show the law-abiding public that the Federal Government was serious about stopping the rampant crime of the 1920s and 1930s.

USP Alcatraz was not the "America's Devil's Island" that many books and movies portray. The average population was only about 260-275 (the prison never once reached its capacity of 336 - at any given time, Alcatraz held less than 1 percent of the total Federal prison population). Many prisoners actually considered the living conditions (for instance, always one man to a cell) at Alcatraz to be better than other Federal prisons, and several inmates actually requested a transfer to Alcatraz.

Birdman

The island's most famous prisoner was probably Robert Stroud, the so-called "Birdman of Alcatraz." In reality, Stroud never had any birds at Alcatraz, nor was he the grandfatherly person portrayed by Burt Lancaster in the well-known movie. In 1909, Stroud was convicted of manslaughter; while serving his prison sentence at the U.S. Penitentiary (USP), McNeil Island, Washington, he viciously attacked another inmate. This resulted in his transfer to USP Leavenworth, Kansas. In 1916, he murdered a Leavenworth guard, was convicted of first-degree murder, and received a death sentence. His mother pleaded for his life, and in 1920, President Woodrow Wilson commuted the death sentence to life imprisonment.

It was Stroud's violent behavior that earned him time in segregation. During his 30 years at Leavenworth, he developed his interest in birds and eventually wrote two books about canaries and their diseases. Initially, prison officials allowed Stroud's bird studies because it was seen as a constructive use of his time. However, contraband items were often found hidden in the bird cages, and prison officials discovered that equipment Stroud had requested for his "scientific" studies had actually been used to construct a still for "home-brew." Stroud was transferred to Alcatraz in 1942, where he spent the next 17 years (6 years in segregation in "D Block" and 11 years in the prison hospital). In 1959, he was transferred to the Medical Center for Federal Prisoners in Springfield, Missouri, where he died on November 21, 1963.



Prison Life

While several well-known criminals, such as Al Capone, George "Machine-Gun" Kelly, Alvin Karpis (the first "Public Enemy #1"), and Arthur "Doc" Barker did time on Alcatraz, most of the 1,576 prisoners incarcerated there were not well-known gangsters, but prisoners who refused to conform to the rules and regulations at other Federal institutions, who were considered violent and dangerous, or who were considered escape risks. Alcatraz served as the prison system's prison - if a man did not behave at another institution, he could be sent to Alcatraz, where the highly structured, monotonous daily routine was designed to

teach an inmate to follow rules and regulations.

At Alcatraz, a prisoner had four rights: food, clothing, shelter, and medical care. Everything else was a privilege that had to be earned. Some privileges a prisoner could earn included working, corresponding with and having visits from family members, access to the prison library, and recreational activities such as painting and music. Once prison officials felt a man no longer posed a threat and could follow the rules (usually after an average of five years on Alcatraz), he could then be transferred back to another Federal prison to finish his sentence and be released.

Escape Attempts

There were, however, prisoners who decided not to wait for a transfer to another prison. Over the 29 years (1934-1963) that the Federal prison operated Alcatraz, 36 men (including two who tried to escape twice) were involved in 14 separate escape attempts. Of these, 23 were caught, 6 were shot and killed during their escape, and 2 drowned. Two of the men who were caught were later executed in the gas chamber at the California State Prison at San Quentin for their role in the death of a correctional officer during the famous May 2-4, 1946, "Battle of Alcatraz" escape attempt.

Whether or not anyone succeeded in escaping from Alcatraz depends on the definition of "successful escape." Is it getting out of the cellhouse, reaching the water, making it to land, or reaching land and not getting caught? Officially, no one ever succeeded in escaping from Alcatraz, although to this day there are five prisoners listed as "missing and presumed drowned."

Following are summaries of the 14 escape attempts:

1. **April 27, 1936** - While working his job burning trash at the incinerator, Joe Bowers began climbing up and over the chain link fence at the island's edge. After refusing orders to climb back down, Bowers was shot by a correctional officer stationed in the West road guard tower, then fell about 50-100 feet to the shore below. He died from his injuries.
2. **December 16, 1937** - While working in the mat shop in the model industries building, Theodore Cole and Ralph Roe had, over a period of time, filed their way through the flat iron bars on a window. After climbing through the window, they made their way down to the water's edge and disappeared into San Francisco Bay. This attempt occurred during a bad storm and the Bay's currents were especially fast and strong - most people

believe Roe and Cole were swept out to sea. Officially, they are listed missing and presumed dead.

3. **May 23, 1938** - While at work in the woodworking shop in the model industries building, James Limerick, Jimmy Lucas, and Rufus Franklin attacked unarmed correctional officer Royal Cline with a hammer (Cline died from his injuries). The three then climbed to the roof in an attempt to disarm the correctional officer in the roof tower. The officer, Harold Stites, shot Limerick and Franklin. Limerick died from his injuries. Lucas and Franklin received life sentences for Cline's murder.
4. **January 13, 1939** - Arthur "Doc" Barker, Dale Stamphill, William Martin, Henry Young, and Rufus McCain escaped from the isolation unit in the cellhouse by sawing through the flat iron cell bars and bending tool-proof bars on a window. They then made their way down to the water's edge. Correctional officers found the men at the shoreline on the west side of the island. Martin, Young, and McCain surrendered, while Barker and Stamphill were shot when they refused to surrender. Barker died from his injuries.
5. **May 21, 1941** - Joe Cretzer, Sam Shockley, Arnold Kyle, and Lloyd Barkdoll took several correctional officers hostage while working in the industries area. The officers, including Paul Madigan (who later became Alcatraz's third warden), were able to convince the four that they could not escape and they surrendered.
6. **September 15, 1941** - While on garbage detail, John Bayless attempted to escape. He gave up shortly after entering the cold water of San Francisco Bay. Later, while appearing in Federal court in San Francisco, Bayless tried, again unsuccessfully, to escape from the courtroom.
7. **April 14, 1943** - James Boarman, Harold Brest, Floyd Hamilton, and Fred Hunter took two officers hostage while at work in the industries area. The four climbed out a window and made their way down to the water's edge. One of the hostages was able to alert other officers to the escape and shots were fired at Boarman, Brest, and Hamilton, who were swimming away from the island. Hunter and Brest were both apprehended. Boarman was hit by gunfire and sank below the water before officers were able to reach him; his body was never recovered. Hamilton was initially presumed drowned. However, after hiding out for two days in a small shoreline cave, Hamilton made his way back up to the industries area, where he was discovered by correctional officers.
8. **August 7, 1943** - Huron "Ted" Walters disappeared from the prison laundry building. He was caught at the shoreline, before he could even attempt to enter San Francisco Bay.

9. **July 31, 1945** - In one of the most ingenious attempts, John Giles was able to take advantage of his job working at the loading dock, where he unloaded army laundry sent to the island to be cleaned - over time, he stole an entire army uniform. Dressed in the uniform, Giles calmly walked aboard an army launch to what he thought was freedom. He was discovered missing almost immediately. Unfortunately for Giles, the launch was headed for Angel Island, not San Francisco as Giles hoped. As Giles set foot on Angel Island, he was met by correctional officers who returned him to Alcatraz.
10. **May 2-4, 1946** - During this incident, known as the "Battle of Alcatraz" and the "Alcatraz Blastout," six prisoners were able to overpower cellhouse officers and gain access to weapons and cellhouse keys, in effect taking control of the cellhouse. Their plan began to fall apart when the inmates found they did not have the key to unlock the recreation yard door. Shortly thereafter, prison officials discovered the escape attempt. Instead of giving up, Bernard Coy, Joe Cretzer, Marvin Hubbard, Sam Shockley, Miran Thompson, and Clarence Carnes decided to fight. Eventually Shockley, Thompson, and Carnes returned to their cells, but not before the officers taken hostage were shot at point-blank range by Cretzer (encouraged by Shockley and Thompson). One officer, William Miller, died from his injuries. A second officer, Harold Stites (who stopped the third escape attempt), was shot and killed attempting to regain control of the cellhouse. About 18 officers were injured during the escape attempt. The U.S. Marines were eventually called out to assist, and on May 4, the escape attempt ended with the discovery of the bodies of Coy, Cretzer, and Hubbard. Shockley, Thompson, and Carnes stood trial for the death of the officers; Shockley and Thompson received the death penalty and were executed in the gas chamber at San Quentin in December 1948. Carnes, age 19, received a second life sentence.
11. **July 23, 1956** - Floyd Wilson disappeared from his job at the dock. After hiding for several hours among large rocks along the shoreline, he was discovered and surrendered.
12. **September 29, 1958** - While working on the garbage detail, Aaron Burgett and Clyde Johnson overpowered a correctional officer and attempted to swim from the island. Johnson was caught in the water, but Burgett disappeared. An intensive search turned up nothing. Burgett's body was found floating in the Bay two weeks later.
13. **June 11, 1962** - Made famous by Clint Eastwood in the movie *Escape from Alcatraz*, Frank Morris and brothers John and Clarence Anglin vanished from their cells and were never seen again. A fourth man, Allen West, believed by some people to have

been the mastermind, was also involved; however, he was still in his cell the next morning when the escape was discovered. An investigation revealed an intricate escape plot that involved homemade drills to enlarge vent holes, false wall segments, and realistic dummy heads (complete with human hair) placed in the beds so the inmates would not be missed during nighttime counts. The three men exited through vent holes located in the rear wall of their cell - they had enlarged the vent holes and made false vent/wall segments to conceal their work. Behind the rear wall of the cells is a utility corridor that had locked steel doors at either end. The three men climbed the utility pipes to the top of the cellblock, and gained access to the roof through an air vent (the men had previously bent the iron bars that blocked the air vent). They then climbed down a drainpipe on the northern end of the cellhouse and made their way to the water. It is believed they left from the northeast side of the island near the powerhouse/quartermaster building. They used prison-issued raincoats to make crude life vests and a pontoon-type raft to assist in their swim. A cellhouse search turned up the drills, heads, wall segments, and other tools, while the water search found two life vests (one in the bay, the other outside the Golden Gate), oars, and letters and photographs belonging to the Anglins that had been carefully wrapped to be watertight. But no sign of the men was found. Several weeks later, a man's body dressed in blue clothing similar to the prison uniform was found a short distance up the coast from San Francisco, but the body was too badly deteriorated to be identified. Morris and the Anglins are officially listed as missing and presumed drowned.

14. **December 16, 1962** - John Paul Scott and Darl Parker bent the bars of a kitchen window in the cellhouse basement, climbed out, and made their way down to the water. Parker was discovered on a small outcropping of rock a short distance from the island. Scott attempted to swim towards San Francisco, but the currents began pulling him out to sea. He was found by several teenagers on the rocks near Fort Point (beneath the Golden Gate Bridge) and was taken to the military hospital at the Presidio Army base suffering from shock and hypothermia, before being returned to Alcatraz.

One of the many myths about Alcatraz is that it was impossible to survive a swim from the island to the mainland because of sharks. In fact, there are no "man-eating" sharks in San Francisco Bay, only small bottom-feeding sharks. The main obstacles were the cold temperature (averaging 50-55 degrees Fahrenheit), the strong currents, and the distance to shore (at least 1-1/4 miles). Prior to the Federal institution opening in 1934, a teenage girl swam to the island to prove it was

possible. Fitness guru Jack LaLanne once swam to the island pulling a rowboat, and several years ago, two 10-year-old children also made the swim.

If a person is well-trained and -conditioned, it is possible to survive the cold waters and fast currents. However, for prisoners - who had no control over their diet, no weightlifting or physical training (other than situps and pushups), and no knowledge of high and low tides - the odds for success were slim.

Alcatraz Closes

On March 21, 1963, USP Alcatraz closed after 29 years of operation. It did not close because of the disappearance of Morris and the Anglins (the decision to close the prison was made long before the three disappeared), but because the institution was too expensive to continue operating. An estimated \$3-5 million was needed just for restoration and maintenance work to keep the prison open. That figure did not include daily operating costs - Alcatraz was nearly three times more expensive to operate than any other Federal prison (in 1959 the daily per capita cost at Alcatraz was \$10.10 compared with \$3.00 at USP Atlanta). The major expense was caused by the physical isolation of the island - the exact reason islands have been used as prisons throughout history. This isolation meant that everything (food, supplies, water, fuel...) had to be brought to Alcatraz by boat. For example, the island had no source of fresh water, so nearly one million gallons of water had to be barged to the island each week. The Federal Government found that it was more cost-effective to build a new institution than to keep Alcatraz open.

After the Prison

After the prison closed, Alcatraz was basically abandoned. Many ideas were proposed for the island, including a monument to the United Nations, a West Coast version of the Statue of Liberty, and a shopping center/hotel complex. In 1969, the island again made news when a group of Native American Indians claimed Alcatraz as Indian land with the hope of creating a Native American cultural center and education complex on the island. The "Indians of All Tribes" used their act of civil disobedience to illustrate the troubles faced by Native Americans. Initially, public support for the Native Americans' cause was strong, and thousands of people (general public, schoolchildren, celebrities, hippies, Vietnam war protesters, Hells Angels...) came to the island over the next 18 months. Unfortunately, the small Native American leadership group could not control the situation and much damage occurred (graffiti, vandalism, and a fire that destroyed the lighthouse keeper's home, the Warden's home, and the Officers' Club). In June 1971, Federal Marshals

removed the remaining Native Americans from the island.

In 1972, Congress created the Golden Gate National Recreation Area, and Alcatraz Island was included as part of the new National Park Service unit. The island opened to the public in the fall of 1973 and has become one of the most popular Park Service sites - more than one million visitors from around the world visit the island each year.

Berger was born in 1941 in Ludwigsmoos, a small village near [Schrobenhausen](#) in what is now the district of [Neuburg-Schrobenhausen](#). He was the son of a farmer.^[1] He was the second of nine sons.^[2] One of his brothers was later shot by the police.^[2]

Berger was described as of a rebellious nature in school, hitting back at the local village [priest](#) when he tried to discipline him. Shortly after turning 18, Berger was sentenced to three years in jail for minor offences, in the belief that it would break him.^[2] Berger's punishment, in retrospect, was seen as far too harsh for his early crimes and resulted in him developing a hatred for the authorities.^[5] After his release he was re-arrested within four months, this time for car theft. Later attempts to start a non-criminal life failed, being accused of theft when he was innocent, lacking a drivers' licence to carry out his job and finding his wages confiscated to pay for his illegitimate children.^[6] In 1965, Berger escaped from the local police station in [Schrobenhausen](#) after having been arrested for a fight by jumping out of a window on the first floor, stealing a bicycle and cycling to Ludwigsmoos, where friends cut off his handcuffs.^[7]

In 1968, Berger was sentenced to 15 years in prison for bank robbery, which he was to spend in the high-security jail at Straubing. He quickly came to realise that Straubing was not as secure as its reputation, as he himself was able to carry a hacksaw in his suitcase on arrival. He used this hacksaw for his first escape, when on transfer in [Munich](#).^[1] He was confronted by the police in March 1969 and arrested after firing and injuring a police officer. Berger later claimed in his memoirs that the hate with which he was prosecuted by the police made him fire at the officers.^[2]

He returned to his home area, the [Donaumoos](#), after this escape despite this being the most searched place by the police. Berger's life, by his own admission, was always moving between the *Moos* and prison.^[2] Berger was cleverly able to evade the police and earned secret admiration and support for this. The home of his family in Ludwigsmoos became a tourist attraction.^[1] However, after his shots at a police officer in 1969, Berger did lose a lot of support in the region.^[5] His admirers saw in him somebody that took from the rich and never actually killed anyone.^[6]

Berger was often purposely playing cat-and-mouse with the police. He would call up the local police station and inform them that he had just stolen a car, was going to refuel it and then was ready to be chased.^[6]

After each escape, Berger was caught eventually and his court cases, held in [Augsburg](#), became pilgrimages for the local population from the *Donaumoos*. By his own admission in his memoirs, Berger was always able to receive keys for his cell in Straubing and a gun when he wanted to. He even once toyed with the idea of passing a gun to the [Red Army Faction](#) terrorists [Knut Folkerts](#) and [Bernd Röbner](#) after seeing them in the courtyard of the Straubing jail. He

eventually handed in his guns to the Bavarian justice department in the hope of being allowed to receive medical treatment outside of jail; he was refused.^[1]

He made his fourth escape in September 1983, when he escaped through a toilet window as part of a group of inmates who visited the Straubing Zoo. His escape lasted for only eleven days; he was arrested without resisting on a bridge over the [Danube](#) in [Ingolstadt](#), afraid the police would shoot him otherwise.^[1]

Berger, in his later life in prison, suffered from a rare form of [blood cancer](#). By 1989, his weight had dropped to 60 kg and he suffered from speech impediments because of long periods of isolation. He was released from prison in 1985 because of his illness, but Berger and accomplices Otto Hinterlechner were the main suspects in a bank robbery in March 1986. The two were eventually confronted by the police and arrested after a shootout with the police.^[1]

While Berger could not be convicted of this bank robbery, the fact that shots were fired at the police resulted in him being charged with attempt of murder. He was sentenced to another 12 years in prison despite not having fired a shot from his gun. Hinterlechner, who originally stated that Berger told him to fire, later withdrew this statement. A psychological assessment of Berger at the time found that he suffered from excessive [masculinity](#), a lack of scruple when it came to aggression and a complete absence of fear for retribution by others.^[1] On top of his 12 year sentence, it was decided that Berger should remain in [preventive detention](#) for the rest of his life.^[6] In 1989, when his father died, Berger was allowed to attend the funeral, but he was guarded by 20 police officers and a police helicopter.^[6]

Flight Lieutenant **John William Best MBE**, (known as Jack Best) (6 August 1912 – 22 April 2000) was a [British Royal Air Force](#) pilot. He was a notable [Prisoner of War](#), who was held captive at [Colditz Castle](#) in eastern Germany during World War II. Best was noted for his several attempts to escape from Colditz and for his part in building the [Colditz Cock](#), a glider from which he hoped to escape by air.

Jack Best was born near [Llangollen](#) in North Wales and grew up there. He moved to [Kenya](#) as a young man where he was a farmer. When the war began in 1939, Best joined the RAF and was trained as a pilot. During one of his flights across Africa in 1941, his plane ran out of fuel off the coast of Greece and he was captured by German soldiers. He was taken to [Stalag Luft III](#), the prison made famous in the movie [The Great Escape](#). Best and another prisoner dug a tunnel and escaped to Poland where they were captured. On 9 September 1942, they were taken to Colditz Castle where other escapees were taken because German commanders believed the thick rock walls of Colditz would prevent escape.

Best attempted escape several times but was recaptured. From 5 April 1943 to 28 March 1944 Best became a "ghost prisoner", hiding under floorboards and in closets in Colditz to trick German guards into believing that he had escaped.

Best, [Bill Goldfinch](#), [Tony Rolt](#) and several other prisoners constructed a [glider](#) out of wood and cloth in an attic at the top of a Colditz tower from which they planned an airborne escape from the castle. The glider had a 32-foot wingspan and was to be launched from the roof by a catapult that consisted of a bathtub filled with concrete at the end of a series of cables and pulleys. As the bathtub fell to the ground, the cables would fling the glider into the air where it would glide for about a mile over the town of Colditz and over the river Mulde. From there Best and another prisoner were planning to walk to a train station and escape by train to Switzerland.

Before they could launch the glider, Best was liberated from Colditz on 15 April, 1945.

Otto Braun was born in [Ismaning](#) (near to Munich). Even though his mother was not dead, he grew up in an orphanage.

He enrolled at a teachers' training college in [Pasing](#) in the Munich area. At June 1918 Braun was drafted into the ranks of the [Bavarian army](#), part of the Imperial German Army, but the [First World War](#) ended before he could face combat duty.

After the armistice he went back to complete his studies at the teachers' training college. However, he did not take a job as a primary school teacher. Rather, he joined the newly founded [Communist Party of Germany](#) (KPD), embarking on what would be a lifelong vocation and career, and traveled widely, mainly in North Germany.

[] Communist activity in the 1920s and early 1930s

It seems that it was in 1921 that Braun became a full-time paid KPD party worker.

He was involved in an affair concerning the theft of some sensitive documents from Colonel Freyberg, a [White Russian](#) emigre based in Berlin. For his part in this he was detained by the police in July 1921. He was put on trial but managed to hide his Communist connections and convince the court that he was a "right-winger." Due to the bias often exhibited by the judicial system of the [Weimar Republic](#), this masquerade helped him get off with a light sentence. In fact, he did not go to jail, but went into hiding.

By that time, he was already a central member of the KPD apparatus, not only regularly writing articles for the party papers but, after 1924, heading the party's "[counter-espionage](#)" efforts. He was also deeply involved in its militia and para-military activities.

The police caught up with him again in September 1926. He first served his "Freyberg sentence" of 1922, then kept in detention at the [Moabit](#) Prison. However, on April 11, 1928, a band of Communists including his then-lover [Olga Benário](#) succeeded in staging his jail break.

The daring escape got worldwide publicity. Braun and Benário then made their way to Moscow, where they became involved in the International Communist movement. Both of them were at the [Lenin School](#) operated by the [Comintern](#). Braun went to the [Frunze Military Academy](#) while Benário worked as an instructor of the Communist Youth International, first in the [Soviet Union](#), then in [France](#) and [Great Britain](#), where she participated in coordinating anti-fascist activities.

Braun and Benário parted ways in 1931. She went on to marry the famous [Brazilian](#) revolutionary leader [Luís Carlos Prestes](#) and went to live in his country. She was finally arrested by the [Getúlio Vargas](#) dictatorship and extradited to Germany, where she was eventually gassed to death at the [Bernburg Euthanasia Centre](#). She is remembered as a martyr by the Brazilian and German Left. For his part, Otto Braun embarked on the most significant – and in some ways, the most controversial – part of his revolutionary career, as the Comintern representative in [China](#).

[] In China

In 1932, following his graduation at the Frunze Academy, [Soviet Military Intelligence](#)'s Fourth Directorate dispatched Braun to [Harbin](#) in [Manchuria](#), China. From there he traveled to [Shanghai](#), where he joined the local Comintern bureau. There he was in military affairs under the orders of "General Kleber" ([nom de guerre](#) of [Manfred Stern](#)), who maintained a "military section" in the city, and in political issues under [Arthur Ewert](#), a fellow German Communist.

However, Shanghai was at that time a backwater in Chinese revolutionary affairs – the local Communist movement having been effectively crushed by [Chiang Kai-shek](#)'s [Kuomintang](#) (KMT) in the [Shanghai massacre of 1927](#). The [Chinese Communists](#) had subsequently retreated to the countryside and started to organize in the province of [Jiangxi](#).^[1] In the later part of 1933 Braun arrived in [Ruijin](#), at that time capital of the "[Chinese Soviet Republic](#)" set up by the surviving Chinese Communists, where he became a military adviser.

The precise circumstances of his getting this appointment and his activities in the following years are still debated with some aspects remaining unclear. As noted by Freddy Litten, who thoroughly researched this part of Otto Braun's career, "[Braun]'s memoirs are an important, though dubious, source for the events of these years".^[2]

At that time the Kuomintang – perceiving the Communists as a dangerous threat to its rule – launched a series of vigorous attacks on the CPC in urban areas. Its forces came near to Ruijin, which was in danger of being surrounded and became untenable. The CPC initiated the [Long March](#) to escape this danger. Braun, under his assumed Chinese name "Li De" was nearly the only foreigner to participate in the Long March, and might have even been the original proposer of the idea of embarking on such a march in an effort to reach the safer interior of China.

In the later part of 1934 Braun/Li De assumed a position of command in the early [First Front Army](#), together with [Zhou Enlai](#) and [Bo Gu](#) – with authority to make all military decisions. Braun advocated that the First Front Army directly attack the far larger and better equipped KMT Army. The First Front Army's suffered great casualties, so that CPC forces fell drastically, from 86,000 to about 25,000, within a year.

In 1935, the CPC met at the [Zunyi Conference](#) where [Mao Zedong](#) and [Peng Dehuai](#) expressed their opposition to Braun, Bo Gu, and their tactics. Mao argued that the direct attacks were costing lives, and suggested that their smaller, poorer equipped forces should run and surround the KMT, using the [guerrilla](#) tactics for which Mao was to become famed. (Mao was already distrusting towards European advisors from the Comintern, especially considering that in the 1920s earlier such advisors like the Dutch [Henk Sneevliet](#) had given Chinese Communists disastrous advice.) Other military wing leaders agreed with Mao, so Braun and Bo Gu were removed as the military commanders and Mao became the leader of the Long March.^[1] After this conference, the [Comintern](#) was pushed aside, and "Native Communists" took control of the CPC.

Still, Braun stayed in China until 1939 and participated in the Long March along with the CPC. No longer holding a military command, he was mainly involved in advisory work and some teaching of tactics.

Though never returning to China after leaving in 1939, for the rest of his life he continued to show interest in Chinese affairs.

[] Soviet period in the 1940s

In 1939 Braun arrived in the [Soviet Union](#). At the time, that was a very dangerous place for foreign Communists, many of whom – including German Communists – were imprisoned, tortured or killed by [Joseph Stalin](#)'s secret police ([NKVD](#)), despite being completely loyal to the revolutionary cause and having often undergone persecution for its sake in their own countries. Braun managed to avoid such a fate, though he did face some political difficulties immediately upon his arrival.

The Moscow [Foreign Languages Press](#) gave him employment as an editor and translator. After the German invasion of the Soviet Union in 1941, use was made of his German antecedents by making him a "polit-instrukteur" striving to turn the loyalty of German officer captured by the Soviets. In that role he used an old alias from the 1920s, "Kommissar Wagner". He later performed a similar tactic towards captive Japanese officers as well.

Between 1946 and 1948 he was based at [Krasnogorsk, Moscow Oblast](#) where he lectured in the [Antifascist Central School](#). Afterwards he had another period of working in the Moscow Foreign Languages Press.

Didrik Cappelen (8 October 1900 – 27 August 1970) was a Norwegian jurist and politician. He was born in [Kviteseid](#), a son of [Didrik Cappelen](#), and a brother of [Hans Cappelen](#). During the [occupation of Norway by Nazi Germany](#) Cappelen was arrested from 1940 to 1942, but escaped in January 1942. He was appointed at the [Norwegian Legation in Stockholm](#) from 1942, and then at the Norwegian Ministry of Justice in exile in London. He served as stipendiary magistrate in [Skien](#) from 1952. He was elected as suppleant to the [Parliament of Norway](#) several times, and replaced [Sveinung O. Flaaten](#) after his death in 1962.^[1]

Gris Davies-Scourfield was born in [Patching, Sussex](#) on 8 August 1918,^{[1][2]} the fourth son of Henry G. Davies-Scourfield by Helen Newton.^{[3][4]}

He was educated at [Winchester](#) and [Sandhurst](#) where he was awarded the King's Medal and the [Anson Memorial Sword](#).

[] Military career

He was [commissioned](#) as [2nd Lieutenant](#) in the [60th Rifles](#) 25 August 1938.^{[3][5]}

[] Action and Capture

He served in England until the outbreak of [World War II](#) where he was sent to [France](#) as a platoon commander participating in the [defence of Calais](#). He was captured on 26 May 1940 having been wounded four times.^{[6][7]}

[] Prisoner of War

As a [Prisoner of War](#) he made several escape attempts.

Following capture he was moved between transit camps until reaching [Oflag VII-C, Laufen](#). His first escape attempt was participation in digging a tunnel which was discovered and for which he received six weeks solitary confinement.^[1]

In February 1941 he was promoted to [Lieutenant](#).^[8]

He was sent to Fort VIII at [Stalag XXI-D](#) at [Poznań](#). He escaped in May 1941 with two other British officers; [Major Ronald Littledale](#) and [Lieutenant Mike Sinclair](#), by hiding in a modified [handcart](#) carrying rubbish to a pit outside the camp. They made contact with the [Polish underground movement](#) in [Warsaw](#) but, after the other two officers had moved on, Davies-Scourfield was recaptured in March 1942.

Davies-Scourfield was sent to [Oflag IV-C](#) at [Colditz Castle](#) and was rejoined by Littledale and Sinclair following their recapture months later.^[9]

In September 1943 he escaped, once again concealed in a handcart. For a few days his absent place in Colditz was taken by a 'ghost'.^[10] He was re-captured whilst attempting to reach the [Netherlands](#) following detection of a flaw in his [forged](#) papers. He was returned to Colditz where he remained until liberation by the Americans in April 1945.

On 13 July 1944 Devyataev was downed near [Lwów](#) over German-held territory and became a [prisoner of war](#), held in the [Łódź](#) concentration camp. He made an attempt to escape on 13 August but was caught and transferred to the [Sachsenhausen concentration camp](#). Devyataev soon realised that his situation was perilous-as a Soviet pilot, he could expect extreme brutality; therefore, he managed to exchange identities with a dead Soviet infantryman.

With his new identity, Devyataev was later transferred to a camp in Usedom to be a part of a forced labor crew working for the German [missile](#) program on the island of [Peenemünde](#). Under hellish conditions, the prisoners were forced to repair runways and clear unexploded bombs by hand. Security was rigidly enforced with vicious guards and dogs, and there was little chance of escape. Even so, by February 1945, Devyataev concluded that, however remote, the chance of escape was preferable to certain death as a prisoner.

[] Escape

Devyataev managed to convince three other prisoners (Sokolov, Krivonogov and Nemchenko) that he could fly them to freedom. They decided to run away in the dinnertime, when most of the guards were in the dining room. Sokolov and Nemchenko were able to create a work gang from Soviet citizens only.

At noon of 8 February 1945, as the ten Soviet POWs, including Devyataev, were at work on the runway, one of the work gang, Ivan Krivonogov picked up a crowbar and killed their guard. Another prisoner, Peter Kutergun, quickly stripped off the guard's uniform and slipped it on. The work gang, led by the "guard", managed to unobtrusively take over the camp commandant's [He 111 H22 bomber](#) and fly from the island. Devyataev piloted the aircraft. The Germans tried to intercept the bomber but without success. The aircraft was damaged by the Soviet [air defences](#) but managed to land in Soviet-held territory. The escapees provided important information about the German missile program, especially about the [V-1](#) and [V-2](#).

The [NKVD](#) did not believe Devyataev's story, arguing that it was impossible for the prisoners to take over an airplane without cooperation from the Germans. Thus, Devyataev was suspected of being a German spy and sent to a [penal military unit](#) along with the other nine men. Of the escapees, five died in action over the following months. Devyataev himself spent the remainder of the war in prison.

[] Postwar

Devyataev was discharged from the army in November 1945. However, his classification remained that of a "criminal" and so he was unable to find a job for a long while. Eventually, though, Devyataev found work as a manual laborer in [Kazan](#). Soviet authorities cleared Devyataev only in 1957, after the head of the Soviet space program [Sergey Korolyov](#) personally presented his case, arguing that the information provided by Devyataev and the other escapees had been critical for the Soviet space program. On 15 August of that year, Devyataev became a [Hero of the Soviet Union](#), and a subject of multiple books and newspaper articles. He continued to live in Kazan, working as a captain of first [hydrofoil](#) passenger ships on the [Volga](#).

Damiaen J. van Doorninck (29 August 1902 [Vught](#) - 24 September 1987, [Mynachlog-ddu^{\[1\]}](#)) was a [Dutch](#) officer (lieutenant in the Royal Netherlands Navy Reserve) and a [POW](#) in [Colditz](#).

[] POW



Colditz Castle (1945)

In May 1940 he was aide de camp to the Dutch supreme commander, general [Henri Winkelman](#). He refused to give his word of honour not to harm German interest and became a POW. He was conversant in [cosmography](#) and advanced [mathematics](#), and he lectured interested Dutch and [British](#) prisoners at [Colditz Castle](#) on both, in particular he taught [geodesy](#) to [Patrick Reid](#).

While in Colditz, he invented a device which, when attached to a [micrometer](#), could obtain measurements accurate to within a tenth of a millimetre of any [lock](#). He was therefore able to manufacture a [key](#) to fit any such lock in Colditz. He lectured other prisoners on how to use this device correctly, a course that lasted six months.

On 9 September 1942 van Doorninck and British Lieutenant [H. N. Fowler](#) became one of the lucky few who escaped Colditz. Slipping with four others through a guard office and a storeroom dressed as German officers and Polish orderlies, they managed to make it out of the Castle. The others were unfortunately recaptured and only van Doorninck and Fowler reached [Switzerland](#).

Capture and escape



The captured French General Giraud, during his daily walk. Germany, ca. 1940-41.

When World War II began, Giraud was a member of the Superior War Council, and disagreed with [Charles de Gaulle](#) about the tactics of using armoured troops. He became the commander of the 7th Army when it was sent to the Netherlands on 10 May 1940 and was able to delay German troops at [Breda](#) on 13 May. Subsequently, the depleted 7th Army was merged with the 9th. While trying to block a German attack through the [Ardennes](#), he was captured by German troops at [Wassigny](#) on 19 May. A [court-martial](#) tried Giraud for ordering the execution of two German saboteurs wearing civilian clothes, but he was acquitted and taken to [Königstein Castle](#) near [Dresden](#), which was used as a high-security [POW](#) prison.^[2]

Giraud planned his escape carefully over two years. He learned German and memorised a map of the surrounding area. On 17 April 1942, he lowered himself down the cliff of the mountain fortress. He had shaved off his moustache, and, wearing a [Tyrolean hat](#), traveled to [Schandau](#) to meet his [SOE](#) contact. Through various ruses, he reached the Swiss border and eventually slipped into [Vichy France](#), where he made his identity known. He tried to convince [Marshal Pétain](#) that Germany would lose, and that France must resist the German occupation. His views were rejected, but the Vichy government refused to return Giraud to the Germans.^[3]

[] Cooperation with the Allies



Algiers, French Algeria. General Dwight D. Eisenhower, commander in chief of the Allied Armies in North Africa, and General Henri Honoré Giraud, commanding the French Forces, saluting the flags of both nations at Allied headquarters.

Giraud's escape was soon known all over France. [Heinrich Himmler](#) ordered the [Gestapo](#) to assassinate him, and [Pierre Laval](#) tried to persuade him to return to Germany. Yet he refused to

return. Giraud supported Pétain and the Vichy government, but refused to cooperate with the Germans.

John Robert Edward Hamilton-Baillie was born at [Carlisle](#) on 1 March 1919 and was educated at [Clifton College](#) and the [Royal Military Academy, Woolwich](#). Following this he was commissioned into the Royal Engineers and posted to the 26th Field Company.

[] World War II

Hamilton-Baillie's company was mobilised with the [1st Division](#) and sent to France at the start of the war. Shortly afterwards the company was transferred to the [51st \(Highland\) Infantry Division](#) and stationed in the Saar region to gain experience on the [Maginot Line](#). With the advance of the German forces, Hamilton-Baillie was wounded and captured at St Valery-en-Caux. After recovering from his wounds he was moved to a prison camp at Peronne from which he and another officer escaped but were recaptured after three days. Hamilton-Baillie was moved again to [Oflag VII-C](#) at Laufen from which he attempted to escape via a tunnel, but the exit was discovered before the escape could be made.

As a result of his efforts, Hamilton-Baillie was moved to [Oflag VII-D](#) at [Tittmoning](#), a medieval castle on an isolated plateau in Bavaria, Germany. Making his next escape alone in spring 1941 he let himself through the wire and walked on foot a distance of almost 200 miles in ten days towards the Swiss border. Unfortunately his map was inaccurate and he was recaptured a matter of yards from freedom.

Shortly after his return to Tittmoning, Hamilton-Baillie was moved to [Oflag VI-B](#) at Warburg. In conjunction with the men there a mass escape was planned involving hinged ladders to cross the wire and a tunnel, the escape being covered by fusing of the camp lights and a diversion. Forty one prisoners escaped, three of which managed to get back to England, although one escapee died when the tunnel collapsed.

Hamilton-Baillie was next held in [Oflag VII-B](#) at Eichstatt in Bavaria. Here he joined a group of tunnelers in a well-organised escape group, helping to build a long well-supported tunnel with forced air ventilation and electric lighting. In June 1943 Hamilton-Baillie and 64 others staged a mass breakout but all were recaptured within two weeks.

Osvald Harjo (1910 – 1993) was a Norwegian resistance member during [World War II](#), and a prisoner in [Soviet Gulag](#) camps for more than a decade.

After being arrested and tortured by the [Gestapo](#) in 1942, he managed to escape from custody and fled into the Soviet Union. Here, he was accused for being a German spy, and convicted to 15 years forced labour. He was released in 1955, after pressure from the [Norwegian Prime Minister](#) during a visit in Moscow.

Harjo published the memoir book *Moskva kjenner ingen tårer* (English: Moscow knows no tears) in 1956.^{[1][2]}

Machiel (Jim) van den Heuvel, known as "Vandy" by the British POW's, was a captain in the [Royal Dutch East Indies Army](#)([KNIL](#)) who happened to be in Holland at the outbreak of World War II in May 1940. After the Dutch capitulation he refused to give his word of honour not to harm German interest and was sent to a German POW camp. Here van den Heuvel was quickly

appointed as escape officer. Together with lieutenant [Gerrit Dames](#) the two KNIL officers were a main factor for most Dutch escape successes during the war. He discovered the escape route in the park where two men could be hidden in a manhole in the park, Lieutenants [Hans Larive](#), [Francis Steinmetz](#), Lt. [Oscar Drijber](#) and Major [C. Giebel](#) escaped using this route. Vandy worked together with the other escape officers.

In June 1943 all Dutch officers at Colditz were transferred to [Stalag 371](#) in Stanislaw to join other Dutch officer POW's. Vandy also claimed many more escapes from this camp. Finally Vandy was transferred to [Oflag VII-D](#) at Tittmoning where the Germans thought he could do no more harm because most prisoners were older generals. From Tittmoning Vandy helped [Giles Romilly](#) escape. Romilly was a prominent prisoner in Colditz because he was [Winston Churchill's](#) nephew.

1941 escape attempts

Date	Name	Nationality	Method	Result
March 18	Lt. B Cazaumayou Lt. J Paillie	French	Tunnel	Detected
March ???	Flt. Lt. W. Gassowski Flt. Lt. W. Gorecki	Polish	Cut bar in canteen	Detected
March ???	Lt. A. Boucheron Lt. J. Charvet	French	Canteen window	Detected
April 5	Lt. J. Just Lt. R. Bednarski	Polish	Escaped from train en route to Königswartha Hospital	Recaptured Kraków, Poland
April 11	Lt. A. Le Ray	French	He hid in a park during a game of soccer .	Successful Escape
April 25	Lt. K. Dokurno Lt. P. Zielinski Lt. S. Bartoszewicz	Polish	Ceiling above canteen	Detected

May 8	Lt. P. Allan	British	Escaped inside mattress	Recaptured Vienna, Austria
May 8	Lt. J. Hyde-Thomson	British	Escaped inside mattress	Detected
May 9	Lt. M Chmiel Lt. M. Surmanowicz	Polish	Hid in German quarters	Detected
May 10	Capt. P. Reid Flt. Lt. H. Wardle	British	Tunnel	Detected
May 12	Lt. M. Chmiel Lt. M. Surmanowicz	Polish	Bedsheet rope	Detected
May 13	Lt. J. Just	Polish	Escaped from solitary confinement	Recaptured Rhine river
May 17	Lt. C. Moura Lt. R. Boutellier	French	Over roof of kitchen house	Detected
May 20	Lt. J. Just	Polish	Escaped from Villingen Hospital	Recaptured Württemberg
May 29	Lt. Col. G. German Capt. P. Reid Capt K. Lockwood Capt H. Elliott Capt. R. Barry Capt. R. Howe Capt. J. Lados Capt. C. Lewthwaite Flt. Lt. N. Forbes Flt. Lt. H. Wardle	British / Polish	Canteen tunnel	Detected

	Lt. P. Storie Pugh Lt. G. Wardle Lt. Z. Mikusinski			
May 31	Lt. R. Collin	French	Hid in rafters of park pavilion	Successful Escape
May ???	???	Polish / French	???	Detected
June 9	Lt. P. Mairesse Lebrun	French	Hid in rafters of park pavilion, dressed as civilian	Recaptured Grossbothen
June 18	Lt. P. Odry	French	Hid in rafters of park pavilion	Recaptured Gross Sermuth
June 25	Lt. E. Boulé	French	Attempted to walk out disguised as a woman.	Detected
July 1	Lt. P. Mairesse Lebrun	French	Vaulted over barbed wire fence	Successful Escape
July 2	???	Polish	Hole in chapel	Detected
July 16	Lt. J. Stepniak	Polish	Escaped from hospital	Recaptured Kraków, Poland
July 18	Lt. Tatistcheff	French	Through wire from Schützenhaus camp	Successful Escape
July 20	Capt. H. Elliott Capt. J. Lados	British / Polish	Escaped through Terrace House	Detected
July 23	Capt. J. Lados	Polish	From solitary down west side of castle	Recaptured Swiss border
July 28	Lt. A. Thibaud Lt. R. Perrin	French	Through an air shaft into Kommandantur, then as	Recaptured Leisnig

			workers through gate.	
July 31	Flt. Lt. F. Flinn Lt. P. Allan Lt. T. Elliott Lt. Cheetham Lt. Middleton Lt. Hyde-Thomson Lt. Barton Lt. Arcq Lt. Verkest Cadet Officer Karpf	British / Polish / Belgian	"Toilet Tunnel"	Detected
July ???	???	French	Tunnel in French quarters	Detected
July ???	Captain J. Hageman Cadet F. Geerligs	Dutch	Disguised as German workers	Detected
August 4	Flt. Lt. D. Thom Lt. J. Boustead	British	Walked out dressed as Hitler Youth	Detected
August 13	Capt. A Dufour Lt. J. Smit	Dutch	Hid inside well	Recaptured Singen
August 14	Capt. W. Lawton	British	Park walk with orderlies	Recaptured Zschirla
August 15	Lt. G. Dames	Dutch	Through hole in park wire	Detected
August 15	Sub Lt. Hans Larive Sub Lt. Francis Steinmetz	Dutch	Hid inside well	Successful Escape
August 20	Lt. Kroner	Polish	Escaped from Königswartha Hospital	Successful Escape
August 21	Lt. P. Durant	French	Park walk with orderlies	Recaptured

				Colditz
August 23	Capt. Machiel van den Heuvel Capt. N. Hogerland	Dutch	Cut bars in canteen window	Detected
August 28	Lt. A. Neave	British	Walk towards gate disguised as German officer	Detected
August 29	Lt. R. Mascret	French	Escaped from Schneckwitz Hospital	Recaptured Mainz
August ???	Capt. P. Reid	British	Escaped through window of solitary confinement	Detected
September 1	Lt. Col. G. German Sq. Leader B. Paddon Maj. A. Anderson	British	Tunnel through kitchen basement	Detected
September 19	Maj. Cornelis Giebel Lt. Oscar Drijber	Dutch	Hid inside well	Successful Escape
September 25	Lt. A. Boucheron	French	Escaped from Zeitz Hospital, recaptured then escaped en route to Düsseldorf prison	Successful Escape
September 28	Lt. Proutchenko Lt. Jurowski Lt. Wbcholzew	French	Through wire from Schützenhaus	Recaptured Schaffhausen
October 6	Lt. P. Storie-Pugh Unknown Dutch officer	British / Dutch	Over roofs	Detected

October 7	Lt. H. Desjobert	French	Attempted to climb park fence	Detected
October 7	???	British	Tunnel in British wash house	Detected
October 14	Lt. P. Odry Lt. Navelet	French	Escaped from window at Elsterhorst Hospital	Successful Escape
October 15	Lt. J. Charvet Lt. P. Levy	French	Escaped from window at Elsterhorst Hospital	Recaptured Aachen
October 22	Lt. G. Diedler	French	Escaped from window at Elsterhorst Hospital	Recaptured outside hospital
October ???	???	French	Tunnel from quarters	Detected
November 8	Lt. M. Leroy Lt. M. Lejeune Lt. Verlaye	Belgian / French	Cut wire of park fence	Recaptured outside castle wall
November 22	Lt. G. Wardle Lt. Wojchieckowski	British / Polish	Hidden inside well	Detected
November 23	Flt. Lt. D. Donaldson Flt. Lt. D. Thom	British	Over roof of Kellerhaus	Detected
November 23	Capt. J. Rogers Capt. C. Lewthwaite Lt. G. Wardle Lt. A. Neave	British	Disguised as Polish orderlies	Detected
November 25	???	British	Tunnel in British quarters	Detected
November 25	Lt. M. Girot	French	Through main gate dressed as orderly	Recaptured Frankfurt

November 28	G. Romilly	British	Dressed as orderly	Detected
December 12	Lt. Charles Douw van der Krap Sub Lt. F. Kruimink	Dutch	Park under pile of leaves	Detected
December 15	Capt. E. Steenhouwer Lt. J. van Lynden	Dutch	Dressed as German officers	Detected
December 17	Lt. J. Durand-Hornus Lt. J. Prot Lt. G. de Frondeville	French	Escaped into fog on trip to dentist. Prot KIA: 29 January 1944, Mount Belvedere	Successful Escape

☐ 1942 escape attempts

Date	Name	Nationality	Method	Result
January 5	Lt. A. Neave Lt. A. Luteyn	British / Dutch	Under theatre out of guardhouse as German officers	Successful Escape
January 6	Lt. H. Donkers Lt. J. Hyde-Thomson	Dutch / British	Under theatre out of guardhouse as German officers	Recaptured Ulm station
January 9	Lt. de Bykowitz	French	Jumped from train to Riesa	Detected
January 14	Flt. Lt. F. Flinn	British	British snow tunnel on canteen roof	Detected
January 16	Lt. R. Madin Lt. J. Paille Lt. B.	French	The "French Tunnel"	Detected

	Cazaumayou Six other officers			
January 20	Capt. Dr. Le Guet Padre Jean-Jean	French	Ran away during private Sacrament of Confession	Recaptured Frankfurt & Saarbrücken
January 20	Cadet Officer C. Linck	Dutch	Inside postal service sack	Detected
January 21	Capt. P. Reid Lt. A. Orr-Ewing Lt. W. O'Hara Lt. Mackinsie Lt. J. Boustead Lt. E. Harrison	British	British snow tunnel on canteen roof	Detected
January 27	Flt. Lt. N. Forbes	British	Digging under stage	Detected
February 27	Capt. G. Dames Capt. J. Hageman	Dutch	Tunnel under terrace	Detected
March 2	Flt. Lt. F. Flinn Cadet Officer C. Linck	British / Dutch	Escaped on way to Arrest House	Recaptured Colditz
March 18	???	???	Tunnel in sick bay	Detected

March 20	Lt. H. Desjobert Lt. A. Thibaud	French	Hid in cart of rubble	Recaptured Colditz
April 4	Flt. Lt. F. Flinn	British	Tunnel in British quarters	Detected
April 24	Lt. P. Manheimer	French	???	Recaptured Colditz
April 26	Lt. W. Wychodzew Lt. J. Niestrzeba	Polish	Escaped from military hospital in Gnaschwitz	Recaptured Singen & Stuttgart
April 26	Sqn. Leader B. Paddon Lt. J. Just	British / Polish	???	Recaptured Leipzig
April 26	Captain L. Rémy	Belgian	Escaped from train station, took boat to Algeciras	Successful Escape
April ???	Lt. J. van Lynden	Dutch	Broke into German quarters to steal uniform	Detected
April ???	???	Dutch	Hid in pile of leaves in park	Detected
May 10	Lt. D. Gill ???	British / Polish	Through the kitchen	Detected
May 28	Lt. M. Girot	French	Replaced French orderly on working party. Girot KIA: Gestapo, May 1944	Recaptured Frankfurt
May 28	Lt. I. Price	British	???	Detected
June 2	Lt. M. Sinclair	British	Escaped from Leipzig hospital	Recaptured Cologne
June 8	Lt. M. Sinclair	British	Escaped from holding cell	Recaptured Cologne

June 9	Capt. W. Lawton Capt. R. Howe Lt. W. O'Hara Lt. E. Harrison Lt. I. Dickinson Lt. V. Parker	British	In attic above British quarters	Detected
June 11	Sqn. Leader B. Paddon	British	Sent for court martial at Thorn, escaped from work party there. Smuggled out through Gdańsk	Successful Escape
June 45	Lt. R. Bouillez	French	Sent for court martial in Stuttgart, jumped train but found unconscious next to tracks, sent to hospital, escaped from hospital.	Successful Escape
July 6	???	Dutch	Dutch tunnel	Detected
July 7	Lt. J. Tucki	Polish	In Polish orderly working party	Detected
July 15	Flt. Lt. V. Parker Lt. M. Keillar	British	???, Keillar transferred to Lamsdorf	Detected
July 19	???	Polish / Belgian	Tunnel in Saalhaus	Detected
July 26	Capt. M. van den Heuvel Lt. Vinkinbosch Lt. Verleye Lt. F. Kruidink	Belgian / British / Dutch	Scullery tunnel	Detected

	Lt. P. Storie-Pugh			
July 26	???	British	Tunnel in senior officers' quarters	Detected
August 18	Flt. Lt. J. Dickinson	British	Jumped wall of exercise yard of Colditz town jail, stole bicycle	Recaptured Chemnitz
August 19	Capt. P. Reid Capt. R. Barry	British	Delousing shed tunnel	Detected
August 20	Lt. Delarne	French	Park walk disguised as painter	Detected
August 25	Flt. Lt. N. Forbes Lt. K. Lee	British	Escaped en route to Leipzig for court martial.	Recaptured Leipzig
August 28	Flt. Lt. J. Dickinson	British	Hid underneath bread delivery van.	Detected
August 29	Capt. R. Barry Capt. P. Reid	British	Solitary confinement: Barry cut through bars, Reid dug tunnel	Detected
September 1	Lt. W. Zelaźniewicz	Polish	Escaped on park walk	Recaptured Podelwitz
September 2	Lt. Cdr. W. Stephens	British	Escaped from Colditz train station (returning from Lamsdorf)	Recaptured Outside Colditz
September 7	Flt. Lt. D. Bruce	British	Hid inside Red Cross tea chest , climbed down outer wall via bedsheet rope.	Recaptured Gdańsk
September	Flt. Lt. J.	British	Attempted escape while on	Detected

8	Dickinson		exercise in the park	
September 9	Capt. W. Lawton Capt. E. Beets Lt. Donkers Lt. G. Wardle	British / Dutch	Broke into Kommandant's office, cut hole into storeroom, out of storeroom in German and Polish orderly uniforms.	Recaptured Commichau & Dobeln
September 9	Flt. Lt. H.N. Fowler Lt. D. van Doorninck	British / Dutch	Broke into Kommandant's office, cut hole into storeroom, out of storeroom in German and Polish orderly uniforms. Fowler died March 1944	Successful Escape
September 10	???	British	Subaltern's tunnel	Detected
October 14	Maj. R.B. Littledale Lt. Cdr. W. Stephens Capt. P. Reid Flt. Lt. H. Wardle	British	Escape through kitchen into German yard, across yard into Kommandantur cellar, out cellar into dry moat. Littledale KIA: August 1944	Successful Escape
October 23	???	Dutch	Attempt at hole under theatre	Detected
October ???	Lt. P. Storie-Pugh Lt. F. Kruijnk	British / Dutch	Over roof of Kellerhaus. Discovered by dog on ground.	Detected
November 26	Lt. M. Sinclair Lt. C. Klein	British / French	Through well in Kommandantur	Recaptured Tuttlingen & Plauen
November	Capt. R. Barry	British /	Through well in	Detected

27	Lt. Aulard	French	Kommandantur	
November ???	Lt. M. Bissell	British	Tunnel under altar steps in chapel	Detected
December 6	Lt. Z. Kupa Lt. T. Osiecki Lt. A. Slipko	Polish	Over orderlies' roof	Detected
December 14	Lt. M. Sinclair	British	From Weinsberg after recapture	Recaptured Weinsberg
December 15	Lt. van der Falk Bouman	Dutch	Disguised as German soldier	Recaptured Emmendingen
December 19	CPO W. Hammond. CPO D. Lister	British	Transferred to Lamsdorf since not officers, escaped from Breslau work party	Successful Escape
December 28	Lt. A. Perodeau	French	Impersonated Willi Pöhnert	Detected

□ 1943 escape attempts

Date	Name	Nationality	Method	Result
January ???	Lt. G. Davies Lt. Scourfield Others	British	Pulpit tunnel under chapel	Detected
March 7	Capt. B. Mazumdar	British (India)	Hunger strike in order to receive transfer, escapes twice from new camp, reaches Switzerland	Successful Escape
March 7	Flt. Lt. J.	British	Jumps over wall of exercise	Recaptured

	Dickinson		area of Colditz town jail.	Chemnitz
April 5	Capt. Dufour Flt. Lt. van Rood	British / Dutch	Dressed as German officers	Detected
April 8	Capt. Pemberton-How	British	Schützenhaus. In manhole after search.	Detected
April 8	Lt. E. Desbats Lt. J. Caillaud	French	Over roof of castle	Detected
April 28	Capt. Ion Ferguson RAMC	British	Transfer order granted, Works as doctor at Stalag IV-D certifying prisoners insane. Convinces Germans he is himself insane, repatriated in January 1945.	Successful Escape
April ???	???	British	Hole under dentist office chair.	Detected
May 1	Flt. Lt. V. Parker Flt. Lt. N. Forbes Lt. D. Wheeler	British	"Revier" tunnel	Detected
May 11	Flt. Lt. D. Thom	British	Vaults fence of park	Recaptured outside wall
May ???	Lt. M. Sinclair Lt. G. Davies-Scourfield	British	Cut hole in park fence wire	Detected
May ???	Flt. Lt. J. Best	British	Attempted to re-open "French	Detected

	Lt. M. Harvey Others		Tunnel"	
June 7	Lt. J.J.L. baron van Lynden	Dutch	During Dutch transfer to Stanislaw	Successful Escape
June 11	Lt. A. Perrin	French	Through "witches' walk"	Detected
July 8	Lt. M. Fahy	French	Escapes from hospital in Hohenstein-Ernstthal	Recaptured Kaufungen
July 12	Lt. A. Darthenay	French	Escapes from hospital in Hohenstein-Ernstthal . Joined French Resistance. KIA: Gestapo April 7, 1944	Successful Escape
July 13	Lt. C. Klein Giles Romilly	Free French / British	Hidden in baggage pile at Colditz rail station	Detected
July 13	Lt. T. Barrott Lt. D. Hamilton Lt. C. Sandbach	British	Exchanged identities with French officers in transit to Lübeck	Detected
July ???	Lt. J. Best Lt. M. Harvey Others	British	"French Tunnel" re-opening attempt	Detected
August 10	Lt. P. Allan Lt. A. Campbell Others	British	"Whitechapel Deep" tunnel	Detected
September 3	Capt. L. Pope Lt. M. Sinclair	British	???	Detected

	Lt. J. Hyde-Thomson			
September 11	Lt. W. Miller Lt. R. Boustead	British	Exchanged places with Lt. Stepninc and Lt. Jablonowski during Polish transfer	Detected
September 16	Lt. A. Orr-Ewing	British	As French orderly on exercise	Detected
September 30	Lt. G. Davies-Scourfield	British	Out of yard in trash pile	Recaptured Hildesheim
September ???	???	British	"Mayfair Maggies" tunnel	Detected
October 7	Lt. A. Orr-Ewing	British	Out of yard in trash pile	Detected
November 3	???	British	Orderlies who escaped from work party at Colditz train station	Recaptured Cottbus
November 25	Lt. J. Rawson	British	???	Detected

[] 1944 escape attempts

Date	Name	Nationality	Method	Result
January 19	Lt. M. Sinclair Lt. J. Best	British	Sixty second rope escape down west terrace	Recaptured Rheine
January 28	Lt. W. Millar	Canadian	Broke into German courtyard, hung from bottom of German truck. Believed killed by SS at Mauthausen in July 1944.	UNKNOWN

January 31	Capt. C. Lewthwaite	British	Hid under trash pile	Detected
February 3	Lt. A. Orr-Ewing	British	Jumps fence, swims across Mulde river	Recaptured Colditz
March 17	???	British	"Crown Deep" tunnel	Detected
March 26	Flt. Lt. V. Parker Lt. M. Harvey	British	From air-raid shelter	Detected
April 19	Flt. Lt. D. Bruce	British	Cut bars on north side of castle, reached wire fence	Detected
April 29	Lt. D. Moir Lt. M. Edwards Lt. D. Wheeler Lt. P. Fergusson	British	Intentionally sloppy escape attempt in hopes to be placed in town jail.	Detected
April ???	???	British	<i>Hexengang</i> corridor	Detected
April ???	Lt. J. Hamilton-Baillie	British	Into sewers through shower drain	Detected
May 2	Lt. J. Beaumont	British	Hidden under blanked sown with leaves	Recaptured 3 km from Colditz
May 3	Lt. G. Wardle	British	Escape through orderlies quarters	Detected
May 5	Capt. H. Elliott Flt. Lt. F. Flinn Lt. J. Barnett	British	Faked illnesses, repatriated	Successful Escape

	Lt. M. Wynn			
May 29	Capt. F. Weldon Lt. J. Hamilton-Baillie	British	Out of POW yard into Kommandantur attics, into storeroom on south side of German yard	Detected
June 1	Maj. A. Anderson Others	British	Dentist chair tunnel	Detected
June 13	Lt. L. Pumphrey Lt. M. Riviere	British	Tunnel through British kitchens	Detected
June 16	Maj. R. Lorraine Flt. Lt. D. Bruce "Bosun" J. Chrisp	British	Tunnel through sewers into German yard	Detected
July 14	Flt. Lt. D. Thom	British	Escaped from hospital at Schmorkau	Recaptured
September 4	Lt. M. Sinclair	British	Jumped fence in park, wearing civilian clothes	Detected
September 18	Capt. C. Lewthwaite	British	Park walk under pile of leaves	Detected
September 25	Lt. M. Sinclair	British	Jumps over fence wire in park	Shot dead
From 1/1 til 4/15/45	Flt. Lt. W. Goldfinch Flt. Lt. J. Best Lt. A. Rolt Lt. G.	British	The "Colditz Cock" Glider	Unused (prison liberated by Allied forces prior to completion)

	Wardle Others			of glider)
--	------------------	--	--	------------

[] 1945 escape attempts

Date	Name	Nationality	Method	Result
	Lt.Col. M.B. Reid	British	The oldest British prisoner. Feigned heart disease by smoking heavily and drinking concentrated black coffee prior to medical examination and was repatriated.	Successful Escape

The Great Escape

Stalag Luft III, Sagan

March 24/25th, 1944

Rob Davis

You are welcome to [email me](#).

Prisoners Of War

Allied aircrew who were shot down and survived during World War II were incarcerated after interrogation in Air Force Prisoner of War camps run by the Luftwaffe, called Stalag Luft, short for **Stammlager** Luft or Permanent Camps for Airmen. **Stalag Luft III** was situated in **Sagan**, 100 miles south-east of Berlin, now called Zagan, in Silesia. At the time of the escape it was part of Germany, but is now in Poland. It was opened in Spring 1942 with the first prisoners arriving in April of that year, and was just one of a network of Air Force only PoW camps. The Germans treated captured Fleet Air Arm aircrew as Air Force and put them all together. There is no obvious reason for the occasional presence of a non-airman in the camps, although one possibility is that the captors would be able to spot "important" non-Air Force uniformed prisoners more readily.

Two main compounds were established, 'East' and 'North'. Despite starting out as an officers-only camp, it was not referred to as Oflag (**Offizier Lager**) like some other officer-only camps.

The Luftwaffe seemed to have their own nomenclature, and later camp expansions added the 'Centre' compound for NCOs. As the number of American airmen prisoners gradually increased, the 'South' compound was added to house them.

A large contingent of PoWs sent to Sagan at the end of April 1943 had come from the camp at Schubin. It was at Sagan, that the famous "Wooden Horse" escape occurred on the night of October 29/30, 1943. Three PoWs (Oliver Philpot, Eric Williams and R Michael Codner) having concealed themselves in a vaulting horse, had spent months digging a tunnel through which they escaped and eventually reached England via neutral Sweden.

David Harris adds [January 2013] : *"Michael Codner who escaped in the "Wooden Horse" escape left one son, Peter a barrister with whom I worked until he was disabled by a stroke. When last I spoke to him a couple of years ago he was living in Devizes, Wilts. Peter had a reputation as one of th most aggressive barristers in England and was well known to the Court of Appeal. He is a bit of a West Country legend among lawyers and had enormous energy and imagination becoming well known for taking difficult cases that no one else would even touch and winning as if by magic. He said people who knew his father said he was very much like him and he considered himself, and I think justifiably so, that he had a bit of an "escapologist" in him, getting out of difficult legal situations. He never met his father who was shot in the Malaysian uprising when Peter was 3 years old."*

I was able to visit Zagan in May 2007 and there are modern photographs of the site [here](#).

The 1963 film, starring Richard Attenborough, Steve McQueen etc is detailed [here](#).

This is the story of one Officer - **["The Man Who Traded Places"](#)**



Conditions and Kommandants

It **must** be made clear that the German Luftwaffe, who were responsible for Air Force prisoners of war, maintained a degree of professional respect for fellow flyers, and the general attitude of the camp security officers and guards should **not** be confused with the SS or Gestapo. The Luftwaffe treated the PoWs well, despite an erratic and inconsistent supply of food.

Prisoners were handled quite fairly within the Geneva Convention, and the Kommandant, **Oberst (Colonel) Friedrich-Wilhelm von Lindeiner-Wildau** (left), was a professional and honourable soldier who won the respect of the senior prisoners.

He was 61 when the camp opened in May 1942, a capable, educated man who spoke good English. Having joined the army in 1908, and after being wounded three times in WW1, winning two Iron Cross awards, he left in 1919 and worked in several civilian posts, meanwhile marrying a Dutch baroness, whilst trying to steer clear of Nazi politics. Eventually he joined the Luftwaffe (the least Nazified of the three German forces) in 1937 as one of Goering's personal staff. Refused retirement, he found himself posted

as Sagan Kommandant, with **Major Gustav Simoleit** as deputy. The first Kommandant, **Colonel Stephani**, had been quickly replaced when found to be unsuited to the task.

Security was strict, but life was not intolerable, except for those for whom *escape* was a restless itch... this was reckoned to be just 25 percent of the camp population, and only 5% of those were considered to be dedicated escapers. The others would, however, work in support of any escape attempts.

After several major expansions, Luft III eventually grew to hold 10,000 PoWs; it had a size of 59 acres, with 5 miles of perimeter fencing. The administrative area, a generally off-limits zone to PoWs, was known as the 'Vorlager' and here was the hospital, Red Cross storage hut and provision for keeping coal, plus the bath-house.

Food, Letters and Parcels

Had it not been for food parcels sent in via the **International Red Cross** (who also made inspection visits), food would have been a serious problem in all PoW camps. Issued with little more than starvation rations, food parcels sent by relatives, despite being regularly stolen by the many hands through which they passed, were essential. It should be borne in mind that the guards themselves were not much better off than the prisoners, in terms of food. On average, one parcel per week per man was provided.



The rule in most of the camps was that both "individual" (for a named person, sent and paid for by relatives and containing a mixture of goods) and "bulk" parcels (for general distribution, sent and paid for by the International Red Cross, and containing a supply of a single item) were pooled. Thus, replacement clothing, shaving and washing kit, coffee, tea, tinned meat, jam, sugar and essentials were distributed equally.

In PoW camps, captured officers were paid an equivalent of their pay in "lagergeld" or internal camp currency, and could buy items such as musical instruments and what few everyday goods which were available. Captured NCOs did not receive any such allowance, but the officers regularly pooled lagergeld from their own pay, and transferred these to the NCOs' compound. It was strictly forbidden to be in possession of real German currency, a vital escape aid. At Luft III, all lagergeld was pooled for communal purchases of what items were made available by the German administration.

An internal official method of collective bargaining and bartering called "Foodacco" was set up, allowing PoWs to market any surplus food or desirable item, for "points" which could be "spent" on other items, amongst themselves. Great trouble was taken in food preparation, with special

occasions such as a birthday or Christmas requiring months of hoarding. PoWs usually banded together in groups of 8 men for cooking and messing purposes, and such groups usually became very close-knit.

The recommended intake for a normal healthy active man is 3,000 calories; German rations allowed between 1,500 and 1,900. It was a case of the issued official rations providing prolonged and unpleasant starvation and only the Red Cross food parcels saved the day.

Letters were censored both at the sending and receiving ends. PoWs were not restricted in how many they could receive, but were only allowed to send three letters and four postcards every month. Letters averaged three weeks to arrive from Canada, four from the UK and five from the USA, and were censored by Hauptmann (Captain) von Massow and his team.

Clothing was often a problem, items of civilian nature being strictly forbidden and military uniform often being cobbled together from whatever was available, regardless of branch. Thus it was not unusual to see officers of any rank in RAF battledress top, Army trousers, and whatever footwear was to hand. Most men made every attempt to maintain a military bearing, ensuring that their rank and flying badges were correct no matter what they were attached to! Any officer who had hidden a genuine civilian item of clothing took great care to keep it safe.

It was absolutely vital to carry aircrew badges and brevets in a secret place whilst escaping, in order to prove that an escapee was not a spy. The Geneva Convention dictated that a serviceman should always wear uniform, or be shot as a spy. Being able to produce evidence of being an escaped PoW was essential. The Germans issued each captive with an official PoW identity disc which could also be used to establish a man's genuine identity.

Newcomers to the camp had to be personally vouched for by two existing PoWs who knew them by sight. As the numbers of airmen increased, this became essential as it was not unknown for the Germans to introduce infiltrators in an attempt to spy on camp operations and escape attempts. Such infiltrators were known as "**stool pigeons**". Any newcomer who could not summon two men who knew him had to suffer the indignity of a heavy interrogation by senior officer PoWs. Also, he was assigned a rota of men who had to escort him at all times, until he was deemed to be genuine. Any stool pigeons were quickly discovered and there is no evidence to suggest that infiltrators operated successfully at Luft III.

One newcomer was given the standard advice to "completely ignore anything you see which is out of the ordinary" and having been vouched for, left the hut where the interview had been held, jumped down the steps outside and promptly collapsed up to his waist in a tunnel.

Several PoWs established means of exchanging coded messages with their relatives, via the Red Cross mail system. Such letters, which were heavily censored by the Germans, were invariably weeks in transit, but provided valuable information to the War Office. This coding was usually a pre-arranged method agreed between an airman and his wife, girlfriend or relative, such as taking every 9th word, or similar method

The Escape Committee

At Luft III arrived some of the finest escape artists in the Allied Air Forces. **Squadron Leader (S/L) Roger J Bushell**, CO of No 92 Squadron, shot down 23rd May 1940, Spitfire I N3194, during the Battle of France. On a previous escape he had been hiding in Prague and was caught about the time of the Heydrich assassination in mid 1942. The family hiding him were all executed by the Gestapo and **Jack Zafouk** (311 Sqdn, shot down 16/17 July 1941, Wellington IC R1718 KX:N) his Czech co-escaper, was eventually purged to **Colditz Castle**. Bushell developed a cold unyielding hatred for the enemy but failed, however, to distinguish between the Gestapo and the far better type represented by the Camp Kommandant.

Bushell, who had become engaged shortly before the war started, may well have had his determination to disrupt the enemy steered by receiving a "Dear John" letter from his fiancée, just as plans for the mass tunnel escapes were starting in Spring 1943, some three years after he was shot down and taken prisoner. The sender of the letter informed Bushell that she was marrying another man.



At the time of the Wooden Horse escape in October 1943 the SBO (Senior British Officer) was **Group Captain (G/C) A H Willetts** (7 Sqdn, shot down 23/24 August 1943, Stirling JA678) . Later a more senior officer, **G/C Harry "Wings" Day** (left, *IWM*) (57 Sqdn, shot down 13-Oct-39, Blenheim I, L1138), took charge. Massey was later succeeded by another more senior officer, **G/C Herbert M Massey** (7 Sqdn, shot down 1/2-Jun-1942, Stirling I, N3750 MG:D) a rugged veteran WW1 pilot, and in October 1942 Wings Day was sent to Offizierlager (Oflag, or Officer Camp) XXIB.

The SBO quickly realised that all escape attempts had to be properly vetted and organised, or a free-for-all situation would emerge. Bushell was appointed to mastermind the Luft III Escape Organisation, together with an executive committee of **Flying Officer (F/O) Wally Floody (J5481; 401 Sqdn RCAF, shot down 28-Oct-41, Spitfire V W3964)**, **Peter 'Hornblower' Fanshawe RN** (803 Sqdn Fleet Air Arm, shot down in a Blackburn Skua, possibly L2991:7A) and **Flight Lieutenant (F/L) George Harsh** (102 Sqdn, shot down 5/6-Oct-1942, Halifax II, W7824).

[Ranks Page](#)

Bushell collected the most skilled forgers, tailors, tunnel engineers and surveillance experts and announced his intention to put 250 men outside the wire. This would cause a tremendous problem and force the enemy to divert men and resources to round up the escapers. His idea was not so much to return escapers to the UK but mainly to cause a giant internal problem for the German administration. He went about this task with a typical determinedness, despite having been officially warned that his next escape and recapture would result in him being shot.



According to the Geneva Convention, an international agreement which governed the treatment of captured enemy personnel, the maximum punishment for escaping was 28 days' solitary confinement. Contact with others in the camp was restricted to the padre, although short daily exercise breaks were usually allowed, under close supervision.

The photo opposite shows all that remains of the 'Cooler' or solitary confinement block, which is adjacent to the tunnel line for 'Harry'. The underground cells are filled in and only the shape of the above-ground walls can be found. Curiously, the Luftwaffe also referred to this solitary confinement area as 'the Cooler'.

Listen for the ghostly sound of baseballs bouncing off the wall ... can you imagine being subjected to 28 days of that coming from the bloke in the next cell? It'd drive you crazy!

Key Personnel

Tunnel engineering was in the expert hands of Floody, a Canadian Spitfire pilot and prewar mining engineer. The original 'Tunnel King', he masterminded the construction of all three tunnels, aided by **F/L R. G. "Crump" Ker-Ramsey** (Fighter Interception Unit, shot down on a night patrol 13/14-Sep-1940, Blenheim IVF Z5721), **Henry "Johnny" Marshall**, Fanshawe, and a host of others. The dapper Rhodesian **Johnny Travis** and his team of manufacturers made escape kit such as compasses from fragments of broken Bakelite gramophone records, melted and shaped and incorporating a tiny needle made from slivers of magnetised razor blades. Stamped on the underside was 'Made in Stalag Luft III - Patent Pending'.

F/L Des Plunkett (218 Sqdn, shot down 20/21-6-1942, Stirling I, W7530 HA:Q) described as "a nuggety little man with a fierce moustache" and his team assumed responsibility for map making. Real ID papers and passes were obtained by bribery or theft from the guards and copied by **F/L 'Tim' Walenn** and his forgers. These two departments were known as "Dean and Dawson" after a well-known firm of travel agents. Service uniforms were carefully recut by **Tommy Guest** and his men, who also produced workmens' clothes and other 'civilian' attire. These were often hidden in spaces created by ace carpenter **Pilot Officer (P/O) "Digger" Macintosh** (12 Sqdn, shot down 12-May-1940, Battle I, L5439 PH:N).

A surprising number of guards proved co-operative in supplying railway timetables, maps, and the bewildering number of official papers required for escapers. One tiny mistake in forgery, or one missing document would immediately betray the holder, a problem complicated by the fact that the official stamps and appearance of the various papers were changed regularly by the Germans. It was necessary to obtain details of the lie of the land directly outside the camp, and especially ascertain the location of the nearest railway station (arriving PoWs were brought by military road transport).

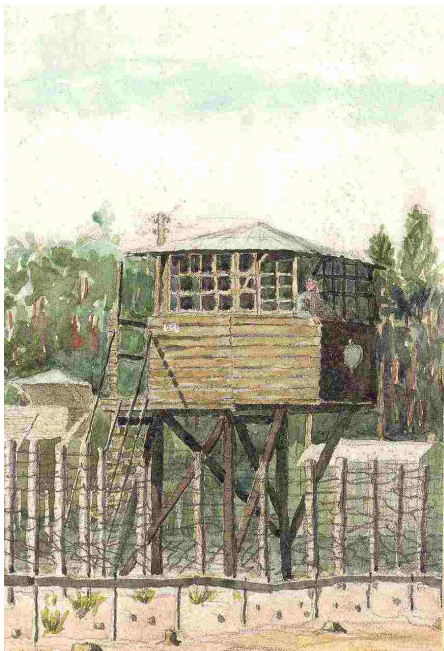
Bribery by cigarettes, coffee or chocolate usually worked. In one case, a less than intelligent guard provided key information for which he was paid in chocolate. The prisoner asked him to sign a receipt, explaining that it was necessary to account for the chocolate with the others in his mess group. The guard obliged, and was soon blackmailed into bringing in a camera and film, Bushell being quite ruthless in exploiting such opportunities.

Forged papers included **Dienstausweise** (a brown card printed on buckram, giving permission to be on Wehrmacht property), **Urlaubscheine** (a yellow form used as a leave-chit for foreign workers), **Ruckkehrscheine** (a pink form for foreign workers returning home), **Kennkarte** (a light grey general identity card), **Sichtvermark** (visa), **Ausweise** and **Vorlaufweise** (pass and temporary pass). Many of these were as complex as banknotes and required weeks of work to reproduce.

F/Lt Alex Cassie, a 77 Sqdn pilot who was shot down whilst on loan to Coastal Command and who was instrumental in the production of forged papers, died on April 5th 2012. [Daily Telegraph obituary.](#)

Guards, Goons and Ferrets

Germans were universally known as "Goons", a nickname which puzzled them. (When asked, a captured officer said that it stood for "German officer or Non-Com".) The tall sentry watch platforms which mounted searchlights and machine-guns were therefore "Goon Boxes", and annoying the guards was "Goon Baiting". Whilst the guards were not the cream of the Luftwaffe, they unhesitatingly shot first and asked questions afterwards if any prisoner was rash enough to stray over the knee-high warning wire, and then fail to surrender if challenged. Some were undoubtedly trigger-happy and records at Kew hold correspondence from the SBO to the Kommandant reporting cases of unnecessary use of firearms.



GOON BOX (watercolour by Geoffrey Willatt and reproduced from his book **BOMBS AND BARBED WIRE**, ISBN 1-898594-16-3 Parapress Ltd) by kind permission of the artist)



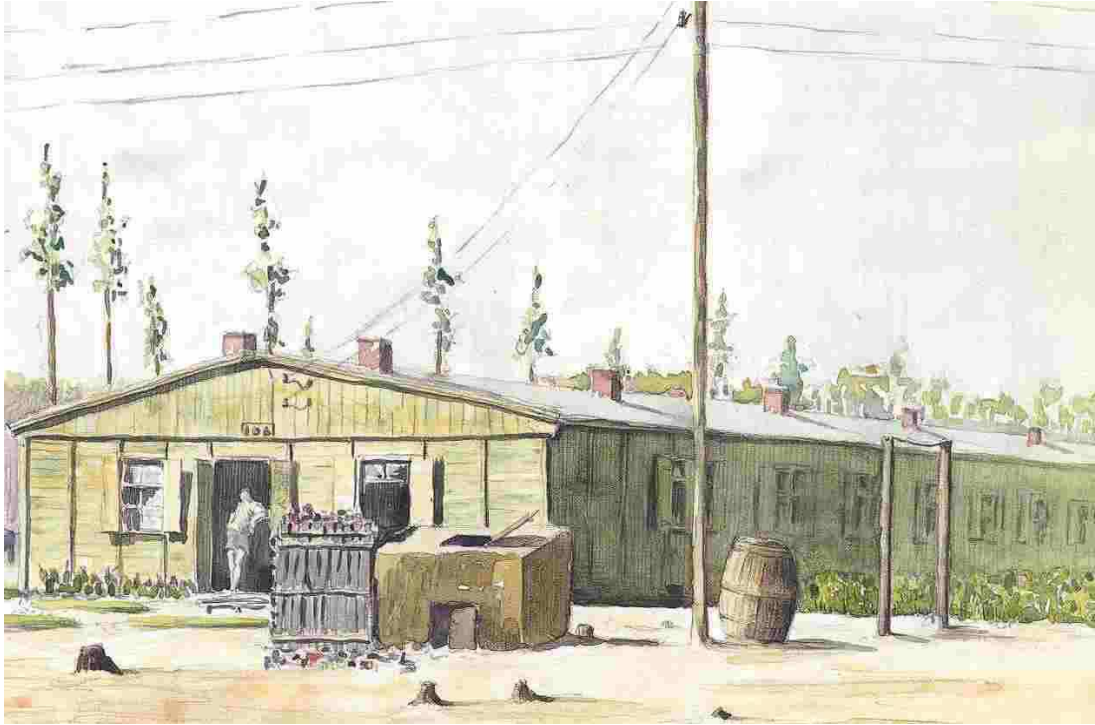
The German guards specialising in escape detection were known as '**Ferrets**' and dressed in distinctive blue overalls, could enter the compound at any time and search any hut without warning. Equipped with metal probes, they searched for the bright yellow sand indicating that a tunnel was in progress, or an English-speaking ferret would lie concealed under a hut listening for careless talk. Their most active, unpredictable and generally dangerous member, Gefreiter (Corporal) **Greise**, was known as '**Rubberneck**'.

From documents held at the Public Records Office, Kew, London, there is evidence to suggest that when a tunnel was detected by the guards or ferrets, it was allowed to continue without intervention until it appeared to be near completion. Then, the ferrets would pounce, driving heavy trucks around the compound to collapse the tunnels and galleries.

Internal security was put into the capable hands of **F/L George R Harsh** (102 Sqdn, shot down 5/6-Oct-1942, Halifax II W7824) an American (with an extremely chequered personal history) serving with the RCAF. A rota of officers logged every guard or ferret entering the compound using what was called the "Duty Pilot" system, and Germans were tailed everywhere until they were logged out. An elaborate system of inconspicuous signals was put in place, warning those PoWs engaged on nefarious activities, and giving them time to either mask their activities with innocent-looking hobbies or completely conceal their illicit work. Unable to effectively combat the "Duty Pilot" system, the Germans allowed it to continue, and on one occasion used the log made by F/O George Sweanor to bring charges against two of their own men who had slunk off duty some hours before they should have done. George adds "One hot summer day in 1944, I was walking across our sandy POW compound with Luftwaffe Hauptmann Hans Pieber who spotted a snotty handkerchief discarded on the sand. Criticising such waste, he picked it up, remarking that, if none of us wanted it, he could wash it and use it."

Pieber was an Austrian, vehemently opposed to Hitler. He is reported to have treated the PoWs sympathetically and to have supplied them with innocent items and on one occasion brought them Pilot's Notes for the Me109 and Dornier X aircraft.

F/O Geoffrey Willatt (106 Sqdn, shot down 5-Sep-43, Lancaster III DV182) said "I did many hours as 'Duty Pilot' identifying guards and ferrets as they came in the main gate (the only entrance) and putting up a signal, to warn other watchers round the camp - the signal comprised an empty tin in a certain position on a nearby rubbish heap. I was in fact accosted by von Lindeiner who saluted me as he always did, to know why I was out in the freezing cold. I said it was for fresh air and exercise and gave a false name and number. I never heard any more."



A Warm Day At Luft III, Sagan

(watercolour by Geoffrey Willatt and reproduced from his book **BOMBS AND BARBED WIRE**, ISBN 1-898594-16-3 Parapress Ltd, by kind permission of the artist).

The Tunnels : 'Tom', 'Dick' and 'Harry'

The tunnel entrances were masterpieces of deception. All barrack huts were elevated from the ground but each had stoves set on a brick and concrete plinth. 'Tom' (the 98th tunnel to be discovered at Luft III) in Hut 123 and 'Harry' in Hut 104 both exited through the centre of these pierced foundations. The entrance to 'Dick' is still there - concealed in a drain on the floor of the shower room in Hut 122, and when closed and sealed was under several feet of water. The Germans never found it and it probably still contains much contraband and escape material. A 2003 television-based excavation discovered the entrance and evidence of its curious history.

Sudden pounces by the ferrets were a constant nightmare and precision practice was required by the distraction and camouflage teams. In one close shave, **F/L Pat Langford** (16 OTU, shot down 28/29-7-1942, Wellington IC, R1450), replaced and fully camouflaged Harry's trapdoor in twenty seconds, leaving no sign of a tunnel entrance. German security was headed by **Hauptmann (Captain) Broili** and **Oberfeldwebel (Warrant Officer) Hermann Glemnitz**. The latter, aged 44 (in 1943) and with a good sense of humour, was usually referred to as "that bastard, Glemnitz" was both feared and respected by the prisoners as a dedicated discoverer of escape plots.

Jerry Sage described Glemnitz as having "... the build of a square-shouldered light-heavyweight boxer ... the most efficient security man I met in Germany ... with a sense of humour, not a

bully." After the war, Glemnitz was discovered living in West Berlin and was flown to the 1965 PoW Reunion in Dayton, Ohio and the 1970 event in Toronto, Canada. On arrival in Toronto, he declared "I am here to make sure that you people aren't trying to tunnel out of Toronto".

Sand dispersal was effected by '**Penguins**', prisoners filling long thin bags which were slipped inside their trousers and walking about the compound, losing the sand from the bottom of the bags. One penguin was careless and the ferrets spotted him trailing sand; they then knew a tunnel was in progress, but they did not pounce, wanting to find out where it originated.

Tunnelling was dangerous - both below ground and above it. The sand was treacherous, and would come crashing down with only the ghost of a warning. Many diggers had only time to protect their heads with their arms as the roof suddenly caved in, and hope that their No.2 could dig them out. No-one was killed, but several were forced to take days off after almost being suffocated. A fall left a large dome above the working face, and after clearing up, the damaged roof was shored and the sand packed back above it. The diggers found that sand dug out occupied thirty percent as much space again as it did normally, placing extra burdens on the disposal teams.

4,000 bed boards were removed to form the shoring, and prisoners became used to sleeping on the barest of supports - often a string semi-hammock, with only two or three real bed boards. The tunnel size was therefore dictated by the width of the boards, almost exactly two feet square, allowing a little for the alignment of the wood at each corner of the square.

Closed down over Christmas 1943, tunnelling was resumed in early January 1944. "Cookie" Long suffered concussion when a bed board fell the full height of the entrance shaft - 30 feet - and hit him square on the head. Wally Floody received a nasty cut from a hit with a German-issue metal water-carrier, being used to bring sand up from the working to the surface, which struck him a glancing blow to the head. This required bandaging, which was explained to the Germans as Floody having slipped on the ice!



The teams had dug out large chambers at the foot of the entrance shafts for the air pump and storage, and took it in turns to operate the manual pump. The ventilation and trolley transport systems were designed by S/Ldr Bob Nelson (crash landed, September 18th 1942 in a Wellington in the Western Desert).

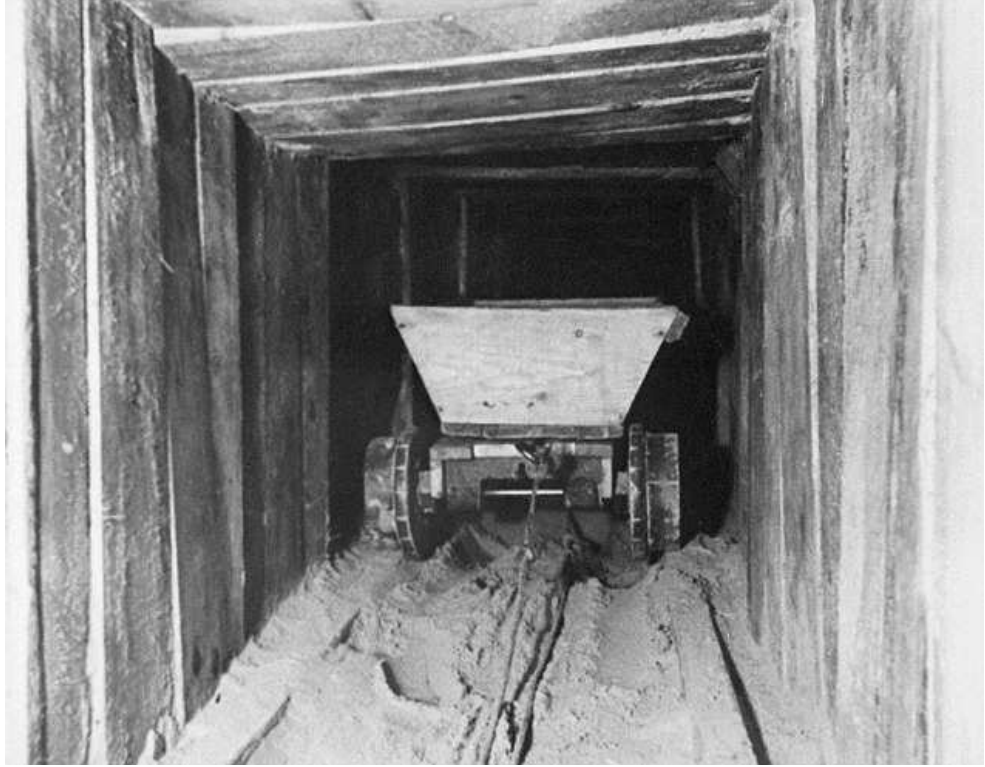
Left the entrance chamber to 'Harry'. Note the ventilation trunking made from 'Klim'- tins of dried milk which the Red Cross supplied to the PoWs

As the tunnel progressed, these dried-milk tins were laid under the floor, and caulked with tape or waxed string, provided very effective ventilation, with the flue being camouflaged into the genuine stove's chimney.

A wooden railway carried small trucks for sand removal along the bed of the tunnel, the trolleys being pulled from haulage points at intervals along the length.

Red Noble spotted an 800 foot coil of electrical flex unattended by German workmen and 'liberated' it; the tunnel was then wired for electric light. The workmen didn't report the theft and were later executed by the Gestapo when the tunnel was discovered. (Joe "Red" Noble stayed with the RCAF after WW2 and ended up as a Group Captain. He lived on Lake Huron, Canada, and died some years ago.)

Right the tunnel view, with 'railway' and 'trolley' shown.



The Germans were aware that something major was going on but all attempts to discover tunnels failed. In early March 1944 in a desperate move, 19 top suspects, including Wally Floody, George Harsh, Peter Fanshawe and Bob Stanford-Tuck, were transferred with no warning to the nearby Stalag VIIIIC at Belaria.

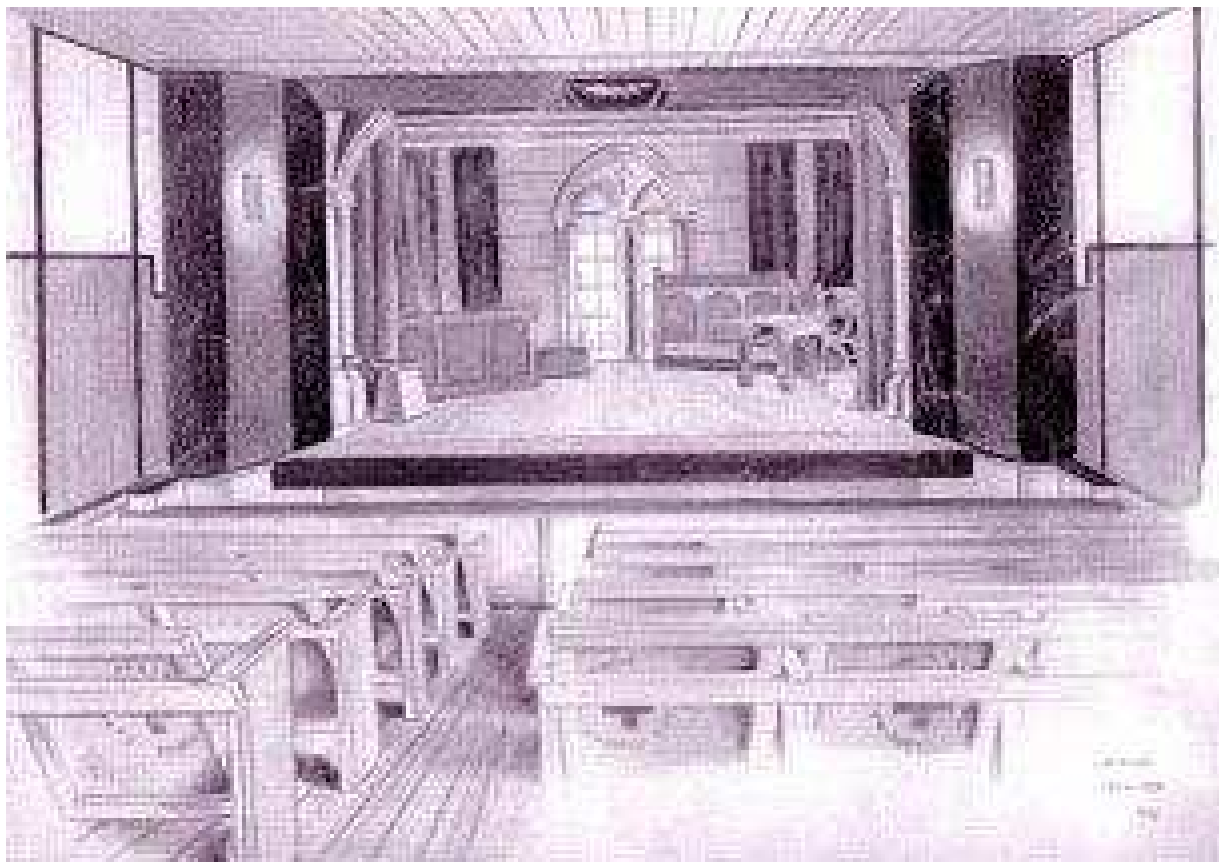
This was only weeks before the escape was scheduled to take place. Bushell's part in the Escape Committee was well camouflaged and the Germans left him behind. Deputies took over from the missing prisoners, and work went on.

Even when the Luftwaffe removed all the increasing number of American airmen to their own, separate compound, work on the tunnels did not stop. Communication between the separate compounds was forbidden, but the British placed a semaphore expert well inside one hut which faced the US airmen's compound. He was concealed from the guards, but visible on the other side of the wire. The US airmen soon spotted him, and communications were quickly resumed.

'Dick' was abandoned when the area in which it was to have surfaced was suddenly cleared of trees and a new compound built there. However, the abortive short tunnel proved an ideal place for concealing the growing amount of false clothing and general contraband, as well as providing a workshop for the manufacturers.

Later, when sand disposal fell well behind the digging, much of the surplus sand was shovelled down 'Dick'.

The Canadian pilot F/Lt John Gordon "Scruffy" Weir, shot down in 401 Sqdn Spitfire AB 922 on 8th November 1941, was one of dedicated tunnellers. I am saddened to report that he died in Toronto on September 20th 2009.



Eventually, such sand disposal methods proved insufficient and the X Committee faced major disposal problems. Eventually it dawned on them that there was a huge closed-off area under the seats of the Theatre. Some time before, the Germans had allowed this to be built, using tools and equipment supplied on parole. Such equipment was **never** used for other purposes, and the parole system was regarded as inviolate.

A drawing of the Theatre stage area, from the auditorium perspective.

But did this also include the *results* of the paroled equipment, i.e. the Theatre itself? The *tools* had been properly returned, after all ... internal "legal advice" was taken, and the SBO's decision was that the popular and very successful Theatre itself did *not* fall within the parole system. Seat 13 was therefore hinged and camouflaged, and the vast space beneath used for sand disposal.

After the Great Escape, in autumn 1944 a 4th tunnel, named "*George*" was excavated from under this seat 13, and ran in a dog-leg from from under the Theatre, towards the German 'Kommandantur' area. It was used to conceal escape equipment but was not intended as a pure "escape" tunnel, more as an emergency means of evacuating PoWs in the event of the camp being overrun by the advancing Russian army. **Its location has never been much of a secret - so it's tosh to say that it has just been discovered; it's been marked on several diagrams and maps of the Stalag Luft III site and known about for over thirty years.** The UK-TV Channel Four documentary "Digging the Great Escape" covers *George's* excavation in August 2011 and valiant attempts to find the entrance to *Harry* and its deep-down workshops. This programme was broadcast on Monday November 28th 2011. It's a

very good documentary and well worth watching, a real eye-opener into the many difficulties the



PoWs had to overcome to engineer their many escape plans.

The sand's pungent but not unpleasant odour was distinctive and was found to be very evident during such disposal operations under the raked seating. Pipe smokers were therefore engaged to sit in close proximity to the hinged seat, and puff away to camouflage the smell of the sand.

Having myself dug up some sand from the site I can support this anecdote - the smell is very obvious!

Many excellent shows were put on in the Theatre, which had an enviable standard. Post-war British Theatre and Television "names" such as Talbot Rothwell, Roy Dotrice, George Cole, and Peter Butterworth appear in the Luft III programmes.

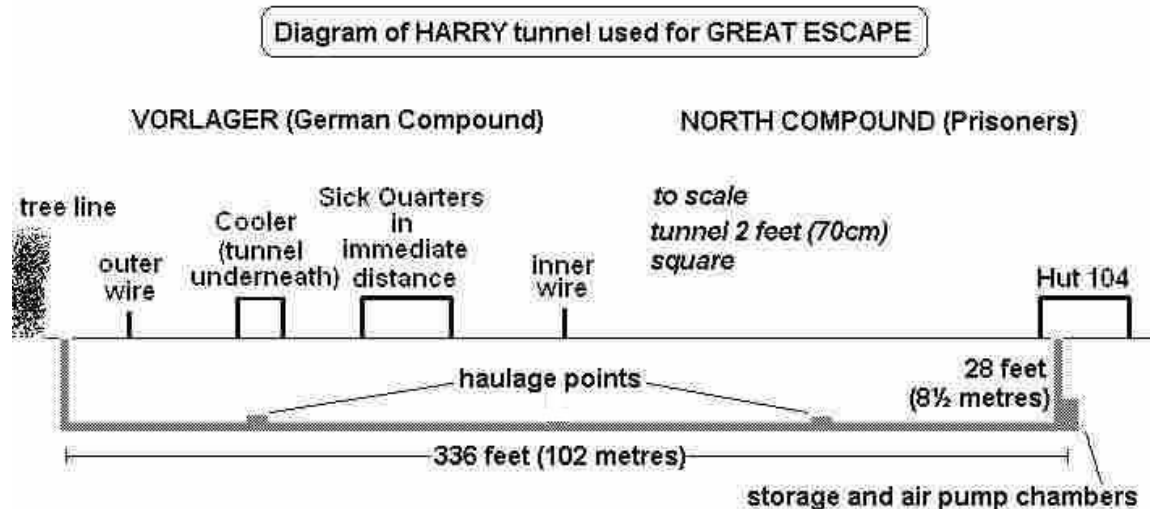
Geoffrey Willatt told me that the Theatre Shows were certainly "one of the redeeming features of the camp." Rupert Davies, of "Maigret" fame, also featured in productions. Art Crighton was the usual orchestra leader.

Theatre interior, during rehearsals. Note the level of workmanship and fine attention to detail in the set, and the audience seating made from Red Cross boxes.

Anyone interested in PoW Camp Theatres and Actors should look at the page devoted to the British actor [Michael Goodliffe](#).

Even a highly simplistic calculation shows that at the barest minimum, for **Harry** alone the prisoners had to dispose of a staggering $((336 + 28 + 30) \times 4) = 1,536$ cubic feet of sand. In practice, the actual figure was well over double this, as it does not include the sand excavated for either **Tom** or **Dick** or the amount of extra sand removed after roof falls, or the addition of haulage, air pumping and storage chambers. I estimate that for the Great Escape only, the prisoners disposed of a figure in the region of 140 cubic metres, 200 tons of sand, which works out to almost an entire large truck or lorry containerful. A lot of sand.

'Harry' was completed on 14th March, 1944.



A breakdown of the materials used in constructing the three tunnels went as follows, and illustrates the magnitude and logistical problems of the project. This list does not include materials used for false papers and fake civilian clothing, nor the man-hours necessary to actually build the tunnels, or the problems associated with spiriting away the items used in the tunnel construction:-

□ 4,000 bed boards; 1,370 beading battens; 1,699 blankets; 161 pillow cases; 635 palliasses; 34 chairs; 52 20-man tables; 90 double tier bunks; 1,219 knives; 478 spoons; 30 shovels; 1,000 feet of electric wire; 600 feet of rope; 192 bed covers; 3,424 towels; 1,212 bed bolsters; 10 single tables; 76 benches; 246 water cans; 582 forks; 69 lamps.

□ This list is taken from a German account of what went missing after being issued to the prisoners.

As Tom neared completion in summer 1943, a ferret discovered the entrance and the Germans destroyed it all. Concentration switched to 'Harry' which in March 1944 reached the length of 336 feet (some sources say 360 feet, but this may have included the vertical shafts), 28 feet down. Would-be escapers were divided into two groups:-

□ Those German-speakers and experienced escapers who stood a good chance of making a "home run" to England, and those who had made the greatest contribution to the construction of the tunnel. These men were given priority with forged papers, "civilian" clothes, and a higher place in the exit order. They were expected to travel by train, masquerading as foreign workers.

Germany at the time was flooded with genuine foreign workers, who often spoke no German and whose papers were frequently out of order.

□ The "hard-arsers" who filled the rest of the tunnel places were planning to lie up by day and foot-slog by night, over hundreds of miles of enemy territory. Equipped with only the most rudimentary false papers and identities, much praise is due to this group of men, who knew that their chances - especially in winter - were thin. Most of them had baked iron rations known as "fudge" which was poured into small, pocket-sized tins, and intended as survival food. The rest of the prisoners drew lots, and 220 men prepared to go on the night of March 24/25th, 1944. Snow still lay on the ground and the night time temperature was below freezing.

Whilst there were dozens - if not hundreds - of tunnels started at Stalag Luft III, it is the celebrated trio of **Tom, Dick and Harry** which were associated with **the Great Escape**. The tunnel **George** which started from the Theatre area, and unfinished at the war end and never used for escaping, being abandoned when the PoWs were evacuated. In summer 2011 it was rediscovered by archaeologists using ground penetrating radar.

The Escapers Get Away

The first men on the escape order were hand picked by Roger Bushell because they had made the most effort in preparing for the escape, and who spoke good or fluent German; these men had better papers and general equipment and were reckoned to be on the first trains out from the nearby railway station at Sagan. It was a moonless night.

As night fell, those allocated a place on the tunnel moved to Hut 104. Prisoners, nerves at cracking-point, were terrified to see a German soldier enter the hut. It was F/O Pawel Tobolski, (301 Sqdn, shot down over Bremen, 25/26-Jun-1942, Wellington IV, Z1479 GR:A) dressed for his escape as a German soldier, travelling in company with W/C Day. (I was very pleased to receive emails from and subsequently meet F/O Tobolski's son, [Paul](#), who had seen this page.) On freeing up the frozen and swollen boards which protected the final upper section of the end vertical shaft at 2215, F/L Johnny Bull discovered that the tunnel mouth was some 15 feet short of the tree line and within 30 yards of the nearest watch tower. But guards were watchful towards the compound and did not shine their searchlights outside. The first escaper went onto the trolley railway at 2230. With all the forged documents bearing the current date, shutting down the tunnel to excavate another 15 or so feet was not an option.

None of the PoWs I have interviewed have been able to explain why the tunnel came up 30 feet short, but the most likely explanation is a triangulation and measurement error. It was not easy to accurately measure the length of the tunnel or the angle at which it was being cut.

In order to avoid being detected by buried microphones, the tunnel was so deep that the normal method of cautiously poking up a stick to the surface and having this observed and measured on the surface was not possible.

Dead reckoning was the only solution, and unfortunately a 10% error over the 300 foot length proved to be serious. Bearing in mind the formidable difficulties involved with its construction, the PoWs did an astonishing job in completing it at all, without detection.

Prowling sentries circled outside the wire, passing at intervals between the tree line and the camp compound. Snow lay on the ground and it was impossible for the escapers not to leave a trail as they hastily crawled out of the exit and into the cover of the trees. This greatly slowed the passage of escapers, a situation worsened by an air raid which made the Germans switch off the power, forcing the use of fat lamps inside the tunnel.

Marshall and Bull were the first out with a length of rope for tugging and signalling and the exit of men was seriously slowed down by this method, and the need for experienced tunnellers to clear an unexpected roof fall. It was soon apparent in Hut 104 that things were going badly wrong, but little news filtered back from the far end of the tunnel. A request for a long length of rope was fulfilled, but the passage of men stalled. Gordie King kept pumping away to keep air going down the tunnel shaft. Although the briefing had called for each man to ride the tiny railway trolley, being pulled by the previous man, once the tunnel had swallowed the first couple of dozen, no more were being called. The dispatcher, waiting at the tunnel entrance, had no more idea what was wrong than did the long queue of impatient and highly-strung men.

The necessity to wait until the circuiting sentries were not close to the tunnel exit, and the need to exercise great discretion in sending the next man out, considerably slowed the throughput. Instead of one man every minute, the escape was reduced to a dozen per hour. Word was sent back that those men with escape numbers higher than 100 had no chance of escaping. Since exiting Hut 104 during the curfew to return to their own huts would entail being shot at by the guards, they lay down where they could to await daylight. By dawn, only 76 men had made their escape into the darkness beyond the trees.

At 04:55, by which time 87 escapers had left Hut 104, **F/L Shand** at the mouth of the tunnel was awaiting the signal to go. In the woods was **F/L Langlois** (12 Sqdn, shot down 5-Aug-1941, Wellington II, W5421 PH:G) who could see that a patrolling sentry had deviated from his beat and would tread within a few feet of the tunnel. He tugged at the signal rope, meaning "stay put." Shand, thinking this was the opposite signal, emerged from the tunnel right under the feet of the guard, who until then had passed by. For some seconds he did not see the tracks in the snow and body-heat steam drifting upwards from the tunnel mouth. Finally noticing the signs, he raised his rifle, fired a wild shot at Langlois (which missed) and blew his whistle. **F/L Laurence Reavell-Carter** (49 Sqdn, shot down 26/27-Jun-1940, Hampden I P4305) and **F/L Keith "Skeets" Ogilvie**, waiting in the woods, ran for it and so did Shand. The next man in the tunnel, **S/L Robert Frederick McBride** (415 Coastal Sqdn RCAF, shot down early November 1942), was apprehended at rifle point, and **S/L Len Trent** (487 Sqdn, shot down 3-May-1943, Ventura II AJ209, EG:V) a holder of the VC and DSO, lying face down just inside the tree line, stood up and surrendered.

F/O Ken "Shag" Rees (150 Sqdn, shot down 23/24-Oct-1942, Wellington III BK309, JN:N) and **S/L Clive Saxelby** (103 Sqdn, shot down 7/8 Sep-1942, Halifax W1219 PM:S) were in the tunnel close to the foot of the final ladder, awaiting their turns to exit. On hearing the shots, Sax together with **Joe Moul** (416 Sqdn, shot down 23 Oct 42, Spitfire Vb BL575), hared at top speed on all fours back the way they had come, closely followed by Rees, who believing a ferret might jump down the escape end and shoot along the tunnel, tried to kick out the shoring, with little success. Ken said "As I was haring up the tunnel, all I could see was Sax's bum blocking the way and I expected a bayonet or a bullet up my arse at any moment!" **S/L Denys Maw** (218 Sqdn, shot down Gelsenkirchen, 25/26 Jun 43, Strirling EF430 HA:W) also made it back to Hut 104. Ken Rees was the last man up.

(I am sorry to report that Clive Saxelby died on March 22nd 1999. When I interviewed him at his home in Torquay in August 1997, he was quite genuinely astounded that anyone was interested in his time with 103 Sqdn or his contribution to the Great Escape. His comment at the end of the evening was "I'm sorry I can't remember very much but I haven't thought about, or considered important, any of this, for forty years.")

After a few minutes, all the men who had been waiting in the tunnel managed to return to Hut 104, where the shots had also been heard. The escapers remaining, and those scrambling out of the tunnel entrance, burned their false papers and began to eat their carefully-saved rations, as the Germans would be sure to confiscate them. However, the guards had no idea where the tunnel started and had searched Hut 104 so many times that they considered it safe; they therefore searched every hut and it was some time before they reached 104, by which time rations had been mostly eaten, false papers mostly burned and some escapers had even managed to return to their correct huts.

The ferrets in 104 could not find the entrance; their dog crawled into a pile of coats and fell asleep. Finally, the ferret Charlie Pilz crawled down from the tunnel's far end. By this time the Germans were in Hut 104 and noises could be heard from underneath as Charlie shouted for help. Taking pity on him, the prisoners opened the trap and Charlie emerged, full of praise for the superb tunnel.

In the darkness, many of the escapers had not found the railway station entrance, which was unusually positioned in a dark recessed pedestrian tunnel, right under the actual platforms. Consequently, many of them missed their trains and were very unhappily hanging round the platforms at first light, trying to ignore each other. Eventually they caught the first trains out of Sagan, or having given up the wait, footslogged it over the horizon. Due to this sad delay, they were nearly all caught in the Sagan area.

The "Great Escape"

In the spring of 1943, [Squadron Leader Roger Bushell RAF](#) conceived a plan for a major escape from the camp, which occurred the night of 24–25 March 1944. ^{[9][23]}

Bushell was held in the North Compound where British airmen were housed. He was in command of the Escape Committee and channeled the effort into probing for weaknesses and looking for opportunities. Falling back on his legal background to represent his scheme, Bushell called a meeting of the Escape Committee and not only shocked those present with its scope, but injected into every man a passionate determination to put their every energy into the escape. He declared,

"Everyone here in this room is living on borrowed time. By rights we should all be dead! The only reason that God allowed us this extra ration of life is so we can make life hell for the Hun... In North Compound we are concentrating our efforts on completing and escaping through one master tunnel. No private-enterprise tunnels allowed. Three bloody deep, bloody long tunnels will be dug - Tom, Dick, and Harry. One will succeed!" ^[24]

The simultaneous digging of these tunnels would become an advantage if any one of them was discovered by the Germans, because the guards would scarcely imagine that another two could

be well underway. The most radical aspect of the plan was not merely the scale of the construction, but the sheer number of men that Bushell intended to pass through these tunnels. Previous attempts had involved the escape of anything up to a dozen or twenty men, but Bushell was proposing to get in excess of 200 out, all of whom would be wearing civilian clothes and possessing a complete range of forged papers and escape equipment. It was an unprecedented undertaking and would require unparalleled organization. As the mastermind of the Great Escape, Roger Bushell inherited the codename of "Big X".^[24] The tunnel "Tom" began in a darkened corner of a hall in one of the buildings. "Dick"'s entrance was carefully hidden in a drain sump in one of the washrooms. The entrance to "Harry" was hidden under a stove.^[25] More than 600 prisoners were involved in their construction.^[9]

[] Tunnel construction

The tunnels were very deep — about 30 feet (9 m) below the surface. The tunnels were very small, only 2 feet (0.6 m) square, though larger chambers were dug to house the air pump, a workshop, and staging posts along each tunnel. The sandy walls of the tunnels were shored up with pieces of wood scavenged from all over the camp. One main source of wood was the prisoners' beds. At the beginning, each had about twenty boards supporting the mattress. By the time of the escape, only about eight were left on each bed. A number of other pieces of wooden furniture were also scavenged.^[26]



End of "Harry"



End of "Harry" tunnel showing how close the exit was to the camp fence



"Harry"



Entrance of "Harry" showing outline of building

A variety of other materials was also scavenged. One such item was [Klim](#) cans; tin cans that had originally held powdered milk, supplied by the [Red Cross](#) for the prisoners. The metal in the cans could be fashioned into a variety of different tools and items such as scoops and candle holders. Candles were fashioned by skimming the fat off the top of soup served at the camp and putting it in tiny tin vessels. Wicks were made from old and worn clothing.^[26] The main use of the Klim tins, however, was in the construction of the extensive ventilation ducting in all three tunnels.^[27]

As the tunnels grew longer, a number of technical innovations made the job easier and safer. One important issue was ensuring that the person digging had enough oxygen to breathe and keep his lamps lit. A pump was built to push fresh air along the ducting into the tunnels - invented by Squadron Leader Bob Nelson of 37 Squadron. The pumps were built of odd items including major bed pieces, [hockey sticks](#), and [knapsacks](#), as well as Klim tins.^[26]

With three tunnels, the prisoners needed places to dump sand. The usual method of disposing of sand was to discreetly scatter it on the surface. Small pouches made of towels or long under pants were attached inside the prisoners' trousers. As the prisoners walked around, the sand would scatter. Sometimes, the prisoners would dump sand into small gardens that they were allowed to tend. As one prisoner turned the soil, another would release sand while the two

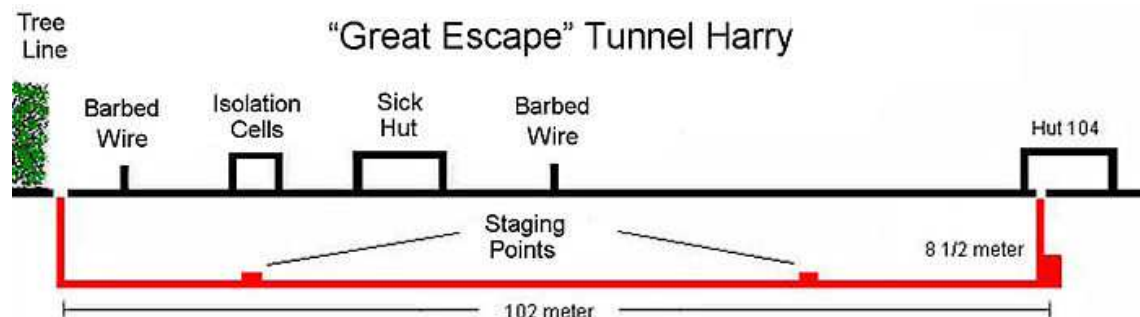
appeared to carry on a normal conversation.^[26] The prisoners wore [greatcoats](#) to conceal the bulges made by the sand and were referred to as "penguins" because of their supposed resemblance to the animal. In the sunny months sand could be carried outside and scatted in blankets for sun bathing. More than 200 were recruited who were to make an estimated 25,000 trips.^[9] The Germans were aware that something major was going on, but all attempts to discover tunnels failed.^[citation needed] In an attempt to break up any escape attempts, nineteen of their top suspects were transferred without warning to Stalag VIIIC. Of those, only six were heavily involved with tunnel construction.

Eventually, the prisoners felt they could no longer dump sand on the surface as the Germans became too efficient at catching prisoners using this method. After "Dick's" planned exit surface became covered by a camp expansion, the decision was made to start filling the tunnel up. As the tunnel's entrance was very well-hidden, "Dick" was also used as a storage room for a variety of items such as maps, postage stamps, forged travel permits, compasses, and clothing such as German uniforms and civilian suits.^[28] Surprisingly, a number of friendly guards co-operated in supplying railway timetables, maps, and the large number of official papers required to allow them to be forged. Some genuine civilian clothes were also obtained by bribing German staff with cigarettes, coffee or chocolate. These were used by escaping prisoners to travel away from the prison camp more easily – by train, if possible.^[26]

The prisoners later ran out of places to hide the sand and snow cover now made it impractical to scatter it over the ground.^[9] Underneath the seats in the theatre was a huge enclosed area, but the theatre had been built using tools and materials supplied on [parole](#) - that is, the prisoners gave their word not to misuse them - and the parole system was regarded as [inviolable](#). Internal "legal advice" was taken, and the SBOs decided that the completed theatre building itself did not fall under the parole system. Seat 13 was hinged and the sand problem solved.^[citation needed]

As the war progressed, the German prison camps began to be overwhelmed with American prisoners.^[6] The Germans decided that new camps would be built specifically for the U.S. airmen. In an effort to allow as many people to escape as possible, including the Americans, efforts on the remaining two tunnels increased. However, the higher level of activity drew the attention of guards, and in September 1943 the entrance to "Tom" became the 98th tunnel to be discovered in the camp. Guards hiding in the woods watching the "penguins" noticed sand was being removed from the hut where Tom was located. Work on "Harry" ceased and did not resume until January 1944.^{[9][26]}

[] Tunnel "Harry" completed



"Harry" was finally ready in March 1944, but the American prisoners, some of whom had worked on the tunnel "Tom," had been moved to another compound seven months earlier. Contrary to what is suggested in the Hollywood film of the same name, no American prisoners of war actually participated in the "great escape." Previously, this escape attempt had been planned for the summer as good weather was a large factor of success. However, in early 1944 the Gestapo had visited the camp and ordered increased efforts in detecting possible escape attempts. Bushell ordered the attempt be made as soon as the tunnel was ready.

Of the 600 prisoners who had worked on the tunnels only 200 would be able to escape in their plan. The prisoners were separated into two groups. The first group of 100, called "serial offenders," were guaranteed a place and included those who spoke German well or had a history of escapes, plus an additional 70 men considered to have put in the most work on the tunnels. The second group of 100, considered to have very little chance of success, had to draw lots to determine inclusion. Called "hard-arsers," these would be required to travel by night as they spoke little or no German and were only equipped with the most basic fake papers and equipment.^[9]

The prisoners had to wait about a week for a moonless night so that they could leave under the cover of complete darkness. Finally, on Friday 24 March, the escape attempt began and as night fell, those allocated a place in the tunnel moved to Hut 104. Unfortunately for the prisoners, the exit trap door of Harry was found to be frozen solid, and freeing the door delayed the escape for an hour and a half. An even larger setback was when it was discovered that the tunnel had come up short. It had been planned that the tunnel would reach into a nearby forest but at 10.30 p.m., the first man out emerged just short of the tree line and close to a guard tower. (According to [Alan Burgess](#), in his book *The Longest Tunnel*, the tunnel reached the forest, as planned, but the trees were too sparse to provide adequate cover.) As the temperature was below freezing and snow still lay on the ground, any escapee would leave a dark trail while crawling to cover. Because of the need to now avoid sentries, instead of the planned one man every minute, the escape was reduced to little more than ten per hour. Word was eventually sent back that no prisoner issued with a number higher than 100 would be able to escape before daylight. As they would be shot if caught trying to return to their own barracks these men changed into their own uniforms and got some sleep. An air raid then caused the camp's (and the tunnel's) electric lighting to be shut down slowing the escape even more. At around 1 a.m., the tunnel collapsed and had to be repaired.

Despite these problems, 76 men crawled through the tunnel to initial freedom. Finally, at 4:55 a.m. on 25 March, the 77th man was seen emerging from the tunnel by one of the guards. Those already in the trees began running while a New Zealand Squadron Leader [Leonard Henry Trent VC](#), who had just reached the tree line stood up and surrendered. The guards had no idea where the tunnel entrance was, so they began searching the huts, giving the men time to burn their fake papers. Hut 104 was one of the last huts searched and despite using dogs the guards were unable to find the entrance. Finally, German guard Charlie Pilz crawled the length of the tunnel but found himself trapped at the other end. Pilz began calling for help and the prisoners opened the entrance to let him out, finally revealing the location.

An early problem for the escapees was that most of them were unable to find the entrance to the railway station until daylight revealed it was in a recess in the side wall of an underground pedestrian tunnel. Consequently, many of them missed their nighttime trains and either decided to walk across country or wait on the platform in daylight. Another unanticipated problem was that this March was the coldest recorded in 30 years and snow lay up to five feet deep, the escapees had no option but to leave the cover of woods and fields and use roads.^[9]

[] After the escape

Following the escape, the Germans took an inventory of the camp and found out just how extensive the operation had been. 4,000 bed boards had gone missing, as well as the complete disappearance of 90 double bunk beds, 635 mattresses, 192 bed covers, 161 pillow cases, 52 20-man tables, 10 single tables, 34 chairs, 76 benches, 1,212 bed bolsters, 1,370 beading battens, 1219 knives, 478 spoons, 582 forks, 69 lamps, 246 water cans, 30 shovels, 1,000 feet (300 m) of electric wire, 600 feet (180 m) of rope, and 3424 towels. 1,700 blankets had been used, along with more than 1,400 [Klim cans](#).^[26] The electric cable had been stolen after being left unattended by German workers; as they had not reported the theft, they were executed by the Gestapo.^[29] From then on each bed was supplied with only nine bed boards which were counted regularly by the guards.^[citation needed]

Stalag Luft 3 - The Great Escape

The Wartime Experiences of Wg. Cdr. H. K. Rees

Introduction



On the night of 24th/25th March, 1944, over 200 captured Allied aircrew attempted to break out of Stalag Luft III, a Prisoner of War camp in eastern Germany. The attempt was the culmination of many months of careful preparation, including the digging of a narrow tunnel over 330 feet in length. Wg. Cdr. Rees was one of the tunnellers who had spent so long working on the attempt when, following the escape of 76 men and as he prepared to leave himself, the tunnel was discovered. Of those who made it out, 3 managed to get home to the U.K. and 23 were returned to PoW camps. The other 50 were murdered in cold blood by the Gestapo. This is Wg. Cdr. Rees' account of what later became known as The Great Escape.

Background

Two days after the Second World War started I joined the Air Force. I had tried to join the day before this but was rejected as my occupation, farming, was regarded as essential war work. Overnight I "changed" occupation to that of a draper and for good measure added a year to my age, which was actually 18. Shortly afterwards I commenced training as a pilot. Incidentally, it wasn't until nearing my retirement as a Wing Commander many years later that I owned up to the RAF and gave them my real age!

I joined 40 Squadron in early 1941. Following operations over Europe I volunteered to fly out to the Middle East to do another tour from Malta. 1942 was a most eventful year for me. In January I finished my second tour of operations and was commissioned. In February I had my 21st birthday and in April returned home to instruct. In September I managed to wangle my way back onto operations and joined 150 Squadron in Yorkshire, still flying Wellington bombers. On October 3rd I was married but recalled from my honeymoon as I had been promoted to Ft. Lt. and made deputy Flight Commander. I was shot down over Norway shortly afterwards on October 23rd. This was the day that Alamein started and I always say that from the day I was shot down the Allies went on to victory.

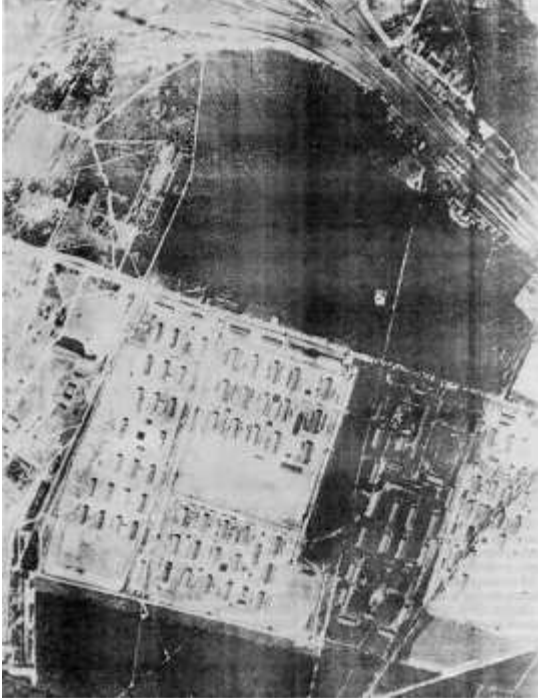
"For You, The War Is Over"

My final mission of the war was to lay mines off the coast of Norway. Despite being told by intelligence not to expect any flak we found ourselves being fired at heavily from the ground. In the clear and moonlit sky, flying at low level (300 feet) and at 150 mph we were soon hit. The aircraft was on fire, one engine was out and the intercom was not working. My wireless operator appeared beside me and I hoped to hear some good news but was to be disappointed - blackened and burnt he announced, in extremely colourful language, that we'd had it.

I managed to crash land in a lake, quite close to the shore. The front gunner was dead and there was no sign of the rear gunner (his body was recovered from the turret some two decades later when the aircraft was discovered in a remote corner of Norway). The three of us who had survived made it to land and after treating our various wounds as best we could, set off to find some local help, in the hope of somehow making our way either home or to neutral Sweden. We ended up in a remote house awaiting the arrival of a doctor who some locals we had met had promised to send. Suddenly what seemed to me to be half the German army entered the room, along with some officials in civilian clothes who I took to be Gestapo. I think I grew several inches as my arms reached upwards in surrender and I heard the words "for you the war is over". I was interrogated at length but treated fairly, with the exception of once being silenced by a blow to my head with a rifle butt having been unable to hide my amusement when some Gestapo interrogators appeared, dressed exactly as in the films, with long leather coats and wide brimmed hats.

Stalag Luft III

After interrogation and a spell in hospital I arrived at the East Compound of Stalag Luft 3 in November. This camp was at Sagan in eastern Germany, about 75 miles south east of Berlin and a long way from home. I moved into a room of 8 people, 3 of them dedicated tunnellers and as I was Welsh they seemed to think that I must have been a miner and accepted me as a future tunneller - I didn't mention the fact that I was actually a farmer too often! The compound was becoming overcrowded and on 1st April, 1943 many of us were moved to a new compound some 500 yards away. It was from here, the North Compound of Stalag Luft III, that our bid for freedom later known as the Great Escape was made. I was digging on the tunnel used in the escape from the beginning and will do my best give you some ideas of the difficulties and organisation needed to complete the escape.



Stalag Luft III as photographed by an allied reconnaissance plane in March 1944, shortly after the Great Escape. From left to right the Compounds are West, North and South (with open ground between them), German Garrison, Centre and East.

At the start the camp had a population of about 1000 - roughly 500 RAF and Dominion Air Force Officers, 300 Americans and the rest a mixture of Poles, Czechs, French, etc. It was built in an area cleared of trees in the middle of a pine forest and was in the form of a square about three quarters of a mile around the outside. We were enclosed by two sets of barbed wire about 5 feet apart and 8 feet high. In between was coiled barbed wire. On the inside of the fence, about 15 feet in, was a wooden rail about 2 feet high. Inside this rail was a sterile area and anyone foolish enough to step over this fence would be shot at by one of the guards manning sentry towers set at regular intervals some 4 feet above the wire all around the compound. These towers were manned day and night and were mounted with a machine gun, rifle and searchlight.

The compound contained 15 wooden huts raised about 2 feet above the ground so that the "ferrets" - our name for the security guards - could crawl underneath and search for tunnels. Each hut had a small kitchen containing a small stove, night toilet and wash room. The kitchen washroom and the solid fuel stoves in each room were built on a concrete base, which went down to the ground. The Commandant, Col. Lindeiner, considered the camp very good and expressed a hope that we would be good boys and stay within the safety of the camp until the war was over. What a hope he had!



A typical room with triple bunk beds and plenty of other wooden furniture, much of which would not be used for its intended purpose!



The camp commander was Oberst (Colonel) Friedrich-Wilhelm von Lindeiner-Wildau (left), a highly decorated WWI veteran and former member of Goering's personal staff. Lindeiner-Wildau was well educated, spoke excellent English and held the respect of the senior Allied officers in the camp. He had joined the Luftwaffe as it was the armed service most independent of the Nazis.

Planning, Security and Digging

The Senior British Officer realised that to get out of this camp, guarded by experienced guards who we called "Goons" and patrolled inside by the ferrets, would need a well organised effort, so he set up an organisation called "X". The head of it was to be Sqn. Ldr. Roger Bushell who was to be called "Big X". He was a brilliant pre-war barrister who had already escaped twice and been recaptured. Unfortunately he was to be one of the fifty murdered after the escape. Big X set up a committee of experts and they decided to build three tunnels with a hope that at least one would make it. For security reasons it was decided to call them Tom, Dick and Harry. Tom was located about 100 feet from the wire on the western boundary. The trap for the entrance shaft was made in the concrete just outside the kitchen door. Dick was started from a hut further in from the wire, in a sump in the middle of the washroom floor. The Poles, who made all the entrance traps, removed the metal grid from the sump then took a slab from one side of the sump and made it so that it could be lifted out. The shaft was then started from behind this slab. When not in use as a trap, the sump could be used in the normal way. The trap for Harry was started from under a stove in one of the rooms. The stove stood on a tiled area about 3 feet square. The stove and the tiles were removed and a wooden frame made on which the tiles were reset. This was then cleverly hinged so that the whole cover could be slid from the trap entrance and replaced easily. To keep the fire going when the trap was open tins were used to connect the stove to the chimney.

Once all the traps were completed a start was made on sinking the shafts. It was decided to sink them about 25 feet down in order to get the tunnels well below the sound detectors placed under the boundary wire. The shafts had to be completely shored with wood, as would the tunnels, as we were digging in pure sand. At the bottom of each shaft three chambers were constructed, one to store the sand awaiting disposal, one to house the air pump and one as a workshop. The tunnel itself was just under two feet square. The boards used to shore them dictated the size of the tunnels and shafts. These were taken from the bunk beds we slept on and were just over two feet long. As the tunnels got longer the demand for bed boards meant that the space between each board in our beds got wider and more uncomfortable. In total some four thousand boards were eventually used and some prisoners ended up converting their beds into hammocks.



One of the tunnel shafts, well shored with bed boards. Just over 2 feet in length, these dictated the dimensions of Tom, Dick and Harry.



"Klim" milk powder was sent in our Red Cross parcels. The empty tins were joined together to form pipes, used for the tunnel ventilation and as a temporary flue for the stove when it was removed from the tunnel entrance.

The next problem was how to get rid of the sand we dug out. The discovery of freshly dug sand by the Germans was the biggest single cause of failed tunnelling attempts throughout the Camps and so it was crucial that disposal was effective. At Stalag Luft III the sand was almost white whereas the surface of the camp was a blackish grey loam, so one handful put on the surface stood out and could be seen from yards away. An officer was appointed to take charge of disposal and he collected a team of about fifty men called "Penguins", who were to devise ways of getting rid of the sand. Because of compression at depth, occasional falls, the construction of

chambers and the "halfway houses" (more of which later) the Penguins were faced with the awesome task of hiding, from under the noses of the Germans, 1 ton of sand for every 3-4ft. (about 1m) of tunnel. The total sand dispersed of by the completion of the work was some 230 tons. Of this, one method which was slow but successful accounted for over half the total. A penguin would have two sausage shaped bags, made from German issue towels about 20 inches long, suspended down his trousers and joined by an adjustable sling made from Red Cross braces around his neck. These were filled with sand (approx. 8lbs. or 4kg per sack) and he would walk over to, for example, someone digging a garden, stand in the trench, release a clip and the gardener would cover up the sand. So well hidden were the sacks that the penguins made some 18,000 trips between them to the dispersal areas in this way. At one point they were disposing of sand at the rate of 60lbs (30kgs) per minute - this nearly always in full view of the guards, without once being discovered!

Another method of dispersal was to fill an empty Red Cross cardboard box with sand, join a group sitting around chatting and gradually bury the sand. Perhaps the least stressful way however was during the summer, when sand would be wrapped in a blanket, the blanket laid out on a sandy patch of ground and the carrier would then sunbathe, camouflaging the sand under the blanket at his leisure. All this was painfully slow but essential - we could dig out sand faster than the penguins could find a home for it, so digging was often suspended whilst the surplus was safely dealt with.

After a time the Oberfeltwebel Glimnitz found a little sand and became very suspicious. This meant constant snap searches and we even saw a ferret hiding in the trees with field glasses.



Sergeant Major Hermann Glemnitz was the senior non-commissioned officer on the security staff, responsible for preventing escape. He was a veteran pilot of World War I and an NCO of the "old school". Universally respected by prisoners and guards alike, he was nobody's fool and found nearly all the tunnels attempted. Harry was one of only a few to escape detection by his ferrets.

To keep an eye on security a Security Officer was appointed and as you can guess was called "Big S". He and his team had to keep a check on who was coming in to the compound and let us know if it was clear to open the traps. Some of the team sat in a room nearest the entrance gate and booked everyone in. The ferrets and guards were graded according to their keenness. Some were easily diverted into a room for a coffee, but others would be a real threat. Our security team had a suitable system of signals, which relayed this information to the hut where digging was taking place. Sometimes this would mean a panic shutdown, much to the consternation of the people down the tunnel. In one case during a panic shut down someone was hauling a large jug of sand up the shaft when the danger signal was given. He dropped the jug, which unfortunately landed on the head of the dispatcher knocking him out. This wasn't funny at the time as we didn't know how long the panic would last.

Another important team was the Engineering Section. They were in charge of getting the wood and dove tailing it to shore the tunnel, collecting empty Klim milk powder tins to make the airline and constructing the air pump. The pipe ran under the floor of the tunnel and it was quite a hard job to pump air to the face as the tunnel got longer. If they stopped pumping for any length of time the fat lamps in the tunnel started to fade through lack of oxygen. To start with we pulled the sand back from the face with a basin and rope but as the tunnel lengthened the engineers constructed railway lines made from beading strips taken off the walls of the rooms and a trolley with two wooden box's on it. The wheels of the trolley were made of wood, flanged and fitted with tin hoops, the axles were rods taken from some of the cooking stoves. A rope was fastened to either end and it worked like a charm.

Other people involved were the forgers, known as Dean & Dawson, a well-known pre war travel agency. They were responsible for making maps, travel papers, passes for foreign workers, etc.. They even made crude compasses, about the size of a 50p piece, by melting down an old 78 record to make the bowl and using a magnetised needle to point north. Rail timetables, passes and other useful items were obtained from some of the guards who had been corrupted with gifts of soap, coffee, cigarettes or chocolate from our Red Cross parcels. Once they had accepted gifts we then blackmailed them into providing more things for the use of the forgers.

There was a Tailors Dept. who altered uniforms, made caps from the lining of greatcoats and civilian suits from materials we had obtained. They even made a couple of German Army uniforms. They also helped us to make our own uniforms look less military. I was paired for the escape with Joe Noble and we decided to alter the colour of our uniforms by boiling them in the black bindings of some books. Not very successful and I don't advise you to try it!

We now had about 30 underground and 300 other workers. After several months Tom was almost at the wire and the other tunnels had progressed to a similar length. About this time we heard that because the camp was getting overcrowded the Americans were to be moved to their own adjoining but completely separate compound. As quite a few had been involved with the project it was decided to "blitz" Tom to give them a chance to get out. This meant taking chances and with the ferrets already suspicious that there was a tunnel somewhere searches were intensified, especially of Tom's block as it was nearest to the wire. One of these searches had just finished when a ferret idly poked his metal probe into the concrete of the trap. To his surprise it went into a concealed crack and that was the end of Tom and many months of hard work. The goons were elated, they had found the tunnel at last. The hut was emptied, explosives placed in the tunnel and Tom was blown up.



Ferrets were specially trained to detect escape attempts. They launched hut searches without warning and were always looking for signs of tunnelling. They would sometimes lie beneath the huts at night listening for careless talk - hence the use of codenames for everything connected to the escape.

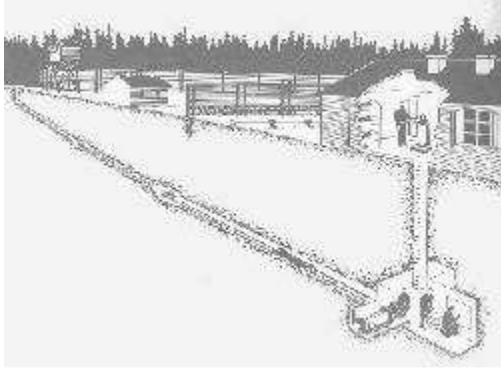


Goon tower in the American compound. These two prisoners are exercising along the edge of the "sterile area". One of these towers was badly damaged when Tom was discovered and blown up.

To allay suspicion Big X decided to stop all work on the other two tunnels and so lull the goons into a false sense of security. Winter was the off season for escaping for most people for obvious reasons - travelling rough in freezing conditions being the main one. Christmas passed and in January, 1944 we resumed tunnelling. As we had already dug about 140 feet of Harry whereas Dick was somewhat smaller at 100 feet, it was decided to use Dick as a sand dispersal for Harry. From a German point of view, Harry was the least likely tunnel as it would have to pass under the wire and then beneath the Vorlager, which contained the sick quarters, Red Cross parcel store and the solitary imprisonment cells known as the "Cooler". It then had to go under another set of wire and across open ground into the wood. In all we calculated that this was about 350 feet.

We normally dug for about six hours at a time, during the interval between morning and evening roll call. At first we wore long johns and a vest but as these were kept in the tunnel they soon became wet and smelly so after a while we usually worked in the nude. After digging about 100 feet it became hard pulling the trolley so we built what we called a halfway house. This was a stretch of tunnel some six feet long which was a bit wider and higher than the main part and had

two people manning it. Sand was pulled by one trolley from the face and then transferred to another trolley at the halfway house, which was pulled to the base of the shaft. When the tunnel was completed we had two "halfway houses", known as Piccadilly and Leicester Square. By mid March we considered that we were under the wood and had completed the tunnel, leaving only the exit shaft to do. We were not sure how deep we were so the exit shaft was very difficult. We dug up about six inches, put boards across and then shored it. As we got nearer the surface we used a thin metal probe and when we were within two feet of the surface we stopped and made it secure in case someone walked over it. We were now ready to break out. It was the 15th of March, 1944.



Sketch of Harry, showing the importance of Leicester Square and Piccadilly as halfway houses, dug to avoid pulling trolleys loaded with sand the entire length of the tunnel.

The Great Escape

The Escape Committee now met to make final arrangements and fix a date. As it was hoped to get two hundred prisoners out they also had to make the draw for places. We needed a moonless night and this was to be over the 23rd, 24th and 25th of March. The 25th was a Sunday and all the trains would be restricted so they settled for the 24th. Big X, with the agreement of the Senior British Officer, reserved the first twenty five places for his nominations. These were people who had been the heads of the various departments and those who, because of language ability, would have the best chance of a successful home run. After that it was the luck of the draw. Joe Noble and I were unlucky with the draw but fortunately Big X decided that some experienced diggers should be in the tunnel to act as dispatchers. We were chosen to go down when 50 prisoners had already left, pull a further 25 or so through to the exit shaft on the trolleys and then get away ourselves, having been relieved by replacement dispatchers.

On the night we assembled in hut 104 which had been evacuated of all the inhabitants not involved. What a motley crowd we were - some in smart city suits, dressed as businessmen and travelling by train, others as foreign workers and even two as German soldiers! The rest of us were going rough, looking as non-military as we could and with as much clothing on as possible. Joe and I were going east and then south, hoping to get to Yugoslavia. With a few bars of home made emergency rations in our pockets and sub zero temperatures outside, I now realise this was a hopeless task but at the time was very confident.

Tension was high and got higher as word filtered back that because of some unforeseen snags the breakout was delayed. This was made worse when it was discovered that the tunnel was ten feet short of the woods. A conference was held by the exit and it was decided to tie a rope from the top of the shaft to a tree. One man would lie at the tunnel exit and when the guard was furthest away would let escapees out who would crawl along the rope to the tree. After five had passed along, the next one out would take his place and carry on the good work. In all this had delayed the start from 9 p.m. until 10 p.m. and to make matters worse many of the escapees were in the tunnel for all this time and some had panicked, causing falls, which had to be

repaired. I should mention that for the night of the escape we had rigged up electric light throughout the tunnel with some cable stolen from a German workman.

Things were just beginning to go smoothly when the RAF decided to bomb Berlin and were routed near to the camp. This meant that the lights were turned off and although this helped those at the exit, within the tunnel confusion reigned and we had to use the fat lamps which gave only minimum light. More panic and more falls followed. Joe and I were by now in the tunnel and it took us nearly ten minutes to get each bloke through.

By now it was clear that we wouldn't get 200 out and so it was decided to close the tunnel at 5 a.m. At about 4.45 we pulled our reliefs through and started the last leg from Leicester Square to the exit. As we got close we heard a shout and then a shot. We knew immediately that the tunnel had been discovered and made our way back to Leicester Square. The two men at the bottom of the exit shaft were Clive Saxelby and Joe Moul and they came crawling past me in Piccadilly. Quickly following them, fearing that a goon may shoot down the tunnel, we scrambled back to the entrance shaft and into the hut where the entrance was closed down. It's ironic that as I was the last retreating I actually tried to collapse the tunnel by kicking out the shoring boards behind me but failed.

In the hut it was bedlam. People were burning papers and maps and trying to eat as much of their rations as they could, as we knew these would all be confiscated as soon as the Germans arrived. In no time they were in the hut and we were surrounded by dozens of goons armed with Tommy Guns and machine guns. We were marched out into the snow and Joe and I were soon singled out. They made us strip and I took exception to a goon who tried to pull at my clothes, foolishly pushing him away. To my horror the chief ferret took aim with his revolver but just at that moment the Commandant stepped out of the hut and yelled at him. Very relieved, we were marched off to the cooler with a Tommy Gun in our backs to begin what turned out to be a long spell in solitary.

Aftermath

The cooler was a single cell, about ten feet by four with a bed, chair, table and plenty of time to think. At first I was devastated that after so much hard work and having been so close to escape my attempt at freedom had failed. However, within a few days the news was beginning to filter through to us that a lot of escapees who had made it out had been shot. This made me wonder if I had been so unlucky after all and it wasn't long before those of us in solitary began to worry that the killing may not have ended. In the event I was released after fourteen days and returned to my hut.

Of the 76 who had made it out of the tunnel, 3 returned safely to the U.K. and 23 were returned to captivity. The Gestapo and SS murdered the other 50 on the direct orders of Hitler. Although it could hardly be called a success, with only 3 getting home and 50 of our friends being killed, we had at least caused havoc all over Germany with thousands of police, army and Hitler youth being diverted from their usual activities to search the Reich for escapees.

The response of the German guards to the murders was to distance themselves from the atrocity, making it plain that the Gestapo were responsible. The senior officers were, in fact, in some considerable trouble because of the escape attempt. The Commandant, Lindeiner, was held to account and faced a court martial over the breakout - we even began to feel some sympathy towards him, as he was an honourable man and always dealt with prisoners as fairly as possible. For me, the thought of making another attempt at freedom was not attractive. A lot of good

friends had been murdered, including one of those closest to me, Johnny Bull, whom I had come to know very well. The period after the shootings was very low for me and the other prisoners.

The Long March from Sagan

I was still in two minds about the merits of making another escape attempt after the murders of my friends when in October, 1944 Joe Noble and I were asked to help dig another tunnel. The camp was now short of experienced diggers and so we agreed. The tunnel, called George, was to run from the theatre, which was ideal as it offered ample space beneath the stage for sand disposal and was only 150 ft. from the wire. By the middle of January the tunnel was almost ready when we received an order from the Germans to evacuate the camp within a couple of hours. The Russians were fast approaching from the east and we were to march in the opposite direction towards the more distant western Allies.

Of course, the immediate concern was for food and other supplies during the march and so the prisoners started to make sledges out of timber from the huts, in order to carry as much as possible with us over the snow covered ground. Joe Noble, who was very good at doing such things, created a sledge out of hockey sticks (the runners) with a large box on top, the result of which was that we managed to take much more with us than most of the others - 3 or 4 red cross parcels as well as cigarettes and other useful items.

As the march started we found ourselves towards the rear of the column and we walked on and on in terrible weather. Time passed and the weather gradually warmed a little, melting the snow and so our sledges were abandoned and we had to carry as much as we could manage, rationing our supplies as we could not be sure of finding any food on the march. Whilst the local people were on the whole very friendly they too were short of supplies and so it wasn't even possible to trade coffee, etc... for food although we could sometimes get a little hot water this way. As more of the prisoners dropped out with frostbite, dysentery and other illnesses we were locked into overcrowded cattle trucks and taken by train. The journey lasted for three days and we were hungry and thirsty but were only allowed out on a couple of occasions to try and find some water.

Finally arriving at our destination we were marched to a camp where there were only bare wooden bunk beds, so we collapsed on straw, with the odd rat crawling over us. More than half the prisoners were by now suffering from dysentery, flu and frostbite. It was a terrible time and we knew that we were now being considered as hostages. We were now ordered to march back in the opposite direction again, but having heard that the Allies were making good progress we deliberately went as slowly as possible, hoping that the war would soon end. Concerns over our safety were so great that our senior officer warned the German commander that he would be held personally responsible for our wellbeing and that only humane guards should accompany us on the march. It really was a low time for us - at one point we were even fired at by one of our own aircraft, killing four naval officers at the rear of the column.

By late April it was clear that the war was won and the guards even openly let us listen to the news on a wireless owned by some locals, who had kindly let myself and another prisoner eat with them - it was odd, us having a sit down meal with Schnapps whilst our guards sat on the floor eating their less than appetising looking rations. They knew the end was nigh.

Liberation

We were moved into some stables where we could rest in a little shelter we had made and it was here, in early May that we were liberated by the arrival of a British army jeep followed by more

Allied troops. At last the war really was over for me and I arrived back home on VE day to be reunited with my family and to enjoy an excellent farmhouse meal. The following day my wife arrived - it was absolutely fantastic to see her for the first time since our interrupted honeymoon! Words can't describe how it felt to be free after three long years in captivity, it was just the most wonderful thing that could have happened but I have never forgotten my friends and comrades who were not so lucky, those killed by the Nazis or who didn't survive the long march from Sagan to liberation.

ESCAPES 1971-1972

THE 1971-1972 internment period became notable for the number of escapes successfully effected. These were, of course, immensely beneficial for the morale of the internees and those engaged in the civil resistance campaign – and very damaging for the Government's already dented image.

The first attempt was made in September in Crumlin Road jail. Five men, using ropes made of sheets to which were tied hooks from the metal struts of two tables, succeeded in getting on top of the outside wall, during a football match. The escape had been timed to coincide with an explosion outside the wall set off by comrades, but it 'backfired' when the men heard a nail bomb go off on the Antrim Road and mistook this for the signal. They got to the top of the wall, however, only to be confronted by an army patrol pointing their guns at them. The coincidental nail bomb had alerted the army. The five jumped back down and mingled with the footballers who were restraining the screws. An immediate investigation to determine the identity of the five would-be escapers was thwarted when all the men in C wing threw their sheets out onto the landing in a pile so that the escapers could not be identified.

Faulkner announced that security was being tightened. The following month the nine 'Crumlin Kangaroos', as they became known, went over the wall when rope ladders were thrown over from outside. Dressed in football gear, on 17 November, nine men^[1] went over the wall, through the already-cut barbed-wire perimeter and into waiting cars. "Screws made only half-hearted attempts to stop us," one escaper said. Two, Keenan and Mullan, were recaptured near Omagh, but the other seven successfully crossed the border and were soon to appear at a press conference in Dublin. Two monks and several local businessmen were subsequently charged with aiding and abetting the escapers.^[2]

In fact, the IRA had its own escape committee, both inside and outside the prisons and camps, but even they had nothing on the opportunity provided by the next piece of bureaucratic incompetence. Sean Hanna, of Henrietta Street, walked out the front gates of Crumlin. He had just finished a two-month sentence and was to be brought to court to appear on an explosives charge. If acquitted of this, he was certain to be interned. (Over a dozen men acquitted in the courts or against whom the Crown had withdrawn all charges were arrested as they left the court and interned. But the prison authorities had made a 'mistake'. Hanna, having walked out, completely disappeared. The Government announced that security was being tightened.

Two weeks later an even more embarrassing escape was made. The Green Howards, stationed in Ardoyne, were cock-a-hoop. They had captured Martin Meehan and Tony 'Dutch' Doherty, two of the most wanted local Provisionals. Both were severely beaten up and then tortured in Palace barracks. Next they were detained in Crumlin in the last week of November. (It is interesting to note that the army informed the press, who gleefully splashed it, that Meehan and Doherty had been responsible for nearly every murder that had taken place in Northern Ireland in the previous three years. They had "conclusive proof," they said, that Meehan and Doherty had

killed the three Scottish soldiers shot in Ligoneil, to say nothing of the five Green Howards shot in Ardoyne. Despite all this 'proof' Meehan and Doherty were not charged with any crime – just detained under the Special Powers Act).

On 2 December the prison authorities got a phone call from the press. Reporters had asked people of Ardoyne why bonfires had been lit and were told that it was because Meehan and Doherty had escaped; could the prison authorities confirm this, the reporters asked. The authorities were startled. It was the first they'd heard of it. A check was made and the awful truth revealed. Meehan, Doherty and Hugh McCann^[3] were, indeed, gone. In fact, Meehan and McCann had crossed the border before the prison authorities even knew they had escaped. Doherty stayed around to take care of some business and leisurely crossed over the next week. For five hours they had hidden, uncomfortably, in a manhole, up to their knees in water, until the rest of the prisoners had gone in from exercise, and then, under cover of fog, went over the wall, using a sheet. Comrades on the inside had wrecked the normal head count by staging an 'incident'. Furious, Faulkner ordered an inquiry into prison security. It was prepared by Cyril Cunningham and handed to Faulkner on 7 December. On 9 January 1972, a wet and stormy day, Brendan Dunlop (18) escaped from the Palace barracks torture compound. He had been escorted by a policeman to the toilet and, on his return, had ducked behind the hut instead of re-entering it. The policeman, preoccupied with the rain, assumed that Dunlop had gone in and he wandered off. Dunlop waited a while and then escaped over the barbed-wire fence under cover of the storm. He then calmly walked five miles across town to a friendly house. Two days later he was in Dublin.

On 9 January also an attempted tunnel escape from Crumlin was foiled. Three tunnels, two nearly complete, from C wing Nos. 9, 14 and 20 were discovered. Three days later two guns were found in Crumlin. It obviously wasn't as secure as was desirable and so several men were moved to the *Maidstone* since it was 'more secure' – but it was also very overcrowded. Consequently on 16 January fifty men were taken from the *Maidstone* to the new camp at Magilligan. This sudden move spurred on the internees on the ship. Next day seven^[4] of them escaped from the 'escape-proof' *Maidstone*.

This was the most bizarre of all the escapes. The men had been watching the tide for weeks, trying to gauge it. Tin cans were tossed out and their movements checked. The antics of a young seal were observed. Finally, the men were ready to go. Butter had been collected from food parcels and, during the evening recreation period, 5 o'clock, the men smeared themselves all over with the butter as a precaution against the cold. Then they daubed on boot polish, and, clad for the most part only in football shorts or pyjamas, they cut the bar on the porthole with a fret saw and slipped through. Meanwhile, their comrades chatted to the overconfident guards. No escape was expected and vigilance was slack. After all, armed guards on the deck manned searchlights, the water around the ship was full of barbed-wire, and it was also far too cold for anyone to survive in.

Undaunted, the men clambered down the *Maidstone's* steel hawser and entered the water. Several of them were cut by the barbed-wire but all succeeded in struggling through it. In single file they slowly swam the 400 yards through the bitterly cold water to the shore. It took them twenty minutes. Then the first hitch occurred. Two cars, and members of the Andersonstown unit with warm clothes were waiting for them – 500 yards away. The men had landed at the wrong spot. Moreover, a delay in their starting time caused by a recount on board meant that when they finally made the pier on Queen's Island their comrades were nowhere to be seen. Resourceful as ever, they reverted to the stand-by plan. Peter Rodgers, in his soaking underwear, emerged from cover and approached Queen's Road bus terminus. A startled bus driver having a cup of tea was asked for the loan of his greatcoat; Rodgers explained that he had fallen in. The driver lent him the coat and set out on his run back to the City Hall. The men, tired and freezing, waited until the bus returned at 6.30 p.m. The driver went into the security office, presumably to report the incident and the 'loan' of his coat. As he entered, the seven men broke

cover. Rodgers, who before internment had been a bus driver, leapt into the cab and drove off as the others piled in. 'Gunning' the bus – "the bloody thing only did 40 mph" – Rodgers drove for the main gates. The security guard had several minutes to phone through an alert which would result in the heavy gates being closed, but luck was on the escaper's side. The gates were open. As they drove past the gesticulating gate-men they waved back. The security guards, perhaps too astonished by the sight of semi-nude black men, did not fire. The bus headed for Verner Street in the Markets area, across the bridge. It was soon picked up by an army land rover but the soldiers were not foolhardy enough to pursue it right into the heart of this staunch Republican area. Instead, they alerted the local regiment, the Royal Horse Artillery. Colonel Tony Budd appeared in front of the TV cameras that evening to inform an alarmed public that everything was under control. The escapers were surrounded in the area and could not get away. In the morning they would go in and arrest them. This caused some amusement to the 'Magnificent Seven' (as they were instantly named) who were by then sitting in a drinking club in a completely different part of the city, watching the Colonel on TV. In fact, they had been no more than three minutes in the Markets. Word of their arrival had spread instantly through the grapevine and people had flocked into the narrow little streets bringing them clothing and two get-away cars. They were clear before the soldiers arrived.

Next day the Royal Horse Artillery indulged themselves by smashing down doors and ransacking the area, but to no avail. Frustrated, they vented their rage on a few local inhabitants and detained 25 men for 'screening'. But no escapers, wanted men or guns were found. Within a week the Magnificent Seven were giving the by then customary press conference in Dublin. By now things were all set for an escape from Long Kesh. There had been an abortive attempt in the first week of November when eight men had tried to break out of Compound 1 which lay closest to the perimeter. They had slipped out of their nissen huts at night and successfully cut their way through the first barbed-wire fence. But a patrol of soldiers with guard dogs had spotted them and they had had to dash back to the huts. The authorities were unable to identify any of them, but security was again tightened. Not enough, however. On Monday 7 February, Francis McGuigan, a well-known Republican (Provisional) from Ardoyne, walked out of the camp. As with the Meehan – Doherty – McCann escape, the press were the first to know. McGuigan's mother was able to tell them that her son was safe before the camp commandant was even aware that he was missing. McGuigan was soon over the border, but reticent about his method of escape as other people were involved and it could be used again. Rumours flew and Unionist MP's alleged that he had escaped disguised as a priest. In a heated question-and-answer session, the Junior Minister for Home Affairs at Stormont, John Taylor, revealed that it had taken 18 hours to discover his escape because "it wasn't possible, without the assistance of the army, to have periodic roll calls or even head counts at Long Kesh. Needless to say, the internees do not cooperate in such exercises," he added. Rev. William Beattie of the Democratic Unionist Party displayed his brand of Christian charity in the comment: "The Minister's attitude that the internees be given human treatment only insults this House because they are not human; they are subhuman."

Crumlin Road jail was soon to be in the news again. On 12 February a mass jail break by 85 political prisoners on remand in C wing was narrowly foiled. The theme tune of TV's 'Dr. Who' was the signal for the break, and at 5.50 p.m. all the prison officers on C wing were 'taken over' by the internees. No violence was used, except in the case of one English officer who struggled, and a young lad, who wasn't involved in the break, thinking it was just a riot, hit him with a billiard cue. The screws were tied up and "treated courteously," according to the would-be escapers' statement. Using the keys, the men got into the passage leading to the exercise yard and sawed through two bars with the omnipresent hacksaw. Out into the yard they went with mattresses and blankets to put over the barbed-wire. Meanwhile, three more screws chanced to walk in and two of them were tied up also – making eight in all. One, however, seeing what was happening, ran back and gave the alarm. As the men were getting over the wall the soldiers

arrived with orders to shoot. The men were forced back and, rather than risk death, they surrendered. "But for one bit of bad luck, C wing's 85 'remands' would all have been freed," claimed a statement smuggled out of the jail to *The Irish News* and published on 15 February 1972.

Nor was that the end of tribulations of the security forces at Crumlin Road jail. On 5 May 19-year-old Michael Joseph Willis of Belfast disappeared from it. Again it took an anonymous phone call to alert the authorities that an escape had taken place. Willis, an Official Republican, had just been sentenced to ten years on a firearms charge. After ten days he was rescued by the IRA, escaping in a garbage truck. A week later he, too, appeared in Dublin. An interesting sequel was his appeal against the sentence. This was heard, *in absentia*, on 1 June, and the sentence was reduced to seven years, the judge commenting that "Willis seems to have absented himself from custody."

Footnotes Chapter 9:

1. Seamus Storey, Thomas Maguire, Thomas Fox, Peter Hennessy, Bernard Ellison, Thomas Kane, Terence Clarke, Chris Keenan, David Mullan. All were remand prisoners.
2. Rev. Thomas O'Neill was fined £500, and Brother Patrick Sheehan £250.
3. Hugh McCann was recaptured in Andersonstown in May. Martin Meehan was recaptured on 9 August 1972 – one year after the introduction of internment.
4. Seamus Convery (31), Tom Gorman (26), James Bryson (23), Thomas Toland (25), Thomas Kane (24), Peter Rodgers (27) and Martin Taylor (25). 'Tucker' Kane and Martin Taylor were recaptured in May 1972, Tom Gorman and James Bryson in September. Bryson was to be in the news again. On 22 February 1973 he made a sensational escape from Crumlin Road courthouse. Using a gun smuggled to him the night before, he overpowered four warders, made off wearing one of their uniforms and got clean away.

our.

The following is an interview that Jimmy James recorded in 2000 for BBC Radio Shropshire, including additional detail from "The War Behind the Wire" by Patrick Wilson. © BBC. WW2 People's War is an online archive of wartime memories contributed by members of the public and gathered by the BBC. The archive can be found at bbc.co.uk/ww2peopleswar/.

"I was caught in the morning and taken to various places and interrogated. I went through Dulag Luft which was the transit place for RAF aircrew at that time. We arrived in Stalag Luft 1 (at Barth) on the Baltic in July 1940. It was a miserable, dreary little hole of 2 or 3 bare wooden barrack blocks surrounded by the usual barbed wire entanglements of a prisoner of war camp and we were actually literally without anything except the clothes we were shot down in. We had no books, no diversions, hardly any food - a bit of black bread and soup at lunchtime and no hope, because it was before the Battle of Britain and the Germans had occupied the whole of the continent of Western Europe. So we wondered what had happened and how long we would be there, or whether we would ever get home. But we were young, and the place filled up with more RAF aircrew who were shot down."

"The camp staff were all members of the Luftwaffe and behaved, for the most part, in a civilized manner towards the prisoners. In the early days, particularly, our relations with the Germans

were good, provided that Higher Authority and the Nazi Party were kept at a distance. Major Von Stachelski, the Kommandant at Barth, was a humane and thoughtful man. We was imbibing one evening in the Mess bar, as was his custom, when he fell to thinking about the poor British locked up in their compound with nothing to drink but water and Ersatz coffee. The more he drank the more he dwelt on their sad state. Then he could stand it no longer. He gave orders that some boxes were to be filled with a good quality of bottled beer and ensured they were delivered to the compound where they were received with due gratitude and joy by the inmates. Unfortunately, the incident was reported to Higher Authority and the Kommandant was relieved of his post immediately."

"The guards were conscripts from all walks of life and they seemed ill at ease in their helmets and new military uniforms. They were an obvious target for our youthful exuberance. We called them 'goons' and often whistled a popular ditty like the Wizard of Oz in time to their marching when they went off after appel. This caused so much irritation that the SBO [*Senior British Officer*] soon put a stop to it. Nevertheless, the popular sport of 'goon baiting' was often irresistible to the younger prisoners and continued in one form or another for most of the war."

"We subsisted on the German ration for a non-working civilian: a cup of Ersatz coffee, made from acorns, in the morning, a bowl of soup, usually Sauerkraut, with a few potatoes at midday, and one fifth of a loaf of black bread with a pat of margarine and a small piece of sausage or cheese in the evening, supplied on a room basis and divided up by the room 'stooge' for the day. The bread was a heavy, soggy mixture of rather questionable ingredients. The sour taste at first offended the palate but there was little else to eat, and it could be improved by toasting when there was fuel. These rations amounted to barely 800 calories a day, less than half the minimum required for an adult human being. The pangs of hunger were ever present. The [*Red Cross*] parcels made a tremendous difference to our well-being. They were the difference between near-starvation and an adequate diet. I well remember the meal in our room after the first parcel issue. It seemed we ate solidly for some hours. Amongst the goodies produced from the various tins were cheese, corned beef, stew, biscuits (hard tack), prunes, even cocoa, and best of all, tea. We were careful to eat slowly; a man in another camp died after bolting the entire contents of his first Red Cross parcel too quickly."

"War has been defined as 'long periods of boredom interspersed with short periods of tension and terror'. Life as a prisoner was a minor extension of war. There seemed no end to the boredom which stretched out endlessly into the grey future. We were all young men cut off in our prime from normal life, and forced to live a spartan, closely knit, communal existence, hemmed in by barbed wire, guard boxes, machine guns, patrolling sentries and dogs."

"We dug a lot of tunnels from that camp and I nearly got out when two of us, a chap called John Shaw and I, dug a tunnel from an incinerator near the wire. We used it on an air raid when the lights went out but unfortunately I was caught getting in and he had already got in and got away and he got home."

"We were evacuated from there in April 1942 and taken to the east compound at Stalag Luft III, where I did some more tunnelling of very loose sand, fine soft sand and even if you did get out of that, it was a long way to dig - for a start to the wire - and the camp itself was about as far distant as it could be from neutral territory, i.e. Switzerland and the Baltic Coast, which were the favourite places for escapist to head to."

"[*Stalag Luft III*] had been newly built on Goering's orders for air crew and the Stalag Luft I was evacuated so they were collecting all the RAF prisoners in Germany into Stalag Luft III. There was another movement too while they were building a new compound - we were taken up to Schubin in Poland - Oflag 21B, where we met with RAF prisoners from other camps. ..At this time, the bomber offensive was increasing and there were hundreds of air crew being shot down coming in so they had to keep building camps."

"Although we were only up in Poland for about 6 months it was a period I would prefer to forget. It was very noisy, we were in barrack blocks with about 80 in a block, it got jolly cold in winter: - 20 degrees centigrade and not much heating. The only plus was that it was a different form of camp. There were brick built barrack blocks built on a hillside, and there was a bit of a garden and a building that had been used as a girls' school at one time and the barracks were former Polish Army barracks, but it was a change from the normal barbed wire cage we were in."

"We were taken back from there in April 1943 back to Stalag Luft III north compound. There we found that the escape organisation which had come over from the east compound (there had been a number of people left in the east compound) and they were taken to the new north compound and among them was [Roger Bushell](#) who became the Big X. He was a very charismatic South African - he was a rising young Barrister pre-war. He was CO of a Hurricane squadron in 1940 and he was shot down. He had already had two very good attempts to escape. He was caught on the Swiss border at one point and they told him when he went to Berlin after the last one, they said, "Squadron Leader Bushell," they said, "If you escape again you will be shot!"

"Well he immediately started organising the Great Escape, one might say. He decreed that there were to be only three link tunnels, Tom, Dick and Harry, and they were to be all built simultaneously on identical lines and no other tunnelling was to be allowed because previously we had all been burrowing like bunnies all over the place. To give you an example, when we left Barth, 45 tunnels had been tried and a number of tunnels had been tried in the east compound too before we came over. So he said, "Right, we'll stop doing that. We will concentrate all the sources into Tom, Dick and Harry."

"In the early days we were regular aircrew, regular officers, regular NCOs coming in. But now it was a citizen army with people with talents and skills of all sorts so there was no shortage of people who would advise on building a foolproof trap for instance, like Harry's trap. This was built on tiles and we took the tiles up and took the black stove which stood on it away, stuck the tiles onto a hinged board and dug down through the concrete into the ground and the shaft down below that. They put handles on the stove so it could be moved at any time, alight or not, and I think the trap-doorer could either shut or open the trap in about 13 seconds at one stage if we had an alarm of any Germans in the compound. The other two traps were also very ingenious, Tom and Dick, built in concrete and invisible to the naked eye."

"These tunnels went down 30 feet to avoid the seismographs on the wire. At the base of the shafts were 3 chambers, there was a chamber for the air pump which was made from kit bags, air lines made from milk tins, another chamber which was a workshop for the engineers - the tin bashers as we used to call them - and another chamber to store the sand which came out of the tunnel and was taken up and disposed."

"Of course it all had to be shored, and where to get the wood? A lot of it was got from underneath the hut, which is a double flooring, but a whole lot was taken from bed boards on which we slept in the huts. After a while it got very uncomfortable sleeping because we were sleeping on about 3 or 4 bed boards towards the end of it. Anyway, it was all shored, the tunnel was about two feet square, there was electric light (tapped from the Third Reich) there was a railway, a trolley which carried a container into which the sand was put and there were two halfway houses because of having to haul the sand a large distance, so instead of hauling it 300 feet you only had to haul it 100 feet at which there was a changeover as the tunnel progressed."

"Of course there had to be a very big back-up organisation for this so the tunnelling section, dispersal section, the security section and one or two others connected directly with the tunnel. But in building a tunnel, the main factor is two things, security and dispersal and they are both allied because dispersal affects security. If the Germans see a whole lot of extra earth around the place they know there's a tunnel going on."

"We got round it by the penguin method, which was suspending two sacks down each trouser leg and operating a string from each pocket which activated a hole at the bottom from which the

sand trickled out. The penguin used to go round, often in a great coat looking like a penguin, trickling this stuff out. The trouble was that it (the sand) was a different colour to the earth in the compound, and so we had to have a chap shuffling along behind him kicking it into the earth. It proved a very effective method, it was in fact the invention of our Lieutenant Commander Peter Fanshawe who was a Fleet Air Arm Observer shot down over Norway in 1940. In the summer of 1943 we dispersed 130 tons of sand from the three tunnels which were all being dug simultaneously. There were, I think 200 penguins employed in the organisation. They made 25,000 trips."

"There was a chap called Edwards who hated the camp and was desperate to get out. He got up one day and said, 'Well boys, I'm going for a walk round the compound and am going over the wire.' He'd said this before but no one had taken much notice. This time, however, he meant what he said and half an hour later began climbing up the fence. A guard shouted at him to come down but he paid no attention. The guard just shot him dead. He fell off the wire like a bird and there was a rather ugly incident, in fact it was a near riot, when he was taken off and they wouldn't allow anyone to go near him."

"Until Tom was found, in September 1943, we had a lot of Americans in with us and they did a lot of work on Tom and they were in fact transferred to their own compound about a week before it was due to be operated. But as I said it was found because the Chief Ferret (German guard employed to spy on the prisoners), a chap called Glemnitz, who spoke good English and had been with us from the start, took up position in the wood opposite the block where Tom was being dug."

"They suspected something going on there and they saw some people coming out with boxes of sand, which was a bit careless. Of course they rushed in and threw everybody out of the block and searched it and they were just pegging out (concealing the trap door) by complete bad luck. One of the goons, as we used to call them, had his pick grating on the floor and just happened to scrape some of the dust away from Tom's trap which was in the concrete. He found this indentation in the concrete and gave a shout and they all rushed in and of course Tom's trap was blown. The Germans were absolutely delighted at finding it, not least because it was within a week of completion. For everyone connected with the tunnel, though, the discovery was a huge disappointment. The only light moment was when the Germans overdid it with the dynamite and very nearly blew up the nearby guard tower. It sank down into the hole made by the blast at a crazy angle. So Tom had done his bit for the war effort."

"Well after that we packed it up until January. In the meantime of course there were other activities going on... At Christmas time we were in the habit of brewing up a hooch of some sort made from prunes or whatever dried fruits we could get, which we then fermented into wine. It was double or triple distilled by our home-made brewery. The result was a bit horrifying but it nevertheless kept us warm and we drank it. At Christmas in 1943 a guard came round with a couple of dogs and was shutting a window of a room when we was handed a bottle of this home-made hooch, which he drank on the spot and promptly collapsed. His two dogs dragged their master to the gate. It's not known what happened to him but he was never seen again. On another occasion somebody threw a bottle of this hooch at a guard in the guard tower. He also drank it in one go and seconds later fell out of the guard tower."

"Surprisingly, the Germans allowed us to build a theatre in the North Compound. We had an architect in the camp called Caldwell who designed it and many people helped with the building. It was actually a very fine theatre, with an excellent stage. The auditorium could hold something like two or three hundred... The theatre was a great morale raiser and in fact we had a great deal of talent there. Among others we had Rupert Davies of Maigret fame, Tolley Rosswell who wrote the Carry on series, Peter Butterworth who acted in it and John Casson, Cybil Thorndyke's son, who ran a theatre group after the war and so they put on some very good shows, Rookery Nook and Arsenic and Old Lace and all the West End shows going on at the time. *[One man had]* bought a ticket for Arsenic and Old Lace in London that was on in the West End. And he was

bemoaning this fact when he came into the camp. He said, "I bought a ticket for this show," and I said, "Oh that's all right old boy, we're putting it on next week. You can see it here!". We built the theatre ourselves and that was part of their ploy because we could hire costumes from German theatre people and chaps dressed up very effectively as women. So it was a great morale raiser: you put on your best blue and went to the theatre about every fortnight."

"Besides that we'd got a very good library. We could study anything under the sun that we wanted. In fact I passed a couple of exams in Russian and German from the Royal Society of Arts. But people did much more than that: passed final engineering exams, qualified as lawyers, and so on. The papers were sent out by the Red Cross and invigilated by educational types. We had a Master from King's College, for instance. So by this time it was a citizen air force and you could find all kind of talents. So there was that to keep us going and come January they decided to reactivate Harry. Already about 100 feet had been dug, that went out from block 104 North."

"Now the problem was dispersal because by this time there was a whole lot of snow on the ground and it was a very cold winter at that time, so what to do? Now somebody said in a committee meeting, "Well what about the theatre?" In the early days, the huts which were all built on piles, about a foot off the ground, at the sides from the floor down to the ground from outside were covered in and enclosed. So you could make a trap in a room, go down underneath and crawl about quite happily without anyone seeing you, or dig a tunnel and throw the earth around so that the Germans wouldn't know. But once we'd done one the Germans were on to that so they took all the sides of the huts away and we couldn't do that. And hence the penguin business, but we couldn't use the penguin business in the winter, so somebody said (use) the theatre. We'd built it ourselves and the sides were all enclosed."

"I met Peter Fanshawe, Dispersal Chief, walking round the compound one day and he said, "Would you like a job?" I said, "Yes, I'm unemployed at the moment and likely to be for a while." And he said, "Well I want you to be in charge of one dispersal team underneath." Ian Cross, who was a Squadron Leader who had bombed the Scharnhorst - we used to call him "Scharnhorst Cross" - would be the other. So he said "I want you two to come along to the theatre and have a look underneath", which we did. Somebody had built a trap underneath the floor and Cross and I went down and had a look and ideal! Bags of space under the auditorium. So when Harry was started we had the dispersal fixed and they used to work, closed down (work with the tunnel sealed) all day - with the air pump they could do that - and they had electric light in the day time, and worked quite happily. They did this between roll calls in the morning and roll calls in the evening. The sand was all stored in the chamber."

"After roll call, when it was dark, they kept the doors open till about 10 o'clock, then we went down under the theatre with our dispersal teams and the penguins brought the stuff in kit bags by a secure route in the dark, through the tunnel, through the huts and poured it down the trap and we worked like hell underneath dispersing this stuff. So this went on for about two months when Harry was finished it went out to a length of about 360 feet, I think."

"Of the 1,500 in the north compound at Stalag Luft III only about six hundred were in the Escape Organization. The others weren't interested. I would say about a third of the prisoners were, like myself, hard-core escapers. Of the others, some had been very keen in the early days but now thought it wasn't worth it, and the rest were either against it or just didn't think it was worthwhile. My motivation was simply freedom. Being behind the wire is not a thing to be recommended... You're just shut away in a little world of your own. You feel out of it. You are useless. One fantasized about life outside the wire - the life you'd left, the girlfriend you'd left and so on. Naturally you thought about your village pub, where you could just go and have a pint of beer when you wanted it."

"In about mid-March 1944 we were then in a bit of a dilemma because it [*the escape*] was ready to go, but there were two factors: it was a terribly cold winter - it was the coldest March for 30 years, and the people who were going on foot would be in a very bad way. But, at the same time we had security considerations and we knew that the Gestapo were interested. In fact they had

already visited the Commandant and made all sorts of threats. So, Wings [*Wing Commander Day*] said to Roger, "Well this is an operational war, Roger. You know, the main thing is to cause the Germans trouble." So he said, "Right, well we'll fix the date for 24th March. In the meantime of course all the back up organisations were working like hell getting things ready."

"We had a mapping section which turned out 400 maps of the area. Forged passes, they worked day and night turning out some brilliant passes which passed stringent Gestapo checks later on. They were mostly artists, led by an artist called Tim Whelan who was later shot. The clothing department made very good clothes and suits. Compasses, food, you name it, intelligence of course. And train times, we knew all the train times."

"So we decided on how many were to go. Of the 600 who had worked on the organisation, 200 only could go out so they had to draw lots. The first 30 were specially selected by Roger as the most likely to get home on the grounds of language and so on and so there were a number of foreigners among them... A lot of them had been out before and had also done an enormous amount of work on the tunnel. This first group of thirty were chosen and all had suits, papers and money, so that they would be fully equipped to travel hundreds of miles across Germany into neutral territory... The next 70 also had these considerations but they also considered the work they had done for the organisation. I was lucky enough to draw number 39 out - it might have been unlucky, mind you. I was put in with a group of twelve chaps who had papers as workers in a local wood mill who were going on leave... I was, according to the papers, a Yugoslav and was fitted out with a pair of middle-eastern trousers, which I dirtied to make them look like workman's clothes. I also put some civilian buttons on my tunic. My partner was a Greek fighter pilot. I had been asked if I would like to go with him and I thought it might be a good idea because we could go down to the Danube, into Greece and then he'd help get us over to Turkey which was neutral."

"So at the time, zero hour arrived there was electric excitement in the air. All the people in block 104 cleared out and we were told the time to report, we had to report to a Wing Commander two blocks down. He had his stooges out watching for Germans and if it was okay you were directed into the operational hut... Before I left my hut the cook in the room gave us a particularly good feed. I was the only one going from my room and happened to have stored 4,000 cigarettes. I told my companions that they were welcome to them, but one of them rather rudely replied, 'You keep them. You'll need them when you come out of the cooler.' No words could, however, dampen my excitement. So off I went, with my pack and rations, and routed by secure means to Hut 104."

"Not long before 10pm we were all in there and the doors were shut and they started to get out, but there were four things which held up the breakout. One was icing on the trap. The trap got iced up and it took them an hour and a half to break out of it. When they got out they found that the exit hole was about 20 or 30 feet short of the woods, which meant that coming out in the snow you were quite near the guard on the wire and there was a flashlight with a guard box and all that and you would have stood out like a sore thumb if the sentry had seen you. So Roger said, "Put a man behind the bush." A ferret bush [*aka. Ferret Fence*] they would call it, where the ferret used to lie and watch with a rope, and hang the rope down the exit hole and just signal to people when they can come up. The chap would give a tug on the rope, and if it was okay to go he would give one tug and if it was not he would give two tugs."

"We had to have a simple system like that. It got people out but it held it up of course. Then there was a fall in the tunnel. Somebody with a suitcase knocked one of the supports away and a whole lot of sand came down, then that had to be cleared. Finally there was an air-raid on Berlin, which didn't effect us, but all the lights went out and it meant the lights in the tunnel went out and we had to light fat lamps. So by the time I got out it was about, oh, 1 o'clock, 1:30 in the morning I should think."

"I presented myself to the trap controller at the top. His job was to see you didn't carry too much luggage or weren't too bulky. He passed me and so I went ahead heartened, and climbed down

the thirty-foot shaft. It was like going down a ship's hold. At the bottom there was a chap working the air pump. I lay flat on the trolley, yanked the rope, thus signifying I was ready to be taken down the tunnel and off I went, pulled by a chap at the first halfway house, Piccadilly. There I changed trolleys and got pulled to Leicester Square, where I got on another trolley and was pulled the last hundred feet up to the exit by the haulers at the end of the tunnel. On reaching the exit hole, I stood up and saw the stars above me. It was a very euphoric moment. I didn't think about what might happen, the fact was that I had got out of the camp. I was free at last. I thought of the old RAF motto 'through difficult to the stars'. I climbed to the top and received the signal from the man behind the ferret fence. With that, I crawled out onto the snow and joined my group."

"After joining my group in the woods, we were led off round the camp by a Squadron Leader Williams. It was a freezing cold night and we must have walked about ten miles before we reached our objective, which was a country station called Tshiebsdorf where we knew we could take a train south. I was feeling terribly excited. The plan was that we would get down to Czechoslovakia. After a short wait we got on board a train and travelled south to another country station - just north of the Czech border. We expected a check at the station but it was nine o'clock in the morning and obviously the alarm had not reached the station yet. At this point the group split up and I went off with my partner Skanzikas, a Greek fighter pilot."

"We proceeded to climb over the Reisenberge - or giant mountains - with snow up to our necks. Not only was it tough but we knew that if we had another night in those conditions we would probably freeze to death. Rather than proceeding on we walked into Hirschberg West Station secure in the knowledge that we had good passes and some money. At the ticket office we were intercepted by a civilian policeman who asked us for our papers. We presented them airily and he looked at them and put them in his pocket. 'Hey, what's going on? I'm German and I'm just off to see my old mother in Belgrade,' I told him. 'We'll talk about it in the station,' came his reply. We were taken down to the police station, where there were already four other members of our party locked up. Two more came in later. By the end eight of us had been caught in the local area and all eight of us were interrogated and then taken to the civilian jail in Hirschenberg, where we were each thrown into a cell."

"It was only twelve hours since our escape. We were prisoners again and it was shattering. We didn't have any idea what was going to happen. After a couple of days four of our names were called out - Skanzikas, a Canadian and Pawluk and Kiewnarski, two Poles. They were told to pack up their things and go. Our natural reaction was that we thought they were going to be taken back to the camp. In fact they were taken off to be shot."

"By now a national alert had been raised and Hitler had had a meeting with Himmler and other top Nazis. They'd flown into a rage and said all seventy-six people who got out should be shot. However, someone had reminded them that, if you shoot the whole lot, it will look much like murder and they will shoot our prisoners. As a compromise, Hitler decided that fifty were to be executed and left it to Himmler to choose the names. He then passed the job over to a Gestapo general called Nebe. It seems Nebe just looked through the names on a card index which stated age and marital status. All the Poles and eastern Europeans were shot along with other escapees who were selected on a seemingly random basis. They were taken from their various jails, taken to an autobahn two or three at a time, invited to perform natural functions and just shot in the back of the head."

"The three others were also taken away and I was left on my own with a rather queasy feeling. At one point during that week the Gestapo came in and I thought they were going to interrogate me, but in fact they wanted me to get out of the cell so that they could interrogate some other unfortunate. Anyway, after about seven days, the Meister, a rather unpleasant little man, looked round the door at about 5 o'clock in the morning and said, 'Raus, Schnell'. I dressed, picked up whatever small things I had and went down the stairs where I was greeted by the Gestapo. One of them pulled out a revolver and told me not to do anything stupid. They marched me off to

Hirschberg station and took me by train to Gestapo Headquarters, which I was glad to see had been bombed and was in a rather rickety condition. I sat there for about three hours and was then drive out of Berlin, escorted by an SS man beside me and two in the front, with no idea of where I was going. The card stopped beside a dark wood and as we went through it a big wall became visible, with electric wire on top of it."

"We went along, it looked rather sinister, and then they knocked on this door and the SS officer, who hadn't spoken to me before then, got out and said, "Ah, Herr James! This is a nice place. You will not escape from here." The door opened and an SS Corporal came and took me in charge and I went in. There were two barrack huts with electrified wire round them and another path and a guard with a dog and a 10 foot wall with electric wire on top of that outside. I was taken into the little compound with two huts and down to the end and came face to face with Wing Commander Day, or Wings Day, who had been the senior British officer in Stalag Luft III and had also gone out on the break. So I said, 'Oh hello Sir,' I said, 'Is this Colditz?' 'No, I wish it was,' he replied, 'This is Sachsenhausen Concentration Camp. The only way out of here is up the chimney.' We were under no illusions of the fate that awaited us should we attempt to break out."

"In fact conditions for us were not too bad at the beginning. We were given adequate rations and the guards treated us fine. In effect we were political prisoners. Our first introduction to the main compound, however, gave us quite a shock. We would be taken over there for showers. In this compound, there was a semi-circular area which was used for roll calls but was also used as a boot-testing place, and had different surfaces along it - grass, asphalt, stones and so on. On this track miserable, thin, stripped figures were made to test boots for the Russian Front. They'd be driven round all day - walking some twenty-five kilometres carrying a thirty-pound pack on their backs whilst living on starvation rations. If they dropped, they were kicked and dogs were set on them. At the head of the appel platz was a gallows on which inmates were hanged publicly for the smallest peccadillo. If anyone escaped the whole compound was lined up until they were caught and were then made to watch a public hanging... So I think this was the first time that I realised the evil we were fighting and that the war was worthwhile. Well, they brought us in there about once every month I think for a shower."

"So I found myself in this little compound [*separate to the above*] with about, I think there were about 18-20 odds and bods in it. There were four Russians including two generals, two RAF Poles dropping supplies to the Resistance who had been beaten up by the Gestapo and then put into Sachsenhausen. There were four Irish soldiers, there were two Italian soldiers who had been orderlies to the Italian Naval Military and Air Attaches who had been taken out when Italy went out of the war. And then the five British officers, Wings Day, Johnnie Dodge, who was related to Churchill and had also been an Army Major in the first war, Flight Lieutenant Sydney Dowse who had been on the Great Escape, myself and Peter Churchill who was an SOE Agent, married to Odette. Then we were later joined by Jack Churchill. And he came in and helped us with the tunnel."

"When we first arrived it didn't look very helpful as far as escaping stakes went. Wings said, 'Just lie low for a while and see what the SS do.'... In the meantime we decided to build a tunnel, and again security was the main factor because we knew there was a Gestapo stooge among the prisoners with us. So we didn't tell anyone - except the British officers - what we were doing, and Sydney Dowse and I were the only ones digging. We took it in turns to dig. We had to dig trenches under the floorboards of the hut. We had one big plus there because the sides of the hut on the outside were enclosed and this would never have happened at a Prisoner Of War camp, but the SS didn't think about this, they were 'all-powerful' and we couldn't get out."

"So we had a great time underneath dispersing. Well, it was hard work I would say. We had to dig these trenches and it took us three months to do those, well there was only six inches' clearance. So the earth from the trench we had to push to the side and it was very dusty, slow work and we had to be very careful. One of us was up in the hut and we had a pre-arranged song

which was the Zulu War Song. I won't sing it because I can't sing, but it went 'Hold him down you Zulu warrior', I think. If an SS man came along then the chap underneath would stop moving. Wings of course couldn't go down because he was the senior British officer and would have been missed and the Dodger was much too big, a huge man. So the two of us dug away, as I said Jack Churchill came and helped us half way through."

"The tunnel was finished about 23rd September 1944 and we operated it that night. It was raining, luckily, and also luckily we got the SS Corporal whom we didn't like on duty - more of that later. Anyway we all got out and previously we had seen that they were building another compound outside and there was a big wall. For some reason they stopped taking us for showers and we didn't know whether we would be able to get over the wall or not. We thought there was a ladder there but we weren't sure. So Wings wrote to the Commandant and said, "Can you send us some parallel bars? We're British officers and we like to keep fit." And so he sent them - surprisingly!"

"All we did was to extend it to its full height, stand on top and look over the wall. So there was a nice builder's ladder there propped against the wall ready for us to use. Well we used it and it was a very long drop down the side - about 12 feet, I think. Luckily it was soft woodland and we all got over and we went our various ways. Jack (Churchill) and I plugged up the Berlin-Rostock railway line and had a lot of adventures, of which there is no time to relate here. We were eventually caught after a couple of weeks quite near the Baltic - we could smell the sea anyway, salt on our lips and that sort of thing. We were planning to get a ship to Sweden but we were caught and put in the local jail at Gustrov and then taken back in a Black Moria to Sachsenhausen. We had got about 100 miles north, I think."

"In the meantime Wings and Sydney (Dowse) had been caught. They had bad luck, they had gone to an address in Berlin which they had got from one of the Irishmen who had been out on a special do in Berlin where the Germans thought they would try and train the Irish up to go and strike a blow at the Saxon foe - blow up the Houses of Parliament or something - but they had no intention of doing that. They were all soldiers from the 51st Highland Division. The Germans had got on to them and they had put them in Sachsenhausen. One of them had given an address of a Todt Organisation (German Labour organisation) chap who had been running supplies to the West Wall and he said that he was anti-Nazi. So they went to this house - they went on the S-Bahn, as they had some money from the Great Escape - and they found out it had been bombed. They were just cleaning themselves up when a woman saw them and called the police and that was that."

"Wings had had a very bad time, he had been chained up and beaten about and finally after a lot of interrogation they let him off the hook. He said, 'Look, all I want is to be free. Your air crew in England are the same, they do just the same things. All I am doing is, I am a Wing Commander, all my contemporaries are air rank now and I want to get home.'" They said: 'All right Wing Commander, we understand.' The Dodger (Major Johnnie Dodge) was out for another month. He was head up in a pig sty and was eventually found. Somebody had given him away. I think it was a French man, I'm not sure. Anyway, Himmler had in fact ordered our execution, and also the execution of the commandant, the architect who designed the camp, the security officer and the guard on duty at the time, who was the one we wanted to clobber! So anyway he realised he was writing off too many trained killers so he rescinded the order and we had solitary confinement in the cell block for an unspecified period. Well this was actually Death Row, because you never knew when the door opened where you were going. Sachsenhausen was one of the main concentration camps and from 1936 when it was opened, till 1945, of 200,000 who went through, over 100,000 died from starvation, torture, you name it. So it wasn't a very good situation to be in."

"It contained prisoners they didn't like and the expectation of life there was not very long. We knew that we were in a bit of trouble after fifty had been shot in the Great Escape, and didn't think a further escape attempt would be viewed benevolently... Even after our sentence had been

commuted, it was really more a case of having a delayed death sentence because anyone who went into the cell block was very likely to be taken to one of the places of execution later. There was a place called 'Station Z' where people were shot, and another place for hanging. There was also a gas chamber. One further method of execution on the camp was the genickschuss installation - which in German literally means 'neck shot'. The way they did this was that you were shown in to a room where you would be greeted by a man in a white coat, who you naturally presumed was a doctor. He beckoned you to stand on some scales and would measure your weight and then height. Unbeknown to the victim was that there was a hole in the wall behind you through which an SS man would shoot you in the back of the neck while loud music played in the background. The blood would be wiped away and then 'Next please'. They shot something like 18,000 Soviet Army personnel using that method in October 1941 alone. The SS guards who did it were given a holiday in Capri as a reward."

"We knew the dangers of being in the cell block. You could smell the smoke from the crematorium. The SS sergeant who was in charge of it was a man who went round and murdered people in their cells with his own hands. His normal method was strangulation. We didn't know the details but we knew some nasty things went on. Whenever the door opened you didn't know where you were being taken or what would happen. It wasn't a very nice feeling at all."

"I'd be screamed at in the early morning at around 5 o'clock. I'd then have to empty my bucket and be screamed at again on the way back by the SS guard, who would then give me a broom to sweep my cell out. I got a bit tired of this screaming after a while and rather unwisely I screamed back. It was a bit of a gamble and I think I was only saved by the fact that I was a British officer. Anyway he calmed down after that. Much of the time was spent meditating and things that you thought you'd forgotten came back to you. In that respect, it was a rather interesting period. The other thing one could do was watch the prisoners exercising outside through the bars at the top. You had to get up on your bed to do it and be very careful. The SS guards outside wouldn't hesitate to shoot if they saw you. Then you would walk yourself round your cell which was some three foot by seven foot. By then it might be lunchtime, which consisted of some sauerkraut soup. In the afternoon you would try and rest but, if the guard looked through the peephole and saw you, he would open the door and shout, 'Raus - rest forbidden'. For an hour every day we went on a walk in what they called Hitler Strasse - an exercise area around the other side of the wing from where the cells were; once again there were plenty of sights of torture, including an underground bunker where they put people to starve. In the evening I played chess with myself using pieces of wrapping paper. I always won which was at least a morale raiser! Then it was bedtime, feeling that you'd had quite a full day. That was how I coped."

"They had a tannoy in the camp and I remember that on Christmas Eve they played Silent Night. It was the most incongruous thing hearing this beautiful hymn in such a satanic place. Quite a lot of commandos came in and were executed the next morning on account of Hitler's Commando Order. Among them were Commander Cumberledge and three sergeants who were in a commando group that had been captured blowing up the Corinth Canal during the Greek campaign. They arrived in Sachsenhausen after terrible tortures and Jack Churchill managed to communicate through tapping on the wall. They were taken off and shot soon after their arrival. During that month, out of a population of eighty, only thirteen were left by the time we were moved on."

"We were finally released in February 1945 when the Oberscharführer, the SS Sergeant Major in charge of the block had orders to reduce the population. To him it was fairly simple. They were just taken out to Station Z where there was a gassing or shooting place or whatever, hanging. Or he would come and do it himself in the cell. He was known as The Beast of the Bunker. So by February '45, out of the population of 80, about 13 of us were left and that included the British officers. The door opened one day and the guard said, "Komm, komm!" Pack up and come. I hadn't got much to pack up."

"We went down the corridor, into a cell at the end and the other chaps were in front of the commandant and he said, "Well, you're going back to your friends in the Sonderlager now, but if you try to escape again you will be shot!" So we went back – they didn't know what had happened to us in the Sonderlager (main concentration camp) and we got a big welcome. One event which impressed us was we saw aeroplanes tearing along at an enormous rate of knots above us and they had no propellers. We didn't know about jet engines at the time. We had all been in the bag for a long time and we couldn't figure it out. Of course, they were German Messerschmitt 210s I think they called them, operating on the Russian front."

"The camp was evacuated and we were taken to the station and travelled by train for a couple of days down to the Czech border and there we were introduced to a frightful concentration camp called Flossenberg. We were herded through the gates, SS shouting and screaming at us and there was no room in the cells, apparently. We were taken to the hospital, which was raised up a bit, it was very hilly country. So you could see over the camp. As soon as we went in, the commandant said, "There is no room for these people, they must be shot!" Well luckily we had with us two Germans - one was an SS corporal, the nice one we liked and the man with him was in the SD, which was the SS intelligence who had helped to get us off the hook in Wings' enquiry. He told the commandant – he had been a policeman before – that if they shot us there would be some awkward questions asked in Berlin because these were British officers and they would be useful for bargaining with the Allies as hostages. We were allowed to live."

"We had a view over the camp. The inmates were driven to work in a quarry at the far end of the camp. They died like flies, at the rate of 50 a day. The crematorium couldn't take all the bodies so they were burned in bonfires at the side of the camp. We had been there a few days and Wings was looking out of the window and he gave a shout. There were three stretchers going past with bodies covered with blankets spotted with brains and blood and so on. We learned later that they were the bodies of Pastor Bonhoeffer who was a famous theologian, Admiral Canaris who was head of German intelligence and also in the resistance against Hitler, and General Hans Oster who was his adjutant."

"On the same day there were thirteen Allied agents executed so there was room at the inn for us and we were taken down to the cells. It was a fairly informal group because we were allowed out of our cell to walk about and there was a little yard out there with a shed at the end of it. We knew what was going on in there - that was the execution shed. There was a young blonde corporal in charge of the execution and Wings got talking to him one day and he said: "Look, the Allies will be here very soon. They won't like what's been going on in that shed." "Oh," he said, "orders are orders."

"We were vacated from there after about 10 days and put on transport, a group went on a Black Moria and Jack Churchill and I and a few others were put in a lorry. Jack had a piece of paper and he put the names of the British officers on it and he threw it out onto the road as we were going along. We were in the back of the lorry facing backwards and it was open. That was picked up apparently by the British who were quite near - there were Russians on one side and British on the other and it was a narrowing corridor. We could see the Germans making a last stand as we went along. We were strafed by Spitfires too on the way. The SS stopped, got out and jumped into the ditch and left us in the road."

"Finally we stopped outside a camp after dark and I said to the guard: "Where are we?" He replied, "Hier ist Dachau." Well, I knew that one. We were taken in and put in a block - the VIP block it turned out to be! Then we started to meet some of the VIPs they happened to be collecting as hostages. Among them was the Bishop of Clermont-Ferrand, Canon Neuheusler, Pastor Niemoller, General Garibaldi who was a resistance leader, and a few people like that."

"We stayed there about a couple of days and then we were taken in buses down to south of Innsbruck - a place called Reichenau which was a police education camp, they called it, at least that's what it had on the outside! I think the SS were doing the educating in this case. And there we were put in with a group of all the main political prisoners in Germany at that time, which

included a lot of the relations of the people who were concerned in the traitors of the July plot against Hitler, women and children among them."

"The German General, General Halder who had been the Chief of Staff on the east front, General von Falckenhahn, a very impressive German, Colonel von Bonin who had gone against Hitler's wishes and retreated at Warsaw, the Hungarian cabinet, including the Prime Minister and the general staff, Papagos who had been our neighbour at Sachsenhausen, Schuschnigg the Austrian Chancellor and his wife, Thiessen the industrialist, Schacht the Finance Minister, Dutch Foreign Minister Leon Blum, the former French Prime Minister and his wife, to name just a few, so we were in very exalted company. We were put in for ballast, I think!"

"We were evacuated from there - we were taken out in a group of about 150 of us in about six or seven buses with SS outriders and a jeep taking up the rear with hand grenades and guns and things like that. We wound up to the Brenner [*Pass*], we stopped at midnight on April 27th, I think it was. We just stopped in the shadows and we didn't know what was going on. The SS had disappeared and we wondered what the score was. Well the score was, as I found out years later, that had there been a bombing raid which they were going to do in those days on the Brenner, the SS were going to machine gun the lot of us and say we had been killed by bombs. Luckily that didn't happen."

"They came back in the early morning and we went on down the side of the Brenner, east down the pass to the Tyrolean Valley and we came to a grinding halt at a railway crossing on the edge of the town of Villa Bassa - it was Italian then, Niederdorf when it was Austrian. The SS were obviously uncertain what to do but they let us get out and I think one of the buses had a flat tyre, and they were out of petrol and they had no orders from Berlin. So they got drunk, but a lot of things happened simultaneously more or less at this time. Wings and Jack went into the railway level crossing hut. An Italian soldier came along and told him that General Garibaldi would like to see him. So they went in and found the general there and saw the level crossing keeper who was a sergeant in the partisans. He had asked the general to take charge of them. He agreed and he had asked Wings and Jack to get the British organised to mount an attack on the SS. Peter Churchill was there - he spoke fluent Italian and interpreted. Wings, who was normally good for a scrap, reckoned that discretion was the better part of valour, and he said, "Well look, let's wait until we get the SS in a position where we know where they are and then we can deal with them." Garibaldi said, "We would be delighted to do something to help you." So they agreed on that."

"In the meantime, a chap called Tony Duce who was the Austrian administration man in that area and also leader of the resistance came up because word had got round that Schuschnigg was with them and that had alerted him and the whole population - they were very excited about it. He arranged for us to go to some quite reasonable accommodation. There were two hotels if you were a VIP, or the straw in the Town Hall if you weren't or if you were British. Well we got the Town Hall, we didn't mind really as long as we had somewhere to bed down."

"In the meantime the SS men in charge of the group had all got very tight on schnapps. Niemoller said, "It's very dangerous if the SS get drunk." One of them more or less passed out, and one of our chaps, Squadron Leader Faulkner who had been a seagull chap operating behind the lines in Tunisia and had been in Sachsenhausen said, "Well look, give him a bit more schnapps and then take his pocket book." Which is what happened and we found an order that the Allied officers and the various others were not to fall into Allied hands. So we thought we'd better get busy at that time and von Bonin got through on the telephone to a German General who was a friend of his commanding a sector on the Italian front, and said: "Look, send up a platoon of Wehrmacht and kick out these SS swine!" I think he agreed to that after a while. In the meantime we found our accommodation. Wings and Duce went off in an old Volkswagen to try to contact the Americans. They went over the mountains and eventually they did reach an American headquarters."

"Before they left, Bader (one of the SS) had told Wings that they had a special room for the British. One of the Hungarians who had been a Count or something, was Minister of the Interior,

spoke very good English. He said: "For heavens sake, don't go into any rooms as the SS are gunning for you." So we didn't do that, but we bedded down on the straw in the Town Hall with SS men at each end with cocked Schmeisers and that was literally the Night of the Long Knives, because the SS were expecting something, possibly the partisans to attack. The next morning they had all gone. We went down in the square and this Wehrmacht platoon had arrived. Von Bonin was covering the SS with a machine gun and Bonin was telling them to throw down their arms, which were picked up very quickly by the partisans. The SS were given the opportunity of either going or trying their luck with the Allies. Bader and a few of them went down the valley and I heard later that they had been stopped by the partisans and strung up. In the meantime we were free - that was our first liberation and there was a very moving thanksgiving Mass in the local church, celebrated by the Bishop of Clermont-Ferrand to which everybody went."

"It's difficult to describe one's feelings after five years behind barbed wire. I was flown back in the civil version of the Wellington that I'd been shot down in five years previously. The feeling of arriving back at Blackbushe in Hampshire was unbelievable. You were on English soil again. I went up to London and it was a bit of an anti-climax actually. Soon after, I was inspected by a doctor who tapped me all over and sent me on leave on double rations, which I couldn't eat anyway. I was told to report back for another medical in six weeks time which I did and was passed fit for flying. Physically I was all right, but mentally my experiences in captivity affected me for many years."

For his persistent attempts to escape from his German captors, Jimmy James was awarded the Military Cross and Mentioned in Despatches. He returned to Germany after the war and it was here that he met his wife, Madge, a nursing sister with the Red Cross. He later joined the Foreign Office and occupied various postings around the world, including West Germany, France, Czechoslovakia and South Africa.

In 2004, Jimmy James returned to the site to Stalag Luft III, now overgrown by woodland, to mark the 60th anniversary of the Great Escape. "It's quite a moving experience because 60 years on there's virtually no camp here except the trees and sand - all the huts have been razed. But you can still feel the atmosphere of the camp. Having lost 50 of my comrades, the ghosts of the past will inevitably rise up and one feels a great loss in that respect. I never thought 60 years ago when I crawled out of the hole in the snow that there would be a ceremony to commemorate the event."

Air Vent Escape

From

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)





Why this trope doesn't work in [Real Life](#).

My stronghold will have ventilation ducts that are too small to crawl through.

-- [The Evil Overlord List](#)

It's the only move on the part of a villain that's stupider than [Locking MacGyver in the Store Cupboard](#) (or any room with [a bed](#)). When heroes find themselves trapped in a room with all doors and windows locked, the quickest exit is always through the ventilation duct. Covers require little or no effort to remove, openings are always within reach, they're always able to support the weight of a person even though they were only designed to carry *air*, they are wide enough in diameter to easily allow a human being to pass comfortably through, there are no internal obstacles like bracing or blowers (except for the occasional menacing giant fan blocking the branching corridors), they are free of normal sheet metal's dangerously sharp edges, they are totally soundproof, and there's never a lack of light or chance of getting lost unless the plot calls for it. And the escapee always emerges without having picked up so much as a speck of dust.

Air vents also work excellently in reverse for breaking *in* and infiltrating a facility, as well.

You'd think the bad guys would eventually learn to design thinner air ducts, or post guards around the openings instead of at regular doors, or line their ducts with barbed wire and broken glass. It even appears on the [Evil Overlord List](#). At least some are smart enough to equip their prison with a surveillance camera, which the hero [simply has to smash](#) before making the getaway.

In the event there are no convenient air ducts available, you may be forced to take the [Absurdly Spacious Sewer](#). [The Alcatraz](#) *always* has at least one or the other.

On some occasions, because of the fact that a woman is crawling along a surface and the camera is pointing along [the shaft](#), you [can get an "interesting" view](#).

This is practically a [Discredited Trope](#) by now, and requires some effort to [justify](#) if it's to be used seriously. Which is why it's such a shock that [it's actually happened at least once in real life](#). Frank Morris and his accomplices escaped from Alcatraz by breaking out the grills in their cells and climbing through a maintenance corridor, up to the large ventilation duct that led them to the roof. This escape was later reproduced by [Mythbusters](#). However, on another occasion, [Mythbusters](#) did test more standard metal ducts, such as one would find in most buildings, and found climbing around in them impractical at best, along with being very noisy and certain to attract attention. (At least, if you've got magnets attached to your hands and knees...)

One area where the trope isn't discredited is the world of [Video Games](#): Expect almost any game set inside a complex to contain an ample supply of vents, many of which mysteriously just connect two rooms with no fans, grates, branches, or actual *ventilation*.

Some large universities (MIT and Caltech in particular) have longstanding "steam tunnel spelunkers" clubs, who often use air ducts (among other things) for exploring, getting around

campus quickly, or pulling off pranks. Readers of this trope should be advised that [this is extremely dangerous](#), not to mention illegal -- steam tunnels are usually hot, cramped places that are frequently criss-crossed by scalding-hot (badly-insulated) piping, and explorers face trespassing charges (and possible academic sanctions) if they're discovered within.

However, most attempts to sneak in or out via air duct aren't very successful since people tend to be fairly large and ducts tend to be fairly small. There have been numerous cases where enterprising criminals have attempted to rob a store by sneaking through the ducts end up getting stuck. The usual ending is the embarrassed criminal being rescued by the fire department and then promptly handed over to the authorities.

However, air ducts sometimes need to be large -- very large -- so there is truth to this trope. In many underground mines, more tons of air are moved per year than ore, and ventilation systems are massive. The tunnel under the Hudson River was only made possible by the construction of a custom ventilation system on a scale then unprecedented. Underground settings require massive ventilation passages -- including, in mines, entire shafts cut solely for the purpose of providing ventilation (as an extra layer of safety, the vent shafts are designed to double as secondary emergency exits, in the event that the main tunnel is blocked by a cave-in or otherwise inaccessible).

But do remember, even in those structures that actually require massive ductwork systems, by the time the branch ducts reach a spot where one can conveniently access them - such as an office, hallway, storage room or cell - the ducts that actually serve that space are usually too small to serve as a convenient escape or entry.

Real Life

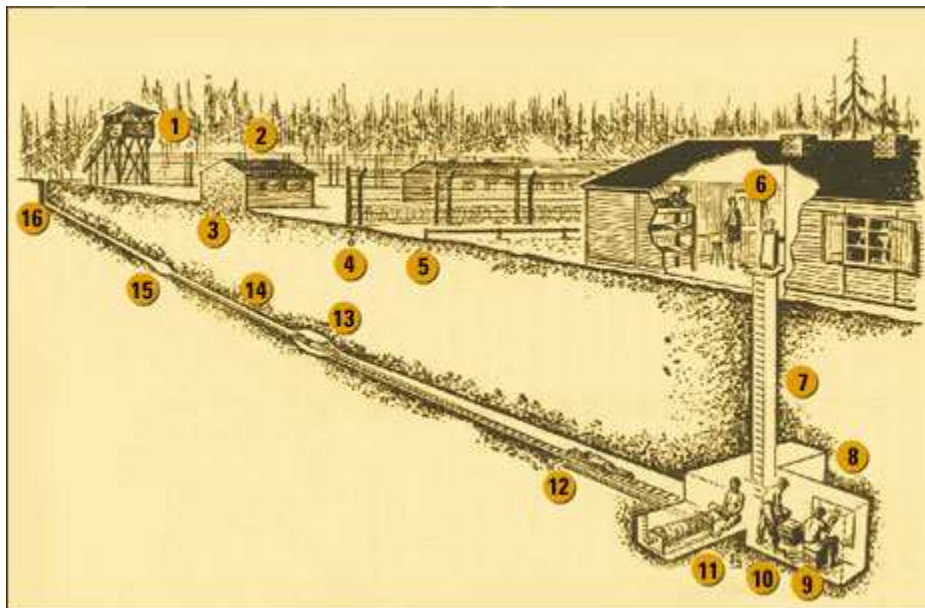
- This was attempted in 1994 by Cleveland Indians pitcher Jason Grimsley to try to switch out teammate Albert Belle's corked bat before the umpire could find out he was cheating. Going through 10 feet of ducts and a false ceiling, he might have even gotten away with it if he hadn't replaced it with [an autographed bat](#).
- Averted in [Real Life: Sensitive Compartmented Information Facilities](#), where top-secret intelligence information is handled in the United States, have a list of regulations on construction of air vents, including grates to prevent entry and deliberate metal disconnects to avoid sound transfer.
- Attempted unsuccessfully by a [Too Dumb to Live](#) criminal who got stuck in a pizzeria's air vent while attempting to rob the place after hours. On top of that, he was a former employee who was recently fired.
 - Successfully done by serial killer Ted Bundy. While in prison awaiting trial on one of many murders he was suspected in, he climbed through the roof of his cell (he had dieted and lost enough weight to make this possible), crawled across the floorboards into the adjoining warden's apartment (the warden and his wife were out at a New Year's Eve party), and simply walked out of the apartment into freedom. He was caught several weeks later, but not before adding several more victims to his list.
- When Kingsley Oforu and eight other Ghanians stowed away on a Europe-bound cargo ship, he escaped from the ship's murderous crew (the other stowaways were not so lucky), by shimmying up one of these.
- [Quantay Adams](#) managed to escape from a jail by going into the subceiling *and* out through a vent. It was harder than it sounds; after getting a hacksaw blade to get through

the ceiling, he had to both time the guards, evade the cameras—including the one *in his cell* -- and get to his accomplice outside. His grand total of freedom? *Seven hours.*

- On a G4 special one of the famed Bioware doctors mentioned how as a child his teacher locked him in the closet for misbehaving, he climbed from the closet into the drop ceiling BreakfastClub style. After crawling back into his classroom he positioned himself over where the teacher was standing and dropped a lugie on him.
- In [Real Life](#), small animals tend to be more successful at this trope than humans (they're small enough to get inside easily, they're light enough that the ducts can support their weight and they don't make as thunderous a noise while they move around). In a recent example, a raccoon was found to have made a home inside a church's HVAC system (a loose vent cover on the roof allowed the little scoundrel access).
 - Depending on the animal, they can still be very loud as claws or nails make a racket running on metal.

Inside Tunnel "Harry"

[Great Escape homepage](#)



1. Goon Box

The prisoners called their German guards "goons" and the watchtowers "goon boxes." One goon box on the edge of the prison camp stood a mere 45 feet from the spot where Harry's exit shaft would eventually emerge.

2. Cooler

Stalag Luft III's solitary confinement block, which prisoners dubbed "the cooler," was a routine destination for any prisoner who broke the rules. The duration of a POW's stay depended on the whim of the

German guards, but any prisoner caught conspiring to escape could count on several weeks on the inside.

3. Sand

The prison's architects intentionally sited it in an area where the subsoil was bright yellow sand. The supple sand, they believed, would make tunneling nearly impossible. Also, it would be easy for the guards to pick up on digging activity if they noticed sand anywhere above ground.

4. Microphone

The Germans buried microphones beneath the camp's barbed wire fences so they could listen for sounds of prisoners digging out. The prisoners deliberately dug Harry and other tunnels deep enough to be beyond the mikes' range.

5. Warning wire

A knee-high wire that ringed the inside of the camp's perimeter fence sent a signal to the guards on contact. Any prisoner who crossed it would be shot.

6. Trapdoor

The entrance to Harry was tucked beneath a heating stove. The prisoners rebuilt its concrete base and fashioned a flexible stovepipe extension so that the stove was moveable. During digging the stove was never without a fire, discouraging guards from coming too near. From its open position, the trapdoor could be closed and sealed in 20 seconds using wooden handles on the stove.

7. Entrance shaft

The wooden footholds leading to Harry extended down a claustrophobically narrow 30-foot shaft, past sound-absorbing blankets stuffed around the trapdoor, and through an initial column of solid brick and concrete that had taken the diggers days to chip away.

8. Storage Chamber

In this storage space, the men kept their extra supplies and bags of sand ready to be moved aboveground for dispersion. During the later stages of the tunneling, this chamber held items critical to the prisoners on escape night, such as forged immigration papers, street clothing, and provisions.

9. Shoring

Constructing Harry in a substrate of sand meant that it was easy to dig but difficult to maintain. Each new length of the tunnel had to be carefully shored with wood lest it cave in. The process, shown here, involved laying two-foot-long wooden bed boards into the sand ceiling and walls of the tunnel, which was one just board high and one wide.

10. Workshop

This chamber served as a manufacturing workshop where the airmen

made equipment such as digging tools and lamps out of scavenged materials. In all, they "borrowed" approximately 4,000 bed boards, 35 chairs, 50 tables, 90 bunk bed frames, 1,600 blankets, and 1,400 tin milk cans during the construction of Harry and two other tunnels, Tom and Dick.

11. Air pump

Fresh air was limited underground, so the prisoners devised an air pump for Harry modeled after one they saw in a smuggled magazine. The pump, seen here, consisted of a fabric bellows mounted on wooden runners. A man operated it back and forth like a rowing machine to pump air through milk-tin ventilation pipes installed along the tunnel floor. A fresh-air intake vent was concealed in Hut 104.

12. Railroad

Diggers built a wooden railway along Harry to carry men or boxes of sand on small rope-operated trolleys. The railway revolutionized the sand removal process, allowing diggers to efficiently port tons of sand from within the tunnel back to its entrance shaft, from where it was later dispersed or buried around the camp. On escape night, the railway swiftly ferried the POWs through Harry to the exit shaft.

13. Piccadilly Circus

Piccadilly was the first of Harry's two halfway changeover stations, each a third of the way along the tunnel. Here, prisoners transferred themselves to a new trolley for the next leg, whether heading back or going forward.

14. Lights

From the beginning, the underground darkness posed a challenge. At first, the prisoners lit the way using homemade mutton-fat lanterns with pajama-fabric wicks. When the lanterns proved noxious and unreliable, two intrepid POWs snatched electrical wire from German workmen and installed lighting in the tunnel, tapping into Stalag Luft III's circuit board.

15. Leicester Square

The POWs called the second changeover station Leicester Square. At this point in the tunnel, a prisoner on the night of the escape was less than 100 feet from his exit to freedom.

16. Exit shaft

During the first nine days of March, diggers cleared the last 100 feet of tunnel Harry and created an exit shaft, seen here. By March 14, they had dug upward almost to the surface, leaving two feet of earth to be removed the night of the escape. Harry proved nearly 30 feet short of its intended mark. Its exit shaft cleared the prison's perimeter fence but did not make it to the cover of trees beyond.

Wartime service

James served as a Lieutenant in command of [Motor Gun Boats](#) operating out of Felixstowe. In the early hours of Sunday 28 February 1943,^[1] his then vessel *MGB 79*, was sunk in action off the [Hook of Holland](#). James and three of his crew were rescued from the water by a German trawler and were taken prisoner. He was sent to [Marlag "O"](#), the naval [prisoner-of-war camp](#) near Westertimke.

He attempted to escape in December 1943, slipping out of the shower block on a foggy morning, then crossed Germany wearing his full British naval uniform, but with forged papers identifying him as "I. Bagerov" of the [Bulgarian Navy](#). James made it as far as the port of [Lübeck](#) and had made contact with the crew of a Swedish ship willing to smuggle him out of the country before he was arrested, and returned to the camp.^[1] His second escape in late 1944 was covered by "[Albert R.N.](#)", a life-sized dummy, that ensured that he would not be missed in the head-count. James again headed for the coast, posing as a merchant seaman, and this time made it to Sweden.

A self-penned account of his 11 months in (and out of) the camp was published in the UK as *Prisoner's Progress* ([William Blackwood](#) 1947) and in the US under the title *Escaper's Progress* ([W. W. Norton](#) 1955). A review at the time described the work as "one of the better escape books". In 1978, when the book was re-published in the UK in paperback as *Escaper's Progress* ([Corgi](#)), his original account of the escape, as prepared for [Naval Intelligence](#) was included as an appendix, having become de-classified. This has again been republished by [Pen & Sword Ltd.](#)

Attempts to escape Oflag IV-C

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)

For a complete list, see [List of attempts to escape Oflag IV-C](#).

Prisoners made numerous **attempts to escape Oflag IV-C**, one of the most famous [German Army prisoner-of-war camps](#) for [officers](#) in [World War II](#). Between 30 and 36 (German/Allied figures) men succeeded in their attempts. The camp was located in [Colditz Castle](#), situated on a cliff overlooking the town of [Colditz](#) in [Saxony](#).

The [German Army](#) made Colditz a *Sonderlager* (high-security prison camp), the only one of its type within Germany. Field Marshal [Hermann Göring](#) even declared Colditz "escape-proof". Yet despite this audacious claim, there were multiple escapes by [British](#), [Canadian](#), [French](#), [Polish](#), [Dutch](#), and [Belgian](#) inmates. Despite some misapprehensions to the contrary, Colditz Castle was not used as a Prisoner-of-War camp in World War I.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Methods & equipment](#)
- [2 The Singen route](#)
- [3 Unsuccessful attempts](#)

- [3.1 The fatality of Michael Sinclair](#)
- [3.2 The Red Cross Tea Chest](#)
- [3.3 The Mattress](#)
- [3.4 The Bed-Sheet Rope](#)
- [3.5 The French lady](#)
- [3.6 The Canteen Tunnel](#)
- [3.7 The French Tunnel](#)
- [3.8 The "Colditz Cock" glider](#)
- [4 Successful attempts](#)
 - [4.1 From Colditz Castle and Grounds](#)
 - [4.2 From outside Colditz Castle](#)
 - [4.3 "Ghost" prisoners who hid inside Colditz Castle](#)
- [5 See also](#)
- [6 References](#)
- [7 Sources](#)
- [8 Further reading](#)
- [9 External links](#)

[] Methods & equipment

Prisoners contrived a number of methods to escape. They duplicated keys to various doors, made copies of maps, forged *Ausweise* ([identity papers](#)), and manufactured their own tools. [MI9](#), a department of the British [War Office](#) which specialized in escape equipment, communicated with the prisoners in [code](#) and [smuggled](#) them new escape aids disguised in care packages from family or from non-existent charities, although they never tampered with [Red Cross](#) care packages for fear it would force the Germans to stop their delivery to all camps. The Germans became skilled at intercepting packages containing contraband material.

There was also a form of [black market](#) whereby the prisoners used items from their [Red Cross parcels](#) to buy information and tools from the cooperative guards and townsfolk. Since the Germans allowed [Douglas Bader](#) to visit the town, he took [chocolate](#) and other luxuries with him for trading. Flight Lieutenant [Cenek Chaloupka](#) traded goods for information and even had a girlfriend in the town. [David Stirling](#) later took control of the black market operations.

[] The Singen route

Once escaping from captivity, the POWs still faced the considerable challenge of negotiating their way to non hostile territory. The [Singen](#) route into Switzerland was discovered by Dutch naval lieutenant [Hans Larive](#) in 1940 on his first escape attempt from [Oflag VI-A](#) in [Soest](#). Larive was caught near Singen close to the Swiss border. The interrogating Gestapo officer was so confident the war would soon be won by Germany that he told Larive the safe way across the border. Larive did not forget and many prisoners later escaped using this route. This includes Larive himself, [Francis Steinmetz](#), [Anthony Luteyn](#), [Airey Neave](#), [Pat Reid](#) and [Howard Wardle](#) in their escapes from Colditz.^[1]

[] Unsuccessful attempts

Most of the escape attempts failed. [Pat Reid](#), who later wrote about his experiences in Colditz, failed to escape at first and then became an "Escape Officer", charged with coordinating the

various national groups so they would not ruin each other's escape attempts. Escape Officers were generally not themselves permitted to escape. Many tried unsuccessfully to escape in [disguise](#): [Airey Neave](#) twice dressed as a guard, French Lieutenant Boulé disguised in [drag](#), British Lieutenant [Michael Sinclair](#) even dressed as the German Sergeant Major Rothenberger [an NCO in the camp garrison], when he tried to organize a mass escape, and French Lieutenant Perodeau disguised as regular camp electrician Willi Pöhnert ("Little Willi"):

On the night of 28 December 1942, one of the French officers deliberately blew out the fuse on the lights in the courtyard. As they had anticipated Pöhnert was summoned, and while he was still fixing the lights, Lieutenant Perodeau, dressed almost identically to Pöhnert and carrying a tool box, walked casually out of the courtyard gate. He passed the first guard without incident, but the guard at the main gate asked for his token — tokens were issued to each guard and staff member upon entry of the camp guardhouse specifically to avoid this type of escape — with no hope of bluffing his way out of this, Perodeau surrendered.

Dutch [sculptors](#) made two [clay](#) heads to stand in for escaping officers in the roll call. Later, "ghosts", officers who had faked a successful escape and hid in the castle, took the place of escaping prisoners in the roll call in order to delay discovery as long as possible.

Camp guards collected so much escape equipment that they established a "Kommandant's Escape Museum". Local [photographer Johannes Lange](#) took photographs of the would-be escapers in their disguises or re-enacting their attempts for the camera. Along with the Lange photographs, one of the two sculpted clay heads was displayed proudly in the museum. Security officer [Reinhold Eggers](#) made them a regular part of *Das Abwehrblatt*, a weekly magazine for the German POW camps.

[] [The fatality of Michael Sinclair](#)

There was only one confirmed fatality during the escape attempts: British Lieutenant [Michael Sinclair](#) in September 1944. Sinclair attempted a repeat of the 1941 French over the wire escape. Security officer Eggers warned him after which Sinclair was fired upon by guards. A bullet hit Sinclair on the elbow and ricocheted through his heart.^[2]

The Germans buried him in Colditz cemetery with full military honours — his casket was draped with a [Union Jack](#) flag made by the German guards, and he received a seven-gun salute. Post-war he was awarded the [Distinguished Service Order](#), the only man to receive it for escaping during World War II. He is currently buried in grave number 10.1.14 at [Berlin War Cemetery](#) in the [Charlottenburg-Wilmersdorf](#) district of [Berlin](#).

[] [The Red Cross Tea Chest](#)

Because of his very small stature Flight Lieutenant [Dominic Bruce](#) was known ironically as the "medium-sized man". He arrived at Colditz in 1942 (after attempting to escape from [Spangenberg Castle](#) disguised as a Red Cross doctor). When a new Commandant arrived at Colditz in the summer of the same year he enforced rules restricting prisoners' personal belongings. On 8 September POWs were told to pack up all excess belongings and an assortment of boxes were delivered to carry them into store. Dominic Bruce immediately seized his chance and was packed inside a Red Cross packing case, three foot square, with just a file and a 40-foot (12 m) length rope made of bed sheets. Bruce was taken to a storeroom on the third floor of the German Kommandantur and that night made his escape. When the German guards discovered

the bed rope dangling from the window the following morning and entered the storeroom they found the empty box on which Bruce had inscribed *Die Luft in Colditz gefällt mir nicht mehr. Auf Wiedersehen!* – "The air in Colditz no longer agrees with me. See you later!" Bruce was recaptured a week later trying to stow aboard a Swedish ship in [Danzig](#).

[] The Mattress

In late 1940, British officer "Peter" Allan (real name Anthony Murray Allan) found out that the Germans were moving several [mattresses](#) from the castle to another camp and decided that would be his way out. He let the French officers moving the mattresses know that one would be a little bit heavier. Allan, a fluent German speaker due to his schooling in Germany before the war prior to attending [Tonbridge School](#), dressed himself up in a *Hitlerjugend* ([Hitler Youth](#)) uniform, stuffed [Reichsmark](#) in his pockets, and had himself sewn into one of the mattresses. He managed to get himself loaded into the truck, and unloaded into an empty house within the town. Cutting himself out of the mattress several hours later, when all he could hear was silence, he climbed out of the window into the garden and walked down the road towards his freedom.

Along the 100 mi (161 km) way to [Vienna](#) via [Stuttgart](#) he got a lift with a senior SS officer. Allan recalled that ride as the scariest moment of his life, "To be vulgar, I nearly needed a new pair of trousers." Allan had been aiming to reach Poland, but soon after reaching Vienna he found he was out of money. At this time the Americans had not yet entered the war, so Allan decided to ask the American consulate for assistance; he was refused. Allan's stepmother Lois Allan (founder of [Fuzzy Felt](#) toys in the UK) was a U.S. citizen and he felt that they would provide sanctuary because of this. Allan had been on the run at this point for nine days; broke, exhausted, and hungry, he fell asleep in a park. Upon waking he discovered he could no longer walk due to his [starvation](#). Soon after he was picked up and returned to Colditz, where he spent the next 3 months in solitary confinement.

[] The Bed-Sheet Rope

On 12 May 1941, Polish Lieutenants [Miki Surmanowicz](#) and [Mietek Chmiel](#), attempted to rappel down a 36 m (120 ft) wall to freedom on a [rope](#) constructed out of [bed sheets](#). In order to get into position, both men put themselves into solitary confinement. After forcing open the door and picking the locks, they made their way to the courtyard where they climbed up to a narrow ledge. From the ledge they were able to cross to the guard house roof, and climb through an open window on the outer wall. Reusing their bed sheet rope, they lowered themselves towards the ground; they were caught when the German guards heard the hobnailed boots of one of the escapees scraping down the outside of the guardhouse wall. The guard who spotted the escapees shouted 'Hände hoch!!!' [Hands up!!!] to the men as they were descending the rope.

[] The French lady

On June 5 1941, while returning from the park to the castle, some British prisoners noticed that a passing lady dropped her watch. One of the British called out to her, but the lady kept walking instead of retrieving her watch. This aroused the suspicion of the German guards and, upon inspection, "she" was revealed to be a French officer – Lieutenant [Chasseurs Alpains](#) Bouley– dressed as a very respectable woman.^[3]

[] The Canteen Tunnel

Early in 1941, the British prisoners had gained access to the sewers and drains which ran beneath the floors of the castle. Entrance to these was from a [manhole cover](#) in the floor of the canteen. After initial reconnaissance trips, it was decided that the drain should be extended, and an exit made in a small grassy area which was overlooked from the canteen window. From here, they had planned to climb down the hill, and drop down below the steep outside eastern wall of the castle. Knowing which sentry would be on duty during the planned night of the escape, they pooled their resources and collected 500 [Reichsmark](#) for a bribe (100 of which were paid up front). This plan took three months of preparation. On the evening of 29 May 1941, Pat Reid hid in the canteen when it was locked up for the night. He removed the bolt from the lock on the door, and returned to the courtyard. After the evening meeting, the chosen escapers slipped into the canteen unnoticed. They entered the tunnel and waited for the signal to proceed. Unknown to the prisoners, they had been betrayed by the bribed guard. Waiting on the grassy area was [Hauptmann Priem](#) and his guard force.

Pat Reid recalls:

"I climbed out on to the grass and Rupert Barry, immediately behind me, started to follow. My shadow was cast on the wall of the Kommandantur, and at that moment I noticed a second shadow beside my own. It held a gun. I yelled to Rupert to get back as a voice behind me shouted, *Hände hoch! Hände hoch!* I turned to face a German officer levelling his [pistol](#) at me."

Behind him were seven British and four Polish officers. On his order the remaining men backed up the tunnel to evade detection, but the Germans were waiting for them outside the canteen. Not wanting to give their captors any satisfaction the British burst into laughter as they came out.

Hauptmann Priem ends the story:

"And the Guard? He kept his 100 Marks; he got extra leave, promotion and the [War Service Cross](#)."

[] The French Tunnel

Nine French officers organized a long-term tunnel-digging project, the longest attempted out of Colditz Castle throughout the war. Deciding that the exit should be on the steep drop leading down towards the recreation area, outside the eastern walls of the castle, they began to scout for a possible location for the entrance. The problem was solved by Lieutenants Cazaumayo and Paille, who had gained access to the clock tower in 1940.

Their tunnel began at the top of a chapel's [clock tower](#) and descended 8.6 metres (28.2 ft) into the ground using the shaft which contained the ropes and weights for the clock. They found that the weights which used to hang down the shaft, and the chains, had been removed. This left an empty shaft which extended from the clock to the cellars below. After the previous escape attempts of Cazaumayo and Paille, the doors (one on each floor) which provided access to the tower had been bricked up in order to prevent further escape attempts. However, by sealing up the tower the Germans had in essence provided a secure location where escape tunnel work could be done without notice. The French this time gained access to the tower from the attics,

descended 35 m to the cellars, and began work on a horizontal shaft in June 1941. This shaft work would continue for a further eight months.

The horizontal shaft towards the chapel progressed 4 m (13 ft) before they hit rock too hard to dig. They then decided to dig upwards towards the chapel floor. From here the tunnel continued underneath the wooden floor of the chapel for a distance of 13.5 m (44.3 ft). For this to be achieved, seven heavy [oak](#) timbers in the floor, measuring 0.5 m (1.3 ft) square had to be cut through. Homemade saws, assembled from German table knives, were employed for this task. With this completed, the tunnel dropped vertically from the far corner of the chapel a further 5.2 m (17 ft). The tunnel then proceeded out towards the proposed exit with two further descents, separated by shafts in the tough stone foundations of the castle. The tunnel now ran a horizontal distance of 44 m (144 ft), reaching a final depth of 8.6 m (28.2 ft) below the ground.

Tunneling continued well into 1942. By then Germans knew that the French were digging somewhere, based on the noise of their tunneling reverberating through the castle at night. The French thought that its entrance was undetectable. However, on 15 January the Germans eventually searched the sealed-off clock tower. Noises were heard below, and after lowering a small boy down the shaft three French officers were found. After searching the cellar thoroughly, the entrance to the tunnel was eventually discovered a mere 2 m (6.5 ft) short of completion. The French were convinced that they had been betrayed by one of their own countrymen but this was denied by the guards who demanded the French pay to repair the damage (estimated at 12,000 Reichsmark).

The tunnel had electric lighting along its whole length, powered by electricity from the chapel. This allowed the tunnellers to see what they were doing and signal the arrival of sentries. The entrance to the tunnel in the wine cellar was concealed by five large stones covering a small door, which left little trace of any hole. Debris was transported in sacks hoisted up the clock tower to the castle's attics. The wine cellar was regularly cleaned and redusted using dust harvested from the attic, so as to hide the reddish clay dust which was not present in the cellar ordinarily.

[\[\] The "Colditz Cock" glider](#)

Main article: [Colditz Cock](#)



The only known photo of the original "Cock" glider taken by an unknown American GI in April 1945.



A replica of the Colditz Glider as seen at the [Imperial War Museum](#) in [London, England](#).

In one of the most ambitious escape attempts from Colditz, the idea of building a [glider](#) was dreamt up by two British pilots, [Jack Best](#) and [Bill Goldfinch](#), who had been sent to Colditz after escaping from another POW camp. They were encouraged by two army officers, [Tony Rolt](#) and David Walker, who had recently arrived in the camp. It would be Tony Rolt who would recommend the chapel roof, since he noticed it was obscured from the view of the Germans.

The two-man glider was to be assembled by Bill Goldfinch and Jack Best in the lower attic above the chapel, and was to be launched from the roof in order to fly across the [river Mulde](#), which was about 60 m (200 feet) below. The [runway](#) was to be constructed from tables and the glider was to be launched using a pulley system based on a falling metal [bathtub](#) full of [concrete](#), which would accelerate the glider to 50 km/h (30 mph).

Prisoners built a false wall to hide the space in the attic where they slowly built the glider out of stolen pieces of wood. Since the Germans were accustomed to looking down for [tunnels](#), not up for secret workshops, the prisoners felt safe from detection. However, they still placed lookouts, and created an electric alarm system, to warn the builders of approaching guards.

Hundreds of [ribs](#) had to be constructed, predominantly from bed slats, but also from every other piece of wood the POW's could obtain. The [wing spars](#) were constructed from floor boards. Control wires were made from electrical wiring taken from unused portions of the castle. A glider expert, [Lorne Welch](#), reviewed the stress diagrams and calculations made by Goldfinch.

The resulting glider was to be a 109 kg (240 lb) two-seater, high wing, monoplane design. It had a Mooney style [rudder](#) and square [elevators](#). The [wingspan](#), was 9.75 m (32 ft), and the fuselage length was 6 m (19 ft). Prison [sleeping bags](#) of blue and white checked [cotton](#) were used to skin the glider, and German [ration millet](#) was boiled and used to seal the cloth pores. The war ended before the glider was finished.

Although the Colditz Cock never flew, the concept was fictionalized, depicting a successful flight and escape, in the 1971 TV movie *The Birdmen* starring [Doug McClure](#), [Chuck Connors](#), [Rene Auberjonois](#) and [Richard Basehart](#).

A replica of the Colditz glider was built for the 2000 [Channel 4](#) (UK) 3-part (150 minute total) *Escape from Colditz* documentary, and was flown successfully by John Lee on its first attempt at [RAF Odiham](#) with Best and Goldfinch in tearful attendance. It is currently housed at the

[Imperial War Museum](#) in [London](#). The Channel 4 material was edited to 60 minutes and shown in the US in 2001 as *Nazi Prison Escape* on the [NOVA television series](#).

A list of tools used in constructing the Glider Source: [1]	
<p>Side-framed saw</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • handle of beech bed board • frame of iron window bars • blade of gramophone spring with 8 teeth / in (3 mm teeth) 	<p>Large plane, 14½ in (368 mm) long</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • 2 inch blade obtained by bribing a German guard • Wooden box (four pieces of beech screwed together)
<p>Minute saw for fine work</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • gramophone spring blade, 25 teeth / in (1 mm teeth) 	<p>Small plane, 8½ in (216 mm) long</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • blade made from a table knife
<p>5/8 in (16 mm) metal drill obtained by bribery</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Drill bits for making holes made from nails 	<p>Plane, 5 in (127 mm) long Square</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • made of beech with gramophone spring blade
<p>A gauge</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • made of beech, with cupboard bolt and gramophone needle 	<p>Set of keys including:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • universal door pick, forged from a bucket handle

[] Successful attempts

Pat Reid claimed in *Colditz: The Full Story* that there were 31 "home runs", whereas German authorities give 30 and some other sources give up to 36. It should be noted that Reid included prisoners from the hospital and prisoners being transported, who were not directly under Colditz staff control. Henry Chancellor in *Colditz: The Definitive History* claims 32 escaped but only 15 were "home runs": 1 Belgian, 11 British, 7 Dutch, 12 French and 1 Polish. The difference is that Reid claims any successful escape by an "official" Colditz POW a "home run" where most other historians only consider escapes from the castle or castle grounds itself as a "home run". Also a subject of debate is whether or not Lieutenant [William A. Millar](#)'s escape should be considered a "home run", but since he is listed as "[Missing in action](#)" (unofficially he is assumed deceased), Chancellor does not count him as such.

At the end of May 1943, the [Oberkommando der Wehrmacht](#) ("Armed Forces High Command") decided that Colditz should hold only British and Commonwealth officers. Because of this decision, all of the Dutch and Polish prisoners and most of the French and Belgians were moved to other camps in July. Three British officers tried their luck by impersonating an equal number of French when they were moved out, but they were later returned to Colditz. German security gradually increased and by the end of 1943 most of the potential ways of escape had been plugged. Several officers tried to escape during transit, having first caused themselves to be transferred for that purpose.

Some officers faked illnesses and [mental illness](#) in order to be [repatriated](#) on medical grounds. A member of the [Royal Army Medical Corps](#) (RAMC), Captain [Ion Ferguson](#), wrote a letter to an Irish friend where he suggested that [Ireland](#) join the war; the letter was stopped by the [censors](#) but his wish to be moved elsewhere was granted. In [Stalag IV-D](#) he certified a number of prisoners as insane, who were consequently repatriated. He then convinced the Germans of his *own* insanity and returned to Britain the same way. Four other British officers claimed symptoms of [stomach ulcer](#), insanity, [high blood pressure](#) and back injury in order to be repatriated. However, there were also officers who went genuinely insane.

[] From Colditz Castle and Grounds

1. French Lieutenant [Alain Le Ray](#) escaped April 11, 1941. He hid in a terrace house in a park during a game of [football](#). First successful Colditz escaper and first to reach neutral [Switzerland](#).
2. French Lieutenant [René Collin](#) escaped May 31, 1941. He climbed into the rafters of a pavilion during exercise, hid there until dark and slipped away. Made it back to France.
3. French Lieutenant [Pierre Mairesse Lebrun](#) escaped July 2, 1941. He was captured trying Collin's method. Later vaulted over a wire in the park with the help of an associate. He reached Switzerland in eight days on a stolen bicycle.
4. Dutch Lieutenant [Hans Larive](#) escaped August 15, 1941. He hid under a [manhole](#) cover in the exercise enclosure, emerged after nightfall, took a [train](#) to [Gottmadingen](#), and reached Switzerland in three days.
5. Dutch Lieutenant [Francis Steinmetz](#) also escaped August 15, 1941 with Larive
6. Dutch Major [C. Giebel](#) escaped September 20, 1941 using the same method as Larive & Steinmetz.
7. Dutch Lieutenant [O. L. Drijber](#) escaped September 20, 1941 with Giebel.
8. British Lieutenant [Airey M. S. Neave](#) escaped January 5, 1942. Crawled through a hole in a camp theatre (after a prisoner performance) to a guardhouse and marched out dressed as a German soldier. He reached Switzerland two days later. This first successful British escape was a joint British Dutch effort. Neave later joined [MI9](#).
9. Dutch Lieutenant [Anthony Luteyn](#) escaped January 5, 1942 with Neave.
10. British Lieutenant [Hedley Fowler](#) escaped September 9, 1942. Slipped with four others through a guard office and a storeroom dressed as German officers and Polish orderlies. Only he and Van Doorninck reached Switzerland. Like Luteyn and Neave, this was another successful British Dutch effort.
11. Dutch Lieutenant [Damiaen Joan van Doorninck](#) escaped September 9, 1942 with Fowler.
12. British Capt. [Patrick R. Reid](#) escaped October 14, 1942. Slipped through POW kitchens into the German yard, into the Kommandantur cellar and down to a dry moat through the park. He took four days to reach Switzerland.
13. Canadian Flight Lieutenant [Howard D. Wardle](#) (RAF) escaped October 14, 1942 with Reid.

14. British Major [Ronald B. Littledale](#) escaped October 14, 1942. Slipped through POW kitchens into the German yard, into the Kommandantur cellar and down to a dry moat through the park. He took five days to reach Switzerland.
15. British Lieutenant-Commander [William E. Stephens](#) escaped October 14, 1942 with Littledale.
16. British Lieutenant [William A. Millar](#) escaped January, 1944. He broke into the German courtyard and hid in a German truck intending to go to [Czechoslovakia](#). He never reached home and is listed missing on the Bayeux memorial. There is speculation that he was caught and executed in [Mauthausen](#) concentration camp as a victim of the secret [Kugel-erlass](#) ("Bullet decree") July 15, 1944.

[] From outside Colditz Castle

1. French Lieutenants J. Durand-Hornus, G. de Frondeville and J. Prot escaped while on a visit to the town [dentist](#) December 17, 1941.
2. Polish Lieutenant Kroner was transferred to [Königswartha](#) Hospital where he jumped out of the window.
3. French Lieutenant Boucheron fled from [Zeit](#) Hospital, was recaptured, and later escaped from [Düsseldorf](#) prison.
4. French Lieutenants Odry and Navelet escaped from [Elsterhorst](#) Hospital.
5. British Captain [Louis Rémy](#) escaped from [Gnaschwitz](#) military hospital. His three companions were captured, but he reached [Algeciras](#) by boat, and later Britain.
6. British Squadron Leader [Brian Paddon](#) escaped to [Sweden](#) via [Danzig](#) when sent to his previous camp for a court martial.
7. French Lieutenant [Raymond Bouillez](#) escaped from a hospital after an unsuccessful attempt to jump from a train.
8. Dutch Lieutenant J. van Lynden slipped away when the Dutch were moved to [Stanislaw](#) camp.
9. French Lieutenant A. Darthenay escaped from a hospital at [Hohenstein-Ernstthal](#), later joined the [French Resistance](#), and was killed by the [Gestapo](#) on April 7, 1944.
10. [Indian](#) RAMC Captain [Birendra Nath Mazumdar](#) M.D. was the only Indian in Colditz. He went on a [hunger strike](#) to have himself transferred into an Indian-only camp. His wish was granted three weeks later and he escaped from that camp to France and reached Switzerland in 1944 with the aid of the French Resistance.
11. Royal Navy ERAs W. E. "Wally" Hammond (from the sunken submarine [HMS Shark](#)) and Don "Tubby" Lister (from the captured submarine [HMS Seal](#)) campaigned for a transfer from Colditz, arguing that he was not an officer. He was transferred to Lamsdorf prison, escaped from a Breslau work party, and reached England via Switzerland in 1943.^{[4][5]}

[] "Ghost" prisoners who hid inside Colditz Castle

1. British pilot [Jack Best](#), "ghost" from 4 May 1943 to 28 March 1944.
2. **Rafael Ivanovich Kapreliants (Gabrielyan)** ([Russian](#): Капрэлян Рафаил Иванович; May 5, 1909, [Baku](#) - July 12, 1984, [Moscow](#)) was a [Soviet Armenian](#) first class pilot, [Honoured Test Pilot of the USSR](#), a [Hero of the Soviet Union](#) (1975) and the holder of 10 world records for helicopters.^[1]
3. [] **Biography**
4. Kapreliants was born in the family of Armenian doctor Hovnan Gabrielyan. He graduated from Leningrad Institute of engineers for the Civil Air Fleet (CAF) in 1932, and Bataysk pilot's school in 1934.

5. He had flown on the air routes of the CAF before [World War II](#), mastering practically all kinds of transport aircraft, that were being used in the [USSR](#) at the time. During the war, he was the second-in-command of the special forces airgroup, fulfilling tasks of the General Staff. During one of such flights, he landed poorly as a result of acute icing and was taken as a [POW](#) by the [Nazis](#), but he managed to escape and found himself among partisans. After his return to the Soviet Union, he was appointed as the commander of the 89th bomber regiment. His regiment represented the long-range aviation at the [Victory Parade](#) on the June 24, 1945.

Escaping Colditz



Colditz Castle, prison camp (1945)

At Colditz all Dutch escapes were coordinated by the Dutch escape officer Captain [Machiel van den Heuvel](#), known as "Vandy" by the British. Van den Heuvel quickly recognised the possibilities of the exercise park and soon had his first escape plan ready. On 15 August 1941 Larive and Lieutenant [Francis Steinmetz](#) hid under a [manhole cover](#) under the cover of a [rugby scrum](#). Lieutenant Gerrit Dames then created a diversion by cutting a hole in the barbed wire fence, before allowing himself to be caught, shouting to imaginary escapers to run, so that the Germans would think that the missing officers had already escaped.

Larive and Steinmetz hid for several hours. The cover was fixed with a heavy bolt, which Van den Heuvel had replaced with a fake made of glass. Once it was dark the two men forced the manhole cover open from below, and replaced the now broken glass bolt with the original one. They then made their way out of the castle. (This escape method was repeated on 20 September 1941 by two other Dutch officers, C. Giebel and O. L. Drijber.^[3]). At [Leisnig](#) Larive and Steinmetz took a train to [Nuremberg](#) where they waited for their next train in a nearby park. To avoid attracting unwanted attention, they pretended to be a courting couple, with Steinmetz pulling a blanket down over his shorts so it looked like a skirt. They crossed the Swiss border on 18 August 1941.

Under Swiss [neutrality law](#) they were not allowed to leave the country, so the Dutch Legation provided false papers describing them as sugar planters on their way to Cuba. They travelled on a sealed train in which neutrals were able to pass through France into Spain. At [Barcelona](#) they boarded the neutral ship, *Isla de Tenerife*, sailing for Havana. The ship was intercepted by a Royal Navy cutter in the [Strait of Gibraltar](#) and the two men were taken off^[4] and arrived in [Gibraltar](#) on 4 November. They then sailed to England aboard the submarine [HNLMS O 21](#) and arrived in London on 17 December 1941.^[5]

Capture and escape from captivity

Following the [Allied invasion of Sicily](#), Lewis was again injured in fighting at [Catania](#) and was captured by the Italian Army and sent to a Prisoner of War camp at [Lucca](#). After [Italy surrendered in September 1943](#) the Germany Army took control of the prison camp, and directed that the prisoners be transferred by train to Germany. While other prisoners on the train distracted the guards Lewis, along with Flight Lieutenant Tony Snell, escaped through a small window. The following morning they found they were near [Mantova](#). After a six day walk they encountered members of the [Italian resistance movement](#) near the small village of [Fabrigo](#), who helped them hide in a safe house in [Modena](#) for almost two months.^{[1][6][7]} With help from the resistance the pair gradually made it to the Swiss border, and they returned to England in November 1944. Lewis was [Mentioned in Despatches](#) on 1 January 1945, and Snell was awarded the [Distinguished Service Order](#).^{[1][8][9]}

Start of World War II

Luteyn was born at [Batavia, Dutch East Indies](#).

At the outbreak of World War II in the Netherlands, Luteyn was a cadet of the [Royal Netherlands East Indies Army](#) ([Koninklijk Nederlands Indisch Leger](#), [KNIL](#)) at the Dutch military academy ([Koninklijke Militaire Academie](#), KMA).

After the capitulation of the Dutch armed forces, all officers and cadets were asked to give their word of honour not to harm German interests in any way as long as Holland and Germany were at war. When they gave their word of honour they could go home and live relatively free.

Luteyn refused, together with about 60 other officers, cadets and one rating of the Dutch navy (stoker Willem de Lange). The officers refusing did so for various reasons. Some did not give their word because they saw it as conflicting with their officer's oath. The majority of officers who didn't give their word of honour were officers of the Royal Netherlands East Indies Army, arguing that according to their regulations it was forbidden to give their word of honour and because the Dutch East Indies were still free at that time, they saw it as their duty to remain in the fight.

All final year cadets were commissioned just before they were led into captivity. Luteyn was thus commissioned as a 2nd lieutenant of engineers in the Royal Netherlands East Indies Army. Because their commission was given hastily and without much ceremony they were dubbed "kasian lieutenant" (Malay for pity lieutenants).

[] Prisoner of war

Luteyn and all other Dutch officers and cadets who had refused to give their word of honour were thus led into captivity. On 16 July 1940 they were led to their first POW camp Soest Oflag VI A. From this camp the first Dutch escape attempt was made by lieutenant [Hans Larive](#), [Royal Netherlands Navy](#). Larive was caught at the Swiss border near Gottmadingen / [Singen](#) but this escape attempt proved to be vital for many future escapes.

After Larive was caught, he was interrogated by a local [Gestapo](#) officer. In 1940, Germany was still in an overconfident mood, and the Gestapo officer told Larive where he went wrong and

what he should have done to cross the border successfully. Many officers, including Larive himself and Luteyn, later used this information to cross the border successfully.

In November 1940 the group was moved to Juliusburg Oflag VIII C in Amalienstift, an old convent. The convent was partly used as POW camp and part was still in use as an orphanage. From this camp the first successful escape was made by captain John Trebels and lieutenant Frans van der Veen, who also used the Gottmadingen–Singen border crossing. As other officers were also busy with escape attempts which could interfere with each other, Captain [Machiel van den Heuvel](#) was appointed as escape officer.

[] Colditz



Colditz Castle, prison camp (1945)

After the successful escape by Trebels and van der Veen, the Dutch officers were moved in July 1941 to the POW camp for "special prisoners", sonderlager [Oflag IV-C Colditz](#). At this moment there were Polish, British, French and Belgian POWs in Colditz. Escape attempts before the Dutch arrived were made. Few were successful, amongst which were the escapes by French Lieutenants [Pierre Mairesse Lebrun](#) and Alain le Ray. In August and September 1941, only one month after arriving in Colditz, the Dutch could claim two successful escapes during which four Dutch officers (naval lieutenants [Hans Larive](#) and [Flanti Steinmetz](#), major C. Giebel and 2nd Lieutenant O. Drijber) escaped to Switzerland.

On 5 January 1942 Luteyn made his successful escape together with British lieutenant [Airey Neave](#). Neave was the first British officer to make it back to Britain from Colditz. In December 1941 the British had discovered a way of escape for two officers dressed in German uniforms. From the third floor from the saalhouse and the theater they had made a hole in the floor which gave an entrance to the attic above the guardroom. As they needed an officer who could speak fluent German, the British asked the Dutch to work together.

Luteyn and Airey Neave were teamed together and on January 5, 1942 after evening roll call, they were led to the saalhouse by British escape officer [Pat Reid](#) and Canadian [Howard Wardle](#). Both prospective escapers were dressed in three sets of clothes - first civilian clothes, second German uniform, thirdly their own uniform. Through the hole under the theater they were led to a tower in which they could reach the stairs to the guardroom. The two escapers had to wait a few minutes so Reid and Wardle had time to return to the theater and camouflage all traces of this escape. Luteyn and Neave cleaned and checked their German uniforms and proceeded downstairs to the German guards. Several guards sprang to attention when "lieutenants" Luteyn

and Neave passed them. They went to the park because passing the final guard at the gate required needed identification, which they didn't have. The park, however, was lightly guarded, and there they climbed the wall without many problems.

After passing the wall they buried their German uniforms and went to Leisnig, where they took the early train to Leipzig. Targeting a cross into Switzerland via [Hans Larive's Singen](#) route, they had to wait for twelve hours before they could continue to Regensburg. To pass time they went to a local cinema. They reached Ulm through Regensburg and Augsburg; here they tried to buy a ticket to Engen, a village near Singen. The lady selling train tickets was suspicious and warned the local police. Luteyn and Neave were taken to the local police station and questioned. There they told their cover-story: as Dutchmen working for the *arbeitseinzats*. The police only half believed their story and brought them to the local *arbeitseinzats* building to check their story. In this building they escaped and walked 40 km to Biberach, where they took a train to Stockach, from which they could walk the final km to Singen.

Travelling for three days and living on a few pieces of chocolate and sucking snowballs as drinking water, they got tired. They were discovered again by workers and fled and hid in an empty garden shack. Here they tried to sleep on a small bench. When they wanted to leave they discovered their shoes were frozen to the floor; they had to defrost them with their breath. They took a spade and axe to look like local workers. On the evening of the fourth day they reached the Swiss border. As a police car was checking the local border posts they could clearly see them. They picked their position and decided to cross the border running. They shook hands and wished each other luck. Running with bleeding blisters and falling and stumbling through snow-covered holes, they reached the village of Ramsen in Switzerland.

[] Post-escape

After his successful escape, Luteyn wrote to Captain van den Heuvel about his escape and were to look out, all in code obviously. He went to Suriname (a Dutch colony at that time) and went to Australia to join the remainder of the Dutch East Indies army there. For his successful escape, Luteyn was awarded the [bronze cross](#) in 1943. Airey Neave joined [MI9](#) and became a famous member of parliament. After the successful escape by Luteyn and Neave, another British Dutch couple (Hyde Thompson and Donkers) tried to escape on 6 January 1942. They successfully got out of the castle but had the misfortune to get the same ticket-sales-lady as Luteyn and Neave in Ulm. They got arrested and were returned to Colditz.

Maximo Guillermo "Max" Manus [DSO, MC & Bar](#) (9 December 1914 – 20 September 1996) was a [Norwegian](#) resistance fighter during [World War II](#).

Manus was born in [Bergen](#) to a Norwegian father and a Danish mother. His father's name was originally Johan Magnussen, but he changed his name to Juan Manus after living several years in foreign (mainly [Spanish](#)-speaking) countries.

After fighting as a volunteer for Finland in the Soviet-Finnish [Winter War](#) of 1939–40, he returned to Norway on the day of the [German invasion of Norway](#), 9 April 1940. He was a pioneer of the [Norwegian resistance movement](#) and was arrested by the [Gestapo](#) in 1941. He escaped to the [United Kingdom](#) for training and went back as a [saboteur](#) for the [Norwegian Independent Company 1](#), better known as *Lingekompaniet*. He became a specialist in ship sabotage and, by using [Limpet mines](#), sank ships that were important to the German [Kriegsmarine](#), including the [SS Donau](#) on 16 January 1945. Max Manus ended the war as a [First Lieutenant](#) (*Løytnant*).

He was famous for being one of the most brilliant saboteurs during World War II. After the war he wrote several books about his adventures and started the successful office supply company *Max Manus AS*.

He was awarded Norway's highest decoration for military gallantry, the [War Cross with sword](#). He was awarded this decoration twice: the War Cross with two swords. In addition to his Norwegian decorations, Manus received the British [Military Cross](#) and [Bar](#).

During the final years of his life, Manus and his wife [Tikken](#) lived primarily in [Spain](#), where he died at the age of 81.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 His autobiographical accounts](#)
- [2 After the war](#)
- [3 Honours and awards](#)
- [4 Bibliography](#)
- [5 References](#)
- [6 External links](#)

[] His autobiographical accounts

Two books were written by Max Manus shortly after World War II. The first, *Det vil helst gå godt* ("*It Usually Ends Well*") describes some of his enterprising and event-filled wandering and working in the jungles of South America and Latin America. He returned to Scandinavia before the outbreak of World War II, upon which he soon joined up with the [Norwegian Army](#) and went to fight in a volunteer detachment with the Finns against the Russians.

After the war in Finland, Max Manus returned to Norway as the Germans invaded on April 9, 1940. He fought during the [Norwegian campaign](#), whereupon he decided to return to [Oslo](#) and work underground against the occupiers, both organising a resistance movement, illegal public [propaganda](#) and the manufacture of weaponry. He and his comrades tried to assassinate [Himmler](#) and [Goebbels](#) when they visited Oslo.

His work was effective and he soon became a wanted man by the Gestapo. He was eventually captured and received injuries trying to escape. He had to be treated in the main Oslo hospital. The doctor at the hospital gave the Gestapo officers a false explanation and said Max Manus needed treatment for a broken back, damaged shoulder and serious [concussion](#). The truth, however, was that he was only bruised and had a light concussion. After 27 days, with the aid of a nurse, he managed to escape through a second-floor window using a rope. In a dramatic flight, he crossed the border into [Sweden](#). By then, the Soviet Union had entered the war against Nazi Germany, so Manus travelled through the [Soviet Union](#), via [Turkey](#), [Arabia](#), by ship via [Cape Town](#) to the US, to eventually be able to return to the fight in Europe.

He reconnected with the Norwegian military in the US and went on to further training in [Canada](#) and later crossed the Atlantic again to [Belfast](#), then [England](#). Here and in [Scotland](#) he trained further and developed professional skills in sabotage and undercover work of many

kinds. He was then required to learn [parachuting](#) and was dropped in the forests near Oslo with a sabotage team.

In Norway he resumed his organizational work and made various sabotage attempts on ships in the [Oslofjord](#) with home-designed limpet mines and even 'swimmer-assisted torpedoes'. The former were the more successful, sinking and damaging some vessels. It was a long but intense learning process of great practical difficulty and hazard. He made numerous hazardous trips back and forth across the border to Sweden, where he was able to get a respite from the constant mental and physical pressures of being undercover. Many of his comrades-in-arms were killed, captured and tortured, but Manus managed to survive through a combination of determination not to be taken and some very narrow escapes.

Max Manus' second book was *Det blir alvor* ("*It Gets Serious*"), in which he continues the saga of his resistance work and his great successes in sinking in 1945 two large vessels of great importance to the German war machine. When peace was declared, Max Manus found himself to be chosen to be the personal protection officer of the then [Crown Prince of Norway](#) on his triumphal parade in Oslo, and then also with [King Haakon VII](#). This was a great honour, and he was lauded as one of Norway's most resilient and successful fighters, aged only 30 at the time.

Manus' books have been translated into English twice; initially an American, very loose and somewhat concise translation entitled *9 Lives Before Thirty*, and, a few years later, *Underwater Saboteur*, a one-book adaptation of both of Manus' books, also somewhat concise. Both of these translations were made in the early years after the War, and names have been changed in the interest of "protecting the guilty"; although Manus himself never changed any names.

Sverre Midtskau (23 September 1914 – 1987) was a Norwegian [resistance](#) member during [World War II](#). He is best known as leader of the illegal radio post [Skylark A](#).

[] World War II

On 9 April [Nazi Germany invaded Norway](#) as a part of World War II. Midtskau became involved in the [subsequent fighting](#) in [Rjukan](#). He later went to [Northern Norway](#), and when Norway was overran by Germany, he fled to England together with the [Royal Family](#) and prominent politicians.^[1]

In September 1940 the [Secret Intelligence Service](#) established two stations for radio communication; the so-called [Skylark A](#) was led by to be Sverre Midtskau in [Oslo](#) while [Skylark B](#) was led by [Erik Welle-Strand](#) in [Trondheim](#).^[2] Midtskau travelled the [Norwegian Sea](#) with the [cutter Nordlys](#), landed in [Florø](#) on 15 September together with Erik Welle-Strand, [Sverre Haug](#) and Finn Juell and continued to Oslo with Haug.^[1] Following technical difficulties in the initial phase,^[2] Midtskau and Haug travelled to England from [Ålesund](#) to fix the problem. Upon his return to Norway, Midtskau was to be parachuted over Telemark in February 1941 with a new radio. However, he landed at [Øyfjell](#) instead of the designated spot near [Langesæ](#), and in addition the radio was smashed to the ground. Midtskau then contacted [Max Manus](#), a resistance agent of post-war fame. However, this led to his arrest in Manus' home. He was imprisoned in [Åkebergveien](#).^[1]

The Skylark B group in Trondheim managed to establish regular contact with the intelligence in [London](#) in January 1941. They had valuable assistance from [Leif Tronstad](#), and provided vital information. In September the same year, however, [Gestapo](#) managed to track the Skylark B

transmitting activity. Welle-Strand had left Norway, but the new leader [Egil Reksten](#) and others were arrested and shipped to [Nacht und Nebel](#) camps.^[2] Gestapo then learned Midtskau's name from the subsequent investigation—having gained access to the secret code, they managed to decipher the transmissions from Skylark B. Midtskau was then sent to the prison [Møllergata 19](#) for [torture](#).^[1]

He managed to escape in December 1941 when a prison assistant managed to copy the keys belonging to a German guard.^[1] According to Max Manus, this prison assistant was the imprisoned resistance member [Kolbein Lauring](#).^[3] Midtskau and two others fled Møllergata and hid in rural [Lommedalen](#).^[1] He stayed in a lodge there until January 1942. He then fled, [skiing](#), via [Trysil](#) and Sweden to England. He quit active service, but spent the rest of the war as a skiing instructor for Allied soldiers as well as an interrogation instructor.^[4]

George Reid Millar [DSO MC](#) (September 19, 1910 – January 15, 2005) was a Scottish journalist, author and soldier who was awarded the [Military Cross](#) (MC) for his escape during the first part of the Second World War which he wrote about in *Horned Pigeon*.

Millar was awarded the DSO, the [Chevalier de la Légion d'Honneur](#) and the [Croix de Guerre avec Palmes](#) for his service in France in 1944 fighting behind the lines with the local Resistance. He recorded this experience in the book *Maquis*. This book, his most well known, belongs with others written by British servicemen who fought behind enemy lines including [Ill Met by Moonlight](#), [Eastern Approaches](#) and [Seven Pillars of Wisdom](#).

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 His life](#)
- [2 Written works](#)
- [3 His yachts](#)
- [4 Reviews](#)
- [5 References](#)

[] His life

^[1] 'Josh' Millar was born in Scotland. He showed his courage and independence when he fought off the traditional hazing by an older student at his boarding school. While at school he was happily initiated into fox hunting which became a lifelong passion. Between school and university he spent some formative months in France. He graduated in his father's profession of architecture from Cambridge but only worked for a few months as an architect. For want of alternatives he started into journalism at the Glasgow *[Evening Citizen](#)*. He worked as an ordinary seaman on a freighter for four months and tried his hand at writing film scripts. In 1936 he joined the *Daily Telegraph* where he was twice able to scoop the *Daily Express*. The editor of the *Express*, [Arthur Christiansen](#) offered him a job and sent him to the Paris office. At the *Express* he came to know [Lord Beaverbrook](#).

His fellow correspondents in Paris were [Alan Moorehead](#) and [Geoffrey Cox \(journalist\)](#). He covered the [Battle of France](#) and was evacuated back to England to enlist in the army. Beaverbrook paid him half his *Express* salary while he was in the army.

His second published book *Horned Pigeon* tells of his service in the 1st Battalion the Rifle Brigade in North Africa. As a second lieutenant he was in command of a scout platoon of Bren carriers and motorcyclists. He had an uncomfortable time with the second in command of his battalion [Major Vic Turner](#). His scout platoon was overrun by Rommel's advance at [Gazala](#) in the [Libyan](#) desert. For a time he and some of his platoon evaded the Germans but eventually he was captured and briefly brought in front of [Rommel](#) himself. He was handed over to the Italian army who took him to the prisoner of war camp Campo 66 in Capua in the [Padula Monastery](#). After a number of escape attempts he was moved to Campo 5 at [Gavi](#), a high-security PoW camp, where, like [Colditz](#), the 'escapers' were confined. One of his fellow inmates for example was [David Stirling](#) who had established the SAS.

After the Italian surrender the Allied prisoners were entrained for Germany. Millar and a companion jumped from the train in Germany. Millar and Binns made their way from Munich to Strasbourg where they were separated. Millar continued to Paris and then Lyon. While in the south of France he was found by the [SOE](#) section run by [Richard Heslop](#), codenamed Xavier and [Elizabeth](#). He volunteered to stay in France and fight with the Resistance. When Heslop refused Millar asked Heslop to recommend him to SOE for the future. Finally, after more than three months on the run, made it across the [Pyrenees](#) and over the Spanish border to Barcelona


Back in London he pulled strings and managed to get into F Section of SOE. Here he was prepared for a return to France by [Vera Atkins](#) and [Maurice Buckmaster](#) among others. He was parachuted into the [Besançon](#) area of [France](#) just before D-Day and returned to England three months later when the US Army pushed the Germans out of that part of France. On his return took a month's leave, rented a cottage in the country and wrote the manuscript of *Maquis*, the nickname of the [French Resistance](#). In this immediate and vivid account he drew on his journalistic skills to describe life living in the woods with the [Maquis](#), various sabotage missions against the railways and trying to organise the villages before liberation by the Americans. He meets Paul, an American radio operator, the competing local resistance chiefs, and eventually joins the locally famous [Boulaya](#).

Maquis sold well and was followed by *Horned Pigeon* which was based on 'prolific notes I had dictated...to a shorthand typist, during the month's leave following my escape.' The second book 'was, if anything, more successful than the first'.

After the war he bought *Truant*, a Looe lugger and sailed with his wife Isabel to Greece. This journey was recorded in *Isabel and the sea*. In *Road to Resistance* he records that while their boat was in Paris he received a summons from General [Charles de Gaulle](#) who had read *Maquis* and had taken the trouble on a trip in the area to detour to the village of [Vieilley](#) where Millar had been based.

Neave
23 January 1916
[Knightsbridge](#),
London

Died 30 March 1979 (aged 63)

	Westminster Hospital , London
Nationality	British
Political party	Conservative
Spouse(s)	Diana Neave
<u>Alma mater</u>	Merton College, Oxford
Profession	Serviceman , Barrister
Military service	
Allegiance	 United Kingdom
Service/branch	Territorial Army , British Army
Rank	Major
Unit	Royal Artillery
Battles/wars	Second World War <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Battle of France
Awards	Distinguished Service Order Officer of the Order of the British Empire Military Cross

Airey Middleton Sheffield Neave, [DSO](#), [OBE](#), [MC](#) (23 January 1916 – 30 March 1979) was a [British](#) soldier, [barrister](#) and politician.

During [World War II](#), Neave was one of the few servicemen to escape from the German prisoner-of-war camp [Oflag IV-C](#) at [Colditz Castle](#). He later became [Conservative Member of Parliament](#) (MP) for [Abingdon](#).

Neave was assassinated in 1979 in a [car-bomb](#) attack at the [House of Commons](#). The [Irish National Liberation Army](#) (INLA) claimed responsibility.

[] Early life

Neave was the son of Sheffield Airey Neave (1879–1961), a well-known [entomologist](#), and his wife Dorothy (d. 1943), the daughter of Arthur Thomson Middleton. His father was the grandson of Sheffield Neave, the third son of Sir Thomas Neave, 2nd Baronet (see [Neave Baronets](#)). Neave spent his early years in [Knightsbridge](#) in [London](#), before he moved to [Beaconsfield](#). Neave was sent to [St. Ronan's School](#), [Worthing](#), and from there, in 1929, he went to [Eton College](#). He went on to study jurisprudence at [Merton College, Oxford](#). While at Eton, Neave composed a prize-winning [essay](#) in 1933 that examined the likely consequences of [Adolf Hitler](#)'s rise to supreme power in [Germany](#), and Neave predicted then that another widespread war would break out in [Europe](#) in the near future. Neave had earlier been on a visit to Germany, and he witnessed the [Nazi German](#) methods of grasping political and military power in their hands. When Neave went to [Oxford University](#), he purchased and read the entire written works of the [prescient](#) writer [Carl von Clausewitz](#). When Neave was asked why, he answered: "since war [is] coming, it [is] only sensible to learn as much as possible about the art of waging it".^[1] During 1938, Neave completed his *third-class degree* in the study of [jurisprudence](#). By his own admission, while at Oxford University, Neave did only the minimal amount of academic work that was required of him by his tutors.

[] Wartime service

Neave joined the [Territorial Army](#) and became an officer of the [Royal Artillery](#) in the regular [British Army](#) at the beginning of [World War II](#). He was sent to France in February 1940 as part of a [searchlight regiment](#). He was wounded and captured by the Germans [at Calais](#) on 23 May 1940. He was imprisoned at [Oflag IX-A/H](#) near [Spangenberg](#) and in February 1941 moved to [Stalag XX-A](#) near [Thorn](#) in German-occupied western Poland. In April 1941 he escaped from Thorn with Norman Forbes. They were captured near Itow while trying to enter [Soviet](#)-controlled Poland and were briefly in the hands of the [Gestapo](#).^[2] In May, they were both sent to [Oflag IV-C](#) (often referred to as Colditz Castle because of its location).^[3]

Neave made his first attempt to escape from Colditz on 28 August 1941 disguised as a German N.C.O. He did not get out of the castle as his hastily contrived German uniform (made from a Polish army tunic and cap painted with scenery paint) was rendered bright green under the prison searchlights.^[4] He tried again on 5 January 1942, again in disguise, together with Dutch officer [Anthony Luteyn](#). Better uniforms and escape route (they made a quick exit from a theatrical production using the trap door beneath the stage) got them out of the prison and by train and on foot they travelled to [Gdansk](#) in [Poland](#) from where Neave took a boat to neutral [Sweden](#).^[5]

He was later recruited as an intelligence agent for [MI9](#). While at MI9, he was the immediate superior of [Michael Bentine](#). He also served with the [International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg](#), investigating [Krupp](#). As a well-known war hero - as well as a qualified lawyer who spoke fluent German - he was honoured with the role of reading the indictments to the [Nazi](#) leaders on trial. He wrote several books about his war experiences including an account of the Nuremberg Trial.^[6]

Prisoner of war

Philpot was suffering from the effects of the two days in the dinghy and was at first sent to a German military hospital in [Oslo](#). After several weeks he was moved to [Dulag Luft I](#) near [Frankfurt](#) arriving in January 1942. Only a month later he was transferred to [Oflag IX-A/H](#) at [Spangenberg](#). This was brief stay and in April 1942 the RAF prisoners at Spangenberg were all sent to Stalag Luft III at Sagan. Escape was always a thought having first been considered while in the hospital immediately after capture^[7] and at Sagan Philpot was involved in more than one escape attempt, in August Philpot was promoted to Flight Lieutenant.^[8] In September 1942 Philpot was among a number of prisoners transferred to [Oflag XXI-B](#) at [Szubin](#) (In his book Philpot uses the German spelling: Schubin) in Poland, the winter of 1942–43 being spent here before the camp closed and all prisoners were returned to Stalag Luft III.

On his return to Sagan Philpot was returned to the East Compound, where he had previously been held, in the interim period most of his friends had been moved to the North Compound.^[9] Escape schemes were not as common as they had been in 1942 but Philpot hit upon the idea of inventing an escape character and papers etc. before involvement with any escape, rather than the opposite way round. After some thought he decided that his character would be a Norwegian margarine salesman called Jon Jörgensen. The profession was based on Philpot's own civilian career and the nationality as being common enough to be encountered in Germany but with a reduced likelihood of meeting someone who spoke Norwegian as Philpot did not speak any Norwegian.^[10] With the assistance of a Norwegian POW the character was fleshed out even to the extent of making him a [Quisling](#).^[11]

[] The Wooden Horse

The Wooden Horse was the idea of [Lieutenant](#) Richard Michael Codner [RA](#)^[12] and [Flight Lieutenant Eric Williams](#).^[13] They approached Philpot in June 1943 to 'register' their escape scheme with the escape committee, Philpot was the escape co-ordinator for the hut in which the three of them lived.

With the scheme approved Codner and Williams set to work, a [vaulting horse](#) was constructed from stolen timber, plywood with cigarette package wrappings used for the top. After a period of legitimate use Codner and Williams started to dig a tunnel from the horse. One man was carried out in the horse and the tunnel started by digging a shaft, lined with plywood panels from Red Cross parcel boxes. After each session care was taken to secure the top of the shaft and to replace the surface sand on top. The digger and the sand excavated were carried back into a hut and the sand disposed off. Initially Philpot assisted in disposing of the sand but later on Codner and Williams asked him to join in the digging and become one of the escapers.^[14] Digging was a cramped job and sand was dragged back to the bottom of the shaft by the digger and then placed into bags for lifting and disposal. Only 12 bags per session were lifted. After a while the team swapped to a four cycle dig and lift scheme where two men went out on the first trip and dug 36 bags of sand. For the next three trips one man went out and recovered 12 bags each time. As the

tunnel grew longer a bowl and string were used for pulling the sand back. Although this was slightly slower i.e. 36 bags per cycle as opposed to 48 under the old system it meant three shorter sessions and one longer one for the volunteers using the horse for vaulting, an important change as the number of volunteers was small and becoming tired.^[15]

Experimentation with a poker showed that the tunnel was about 30 inches (76 cm) below ground but also running approximately 30° off the intended course.^[16] The tunnel had several narrow escapes from detection or accidental destruction due to digging by either the guards or other POWs but by the beginning of October the tunnel was past the wire and the three men started to make their final preparations. They decided to make the break in the no moon period at the end of the month and escape on Friday 29 October 1943. This was 114 days after the first digging commenced.^[17]

On the morning of 29 October, Philpot and Codner were carried out to the tunnel as normal to collect some sandbags. Philpot returned with the bags while Codner remained in the tunnel all day to continue the digging. Codner's absence from the evening roll-call was covered and then the horse was used to carry three men to the tunnel; Philpot and Williams, together with a third man called McKay to seal the three escapers into the tunnel.^[18] The three broke out just after 6 p.m. It had previously been agreed that Philpot, as Jörgensen, would travel alone while Codner and Williams would travel together posing as French workmen. Philpot made his way to Sagan station where he caught the train to Frankfurt (as did Williams and Codner). Arriving at Frankfurt, Philpot intended to catch the night train to [Küstrin](#) but it was cancelled and he had to wait until the next morning for the next train. After spending the night in some woods, Philpot took the train to Küstrin and then onto [Danzig](#). After almost giving himself away by falling off his case and swearing in English, his false papers were good enough to survive checking by a police officer.^{[17][19]}

Arriving in Danzig less than 24 hours after escaping from Stalag Luft III Philpot started to look for a neutral ship to carry him across the Baltic Sea to Sweden. After an initial reconnaissance and looking for somewhere to sleep he checked into a hotel even though this required him to share a room with another guest. The next day (Sunday) Philpot spent the day around the Swedish dock and in the evening managed to smuggle himself onto a Swedish ship called *Aralizz*. The crew of the *Aralizz* saw him and the captain asked him to leave as he was placing the crew at risk^[20] but Philpot refused. Without the knowledge of the captain, the chief engineer and a seaman hid Philpot until Tuesday when the ship sailed. Once the ship was at sea Philpot again made his presence known to the captain who took a different attitude now the ship was no longer in port.

As the ship arrived in Sweden, Philpot was handed over to the Swedish police and taken to the British [Legation](#) in [Stockholm](#), it was Thursday 4 November 1943—less than five days since the breakout.^[21] A week later he was reunited with Codner and Williams who had used a similar route via Stettin to escape. Williams, Codner and Philpot were the only three men to escape from the east compound at Stalag Luft III and regain their freedom (the so called "home run").^[22]

Kazimierz Piechowski (Polish pronunciation: [kaˈzimjɛʃ pjɛˈxɔfski]; born October 3, 1919 [Rajkowy](#), Poland) is a retired engineer, a [Boy Scout](#) during the [Second Polish Republic](#), a political prisoner of the Nazis at [Auschwitz concentration camp](#), a soldier in the [Polish Home Army](#) (Armia Krajowa) then a prisoner for seven years of the communist government of Poland. He is known for his famous escape from Auschwitz I along with three other prisoners dressed as members of the [SS-Totenkopfverbände](#), fully armed in a stolen [SS](#) staff car, in which they drove

out the main gate—"a universally acclaimed... [feat] of exceptional courage and gallantry", in the words of [Kazimierz Smoleń](#).^[1]

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Imprisonment](#)
- [2 After the escape](#)
 - [2.1 Piechowski's associates](#)
- [3 Bibliography](#)
- [4 References](#)
- [5 External links](#)

[] Imprisonment



[Railway bridge](#) over the [Vistula River](#); Piechowski was in a forced work gang clearing the rubble

After the collapse of Polish resistance to the German invasion, Piechowski along with fellow boy scout [Alfons "Alki" Kiprowski](#) (b. 9 October 1921^[2]) were captured by the German occupiers in their hometown of [Tczew](#) and impressed into a work gang clearing the destroyed sections of the railway bridge over the [Vistula](#), which had previously been blown up by the Polish military to impede Nazi transports. [Polish Boy Scouts](#) were among the groups targeted by the [Gestapo](#) and the [Selbstschutz](#). They decided to leave Tczew on November 12, 1939 and attempted to get to France to join the [free Polish Army](#). While crossing the border into Hungary they were caught by a German patrol. They were first sent to a Gestapo prison in [Baligród](#). They were told by the Gestapo "Actually, we should shoot you, but we have for you something much more interesting." They were sent to a prison in [Sanok](#) next, then to [Montelupich Prison](#) in [Kraków](#). Their last stop before Auschwitz was a prison in [Wiśnicz](#).

Piechowski was sent to Auschwitz as a political prisoner, the so-called *Legionsgaenger*, one wishing to join [Polish military formations](#)—or "legions"—abroad.^[3] Moreover, the Polish Boy Scouts were labeled a criminal organization in [Occupied Poland](#). Piechowski was among a transport of 313 Polish deportees to Auschwitz on 20 June 1940: it was only the second transport after the initial one from [Tarnów](#). Among this Tarnów group was another Pole who would escape in an SS uniform: [Edward Galinski](#). Galinski's escape was short-lived.

Piechowski received [inmate number](#) 918. He credits [Kapo Otto Küsel](#) (inmate number 2)—one of the original 30 German deportees from [Sachsenhausen](#)—with his survival by assigning him lighter work. Piechowski was in the Leichenkommando, assigned to bringing corpses to the crematorium, including those shot at the "Black Wall" by SS-Rapportführer [Gerhard Arno](#)

[Palitzsch](#). Piechowski was present when Polish priest and fellow Auschwitz prisoner [Maximilian Kolbe](#) offered to exchange places with a fellow Pole who was among a group of ten sentenced to be starved to death. The sentence was in retribution for a perceived escape attempt of a prisoner.



Steyr 220, similar to car used in escape

On the Saturday morning of 20 June 1942, exactly two years after his arrival, Piechowski escaped from Auschwitz I along with two other Poles, [Stanisław Gustaw Jaster](#) (b. 1921; [inmate number](#) 6438), veteran of [Invasion of Poland](#) in rank of first lieutenant from [Warsaw](#); [Józef Lempart](#) (b. 1916; [inmate number](#) 3419), a priest from [Wadowice](#); and [Ukrainian Eugeniusz Bendera](#) (b. 1906; [inmate number](#) 8502), an auto mechanic from [Czortków, Ukraine](#). Piechowski had the best knowledge of the German language within the group, and held the command of the party.^[4]

They left through the main Auschwitz camp through the [Arbeit Macht Frei](#) gate. They had taken a cart and passed themselves off as a *Rollwagenkommando*—"haulage detail"—a work group which consisted of between four and twelve inmates pulling a freight cart instead of horses.^[5]

Bendera went to the motorpool, Piechowski, Lempart and Jaster went to the warehouse in which the uniforms and weapons were stored. They entered via a coal bunker which Piechowski had helped fill. He had removed a bolt from the lid so it wouldn't self latch when closed.

Once in the building they broke into the room containing the uniforms and weapons, arming themselves with four machine-guns and eight grenades.^[6] Bendera arrived in a [Steyr 220 sedan \(saloon\) car](#) belonging to [SS-Hauptsturmführer Paul Kreuzmann](#),^[7] license number SS-20868.^[8] As a mechanic he was often allowed to test drive cars around the camp.

He entered the building and changed into SS uniform like the others. They then all entered the car, Bendera driving Piechowski in the front passenger seat, Lempart and Jaster in the back, and drove toward the main gate. Jaster carried [a report](#) that [Witold Pilecki](#) had written for Armia Krajowa headquarters. When they approached the gate they became nervous as it had not opened. Lempart hit Piechowski in the back and said to do something. With the car stopped he opened the door and leaned out enough for the guard to see his rank insignia and yelled at him to open the gate. They then drove off.

[] After the escape





Flag of the [Armia Krajowa](#)

The fugitives abandoned the stolen escape vehicle in the vicinity of [Maków Podhalański](#), at a distance of some 60 kilometres from the camp.^[9] Kazimierz Piechowski eventually made his way to the Ukraine, but was unable to find refuge there due to [anti-Polish sentiment](#). Forging documents and a false name, he returned to Poland to live in [Tczew](#), where he had been captured. He soon found work doing manual labor on a nearby farm, where he made contact with the Home Army and took up arms against the Nazis within the units of 2nd Lt. [Adam Kusz *nom de guerre*](#) Garbaty (one of the so-called "[Cursed soldiers](#)").^[10] His parents were arrested by the Nazis in reprisal for his escape, and died in Auschwitz; the policy of tattooing prisoners was also allegedly introduced in response to his escape.^[11] Piechowski learned after the War from his boy-scout friend [Alfons Kiprowski](#), who remained a prisoner at Auschwitz for some three more months after his escape, that a special investigative commission arrived at Auschwitz from Berlin to answer—independently of the camp's administration—the question as to how the escape so audacious as Piechowski's and his companions' was at all possible.^[12]

After the war he attended the [Gdańsk University of Technology](#) and became an engineer, and then found work in [Pomerania](#). He was denounced to the communist authorities for being a member of the Home Army and sentenced to 10 years, he served 7. At the end of his sentence, he was 33; he reports thinking, "They have taken away my whole youth—all my young years."^[11] Thereafter he worked as an engineer for the communist government for some decades.

After the democratic transition, he declined the [Order of the White Eagle](#) when [Maciej Płażyński](#) tried to award it to him, politely (but also enigmatically) replying, "I do not feel that this honour is owed me".^[13] In 1989 he sold land he owned near Gdańsk and travelled with his wife to various parts of the world, visiting over 60 countries. In 2006 Piechowski was named an honorary citizen of the city of [Tczew](#) with which he has had a longstanding association (as his pre-War hometown).^[14] Likewise in 2006 Kazimierz Piechowski was the subject of the 56-minute-long documentary film *Uciekinier* ("Man on the Run") produced by [Marek Tomasz Pawłowski](#) and [Małgorzata Walczak](#), which won several international awards.^[15] In 2009 the British singer [Katy Carr](#) released a song about Piechowski under the title "Kommander's Car"; while 2010 saw another documentary on the subject from the filmmaker [Hannah Lovell](#), the 26-minute *Kazik and the Kommander's Car*.^[16] He currently lives in [Gdańsk](#).

[] [Piechowski's associates](#)

- The [kapo Kurt Pachala](#) (b. 16 October 1895), a native of [Neusatz](#) ([inmate number](#) 24), in charge of the motor pool (*Fahrbereitschaft*; or alternatively, of the food stores or supply depot, the so-called *Truppen Wirtschaftslager*) at Auschwitz, was implicated in Piechowski's escape by the circumstantial evidence uncovered during the ensuing investigation, and as a result was tortured and then sent to the [standing cell](#) in [Block 11](#) where he died of thirst and hunger on 14 January 1943.^{[17][18]} He is said to have been reduced at the end to eating his own shoes.^[19] His treatment and death were recounted at the [Frankfurt Auschwitz Trials](#) in 1965 which formed the basis for the 1965 play *Die Ermittlung* (*The Investigation*) by [Peter Weiss](#).^{[20][21]} Pachala is the *only* known victim of reprisals for the escape *within the Auschwitz concentration camp itself* (apart, that is, from the family members of the escapees): it was the ruse of the fake work commando that saved other prisoners from reprisals.^[22]

- **Eugeniusz (Gienek) Bendera** (b. 13 or 14 March 1906 in [Tschortkau, Podolia](#), then in the [Austro-Hungarian Empire](#)): According to Kazimierz Piechowski, Bendera was the originator of the idea of the escape, and the one who conceptualized the whole plan.^[23] After the War he returned to [Przedbórz](#) to live with his wife (married in 1930; one son), until a divorce in 1959 when he moved to Warsaw. He died after 1970.^[24]
- **Józef Lempart** (b. 19 August 1916 in [Zawadka](#)): After the escape he was dropped off by the escapees at a monastery in [Stary Sącz](#), a locality some 155 kilometres from the camp, in a state of total exhaustion.^[25] His mother was deported to Auschwitz in reprisal for his escape and killed. He left priesthood, married and had a daughter. He died in 1971 after being run over by a bus while crossing a street in [Wadowice](#).^[26]
- **Stanisław (Staszek) Gustaw Jaster, *nom de guerre* Hel** (b. 1 January 1921): The youngest of the escapees. In Auschwitz was a member of the secret underground military organization [ZOW](#). In Warsaw he reported to the Home Army High Command about the resistance in Auschwitz and became a personal emissary of Witold Pilecki. His parents were deported to Auschwitz in reprisal for his escape, where both died (his father, Stanisław Jaster, b. 1892, having perished at Auschwitz on 3 December 1942; his mother, Eugenia Jaster, b. 1894, first deported to the [Majdanek concentration camp](#), eventually perished at Auschwitz on 26 July 1943).^[27] He continued to fight against the German occupiers in the ranks of the Home Army as a member of one of its most important [special-operations units](#), the [Organizacja Specjalnych Akcji Bojowych](#) (Osa–Kosa 30), but also at his own initiative taking part in engagements staged by other Home Army units, most notably participating in the successful action at the [Celestynów](#) railway junction on the night of 19 May 1943, carried out under the command of [Captain Mieczysław Kurkowski *nom de guerre* Mietek](#), whose object was to free the prisoners being transported by the Nazis from the [Lublin Castle prison](#) to the Auschwitz concentration camp by train, when he gained special distinction through an act of bravery whereby he virtually single-handedly assured a victorious outcome for the operation in which 49 prisoners were freed.^{[28][29]} His comrades-in-arms have described him as a man "of enormous stature invested with extraordinary physical power".^[30] According to the account first promulgated in a 1968 book by [Aleksander Kunicki](#), *Cichy front*,^[31] Jaster was accused of collaboration with the Gestapo and executed in 1943 by members of the Home Army.^[32] This account has since been discredited as lacking foundation in documentary evidence. What now appears to be reasonably certain is that Jaster was rearrested by the Gestapo in Warsaw on 12 July 1943, and that he perished sometime between July and September of that year.^[33] The exact circumstances of his death remain however a bone of contention. Both Eugeniusz Bendera and Kazimierz Piechowski himself – as well as many others who knew him personally – made their voices heard in an effort to exonerate the memory of Jaster in the wake of the controversy engendered by the publication of *Cichy front*.^[34] It has been pointed out that the author of the accusing book, Aleksander Kunicki (1898–1986), an intelligence officer of the Home Army during the War (see [Operation Kutschera](#)), had himself been subsequently accused of having collaborated with the Gestapo and sentenced to death, only to have his conviction set aside by the authorities of the Communist Poland (who instead awarded him a state pension for "meritorious service to the nation" – an extraordinary outcome for an operative of the [Home Army](#), a military arm of the [Polish government in London](#), whose members were persecuted after the War by the Communists either with lengthy imprisonments (as in the case of Kazimierz Piechowski himself) or by being killed, as in the case of [Witold Pilecki](#), a figure directly connected with the events dealt with in the present article, [Gen. Fieldorf](#), and others).^[35] Kunicki's

book was submitted to a closely reasoned and devastating critique by [Tomasz Strzembosz](#) in 1971, which uncovered (among its other weaknesses) deliberate selective concealments and falsifications of published sources which Kunicki invokes in support of his thesis.^[36]

In the slowly emerging consensus of opinion in the matter — while the uncorroborated allegations of Aleksander Kunicki presented as "facts" in *Cichy front* remain what they are, namely allegations, unsubstantiated, in parts fanciful, and (in the light of emerging facts about Kunicki himself) perhaps self-serving — the book is thought nevertheless to contain an element of truth concerning Jaster's ultimate fate. It would appear that after his second arrest by the Gestapo in Warsaw on 12 July 1943 Jaster may have managed to escape *yet again* (this time by jumping out of a speeding Gestapo car moments after having been seized in a street together with a high-ranking Home Army commander, [Mieczysław Kudelski *nom de guerre* Wiktor](#)) — a feat so unprecedented (both in the degree of bravura displayed and in the fact that it would have been the second time that Jaster managed to extricate himself from Nazi clutches) that it would have aroused suspicions among the Home Army just then plagued by a series of devastating setbacks which could only have been caused by a well-placed mole, leading to a hasty and unjust execution of Jaster. If this hypothesis as to the fate of Jaster were to be accepted as a fact, it would remain to be explained why no documents relating to the case have come to light, however.

The authors of the aforementioned award-winning 2006 documentary film about Kazimierz Piechowski, *Uciekinier* ("Man on the Run"), Marek Tomasz Pawłowski and Małgorzata Walczak, are currently working on a sequel centred on the person of Stanisław Gustaw Jaster.^[37]

- **Alfons "Alki" Kiprowski** (b. 9 October 1921 in [Świecie](#)), Piechowski's fellow boy scout, was separately deported to Auschwitz ([inmate number](#) 801). He would escape from Auschwitz independently from Piechowski, just 94 days later, on 22 September 1942, together with two other prisoners, [Piotr Jaglicz](#) (b. 29 June 1922; [inmate number](#) unknown) and [Adam Szumlak](#) (b. 16 June 1920; [inmate number](#) E-1957 [or EH-1954]).^{[38][39][40]}

[] Bibliography

After just six days in Germany, Pyke was arrested in his bed-sitting room; he was taken away leaving a highly incriminating letter — written in English — on his desk.^[6] His guards told him "Probably you'll be shot in the morning". He was confined to a small cell, convinced that he would soon be executed. As time passed, Pyke came to believe that he might not be executed after all; he rationalised to himself that "the German government was not going to waste 4d on my keep if it was going to be faced with burial expenses on the fifth day".^[7]

Pyke was kept in [solitary confinement](#). He used this time to think. Reflecting on his constant hunger — the rations were meagre — he thought:

Hunger — real hunger — not your going without afternoon tea, or no-eggs-at-breakfast sort of affair — can, when a man is utterly without occupation, make life one continual aching weary desire. If the desire is not satisfied, or does not abate of its own accord (as it very often does), it can have disastrous effects on a man's mind. It has been know to make men think very seriously about the rights of property, and a few have become so unbalanced as to become socialists.^[8]

Pyke longed for books, writing materials, and, above all, company. At the rare exercise times when no talking was allowed, he moved briskly round the yard, exchanging a few whispered words with the inmates he passed. He pieced together poems from memory – *If* by [Rudyard Kipling](#) and *Jabberwocky* by [Lewis Carroll](#) – and took to regularly reciting them loudly in the darkness. He even asked to see *Herr Direktor* for permission to whistle occasionally – his request was granted. Given his increasingly odd behaviour, Pyke wondered whether the guards thought he might be going a little mad, and he himself wondered if going mad was the only sane thing to do.^[9]

After 13 weeks he was taken to another prison where he was able to mix with other prisoners and buy such luxuries as newspapers. More importantly, he learned that thousands of foreigners had passed through this prison for a period of quarantine before being transferred to the [internment camp at Ruhleben](#); having received no indication of his ultimate fate, the thought of being sent to an internment camp cheered him considerably. However, after just five days he was transferred to his third prison in [Moabit](#). Five days later, he was taken to the internment camp at Ruhleben.^{[10][a]}

Ruhleben was about 10 km (6 mi) west of [Berlin](#). It had originally been a racecourse and Pyke was given a small bed in the cramped [barracks](#) that had been converted from a [stable block](#). Here he delighted in the novel sounds of human conversation that he had so missed, he listened intently to the inconsequential conversations, trifling arguments and even the cursing of his fellow human beings.^[13]

Pyke soon fell in with a group of fellow graduates from [Oxford](#) and [Cambridge](#); his new friends supplied him with extra clothes against the winter cold and, for the first few days of their new acquaintance, with extra food. Books and other amusements were shared. The internees were allowed to run their own affairs to a substantial degree and they were allowed to make purchases and receive parcels from home.^[14] There was a thriving black-market in permitted, but rare, luxuries such as soap and forbidden items such as alcohol and English newspapers.

Pyke soon became ill, he nearly died of [double pneumonia](#) and he suffered repeatedly from [food poisoning](#). Only as the weather improved with the coming of summer did his health improve. Despite illness, he constantly thought about the possibility of escape and he repeatedly questioned his fellow inmates.^[15] Most people he spoke to were pessimistic about escape, but eventually he met fellow Englishman Edward Falk who wanted desperately to get out of Germany. Others had tried to escape; a few had got out of the camp, but nobody had succeeded in getting out of Germany. Geoffrey began compiling statistical data on these escape attempts so as to find the common failing factors. Pyke and Falk reviewed many possible plans and finally made a decision.^[15]

For weeks before their escape attempt, Pyke and Falk followed a regime of calisthenic exercise, which they said had been recommended to them by a Danish inmate who was a cardiac specialist. In fact, the Dane was a product of Pyke's imagination as were the exercises: various crawling wriggles that they would soon put to good use.^[15]

There was a tiny shed on the exercise ground that was used to store athletic equipment. Pyke had noticed that in the late afternoon the sun's rays flashed through the window blinding with glare anybody who looked inside. On the afternoon of 9 June 1915, Pyke and Falk crept into the hut and hid themselves under tennis nets. At the usual time, the guard dutifully checked the inside of the hut and, even though the prisoners could see him clearly, the guard saw nothing

amiss. They waited until dark and then slipped out and climbed over a succession of perimeter fences.^{[15][16]}

Pyke and Falk camped at a spot near where Pyke had previously observed German troop trains and then took a tram into Berlin. They bought clothes and camping equipment and then booked a train westward. As they got within 80 miles (130 km) of the Dutch border, they decided it was safest to walk. It rained every night and they used up precious time searching for food.^[15]

As they walked they had to wait patiently at every [bridge](#) and [railway crossing](#) for the optimum moment to get over; they got soaked crossing endless [ditches](#) and repeatedly negotiated agricultural [barbed wire](#) fences and nearly got swallowed up in the [quagmire](#).

Approaching the border, they consumed what remained of their food and discarded all their equipment apart from some rope they had made from a ball of string. They moved on, ready for the final and most difficult stage of their journey – crossing the [Dutch frontier](#). Then, as they rested, they were discovered by a soldier who demanded to know what they were doing. Initially they tried to talk their way out of the encounter, but it soon transpired that the soldier was Dutch and that they were already 50 yards (46 m) or so inside the Netherlands.^[17]

Pyke and Falk made their way from the Netherlands back to [England](#). There, Pyke went to see his news editor to confess that his mission had failed. However, his editor was not at all disappointed; smiling, he told Pyke that the story of his escape, based on a long telegraph report Pyke had sent from Amsterdam, had been one of the biggest [Fleet Street scoops](#) of the war. Pyke was the first Englishman to get into Germany and out again, and he must write a series of articles for the *Chronicle*.^[18] Pyke refused. He had, by then, rather lost interest in being a war correspondent.^[19] After that he divided his time between lecturing on his experiences^[20] and writing an intellectual review, the [Cambridge Magazine](#), edited by [Charles Kay Ogden](#).^[1]

Pyke arranged for some food parcels to be sent to friends in Ruhleben; the boxes contained details of his method of escape concealed in false bottoms. Although his parcels arrived unmolested, no prisoner attempted to repeat his methods.^[19]

As an escaped prisoner of war, he was exempt from conscription and, in any case, his views had begun to drift towards pacifism.^[21] He wrote a memoir of his experiences entitled [To Ruhleben – And Back](#), published in 1916.^[21] Because the war was still on at that time, Pyke omitted some details of his escape from his account. *To Ruhleben – And Back* was republished in 2002.

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)

Oluf Bernhard Reed-Olsen (8 July 1918 – 14 October 2002) was a Norwegian [resistance](#) member and pilot during [World War II](#). As a resistance member he is best known for the [Lysaker Bridge sabotage](#) as well as operating illegal radio transmitters. After the war he was a businessman and [Scouting](#) leader. He wrote books and contributed to a film based on his war experience.

Contents

[\[hide\]](#)

- [1 Early life](#)
- [2 World War II](#)
 - [2.1 Sabotage and escape](#)
 - [2.2 Air service and intelligence](#)
- [3 Post-war life](#)
- [4 Honours and awards](#)
- [5 References](#)

[] Early life

He was born in [Aker](#). He grew up in [Bestum](#) and graduated from middle school at [Ullern](#) in 1934. He then took commerce school and took pilot education in the airline [Widerøe's Flyveselskap](#).^[1]

[] World War II

[] Sabotage and escape

When [World War II](#) reached Norway with a [Nazi German invasion](#) on 9 April 1940, he started resistance work on the same day. On the night between 13 and 14 April he famously [blew up the Lysaker Bridge](#) together with Kåre Moe and Leif Moe.^[1] This sabotage had national-level repercussions, in that it contributed to the surfacing of the [Administrative Council](#) on the next day.^[2] The Nazis soon took [control over Norway](#), and Reed-Olsen and Kåre Moe was tasked to photograph and spy on German installments, most importantly at [Oslo Airport, Fornebu](#). Reed-Olsen had easier access around town because he had joined the civil firefighting squad of Furulund as a team leader, and owned a motorbike.^[3] They were caught after breaking into a crashed aircraft at Fornebu. Although the Germans did not know the nature of their actions, they were apprehended and sent to Oslo. However, at Lysaker Bridge the lorry slowed down because of the bridge damage, and the two escaped from the lorry, jumped into [Lysakerelva](#), swam further down and eventually careered to their homes.^[4] The two fled Norway by boat from [Bestumkilen](#) on 2 September.^[1] Reed-Olsen bought the boat after selling his motorbike.^[5] They first sailed down the Norwegian coast, and picked up a third man Rolf Gabrielsen whom they met in [Mandal](#).^[6] They finally left for the United Kingdom from [Farsund](#) on 14 September.^[7] According to Reed-Olsen, they had almost reached the [Aberdeen](#) district when the wind turned and brought them as far east as [Jutland](#). After the wind turned again, they almost reached the [Thames](#), when on 29 September they were picked up by the British destroyer [HMS Bedouin](#).^[8] After an excursion when the ship had to salvage crashed pilots (one of five was alive), the Norwegians set foot in [Edinburgh](#) on 4 October.^[9]

Giles Romilly

From Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia

Jump to: [navigation](#), [search](#)

Giles Samuel Bertram Romilly, (September 19, 1916 – August 2, 1967), was a [journalist](#), [Nazi POW](#), brother of [Esmond Romilly](#) and nephew of [Winston Churchill](#). He was educated at Wellington College and Oxford, and then served as a war correspondent in both the [Spanish](#)

[Civil War](#) and in [World War II](#). However, he was captured in May 1940^[1] in the [Norwegian](#) town of [Narvik](#) while reporting for the [Daily Express](#).

Romilly was the first German prisoner to be classified as *Prominente*, prisoners regarded by [Adolf Hitler](#) to be of great value due to their relationships to prominent [Allied political](#) figures. Because of his importance to Hitler, Romilly was imprisoned in [Oflag IV-C \(Colditz Castle\)](#), from where escape was perceived to be almost impossible. Whilst at Colditz, Romilly lived in relative luxury with the other *Prominente* who would later join him, although they were all watched 24 hours a day in case they should attempt to escape.

Romilly used this position to his advantage and caused trouble by issuing complaints at every conceivable annoyance. Amongst the list, he took offence to the noise created by the boots of his guard outside his door, preventing him from sleeping. Following a visit from the [Red Cross](#), a red carpet was placed outside his door to dull the sound.

Romilly did successfully escape however, whilst the *Prominente* were staying at "[Oflag VII-D Tittmoning Castle](#)". The camp was home to some [Dutch](#) officers amongst whom was captain [Machiel van den Heuvel](#), "Vandy". Romilly and Vandy knew each other from their Colditz time where Vandy was the Dutch escape officer. Vandy was transferred to Tittmoning because of his leading role as escape officer and the Germans thought he could do no more harm in Tittmoning where most prisoners were older officers of general rank. Vandy however had his next escape plan ready and together with two Dutch officers, Romilly [abseiled](#) down the castle walls. The remainder of the *Prominente* hid in the castle in hopes of conveying the impression that they had all escaped. After four days they were all discovered. Romilly, in spite of the 3,000 men that were searching for him, succeeded in reaching the Allied lines.

This was due mainly to the gallant action of lieutenant Andre Tieleman, a Dutch officer who was fluent in German and French. With their false identity papers identifying them as French (forced) labourers they managed to escape. When interrogated by German officials, Lt Tieleman did the talking while Romilly pretended to be deaf and dumb. In this way they managed to escape into freedom.

After the war Romilly returned to journalism. In 1952 he wrote the memoir *The Privileged Nightmare*, later reissued as *Hostages at Colditz*, with fellow *Prominente* [Michael Alexander](#), who had earned the status by falsely claiming to be a relative of Field Marshal [Harold Alexander](#). He died in [Berkeley, California](#) in 1967 of a [tranquilliser](#) overdose. He was in the process of researching a book on the American novel at the time.

[] Notes

1. [^] "[Giles Romilly "Flown To Berlin" Report](#)", *The Straits Times*, 4 June 1940: 3


[] References

- Romilly, Giles and Michael Alexander (1954). *The Privileged Nightmare*. London, Weidenfeld and Nicolson.
- Romilly, Giles and Michael Alexander (1973). *Hostages at Colditz*. London, Sphere, [ISBN 0-7221-7463-2](#).
- Reid, P.R. (1984). *Colditz: The Full Story*. London, Pan Books, [ISBN 0-330-49000-1](#)

- Reid was [mobilized](#) for active duty on 24 August 1939, and served in the [2nd Infantry Division](#), receiving promotion to Temporary [Captain](#) on 1 December 1939. On 27 May 1940, while serving as a member of the [British Expeditionary Force](#) during the [Battle of France](#),^[2] he was captured by the Germans near [Cassel](#).^[4] He was sent to [Laufen](#) castle, [Bavaria](#), designated [Oflag VII-C](#), arriving there on 5 June 1940.^[2]
- Within days of his arrival, Reid was planning an escape, determined to return home by Christmas. After seven weeks digging Reid and a group of prisoners completed a tunnel, 24 feet (7.3 m) long, from the prison basement to a small shed adjoining a nearby house. At 06:30 on 5 September 1940 Reid and five others broke out and made for [Yugoslavia](#), only 150 miles away. However, after five days the escapees were recaptured in [Radstadt, Austria](#). Reid was sentenced to a month of [solitary confinement](#), on a diet of bread and water.^[5]
- As one of the "Laufen Six", Reid was then sent to [Colditz Castle](#), designated [Oflag IV-C](#), a special "escape-proof" camp, arriving there on 10 November 1940. It was not long before Reid attempted an escape. He bribed a seemingly willing German guard to look the other way. On the night of 29 May 1941 twelve prisoners crawled through a sewer pipe from the canteen to an outer courtyard, planning to then descend a forty foot wall, and then over another wall 12 feet high topped with barbed wire. Unfortunately, although the guard had accepted the bribe, he also reported the escape plan to his superiors, and the Germans were waiting for them. After another spell in solitary, Reid accepted the position of Escape Officer, responsible for overseeing all British escape plans. Reid assisted in many escape attempts, some successful,^[5] until April 1942, when he was replaced as Escape Officer by fellow member of the "Laufen Six" Captain Richard "Dick" Howe.^[6]

- [\[\] Escaping Colditz](#)



- 
- Colditz Castle (1945)
- Reid finally took his own chance to escape on the night of 14/15 October 1942, along with Major [Ronald Littledale](#), [Lieutenant Commander](#) William L. Stephens [RNVR](#), and [Flight Lieutenant Howard Wardle RAF](#). They cut through the bars on a window in the prisoner's kitchen, and climbed out onto the flat roof of the German kitchen. They then crossed the brightly lit outer yard, and avoided being seen by a guard. They entered a storage cellar under the *Kommandantur* (Commandant's HQ), crawled out through a narrow air shaft leading to the dry moat, and exited through the park. They split into pairs,^[4] with Reid and Wardle disguised as Flemish workmen^[7] travelling by train to [Tuttlingen](#), near the Swiss border, via [Zwickau](#) and [Munich](#). They crossed the border near [Ramsen](#) on the evening of 18 October. Stephens and Littledale also travelled to Tuttlingen by train, via [Chemnitz](#), [Nuremberg](#) and [Stuttgart](#), then followed Reid and Wardle across the border in the early hours of 20 October.^[4]

- Reid remained in Switzerland until after the end of the war, serving as an Assistant Military Attaché in [Berne](#) from 9 March 1943 until early 1946, and receiving promotion to Temporary Major on 1 November 1945.^[2] He was unusually discreet about his duties there, but was in fact working for the [Secret Intelligence Service](#) (MI6) gathering intelligence from arriving escapees.^[8]

Escape from Stalag XXI-D



Fort VIII Stalag XXI-D from which Sinclair escaped in a handcart

On 28 May 1941 Sinclair escaped from Fort VIII, Stalag XXI-D, along with comrades [Gris Davies-Scourfield](#) and fellow Wykehamist, [Ronnie Littledale](#) concealed in a modified [handcart](#). They received assistance from Polish citizens and travelled through [Łódź](#), [Kaluska](#), [Lubochnia-Gorki](#) to [Tomazow Maz](#) with the intention of reaching Russia. Learning of the German invasion of the USSR they changed their plans and walked to [Warsaw](#) where they lived in hiding from 25 June to 26 August. Davies-Scourfield remained in Warsaw while Sinclair and Littledale travelled by train to [Kraków](#) and onward to [Zakopane](#) alighting at the station before the main city. They walked across the [Slovakian](#) border and were driven to [Rožňava](#), where they caught the night train to [Budapest](#). There they stayed for a month before travelling again by train to [Yugoslavia](#) through [Szeged](#) to [Pančevo](#) then across the [River Danube](#) by ferry to [Belgrade](#). On 11 November they took a train to [Jagodina](#) and five days later, took the [Sofia](#) train to [Bela Palanka](#). From here they crossed the Yugoslav-Bulgarian frontier by horse-drawn cart. While walking to meet another cart they were stopped by a Bulgarian customs official who, on seeing their Yugoslav papers, took them into custody. They were handed over to the Bulgarian police in [Piro](#)t and moved from there to Sofia. Following interrogation, on 27 November, they were handed over to the German police. Moved from Sofia to Belgrade they were then moved to [Vienna](#) and held in the military prison from 2 December to 17 January 1942. They were then taken by train escorted by one [Feldwebel](#) and a soldier in the direction of [Dresden](#). Seizing an opportunity between [Prague](#) and [Roudnice](#), both managed to escape from the moving train through a [lavatory](#) window. Unfortunately, Sinclair was spotted and, having hurt his leg jumping from the train, was soon recaptured. Littledale avoided capture and eventually headed for Switzerland but was caught in [Husinec](#)^[disambiguation needed] on 29 May while trying to avoid the police activity in and around [Prague](#) after the assassination of [Reinhard Heydrich](#) two days earlier. Both men were interviewed by the [Gestapo](#) before being sent to Colditz.^{[6][8]}

[] Arrival at Colditz Castle and escape

Sinclair arrived in Colditz, along with Littledale, in July 1942^[9] and almost immediately made an attempt to escape. He received a [court martial](#) charge for an offence allegedly committed in his prior POW camp. He was taken to [Leipzig](#) for his trial, but managed to make a getaway whilst in a [lavatory](#) at a Leipzig barracks.^[10] He was recaptured a few days later in [Cologne](#), during a civilian hunt for [RAF](#) pilots believed to have been shot down over the city during a bombing raid in the preceding days. His clothing, primarily of RAF origin, gave him away.^[11]

[] "Franz Josef" escape

In April 1943, [Dick Howe](#), the incumbent British [Escape Officer](#), was approached by Sinclair, who had just been released from a long spell of [solitary confinement](#) for a previous escape attempt, and his fellow POW, [Monty Bissell](#), with perhaps one of the more audacious escape plans to emerge from within the walls of Colditz.^[12]

Howe had mused over the possibility of switching German guards with British [imposters](#).^[13] His comments were not lost on Bissell,^[14] who quickly noticed the physical similarities between Sinclair and one of the German Guard Commanders,^{[15][16]} [Stabsfeldwebel \(Sergeant Major\) Fritz Rothenberger](#), who was better known to the prisoners and guards as "Franz Josef" for his strong resemblance to [Franz Josef](#), the former Austrian Emperor.^{[17][18]}

Rothenberger's duties included nightly inspections of the sentries on the eastern terrace of the castle, which overlooked a park area.^[19] This beat was one of the least popular amongst the German guards,^[20] as the narrow pathway abutted the walls of the castle and caused severe discomfort for the sentries who were required to watch the walls.^[21] It was from here that Sinclair and Bissell intended to escape.

They proposed to Howe that Sinclair, disguised as Rothenberger, along with two other prisoners disguised as German guards, climb through one of the Sick Bay windows overlooking the secluded terrace on the northern side of the Castle, and then descend to the sentry path via the steps leading down from the terrace.^[22] Then, he planned to proceed around the sentry path towards the catwalk and gate on the Eastern side of the Castle, and alert the sentries on the way to an 'escape attempt' on the other side of the Castle, and order them to return to the guardroom.^[23] Once the guards on the path had been dismissed, he would then march to the gate and replace the two guards on duty with their British counterparts.

If successful, the British would have perhaps three and a half minutes,^[24] for as many men as possible to descend from the British quarters overlooking the eastern side of the Castle, via sheet ropes. These men would then pass through the gates guarded by the replacement guards in those three and a half minutes, before the real German guards returned to the guard house - and the real Rothenberger - and discovered the ruse.

The escape attempt hinged on the ability of Sinclair to fool the German guards into believing he was the real Rothenberger. Already a fluent German speaker,^[25] he spent the next month, along with [Teddy Barton](#) and [Alan Cheetham](#), studying his habits, mannerisms, gestures and accent.^[26] Whenever he entered the courtyard he was besieged by prisoners engaging him in idle conversation whilst observers noted every detail.^[27]

To take care of physical appearance, the services of Barton, who had honed his make-up skills in the camp theatre,^[28] were called upon and, with Cheetham's assistance, manufactured no fewer than fourteen Rothenberger [moustaches](#) before they were happy with their work.^[29] [Rex](#)

[Harrison](#) was given the task of producing three perfect German uniforms,^[30] whilst Major W. F. Anderson set to work to produce two imitation German [rifles](#), two [bayonets](#) with [scabbards](#), a [revolver](#) complete with holster made out of cardboard and boot polish, buttons, badges, medals and belt clasps.^[31]

The escape attempt took place on 19 May 1943 immediately after the 9.00 pm *Appell* (roll-call).^[32] Sinclair and his two "guards" - [John Hyde-Thomson](#) and [Lancelot Pope](#), both good German speakers^[33] - successfully descended from the window and made it down to the path.^[34] Tension built for the observing British prisoners as Sinclair successfully relieved first one sentry, and then another, and their places were taken up by the British men.^[35]

The soldier guarding the gate, however, refused to budge, remaining adamant that his orders were to stay put.^[36] Sinclair, faced with the choice of either persisting with the stubborn guard, or making a run for it with his two colleagues, decided to continue with the facade.^[37] He became increasingly annoyed with the sentry and soon started yelling at the him,^[38] and it was not long before guards arrived from all over the camp, including the real Rothenberger.^[39]

Confusion ensued, with the German guards running around in panic and the [NCOs](#) unsure of the allegiance of the men under their command.^[40] Before long, a shot rang out and Sinclair sank to his knees, wounded.^[41] As the confusion began to subside, the prisoners were summoned to the courtyard for an *Appell*, and the wounded Sinclair was left on the ground, unattended, for nearly 10 minutes.^[42] This caused much anger and resentment within the prisoner contingent, with many believing Sinclair had been killed.^[43]

Finally, at the *Appell*, [Oberst Pravitt](#), the camp [Commandant](#), announced "Lieutenant Sinclair is wounded but out of danger".^[44]

Howe later lamented his decision to not give Sinclair any specific order to quit if the plan went awry:

To be quite candid I've taken the can back for it. I left the final decision to Mike himself instead of giving him a specific instruction to quit at the slightest sign of obstruction. What some chaps argued afterwards was that, knowing Mike, I should also have known that he just wasn't the type who would quit and I should, therefore, have given him an order.

—Dick Howe, ^[45]

[] Final escape

Sinclair attempted to copy Lebrun's escape; climbing over the barbed wire and jumping over the wall at the end. He tried this on 25 September 1944. He climbed over the fencing, was hit over the head by the butt of a gun by the security, but, continued running. The guards fired at him, one bullet pierced his shoulder, bouncing off and penetrating his heart. He was shot dead. He was the only prisoner to be killed during an escape attempt at Colditz. The Germans buried him in Colditz cemetery with full military honours – his coffin was draped with a [Union Flag](#) made by the German guards, and he received a seven-gun salute.

For his "relentless devotion to escaping whilst a POW" he was posthumously awarded the [Distinguished Service Order](#) after the war's end, the only lieutenant to be awarded the medal during World War II for an action in captivity.

His remains were transferred at the end of the war; he is currently buried in grave number 10.1.14 at [Charlottenburg War Cemetery](#) in Berlin.^[5]

Francis Steinmetz (20 September 1914 in [Batavia](#), Netherland East Indies – 2 January 2006) was an officer in the Royal Netherlands Navy who escaped from [Oflag IV-C](#), [Colditz Castle](#), a German [POW](#) camp, during [World War II](#).

In August 1941, Steinmetz, along with another Dutch POW, Lieutenant [Hans Larive](#), hid under a [manhole cover](#) in the exercise yard of Colditz castle. Whilst the other prisoners were playing a game of soccer, lieutenant Gerrit Dames cut a small hole in the wire fence, allowing the two men to escape after the other prisoners left for [roll call](#) and supper. The two came up out of hiding after nightfall, took a train to Gottmadingen, Germany, and reached Switzerland in three days.

Two other Dutchmen followed Steinmetz's actions; one Major [C.Giebel](#) and a Lieutenant [O.Drijber](#) used the same escape route. The method was discovered on the third attempt when two more Dutch officers tried to use it and were discovered by guards.

Escape



[Alfréd Wetzler](#)

When he arrived in Birkenau, Vrba discovered that Alfréd Wetzler, someone he knew from Trnava, was working in the mortuary, registered as prisoner no. 29162. The men decided to escape together.^[22] On 7 April 1944, with the help of two other prisoners, they hid in a pile of wood between the inner and outer perimeter fences, sprinkling the area with tobacco soaked in gasoline to fool the guards' dogs.^[23] According to Kárný, at 20:33 that evening SS-*Sturmbannführer* [Fritz Hartjenstein](#), the Birkenau commander, was informed by teleprinter that two Jews had escaped.^[24]

The men knew from previous escape attempts by others that, once their absence was noted during the evening *appell* ([roll call](#)), the guards would continue the search for three days. They therefore remained in hiding, in silence, for three nights and throughout the fourth day. Wetzler wrote in his memoir that they tied strips of flannel across their mouths and tightened them whenever they felt a tickle in their throats.^[25] At 9 pm on 10 April, they crawled out of their

hiding place and headed south toward Slovakia 80 miles (130 km) away, walking parallel to the [Soła](#) river.^[26]

Escape



[Alfréd Wetzler](#)

When he arrived in Birkenau, Vrba discovered that Alfréd Wetzler, someone he knew from Trnava, was working in the mortuary, registered as prisoner no. 29162. The men decided to escape together.^[22] On 7 April 1944, with the help of two other prisoners, they hid in a pile of wood between the inner and outer perimeter fences, sprinkling the area with tobacco soaked in gasoline to fool the guards' dogs.^[23] According to Kárný, at 20:33 that evening SS-*Sturmbannführer* [Fritz Hartjenstein](#), the Birkenau commander, was informed by teleprinter that two Jews had escaped.^[24]

The men knew from previous escape attempts by others that, once their absence was noted during the evening *appell* ([roll call](#)), the guards would continue the search for three days. They therefore remained in hiding, in silence, for three nights and throughout the fourth day. Wetzler wrote in his memoir that they tied strips of flannel across their mouths and tightened them whenever they felt a tickle in their throats.^[25] At 9 pm on 10 April, they crawled out of their hiding place and headed south toward Slovakia 80 miles (130 km) away, walking parallel to the [Soła](#) river.^[26]

Freddy Litten

(Frederick S. Litten)

abstracts

China and intelligence history

The Myth of the "Turning-Point" -- Towards a New Understanding of the Long March"; in: *Bochumer Jahrbuch zur Ostasienforschung*, Band 25, 2001, S. 3-44.

[\[Full-text \(ca. 2 MB\)\]](#)

The Long March in 1934/35 has an iconic character, not just in Chinese Communist Party (CCP) history. However, many popular perceptions, e.g. that Mao Zedong led it or took power during the March, are wrong, and even scholars often seem to uncritically accept versions put out by

hardly disinterested participants. In fact, much of what seems to be known about the March is probably just myth. One of its major components is the notion of the Long March as a "turning-point" in CCP history. This notion relies on a dichotomy between an incompetent ("leftist") leadership before the March, whose misguided efforts are held responsible for the near devastation of the CCP and Red Army in the Jiangxi Soviet, and a competent leadership under Mao afterwards, which saved the Communist movement in China.

However, this article **tries** to show that, at least in the military sphere, the leadership in the early 1930s was not really incompetent, but that to stay in Jiangxi became impossible when Chiang Kai-shek could concentrate on defeating the Communists. (This echoes the remarks allegedly made at the Zunyi Conference by the CCP's then "secretary-general" Qin Bangxian aka Bo Gu.) The article goes on to argue that we do hardly know anything substantial about decision-making on the March, even about some of the supposed main events, such as the battle at the Xiang River, and next to nothing about the internal dynamics of the CCP at that time. While it seems that Mao's role on the March usually has been overstated, there don't seem to be any reliable sources which would allow a clearer picture -- recent attempts to put Zhou Enlai in Mao's boots notwithstanding.

In conclusion, it is held that the Long March was just an extension of the Jiangxi Soviet era, not a "turning-point", which scarcely led to any changes in the military or political spheres. On the other hand, the "myth" of the Long March -- already beginning with the "Zunyi Resolution" and then blossoming in tales by Mao, Edgar Snow and numerous others -- may have been much more influential than the actual event. Yet this myth was again just one of several factors leading to changes in the CCP and in China, among which the Sino-Japanese war was probably the main one.

The article is based on a wide selection of Chinese and English publications and a few other sources.

[Home \(deutsch\)](#)

[Home \(english\)](#)

[publications](#)

[TOCs and abstracts](#)

[F. Litten](#)

25.7.2007

Otto Braun in Deutschland 1900-1928 [Otto Braun in Germany, 1900-1928]; in: *Internationale wissenschaftliche Korrespondenz zur Geschichte der deutschen Arbeiterbewegung*, 27. Jg., Heft 2, 1991, S. 171-182.

"Consider Your Verdict": Otto Braun in China; in: *CCP Research Newsletter*, nr. 10 & 11, Spring - Fall 1992, pp. 30-36.

Otto Braun's Curriculum Vitae -- Translation and Commentary; in: *Twentieth-Century China*, vol. 23, nr. 1, 1997, pp. 31-61.

Otto Braun (1900-1974) led a highly varied and international life. Born in Ismaning near Munich, he grew up in an orphanage, although his mother was still alive. He went to a teachers training college in Pasing near Munich and, in June 1918, was drafted into the Bavarian army, although he did not see combat. He then finished the teachers' training college, but did not start work as a primary school teacher, instead travelling around, especially in Northern Germany,

and participating in the activities of the young German Communist Party (KPD).

In 1921 he seems to have begun work in the central "Apparat" of the KPD. In July 1921 he was arrested in Berlin by German police for his participation in the theft of documents from a "White" Russian colonel Freyberg. Braun was tried but, because he was able to pass himself off as a right-winger, he was only leniently sentenced. Still, he did not go to jail, but underground. By then, he was very active in the intelligence and military-political work of the KPD, becoming head of its counter-intelligence service in 1924, as well as writing articles in the Communist press.

In September 1926 Braun was again arrested in Berlin. First he had to serve the 1922 sentence resulting from the Freyberg case, then he was in detention. In a daring move on 11 April 1928 he was freed from Moabit prison by a group of Communists, among them his girl-friend Olga Benario. Although the case made considerable headlines all over Europe, Braun was able to escape to Moscow with Benario. There he studied at the Frunze Military Academy and taught at the Comintern's Lenin School.

After graduating from Frunze Military Academy in 1932, Braun was sent by Soviet Military Intelligence (the 4th Directorate) to [Harbin/China](#). He then moved to Shanghai, where he presumably became a member of the "military section" of the local [Comintern bureau](#). His boss there was Manfred Stern (aka General Kleber), his political boss the German communist Arthur Ewert. In autumn 1933 Braun succeeded in getting to Ruijin, the capital of the Chinese Communists' "Central Soviet". There he operated as a military advisor in circumstances which are still difficult to elucidate. He was the only foreigner to participate in the [Long March](#) of the First Front Army of the Chinese Red Army (he probably even proposed what later became the Long March) together with Mao Zedong and Zhou Enlai, and his memoirs are an important, though dubious, source for the events of these years. After the Long March, Braun was mainly occupied with teaching tactics and doing some advisory work.

In 1939 he left China for the Soviet Union. There he seems to have had some political difficulties at first, but then became an editor and translator at Moscow Foreign Languages Press.

Beginning in 1941, he was a "Polit-Instrukteur" in P.O.W. camps for German, later Japanese, officers. He became known to the Germans as "Kommissar Wagner", using an old nom de guerre of his from the 1920s. From 1946 to 1948 he was a lecturer at the antifascist central school at Krasnogorsk near Moscow, then he worked again for Moscow Foreign Languages Press.

Only after Stalin's death was he allowed to return to (East) Germany in 1954. As a fellow at the Institute for Marxism-Leninism at the Central Committee of the East German communist party (SED), he was mainly responsible for the German edition of Lenin's works. From 1961 to 1963 he was First Secretary of the German Writers' Association, but fell foul of a political shift in early 1963. For some years, he remained a pensioner and free-lance translator of Russian works, then he staged a come-back. Already in 1964, East Germany's party newspaper "Neues Deutschland" had revealed that the hitherto unidentified "Li De" had been Otto Braun. At the end of the 1960s, Braun became a fellow at the Institute for Social Sciences at the Central Committee of the SED and wrote his "Chinese Notes", which were published as a book in 1973 and translated into several languages, among them English and Chinese. On a holiday in Bulgaria, Braun died; he was buried in East Berlin. Obituaries appeared, for example, in "Pravda" and "The New York Times".

The article on "Braun in Germany" is based on documents in archives in Berlin, Potsdam and Munich, contemporary newspaper reports and publications. "Braun in China" is based on my paper ["Otto Brauns frühes Wirken in China"](#). "Braun's Curriculum Vitae" is based on some further unpublished documents (especially his privately-held cv), but mostly on a wide array of publications in German, English, Russian and Chinese.

[Home \(deutsch\)](#)

[Home \(english\)](#)

[publications](#)

[TOCs and abstracts](#)

[F. Litten](#)

27.7.2000

The Noulens Affair; in: *The China Quarterly*, No. 138, June 1994, pp. 492-512.

On 15 June 1931, a man best known as Hilaire Noulens (aka Paul Ruegg, M. Motte, ...) was arrested with his wife in the International Settlement in Shanghai. His became a cause célèbre, when Communist organizations started a world-wide campaign to free him, first from the Settlement's police, then from the Chinese to whom he was delivered. Although tried and sentenced to death by a Chinese court, his sentence was commuted to life and he was finally released in August 1937, because of Japanese bombardments on Nanjing. Only in July 1939 did the Noulens' leave for the Soviet Union.

In fact, although portrayed as an innocent trade union official, Noulens had been an important member of the Communist International's "apparat" in China. Noulens worked for the Comintern's intelligence service, the OMS, and he was thus central to the Comintern's communications and monetary networks in Shanghai and, by extension, the whole of East Asia. He had arrived in Shanghai already in 1928, but had had to leave in July 1929. When he returned in March 1930, he alone headed the OMS activities there. However, he was clearly overworked, having been promised help which never arrived, and when a Comintern courier, Joseph Ducroux, was arrested in Singapore, much of Noulens' network unravelled. On the other hand, none of the quite numerous Western associates of Noulens was uncovered in time by the police.

Also, his real identity remained unknown for decades. Only in 1991, Fritz N. Platten was able to give the real names of Hilaire Noulens and his wife, because he had met their son in Moscow: They were Yakov Rudnik (1894-1963) and Tatyana Moiseenko (1891-1964), both career intelligence officers with several years of experience in Europe, among other places in Vienna where they had had contact with [Ephraim Goldenstein](#). As to their life after 1939, information on Rudnik is sparse, while Moiseenko worked for party organizations.

The article is based on documents in the Comintern Archives in Moscow, the US National Archives in Washington/DC, the archives of the foreign ministries of France, the Netherlands and Germany, and the Swiss Federal Archives, as well as numerous publications, mainly in Western languages.

[Home \(deutsch\)](#)

[Home \(english\)](#)

[publications](#)

[abstracts](#)

[F. Litten](#)

27.7.2000

Die Goldštajn/Goldenstein-Verwechslung -- Eine biographische Notiz zur Komintern-Aktivität auf dem Balkan [The Goldštajn/Goldenstein mix-up -- A biographical note on the activity of the Comintern in the Balkans]; in:

Südost-Forschungen, Bd. 50, 1991, S. 245-250.

[\[Volltext\]](#)

The Communist International's bureau in Vienna, responsible for the Balkans, in the 1920s has several times made an appearance in the literature. It is often connected with a man variously called Goldštajn oder Goldenstein. In fact, these are two different people, only the latter of whom can safely be connected with the Comintern's Vienna bureau. Solomon L. Goldštajn (1884-1968) was a well-known Bulgarian communist, who had been quite close to Lenin in Paris and Zurich, but later had problems with Stalin.

Ephraim Goldenstein (1882-?) had been born in Kishinev, studied medicine in Berlin and Vienna, and received his doctorate (with a dissertation on gynaecology) from Munich University in 1911. In 1923 he reappears in Vienna, first as an envoy of the Russian Red Cross, then as second secretary of the Soviet Union's embassy. In 1925 he left Vienna and may have been in Constantinople for some time. He re-enters the picture in Berlin in 1927, again as second secretary of the Soviet Union's embassy there. Yet, his activities for the Comintern and, presumably, for the GPU came to the notice of several diplomats, so he left in early 1930, shortly before G. S. Agabekov's memoirs hit the bookstores: there, Goldenstein is described as GPU "resident" in Berlin, to whom the "resident" in Paris and the Soviet agents in Great Britain were subordinated and who still continued to concern himself with the Balkans and the Middle East. Nothing certain is known about Goldenstein's life after 1930.

The article is based on documents in archives in Vienna, Munich and Bonn, as well as mostly contemporary publications in various languages.